

ACCUPACION DO LACOLAGO LA

OF HVSBANDRY.

In foure Bookes.

Viz t

I. Of Earable-ground, Tillage, and Pasture.

II. Of Gardens, Orchards, and VVoods.

III. Of Feeding, Breeding, and Curing of all manner of Cattell.

IIII. Of Poultrie, Fowle, Fish, and Bees.

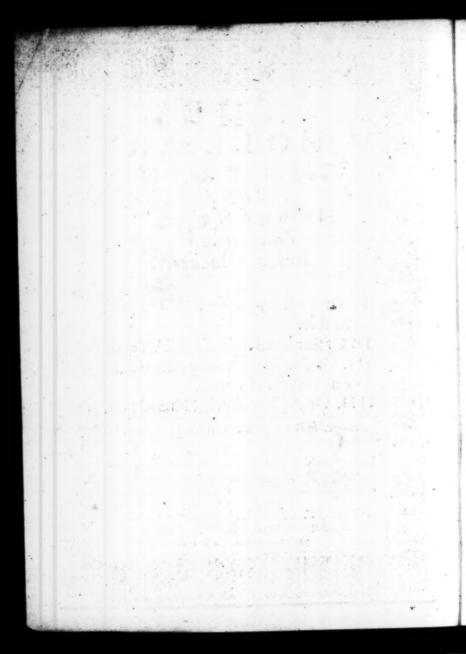
Enlarged by BARNABY GOOGE, Esquire.

GENESIS. 2. 19.

In the (weat of thy face shalt thou eate thy bread, till thou be turned againe into the ground, for out of it wast thou taken: yea, dust thou are, and to dust shalt thou returne-

LONDON:

Printed by T. S. for Richard More, and are to be fould at his Shop in S. Dunstanes Church yard in Fleetstreet. 1614.





# TOTHERIGHT

VVorshipfull, his very good friend, Sir William Fitz-Williams, Knight.

F such as have painefully and faithfully of long time served their Prince and Countrey abroad, doe most of all others deserve, beside their condigne reward, the benefit of a quiet and contented life at home, I know no man (good Sir William Fitz-William

ams) that of right may better challenge it , then your felfe : who for the long time of your paineful fernice, the truftie discharging of the Treasurership of Ireland, and your worthie gouernement, while it pleased her most excellent Maiestie to appoint jou for the Jayd Realme her highnesse Deputie) have so behaued your selfe, as even your very enemies (whereof 1 know you had good store) have beene forced to give you, will they nill they, your iust deserved commendation. I leave to remember your fundry and trouble some travailes, your Gentlemanly minde, alwayes unwearied and unmated with what foener perill or hazard bappened: Ipasse ouer (because I know you delight not in hearing your prayles) that Honorable, and worthy for ever to be Chronisled, charge given upon the Oncale, at Monham, in the rescue of your misterably distressed and slaughtered companions, and Countrymen, of which there be fundry get remaining, that will attribute the haning of their lines, 25 3 (next

#### The Preface.

(next unto God) to the prosperous successe of your valiant enterprise: neither hath this your loyall service to your Prince and Countrie at any time beene accompanied, without a feruent and zealous affection towards the Almightie, the chiefest and onely beautie of all mans actions. Since thus (as I fayd) you may instly challenge for the good service you have done in your youth, a place and time of rest and quietnesse in your greater geeres, and that there is, in my fancie, no life so quiet, so acceptable to God, and pleasant to an honest minde, as is the life of the Countrie, where a man, withdrawing himselfe from the miseries, vanities, and vexations of this foolish and now too too much doting world, may give himfelfe to the fweet contemplation of God, and his workes, and the profit and reliefe of his poore distressed neighbour, to which two things we were ebiefely created, I thought it good to send you here (as a token and a testimonie of my thankfull mind, for your sundryfriend-(hips and curtefies (bewed unto me) a rude draught of the order and manner of the faid Countrie life , which you may vie (if it please you) for your recreation. And afterwards (if so you thinke it meet) publish under your protection, to the commoditie and benefit of others. Fare you well: from Kingstone.

Your affured louing friend,

BARNABY GOOGE



ce st

d B

r

c.

fe

77

W

**y**-

fe

re

CH

d-

7-

ofe

011

10-

ıc.

### The Epistle to the

Reader.

Haue thought it meet (good Reader) for thy further profit and pleafure, to put into English, these foure Bookes of Husbandry, collected and set forth, by Master Conrade Horsesbatch, a great and a learned Counceller of the Duke of Clemes: not thinking it reason, though I have altered and increased his

vvorke, with mine owne readings and observations, joyned with the experience of fundry my friends, to take from him (as difere in the like case have done) the honour and glory of his ownerravaile : Neither is it my minde that this either his doings, or mine. should deface, or any wayes darken the good enterprise, or painfull travailes of fuch our Countrymen of England, as have plentifully written of this matter: but alwayes haue, and do give them the reverence and honour due to so vertuous, and well disposed Gentlemen, namely, Master Fitzberbert, and Master Tusser: vvhose vvorkes may, in my fancie, without any prefumption, compare with any, either Varro, Columella, or Palladius of Rome, You have here fet downe before you, not onely the rules and practifes of the olde auncient husbands, as well Greekes as Latines, whole very orders (for the most part) at this day wee observe, and from whom (if we will confesse the truth) wee have borrowed the best knowledge and skill, that our skilfullest husbands have: but also haue ioyned heerewithall, the experience and husbandry of our owne husbands of England, as farre as eyther mine owne observations, or the experience of fundry my friends would fuffer mee. And although I have delt with many, both Graines, Plants, and Trees, that are yet strangers, and vnknowen vnto vs , I doe no whit doubt, but that with good diligence and Husbandry,

#### To the Reader.

they may in shorteime so be denized and made acquainted with our foyle, as they will profper as well as the old Inhabitants. It is not many ages agone, fince both the Peach, the Pifface, the Pine, the Cyprelle, the Walnut, the Almond, the Chery, the Figge, the Abricock, the Maske Rofe, and a great fort of others, both Trees and Plants, being some Persians, some Scythians, some Armenians, fome Italians, some French, all strangers and aliants, were brought in as nouelties amongst vs, that doe now most of them as vvell, yea, and some of them better, being planted amongst vs in England, then if they were at home. I have also beene carefull about the planting and ordering of the Vine, (though some of my friends would have had it omitted, as altogether impertinent to our countrie: because I am fully perswaded if diligence, and good husbandrie might be vsed) wee might have a reasonable good Wine growing in many places of this Realme : as vndoubtedly we had immediately after the Conquest, till partly by slothfulnetse, not liking any thing long that is paincfull, partly by Civill discord long continuing it was left, and so with time lost, as appeareth by a number of places in this Realme, that keepes still the name of Vineyards: and vpon many Cliffes and Hilles, are yet to be feene the rootes, and olde remaines of Vines. There is belides Noting ban an auncient house called Chilmell, in which house remaineth yer as an auncient monument in a great vvindow of glaffe, the whole order of planting, proyning, stamping, and pressing of Vines. Besides, there is yet also growing an olde Vine that yeelds a Grape sufficient to make a right good Wine, as year lately prowed by a Gentlewoman in the fayd House. There hath moreover good experience of late yeeres beene made, by two Noble and Honourable Barons of this Realme, the Lord Villiams of Tame, and the Lord Cobham, vvho both had growing about their houles as good Vines, as are in many places of France. And if they answere not in all points every mans expectation, the fault is rather to be imputed to the malice & difdaine peraduenture of the Frenchmen that kept them then to any ill disposition, or fault of the soyle, For where have you in any place better, or pleasanter Wines, then about Backrach, Colin, Andernach, and divers other places of Germanie, that have in manner the felfe-same latitude and dispofition

#### To the Reader.

ith

tis

ne.

the

ces

ns,

ghe

ell.

ng-

out

nds

in-

ul-

ine

nad

not

ord

by

of:

ene

ng-

eth

the

of

lds

TO:

UCT

me,

hey ther nchyle, hen s of spotion

fition of the Heavens that we have ? Belide, that the nearenelle to the South, is not altogether the causer of good Wines, appeareth in that you have about Orleans, great flore of good and excellent Wine: whereas, if you goe to Burges, two dayes journey farther to the South, you shall finde a Wine not worth the drinking. The like is (as I have heard reported by Master D. Dale, Embassadour for his Maieftie in these parts) of Paris, and Barleduke, the Towne being Southward, with noughtie Wines : the other a great waves farther to the North, with as good Wines as may be. But admit England would yeeld none to ftrong and pleasant Winesas are defired (as I am fully perswaded it would) yet is it worth the trial and travaile to have Wines of our owne, though they be the smaller: and therefore I thought it not meet to leave out of my booke the ordering and trimming of Vines. It remaineth now (good Reader) that thou take in good part my trauaile and good will, which yere chiefely employed to the pleasuring and benefiting of thee. and not to quarrell with mee, as is the manner of the most fort. for every fault and overlight that hath escaped my hands, nor to looke for any curious, or well measured stile, wherewith I am not able to fatisfie thee, and though I vvere, yet vvere it neither for the matter nor method necessary. And therefore I trust thou wile accept it as it is, specially considering, that I neither had leisure. nor quietnesse at the doing of it, neither after the doing had ever any time to ouer looke it, but was driven to deliver it to the Printer, as I first wrote it : neither was I priny to the printing, till such time as it was finished. And therefore (though there be faults, and great faults in it) I am not to be charged with them, that if time, or opportunitie had ferued, would not have fuffered them.

Farewell.

9

The Keeler.

end potential bight in a sense in the selection of the se

to the control of the

A STATE OF THE STA

the control of the second of the control of the con

The form of the second property of the second

in the line



## A Table of all fuch principal matters and

fide of the leafe is fignified by 4. and the fecond by 6.

A		Amber.	105.6
in the second second		Auens, the vertues.	182.b
A Blaqueation of vines.	78.b		
Affrica, her fertiluie.	18.4	В	
Aglius indged happy by Ap	ollo. 7.a	Bafyll.	62.6
Ambition to be moderated.	1,b	Barnacles growing out of trees,	157.2
Almond tree.	90.2		172.2
Annife.	54.b	Bees lost, their repairing.	175.2
Angelica.	65.b		168.
Angeluashe vertues.	181.a	Bees best to be bought, and how	v.167.b
Anthony the Saint, his answe	re. 4.2		
Armaracia.	56.2		176.6
Abrecocks.	92.b	Bees how to be carried.	168.4
Aruncus what.	136.b		173.b
Affe, her folling.	118.b		168.2
Affe, the stallion.	119.b	Bees expelled by smoke.	168.b
Affe, his remedie for halting.	118.b		165.2
Affe, bis ve.	118.4	Bees, plants pleasing them.	169.6
Asparagus, the berries.		Bees, plants hurtfull sothem.	170.a
Asparagus.		Bees to renine.	176.b
Axeltrees the best wood.	103.b	Bees if they breede not.	178.2
Ashes for downg.	19.b	Bees wilde, their taking.	168 a
Ashc grove.	98.4		166.2
Ashe tree.	101.2		175.b
Apple trees, how to fet.	83.b	Bees not to be removed in mi	
Apples, their kindes.	83.b	12/1/22	179.b
Apple lofts.	-	Bees in hollow trees.	168.b
Apples, their ripeneffe.	84.b	Bees how to order.	178.b
	1014277	¶ 2	Bees.

Bees must stand neere the	Mafter.	Bees harnest double.	174.2
-	169.2	Bees diseases, their preserving.	177.b
Bees, faire water.	169.b	Bees, when they begin to labour.	
Bees attendance all the yeere.	178.b	Beesreft.	166.2
Bees hunted by hornets.	178.5	Bee the old mafter, what to doe	. 176.4
Bees hurt by Eccho.	178.6	Beethe mafter diners in one him	
Bees, smoke good for them.	178.b	Bees, their pallaces.	165.2
Bees, to keepe from Butterflies		Bees, their government.	165.2
Bees, what hurts them.	169.2	Bees the Master, his making.	167.b
Bees, what doth them good.	178.b	Bees common wealth.	165.2
Bees, hurt Elme flowres.	177.b	Bee the Master restrained.	172.b
Bees, burt by fourge.	177.b	Bees to make.	175.a
Bees, better the Valley than t		Bees their standing.	166.b
	169.2	Bees removed for foode.	180.2
Bees to heale their diseases.	177.b	Boare and Bull common.	122.b
Bees their age.	176.2	Beets.	54.b
Bees clensing the hines.	178.b	Betony.	183.2
Bees sickenesse, the tokens.	177.b		183.a.b
Bees idle , their punishment.	166.b	Birch. 97.2 C	-101.2
Bees haruest or drining.	173.2	Bizontes.	1;0.4
Bees to drive, what smoake.	173.b	Borrage.	58.b
Bees meat.	169.b	Bullockes, their fatting.	123.b
Bees seuerall labours. 166.b.c	£ 167.a	Bulloskes, how to buy. 121.	a. & b.
Bees, the Master, where		Bullockes, their shape.	121.2
	₹173.a	Buffes. /200	130.4
Bees swarming time.	188.b	Bullockes, their foode.	123.b
Bees hatching.	176.b	Bullockes halting remedie.	126,b
Bees their watch.	166,2	Bullockes ill digestion.	125.b
Bees, the taking of the coame.	s. 171.b	Bullocks bitten with a mad do	7. 127.2
Bees, the drones,	167.2	Bullockes hidebound. 127.	b.129.2
Bees, roming away, to restrain	e. 171.b	Bullockes feuer, the cure.	126.b
Bees, roming away, the signes.	172.2	Bullockes ache in the synewes.	127.2
Bees, their industrie.	. 165.2	Bullockes mangers.	123.2
Bees, how to finde.	168.b	Bullockes their hoones worne.	127.2
Bees their winter food.	171.b	Bullockes; the flix.	126.2
Bees angry, to appeale.	174.2	Bullockes, to preserve them.	123.2
Bees, the breeders.	167.2	Bullockes mannie.	127.2
			Bullockes

	-		
Bullockes fores mattring.	127	a Cammel ingendring with	Bores. 120.a
Bullockes beele, hurt.	127	.a Corne fields and Vineya	rd compared.
Bullockes hoofe, hurt.	127		74.b
Bullockes watring.	124	a Caution in buying of land.	44.2
Bullockes pasturing.	124		115.b
Bullocke, the taile.	126	a Courtiers, their gorgeous	miferie. 7.2
Bullocke the Cough.	126	a Colmorts, the seede for oy	le. 53.b
Bullocke horo to fetter.	123.	b Colworts crompled.	54.2
Bullocke, the murrine.	124.	b Chalke vsed for doung.	19.6
Buliockes lung-licke.	128.	a Candels of trees.	104.2
Bullockes, the yellowes.	128.	Coales of wilde Oake.	103.4
Bullockes liner sicke.	128.	Coales of Iuniper.	102.b
Bullockes, the blaine.	129.	a Coales, what wood to be	made of.
Bullockes the sprenges.	129.		104.2
Bullockes, the staggers and	the dasie	. Carotes.	56.b
- 88	129.	Chee e of huge bignesse.	139.b.
Bullockes pissing blood, the	panteyes	, Cheese parmasin.	139.6
taynt, and gargife.	129.	Cheese not to be made of	
Bullockes, for all discases.	129.6		ps. 139.b -
Blackthorne floures, the vertu	es. 180.b	Chestnuts.	90.b
Balme, the vertues.	180.b	Catoes answere touching	breeding.
Bugloffe.	58.b		106.b
Beane, the straw, and the offa	dl. 31.b	Catoes Oracle.	14.6
Beech wheat.	29.b	Cabtedge.	53.b
Beech groue.	96.a		87.b
Beech.	97.2	Cordum, a kinde of Hay.	43.b
Bull, common.	121.b	Coryander.	54.b
Bull, his making.	121.6	Cornell tree.	88.6
Birdlime, the making.	105.2	Cresinus, his diligence.	44.2
Baytree.	89.b	Cucumber.	59.b
C		Cumyn.	54.b
		Cypresse.	102.b
Cammell of Arabie.	120.2	Cyrus King , nurced by Ski	epheards.
Cammell of Bactria.	120.2		107.2
Cammell, her foaling.	120.2	Cytifus.	36.2
Cammelleopard.	120.b		161.6
Cammels ingender backward.	120.2	Cattell, their breaking.	123.2
		<b>9</b> 3	Cattell
		9 3	Cattell

XUM

Cattell keeping and tyllage, the	eir fellow-	Dogges, their kindes.	146,2
Ship.	106.4	Dogges kind to be regarded.	146.b
Cattell keeping, the antiquitie	and wor-	Dogges of wonderfull price.	145.b
thinesse. 106	.b107.2	Dog ges diseases, and remedies.	148.2
Coltes their handling.	112.b		147.b
Corke tree	103.2	Dog ges , their lytures	147.2
Corke grove.	6.a & b		161.2
Corne-floore.	12.2	Dones, to keepe from the Han	oke.
Com barraine.	121.2		161.b
Cow, ber age.	121.4	Dones, their foode.	161.2
Cow, her making.	121.2	Dones, their foes. 161	1.a o b
Com, her calning.	122.2	Dones, their price.	159.b
Cockes, their choife.	150.2	Doues, their kindes.	160,2
Cocke, a mooner to repentant	e. 150.a	Dones, to allure them to the	bonfe.
Calues, their gelding.	122.b		161,8
Capons their making.	153.2	Dones young, their feeding.	160.b
Cardiaca, his vertues.	183.2	Doung, the forts.	18,b
Cardus Benedictus, the verts		Doung new, best for meadowes.	19.2
Chickins hatched without the		Doung old, best for Corne grow	
1988	151.2	Doung best, the masters foote.	
Chickins diseases, and remedi		Doung for Vines.	19.2
Creffes.	55.2	Dounghill.	12.b
	•	Dwellinghouse.	10.2
D			
Date trees.	93.à	E	
Damsons.	92.2	Elme.	97.b
Dyll.	54.b	Elme, his ve.	104.2
	7.2173.2	Eldar.	101.2
Dog ge the Starre, his rifung.	179.2	Elecampany.	61.b
Dog ges, toridde them of Tick		Emperours of Neathards.	107.2
Dog ge for the house.	146.2	Endine.	53.2
Dogge for the fold.	146,2	Eg ges, their forts.	153.b
Dog ge his age.	147.2	Egges, to be hatched.	150.b
Dog ges madde, the tokens.	148.2	Egges how to choose.	151.b
	147.2	Egges kept from thunder.	151.b
Dog ges tayle, the cutting.		1	-
Dog ges tayle, the cutting.		Fre of the Master fats the	Horle.
Dog ges tayle, the cutting. Dog ges, their feeding. Dog ges colours.	147.b 146.b	Eye of the Master, fats the	Horse.

6.a 6.b 5.b 8.a 7.b 7.a

baabbabbb. ax.

(UM

F	- tayes	Graffing, diners forts.	69.a
Flax.	37.	10 0 11	runewards.
Firre trees, their ofe. 98	3.b.101.	a lateral	71.2
Flowre gentle.	63.	a Gelliflowers.	63.b
Filbert.	89.	Gourdes,	60,2
Fruitfulne [e of diners countre	ies. 18.	H	1 34
Figgetree.	102.b		65.b
Fennell.	54.6		re. 16.2
Fenugreeke.	34.b	Husbandmen most happy.	. 7.2
Fodder for Cattell.	35.2		mperours.
Fish delighting in mud.	164.	Place IlliniVellation	5.b
Fift delighting in gravell.	164.b	Husbandry, nurse of all othe	r sciences.
Fishponds their sundry sorts.	146.2		6.2
Fishponds, where best.	163.b	Husbandry cosin-germane to	Wisdome.
Fishponds.	163.a		6.b
Fry.	164.b		6,2
G		Husbandry, her antiquitie.	5.b
Garlicke.	57.b	Husbandry pleaseth God.	6.b
Galles.	105.2	Husbandry no base trade.	6.6
Garners.	40.b	Holly, the tree.	103.2
Goose pennes, their standing.	155.a	Hony coames, what fashion.	173b
Goose liner of great bignesse.	156 a	Hony coames.	166.b
Goose, her hatching.	155.b	Happy, who is.	7.b
Goose, their fatting.	156,2	Harnest for Oates,	39.2
Garden hearbes, the sowing.	50.2	Harnest of Hempe.	39.2
Garden the standing.	51.b	Harnest of Wheat.	39.2
Garden, what mould best.	49.8	Harnest of Rie.	39.2
Garden, dunging and digging.	49.b	Harnest of Rapeseed.	38.b
Gardens of great antiquitie.	45.b	Harnest of Winter Barley.	39.2
Garden a shambles.	46.2	Harnest of all other Corne an	d Pulse.
Gardenwithout water.	47.4	. which is the same of	39.2
Garden ill, declares an enill h		Hempe.	37.b
A STATE OF THE STA	46.2	Hartichocks.	61.2
Garden, when to water.	47.b	Heavens, their state for the gro	
Graffing.	69.2	Heavens, their state for plant	ing and
Graffing, the season.	70.4	forming.	51.2
Graffing, a new way.	71.4	Horses age, how to know.	110.b .
	- 1	54	Horse

Horse loneth troubled water	. 114.b	Horses clothes.	115.b
Horse his propartion.	114.a	Horse lesse hurt by drawing th	
Horse broken winded.	117.b	ring.	113.2
Horse for saking his meate, th		Horses wallowing, hole ome.	115.b
11	4.a & b.	Horse hot, not to be watered.	116,6
Horse halting, the remedie.	116	Horse cold, to have.	115.2
Horses their colours.	110.2	Horse how to chose.	109.2
Horses, the Cratches.	116.a	Horse suddenly sicke, the cure.	
Horses foundring.	116,b		a ob
Horses gald.	116,2	Hey cutting.	43.a
Horse described by Virgill.	109.6	Hey, when to cut.	43.a
Horse windgals.	116.2	Husbands bestowing of time.	2.b
Horseto bein health.	115.b	Husbandry commended.	5.a
Horse pronoked to stale.	115.a	Hog ge sicke, the signes.	143.2
Horsetyred, the remedie.	115.a	Hog ge melled.	144.2
Horse having wormes, the		Hog ge found, their tokens.	143.2
remedie.	117.a	Hogges their breaming and	
Horse, to keepe from Flies.	117.a	ing.	142.2
Horse, when to be broken.	112.6	Hog ge sicke of the Quinsey,	
Horses feete, the cure.	116.b	Kernels.	143.2
Horse his rhume, the cure.	116.b	Hogges, their gelding.	142.b
Horse mangie.	117.b	Hogge, the fener.	143.2
Horse the vines.	116.b	Hogges, their herbes.	141.2
Horse pained in the belly.	117.2	Hogs diseases, & the remedies.	
Horse, how long he lines.	111.a	Hogges lung-sicke, remedie.	143.4
Horse, holesome to tranaile.	115.2	Hogges sicke of the milt.	143.2
Horsing of Mares, the time.	111.2	Hog ges turne-ficke.	143.b
Horses watring.	114.b	Hooges made to the horne.	141.b
Horses gelding.	113,2	Hedge dead.	48.a
Horses currying.	113.b	Hedge quicke preferd.	48.a
Horse, his ordering after to		Hedge quicke, Sundry wayes	
7.25	· 115.a	king. The are started of	48.b
Horse his prouender.	114.2	Hennes for broode, their choise	. 149.6
Horse his skowring.	113.6	Hennes how long in hatching.	151.2
Horses generall remedies.	"Ti6.2	Hennes house, the standing.	154.2
	# 117.b	Hennes, how long in sitting.	150.b
Horfes Stables.	1132	Homes their feeding. 153	
2 1.074	2.6		Hennes

	1 110 1	and the	
Hennes how to fatte.	153.		63:2
Hennes must have dust.	153.b	Land, what it requires.	43.b
Hennes, what Egs to fet unde	r.150.b	Land, neighbourhood to	beregarded.
Hennes to keepe from sitting.	150.b		44.2
Hennes the number to a Cock	e. 150.a	Land the degrees.	16,b
Hearbesfor pleasure & beau	tie.60.b	Land good, the tokens.	17.a
Hearbewhat for pastures.	42.b	Liquirize.	59.2
Hippomanes.	111.2	Letife.	52.2
Horda, what.	121.2	Lettuzins, asiarname.	46.2
Hysope.	62.b		33.4
Hony of the Heath.	174.b	Leekes.	57-2
Hony making.	175.b	Lyndtree.	104.4
Hony the kindes.	174.b	Lecherie, what hurt to the	body. 137.a
Hony the best.	175.2		toon I is
Hony how corrupted.	175.a	M	STAR "
Hill how to plow.	20.2	1	103.2
Hines of Bees.	166.b	Maple bordes.	104.2
Hines the entry small.	167.a	Marioram.	62.b
Hues fedde with birdes.	179.2	Moowes for Corne.	12.b
Hines their mouthes.	179.b	Mallow.	58.4
Hines decayed, their repairing.	175.2		171.4
	1010	Melcan.	140,2
I		Mellones.	59.b
Implaistring.	71.a	Mellon pompeons.	59.b
Inoculation.	71.2	Medlar.	86.a
Instruments of Husbandry.	11.2	Mares, whether they should	becovered
Italy, why called the Orchard.	18.2	yeerely.	112.2
Italy, why so called.	121.a	Mares with Foale, how to 2	fe. 112.b
Iuniper	102,6	Mares time of Foaling.	112.b
Ioab.	107.2	Mares conceauing by the win	nde.111.b
Impes their remouing.	73.2	Mescelin.	31.2
Imagesthat sweat.	102.b	Meddow, new to make.	42.b
K	-	Meddowes, why so called.	41.b
Kitchin.	II.b	Meddowes, their ordering.	42.a
King.	115.b	Mowles to catch and destroy	. 66.b
L	1130	Mast, what.	97.2
Larsh.	101.p	Mast the difference.	97.a Ø b
6728			Maft,

XUM

Maft, the vie. 97	b Of Horfes. 108.2
Mastholme grove. 90	a Of Colmortes. 53.2
Milke blacke. 138	
Milke, totrie. 138	
Milke, the ordering. 139	
Milke, the difference. 138	a Of Dogges. 145.b
Milke, the whey.	
Milke to purge Melancholy, and	
other humours. 138	
Milke to purgethe Dropfie. 138	
	b Of Cats.
Milke to loofe the belly. 138	.b Of Hennes. 149.b
Moone observed in sowing. 5	.a Of Pot hearbes. 51.a
Moone observed in dounging. 4:	a Of Gardens. 49.b
Mynt. 62	.b Of Turkie-cockes. 158.a
Myllet. 31	.a Of Milke. 138.a
Mulbery tree. 88	la Of Pulse. 31.b
Mulbery the wifest tree. 88	3.a Of Hony. 174.a
Moiles, their colonor119	a Of Harnest. 38.b
Moiles doe breed.	a Of Moyles. 119.2
	i.b Of Sheepe. 130.2
Mosse to destroy. 43	a Of Shepheards. \$44.b
Mustard seede. 55	b Of Egges. 153.b
	.2 Of Peacockes, 157.2
N	Of Blood letting. 118.2
Nauens. 50	b Of Orchards. 66.b
Neatheards made Emperours. 10;	.a Of fatting of Swine, salting, and pre-
Neighbourhood. 8.b. 44	b. Seruing of Bacon. 144.2
0	Of Seedes, and their forts. 50.b
Of chusing of ground.	5.a Of Dounging. 18.b
	b Of Swine. 140.4
Of Duckes. 15	S.a Of Woods. 59.b
Of Bees. 16	3.2 Of good Ground. 17.2
Of Geefe. 154	b Of Wheat. 25.2
Of Plowing. 20	0.2 Of Turtle-dones. 162.2
Of Affes. 11	3.2 Of the Baily of Husbandry. 13.2
Of Bullockes. 120	b' Of the Ume. 74.2
	Orenge

O du sin Lamina	87.b	Plants, their dinersitie.	4
Orenge alwayes bearing.	88.2		72.6
Orenges, their planting.	81.5		70.2
Oline grape.			101.2
Oke groue, the planting.	96.b	1-1.9.	98.6
Oke of a wonderfull bignesse.	97.4		101.2
Oke his vse.	104.2		98.b
	103.2	1 00	
Oline ripe, the tokens.	82.2		58.b
Oline wilde.	103.2		92.2
Oline gatherers law.	83.2		92.2
Order, his commoditie.	11.b	1	27.b
Oysters.	164.b		150,2
Oyster ponds.	164.6		86.b
Tyle, the making.	<b>8</b> 3.a		
		graines.	87.2
P		Peares red.	85.2
Panicle.	30.b	Peare tree, his planting.	85.2
Parsnep.	56.b	Peares, how to keepe.	85.b
Patriarches, shepheards.	107.2	Pearetree.	85.2
Plowing.	20.2	Penygrasse, his vertues.	181.b
Plowing, the Season.	21.2	Pastures.	43.b
Plowing in the night.	21,6	2	P. 16.20
Plow, his parts.	20.2	Quailes.	162.b
Poppey 37.b.6	55 b	Quince tree.	85.b
Peach tree.	924	Quinces, when to be gathered.	86.2
Peach with an Almond curnell.	69.b	Quinces, how to keepe them.	86.2
Pestilence in Cattell, whereof.	124.b	Quicksets, their planting.	48.2
Perfley.	54.b	Quickset.	48.2
Puch tree. 98.1	0.90.2	Quaile, mother.	166.b
Pimpernell.	62.b	R	4
Pine tree.	98.b	Radish, his vse.	55.b
Pistaces.	89.4	Rammes, which to be bought.	130.b
Pitch.	98.b		ac b
Plants prospering with cursing.	52.2	Rape haruest.	38.b
Plants prospering by theft.	52.a	Rape of great bignesse.	28.b
Planting, the Moone observed.	70.2	Raperoote.	28.b
Plantes steeped.	72,b	Radifi of great bignesse.	55.b
	9		Radish

XUM

Radish roote.	55.b.	Sheepe, what number to be kep	t.131.a
Remedie against Gnattes.	66.a	Sheepes tailes, of wonderfull	
Remedie against Wynels.	41.2	01 1 1 1 1	130.b
Remedie against Catterpillers.	66.a	Sheepes legs broken, the cure	136.a
Rozin.	105.a	Sheepe yeerely to be drawen.	130.b
Reazins small,	59.a	Sheepe, their winde perished.	136.a
Romulus nurced by shepherds		Sheepe haning the fener.	135.b.
Roje.	64.4	Sheepe, their great encrease.	130.a
Rosemarie.	62.a	Sheepe, their forts.	130.b
Raspis.	59.2	Sheepe, to keepe in health.	135.0
Rem.	52.a	Sheepe, the fould.	135.b
Rennet for Cheefe.	139.1	Sheepe skabby chind.	135.b
Raking.	24.3	Sheepe their feeding. 131.	b 133.a
Rye.	26,2	Sheepe, their lambing time.	131.b
Rye harnest.	39.a	Sheepe, the minrem.	136.a
Rich, how.	7.6	Sheepe skabby.	135.b
Ryce.	30.b	Sheepe coates.	133.b
3	1000	Sheepe shearing, the time.	134.b
Swan.	171.b	Shepheards refemblance with	
Saffron.	61.b.	1.02	107.4
Sauorie.	62.b	Shepheards care in feeding.	T33.2
Setterwort, and his ofe. 65.b	-	Singes for Fift.	163.b
1001	125.4	Sage.	162.4
Sermants their looking to.	14.2	Sow farrowing, her age.	142,a
Servants health to be regarded.		Sommer feedes.	24.b
Sauine.	66,a	Seedes, their comming up.	50.b
Sallets.	46.a	Seedes, what for every groun	
Sorell.	45.a	Seedes, the choile.	· 23.b
Sauce of Apples.	84.6	Sowing, the order.	2 3.b
Sauce of Peares.	85.a	Sowing, the season.	24.b
Sheepe pild.	134.b	Seminoyle.	31.2
Smalladge.	54.b	Sefamum.	31.2
Sellars.	12.4		86.b
Sellars and Larders.	12,3	1 - 1 - 1 - 1	103.2
Sheep sicke of the lungs, the cur		Solitarie life, his vie.	2.2
Sheepes cough, the cure.	136.2		54.2
Sheepe, their time of blo foming	7.121.h	Sponge.	51.b
Carela hara tames to a llouming		1018	Sperie.
			Dper it.

-	r uc 1	able.	
Sperie. Some, foure moneths with Pig Swine-sties, their standing. Shepheards of Switzerland. Sheepe delight in Musicke. Sheepe, few, and well fedde. Sheepe, of what age, and how	36.b 142.b 142.a 145.a 133.b	Trees removed, their standing Trees helped with wrine. Trees, the trimming of their real trees their fat. Trees to save from Mistes. Trees sicke, the remedy. Trees, their sless. Trees, their sless. Trees, their sless.	95.4
Sheepe, kept abroad.	14.2		67.4
Sheepe, when to buy.	131.2	97	s. 67.b
Sheepe conered.	134.b		95.2
Sheep having swallowed a Hor			e. 95.2
his cure.	136.a		g. 94.a
Scabions, the vertues.	181.b	Trees foung, their proying. Trees standing Sawtyer wise. Trees standing Checker wise.	94.b 68.b 68.b
Tymber for building.	103.b	Trees their bowes.	104.b
Tymber for pumpes , and water		Trees , their order for graf	
103.b. &	104.2	planting.	70.2
Trees, the North side mosty.	100.b	Trees, their blood.	104.
Trees of knowledge, why creates		Trees launced.	49.b
Tree foreshewing his fall.	103.2	Trees, their feede plot.	72.b
Tree neuer without fruit.	86.a		.b.69.2
Tree the wifest.	88.2	Trees their dounging.	93.b
	100.b		b.94.b
Trees how to keepe from wormes	12	Trees their lone.	92.b
Trees springing best of the seede		Trees their remoning.	94.b
Trees soone growen, the fruit	lasteth	Trees their veines.	104.b
not.	93.b	Trees their wennes.	103.4
Trees graffed in the stocke.	70.b	Trees their shadowes. 69	2.94.2
Trees graffed betwixt wood and	rinde.	Tymber for Plowes.	103.b
8 2	69.2	Tymber for water workes.	104.2
Trees whereon to be graffed.	69.b	Tymber for bowes.	104.2
Trees when to be proined.	94.b	Tymber for Bordes, for Axeltr	ees, for
Trees foring flowly of the feed.	89.2	Haftes and Handles, for Ga	
Trees alwayes greene.	67.b	Lances, for Tables, Shippes	, Tar-
Trees to be pulled.	99.b	gets, Sheathes, Pullies, a	and for seames.

3.1.2 30.b 33.0.b 33.0.

UM

Beames. 103.2.6.b	.104.2	W	
Tenants changing, not good		Wormewood.	65.b
labour more to be regard	ed then	Wood for Cuppes.	104.2
their rent, their ordering.	45.2	Winter graine the best.	27.2
Thrusbes.	162.b		
Imajors.		Wheat fifteene dayes in blade	na 262
v joi		in flowre, and fifteene in ripi	
Veronica, his vertues.	182.a	Willow grones.	99.2
	105.6	Willow his vie.	103.b
Vernish.		Willow the kindes.	103.b
Vine plants, which, and how		Wood cutting, the season.	100.2
their keeping, their length. 77		Woods coppised.	99.6
Vine plants, their planting.	77.a 78.b	Woods coppised their severing	
Vine, bis easie busbandry.		Woods for Mast.	97.2
Vintage.	77.a	Wood greatly cherished by	
Vineyard Stony.	76.a	manes.	96.2
Vine the plucking of his leanes.	80.2	Woods wilde, their fruits.	96.2
Vine his propping.	80.a	VV heat haruest.	39.2
Vine his first plant.	74.a	Wheat the kindes.	25.b
Vine his wonderfull encrease.	74.b	Wheat and the Vine flowre	
Vines but late in Germanie.	75.a		26,2
Vines yoked.	75.b	Wine of Apples.	84.2
Vines guttered.	75.b	Wine of Peares.	85.6
Vines mingled, not to be planted		Walnut tree, his vie.	103.2
Vines how to stand.	76.b	Walnut tree foresbeweth his fa	1. 103.2
Vines planted, their ordering.	75.b	Wooles the best.	134.2
Vines how to be dunged.	78.b	Water Betony, his vertues.	183.2
Vines, his friendship and hatr	ed with		1 2
certaine trees.	75.b	Y	
Vine when to plant.	77.2	Yew tree, his vie.	104.2
Vine his graffing.	77.a		-0
Vine who first found	74.b	Z	
Vinewhen he flowreth. 26.28			27.b
		Ziziphos.	89.a

Finis Tabulæ.

## *৽৻৻ঽ৽৽৻৻ঽ৽৽৻৻ঽ৽৽৻৻ঽ৽৽৻৻ঽ৽৽৻৻ঽ৽৽৻৻ঽ৽৽৻*

## The names of such Authours, and

Husbands, whose authorities and obseruations are vsed in this Booke.

#### The Bible, and Doctors of the Church.

Aristotle. Hesiodus. Varro.
Aristophanes Hippocrates. Varro.
Athenæus. Homer. Vegetius.
Anatolius. Horace. Virgill.
Alexander Aphrod. Isocrates. Vitruuius.
Alexander Neap. Iulius Firmicus. Xenophon.

Appulcus. Iulius Pollux.

5.b 4.a

7.2

6.2

9.**a** 3.b 3.b

o.a

o.a

7.2

0-

5.2

5,2

9.2

d.i

er.

5.2

.2

b

.2

.2

-2

.2

a

.b

.2

Ægineta. Lucian. Englishmen. S. Nich, Malbee. Ælianus, Macer. Martiall. M. Cap. Bingham. Budzus. Mathiolus. Cato. M. John Somer. M. Nical. Yetzwert. Nicander. Cardanus. Oppian. M. Fitzherbert. Cassianus. M. Will. Lambert. Quid.

Cellus, Ouid. M. Will. L. Columella. Petrus de Crefc. M. Tuffer.

Constantine. Plato. M. Thom. Wherenhall.
Democritus. Platina. M. Rich. Deering.

Didymus, Both the Plinies M. Hen. Brockhull.

Dio. Plutarch, M. Franklin,

Diofcorides. Polibius. H. King.
Diodorus Siculus. Ruellius. Richard Andrewes.

Faccius.
Florentine.

Galen.

Heliodorus.

Kichard Andrewes.

Henry Denys.

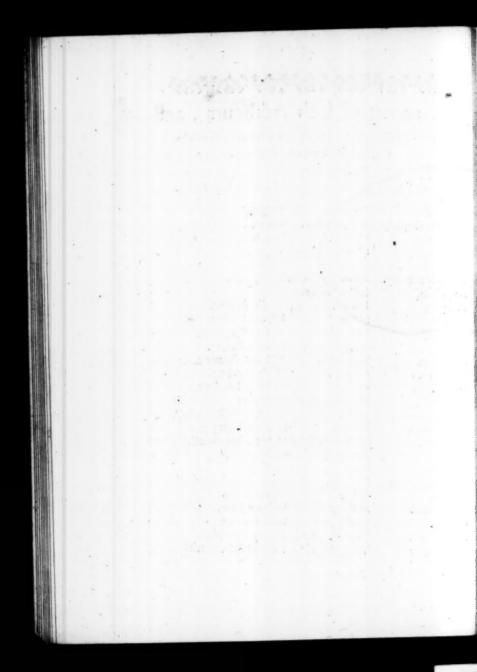
William Prat.

Theocritus.

Theophraftus.

Phillip Partridge.

Heliodorus. Theophrastus, Phillip Partridge,
Herodotus. Thucydides. Kenworth Datforth.





## The first Booke of Husbandry:

Entreating of Earable-ground, Tillage and Pasture.

Cono. Rigo. Metella. Hermes.

CONO.

thinketh I heare a neighing and trampling of Hories without, goe Hermer, go know what trangers there are.

HERMES. Sir, if my fight faile me not,it is Rigo, the principall Secretary.

METELLA. A goody matter, scarce you have beene two bapes at home, and now you must be sent for agains to the Court, perhaps to be sent abroad in some embassage.

CONO. God fozbid : judge the belt, it may be he comes

to le me of curteffe and friendhip.

RIGO. Ah maister Cono. I am glad I have found you in the midst of your country pleasures: surely you are a happy man, that thisting your selfe from the turmoiles of the Court, can picke out so quiet a life, and giving over all, can secretly lie hid in the pleasant Countries, suffering vs in the meane time to be tost with the cares and businesse of the common weale.

CONO. Surely I must confesse I have taken a happy way, if these gods of the Earth loon's suffer me to eniop such happy nelle, that have bequeather the troublesome life of the Court

### The first Booke, entreating

to the bottome of the fea. But what? Doe you intend to bring me againe to my old troubles, being thus happily discharged.

Rico. Cothing leffe, though I would be bery glad pou thould not fo ballily forlake the Court nor ris vour felfe from the affaires of the Common wealth. Dou know we are not borne to live to our felnes not at our otone pleafures: but for our couns try our Tommon-weales fate whereto we are called. There cannot be a worfe thing then for a man to fuffer bis Country forfaken, to come into the bands of villanous perfons, and to retorce with himselfe, that being out of Gunshot, be hath left the burly burly of gonernement. And though Cato had no need of

Rome pet Rome and Caro his friends hab neete of him.

Lucullus

Scipio.

Cicero.

CONO. I grant pop, as long as peres and frencth will beare it, we are bound to ferue in our bocation: but as you pour felfe are brinen to confelle, there is fometime a reasonable cause of ois uing over. Lucullus is highly commended, that while his body was frong a lufty, he applyed bimfelfe wholy to the feruice of his country, that after his honozable fernice both abzoad and at bome, in the end be got himfelle quietly againe to his boke. And Scipio, who after he hab conquered both Carthage Numidia. Ings content rather to leave of a reft himfelfe, then to bo as Marius bio, who after fo many bidozics and atchinco honours could net content himfelfe when he was wel, but puft by with bnmeafure able defire of glosy & government, would in his old age contend. with yong men : whereby be brought himfelfe at the length to moft miferable miferie. Surely Cicero toke a better may by much, when after the overthrow of Catelins confutracy, be rather contented himfelfe to line quietly at home, then by ambitious ins. termetoling with the contentions of the Common-wealth, to being himfelf in danger of his life. The befire of bearing rule in. a common-weate, is to be moderated with a bounded modellie, forcialibin this age of ours when Courts are fubied to fuch enmics:hatrebs flatteries flanbers couetous e ambitious belires, and where no place is left for bertuoulnes & Christian Emplicit tie. Thele are the things that brone Socrates & Plato from their common-weales, too like wife keepe me, being now of good percs. and fickely, the Court for faken, in this my poze cottage at home. RIGO.

α

ıu

18

to

ne.

re

he

of

rè

lfe

Tie.

שם

of

at

nD:

25

us

10

to.

by

er

ina.

to

in.

ie.

m

ES.

icto

ctr

CB.

ne.

R 1 G O. Pea, but age is no inflicient excule for you to leave the governing of your Country. You know, see year party by the labour of young men a the counfell of old men, and how those common-weales are safetiest alwayes guided, where old mens heads, and young mens armes are thering. Father Nestor got great commendation so; his counsell at the siege of Nestor, they where as Peicus and Lacrees were despited and accompated so; bench-whistiers at bome.

CONO. Some are tickled with glory: some with gaine, gifts, a rewards, retaine the cockrowen Courtiers, yea such as have one of their feet already in the grane. Pow if we would content our selves with this life, a give our selves to the true a perfect life.

In Princes Courts we should not gape nor gafe,
Nor ill succelle in suces should vexe our minde:
No vaine nor fond deuse our eyes should dase,
Nor lewd affection should our fancie blinde.
All such things should be left and layd aside,
Now lives also each out of order quite:
And to our shame the time away doth side.

All fecke to live, but none to live vpright.

As the Post excellently well writeth in his Epigram, it were
the part of a mad man, or a corcombe, to run headlong without
any profit into banger, when as he may live gooly a quictly at
home without all trouble, as our olde fathers were wont to boe.

Rigo. It is very true: the Poet accompleth him bledes to whom this life can happen. But in the means time you are alone, and lead your life with bealts, lowers of the Country, and true, that have spent all your time before among wife and homourable personages. Socrates affirmeth wisedome to be lear. Socrates, ned in Lities, and not among bealts and trues.

CONO. Socrates his indgement, though I will not gainelay, pet it appeareth by his disputations with lichomachus in Xenophon, that he did not disalow the Country mans life. And as for my living alone, it almost hapneth here to me, as Cicero reporteth Scipio to say, that he was never less alone, then when he was alone: so, being alone, I have continual conference with the granuss a wife wifest men: so, either I apply my selfe wholp to the sacred

12

Dracles

### The first Booke, entreating

The vie of a

Dracles of the Brophets and Apolites, who teach the true wife Dome by which both Times rule, and Bamers gonerne, and by which our foules (which we chiefely ought to regar a) are fen. which also thoin wito be the perfect way to that everlaffing Court above: or toben 3 lift, 3 have the company of the great tell Dainces and Monarchies of the world, with whom I conferre of the boubtfull Bate & government of Common weales. in reading the Diffozies and Chronicles of the world, travels ling as it were, throughout all nations, or reading the workes of fuch as write in hulbandrie, 3 occupie mp minde in the behale bing the homberfull workemanthip of God in Trees, Dlants. and Bealls, whereby in the Creature, Jacknowledge the Creatos. And befites thefe bambe companions, mp friends come fometimes to fe me, fometimes Gentlemen, fometime Roble men, fometime the Dainee himfelfe bouchfafeth to bifit mee : to that there is frarcely any bay but that fome come buto me, fome for their pleafure, fome for and-will, & fome for their buffe nelle:for to my friends and my neighbours, I neither beny my counsel, not my travel. Therefore it is bery expedient that and choile be mabe of Lawiers, volleret men for the Countrie, ale wayes proutes, they give their counfell free a without wages. Many times befide you from the Court lend me bither processe and arbitrements to be tried before me. Thus have I in the Countrie Coeter and pleafanter company then you have either in the Court oz Citie.

Rigo. Tell me then I before you, how you before your time, and how you are occupied all the day, for I doubt not but you doe as much as in you lieth to frend the time as profitably

as pou map.

CONO. I will tell you throughly, and not diffemble with you, if you will give me the hearing, and to begin, I will ble the words and veries of the forelate Poet, though in other his writings fcarce hones, yet in this speaking very grave e wile.

First served on knees the Maiestie divine,

My feruants next and ground I ouerlooke:
To every man his taske I doe affigne,
When this is done, I get me to my booke.

offe.

bp.

CD.

inα

ca.

ons.

CB.

rela

ICS.

e loc

ts,

res

me

ice.

: 3

ne.

ilie.

np

da al

ts.

ffe

be er

ur uť

ilp

th

Se

ſe.

is .

Tife commonly to rife firft of all mpfelfe, fpecially in Some mer . when we lofe the healthfullest a sweetest time with fluggifbneffe, Ariftotle accounteth earely rifing the belt , both for health wealth a ftubie. In the winter if 3 be loath to rife if eve ther the bufcafonabienes of the weather, or fickeres cause mets kiene my beo. I commit all to my Steware, whole faith & bille gence 7 am fure of whom 3 have fo well intruded, that 3 map fafely make him my deputie : 3 haue alfo Euriclia my maio, fo faiffull in bufwifery, that the may well be my wines fuffragan. thefe twaine we appoint to supply our places: but if the weather and timeferne, I play the workemafter my felfe. And though 3 have a baplife as failfull as may be, pet remembring the old fave ing that the best boung for the field is the Pasters fot, the best The best provender for the horfe the Patters eye, I play the overfer my doung for felfe. That it is holfome to rife earely, 3 am perfwaced both by ground is the counfel of the most grave Philosophers, and by mure owne the matter experience. Withen my fernants are all fet to worke, and enery foot. man as boffe as may be, 3 get me into my closet to ferue God. and to read the holy Scriptures: (for this order Faiwaves hieve. to appoint my felfe every dap mp talke, in reading fome part ei ther of the old Eeftament oz of the Acio:) that Bone. I write er rest fuch things as I thinke most neoful or dispatch what buffe neffe to ener I have in my boufe, or with futers abroad. A little before pinner I walke abroad, if it be faire, either in my garben. or in the fields, if it be forde in my galery: when I come in. I find an eage, a chicke, a vecce of kid, or a vecce of beale, fith, butter, and fuch like as my foldes, my parde or my bairp and filhponds will pelo: fometime a fallat, or fuch fruits as the garben or orchard both beare : which viduals without any charges my wife pronibeth me, wher with I content my felfe af wel, as if I had the bains tieft dill in Curope : I neuer lightly fit abone one houre at my meat: after binner I valle the time with talking with my wife. my fernants, or if I have any with my ghelfs: I rife & walke as bout my ground, where I view mp worke men, mp Waltures, ing Pedolves,my Come, and my Cattell. When I am in the Countrie, I goc enery day, if the weather be god, and no other great bufineffe, about mp ground: if not every bar at the leaft 23 onec

#### The first Booke, entreating once in two or three daves as often as I come to the Citie from

the Countrie. I one the like, to unberstand bo w my ground is bul banded, and tobat is done, what bodone: neither do Tever go about it, but some good commeth of my travaile. In the meane while I behold the wonderfull wifedome of Pature, and the ine comprehensible working of the most mighty God in his creat tures, which as Cicero truly affirmeth, is the belicateft food of the quell,lib I. Soule. the thing that maketh bs come nerell bnto God. Dere waich I with my felfe, the benefits and wonderfull weakes of God, who bringeth forth graffe for the Cattell, & grone bearbe for the ble of man, that he may bring food out of the earth, accor-

Pfal. 104.

Academ.

bing to the Blaime. Bere be preacheth to me. The fruitfull Earth that tild in fundry wife, vnto the eye her goodly fruits dorh yeeld : The Violets sweet that each where thicke doe rife. and staine with purple die the pleasant field. The field with hearbes, the hearbes with branches brave. The glittering flowers that thine like starres of light, And springing fast disclose the grace they have,

Each hearbe with fundry flowre most sweet in fight. Withat weakeman is there in the world, that is able to frame or counterfeit fuch heavenly works. Witho could of a flender graffe make Wheat or Bread, and of a tender twigge bring forth fo no. ble a licour as Whine; but only that mighty Lozo that bath creas ted al things visible a invisible - Whith these sights bo I recreate mp minde, and give thanks buto God the Treatoz and conferuer or all things, for his great and exceeding godnes, I fing the fong, To thee. D Lozo, belongeth praifes in Sion, oz, Braile thou the Lozd Dmp foule, ec. befeiting Dod to bleffe the gifts that he bath given be , through his bounteous liberalitie, to enrich the Fields, and to profeer the Come and the Graffe, and that he wil crowne the vere with his plent coulnelle, that we may enter the fruits of the earth with thankulgiving to the honour of him, and the profit of our neighbour. Then returning home, I goe to wais ting oz reading, or fuch other bulines as 3 haue: but with ftudy, or invention. Incuer meddle in three houres after I have bined. I luppe with a finall pittans, and after fupper I erther feldeme

or never write or read, but rather paffe the time feeing mo thene come home from the field, mp Dren bragging home the plots with weary necks, in beholding the pleafant paffures (weetin finelling about my house,or my hearos of cattell lowing bard by me: fometime 3 lift to reft me bnocr an olo Bolme.fometime buon o greene graffe, in the mean time paffeth by me the pleafant Kiner, the Areames failing from the fpzings with a comfortable notie. 02 elle walking by the Kinerfide. 02 miny garden. 02 nereff paffures, I confer with my wife or fernants of bufbanhav, and pointing what I will have bone : if my Barliffe have any thing to fav. if any thing be to be bought or folo: for a good buf band, as Cato faith, muft rather be a fellar then a buyer. Somtimes (fpech A good ally in winter) after Supper, I make my Dintfler to tel fomthing bushand out of the holy Scripture, oz elle fome pleafant flozy , fo that it multrather be boneft & godly, and fuch as may etifie. Two oz thee houres af, be a fellar ter lupper I get me to bed, and commonly, as I faio befoze, the buyer, laft in the houfe, ercept my Chambelaine and my Stewarp.

R 1 G 0. In the meane time being farre from the Church, neither can you heare the Sermons, not be present with your wife and your household at service: for your owne part, though ye may supply the matter with reading, yet your wife and your

Servants can not lo bee.

CONO. For my part (without baunt be it (poken. I bane Terpice enery day at certains appointed boures, where preacheth to me bally the Brophets the Apostles. Balil, Chryfoltome, Naz'anzen, Cyril, Cyprian, Ambrole, Austen, and other excellent preachers, tohom I am fure, 3 beare with greater profit.thentf I should heare your fir John lack-latines, and folish fellowes in your Churches. App wife also being given to reading, readeth the Bible, e certaine Walmes, translated into our owne tonque. if there be any thing to hard or darke for her, I make her to but derstand it: belides, the hath private prayers of her owne that the bleth: in the meane time I have one that byon the holy baies (if the weather oz our bulines be fuch as we can not go to church) readeth the Golpel, teacheth the Catechilme, and minitreth the Bacraments when time requires : but in the Sommer time, if the weather be not burcasonable, wee goe alwayes bpon the 94 Sundaves

XIIM

ía

O

12

ne

as

he

re

of

30

20

02

Te

0#

85

te

er

g,

he

œ.

36

ul

be

10

210

y,

D ..

ne

02

#### The first Booke, entreating bundales and feffinall paves to our Darifb Church lobere wer

heare our Curate, and receaue the bleffed Communion : as for my household. I bring them to this order, that they alwairs ferue Bob before their aging to worke a at their comming to mealen. The fay-It is witten of Anthonic the Ermite, that being bemaunded of ing of faint a certaine Philosopher bow be could in the folitarie wilberneffe Anthony. without any bokes occupic himfelfe in the flupie of Dhimitie : he answered . that the whole world ferued bim for bokes, as a well furnithed Library: in which he alwayes read the wonder. full weakemanthip of Dod, which in every place frond before his eves. In the like fort have 3 mp beufchelo feruants well infrue ted in the chiefe grounds of true Keligion, who leaning to their pocation and innocencie of their life, not carried alway with the baine entifements and pleafures of Cities, do behold the Maice fic of Cod in his workes, and honer the Creatour in his Licas tures, not onely boon Soundayes, but curry day in the were. inhere they may also heare the little bires, and other creatures in their kindes fetting out the glozy and Baieffre o. Go.

> R 1 c o. Pau feme to tell me of a Schole of Diumitr, a not of a Bulband-mans cottage: this was the bery order of the Ba triarkes, and the monafteries in the Brimatine Thurch.

and in o-

CONO. Indete Chryfoltome would baue all Christians. Homil. 36. maried folkes and bonnaried to lead their lives accesting to the you the sule and other of Ponkes : but of fuch Bonbes as trued in thefe bayes , not fuch goo-fellowes as ours be now : for the profes therplaces. from of a Bonke in that age, was no other but the life of the pur reft and perfecteft Christians Johich kinde of life the olde Datriarkes , as the Scripture boe witneffe, bid lead.

Rico. A oftentimes wonded that having fo godly a house and to well furnified in the citie as you have Johat you meant to Defire rather to bivell in the Countrie : but now that I fee the god order of your life, I leave to wonder any longer.

CON of It is naturall to me, and left me by my parents, to belight infulbandzy: foz my father,my Gzandfather,my great Candfather , and as farre as I can fetch my petigre, all my Aunceftours were occupiers of hul banday, and were all borne and died in this house that you fee.

RIGO.

RIGO. 3 remember not long fince; being in bufinelle with the Chauncelles Hyplographus, a fober man , your neighbour. and one that belights in bulbander, it was my change to fee pour father, furciv a man would have taken him for old Lacrees in Homer, of rather for Abraham, of Ifaac, and as the Chancelios talo me be was four e feore and ten peres olde : but fo faire be bare his age, as that I toke him to be fcarce fiftic his memozy and indogement femed to ferue bin wonderous well be would talke of the orders of the Countrie, of the antiquities there as bouts of the Rogies of the Scripture, to fluetly and eloquently. as I was wonderfully in lone with him : heehad the lazouhets and the Quangeliffs at his fingers ends, fo that I fain the noble men had bim in estimation not without great cause.

CON O. Indied be tobe fush belight in the haln derintures. as no day paffed him without reading fome part of them the bled to goe commonly enery day to the nert Daril Church neither mould be mille any bermen that he could beane of he brought both Breacher and Brieft into order, and caused them to frame

their lines according to the rule of the Golpell.

Rico. Don paint me bere the patterne of a Bithop, oz an overfeer : indeed the most part of these Briefts had need of fuch overfors to reffraine their covetoulnesse, the fixing of all their abules.

CONO. To returne to my quietnes az my Bufbanday from tohence & pigreffed : boe pou pet margaile how I can belighting felfe with this fo honest and uzofitable a quietnes, then which in the lungement of the holicit willett men there is nothing more boneft not better, neither is there believe any trate of life more The commet for a Gentleman nor travaile more acceptable to God, then mendation is the tilling of the ground. The people in the gibtime (as Catoja of Hufman of great wifedome, sa teacher of buf banday both withele) bandry. as oft as they would give a man the name of an bancit man, they would call him a good ulband, comprehending in that name as much commencation, as they could give bim : befibes moft Emperours mightie kings and Emperops were no whit afhamen to professe professors this trade, as Xenophon reporteth of king Cirus: the the writeth of Huf-Quintus Curtius of Abdolominus, Numa the king of the Komans bandry. bare .

02

ue

S.

of

Te

2:

a

Te

is

Us.

ir

he

ics.

Cito:

18.

CS.

of

a

ıø,

he

ese

ele.

H.

rio.

ife

to

he:

to.

cat

mp ne

0.

#### The first Booke, entreating bare a fingular affection to bufbanban for that hee thought there

was no kind of life fo fit to maintaine either peace of warres, of for the promition of a mang life, being rather a giner of good life, then riches. Mozeoner, Hiero, Philometor, Attalus, Archilaus, and a great number of Brinces more, were belighted with the profession of husbandep: this knowledge is also highly commens bed by Homer, the bery fountaine in his time of wifeome, where as hee beforibeth Alcinus the king of the Ph accs, whose belight in the planting & pleasures of his orchards was wonderful. And Lacrees the olde man, that with his continuall occupping of bul banday brought his mind better to beare the absence of his son. Heliodus in his worker we egyov xai nuegov gineth great praile to Afrea, that being banifbed the city gave bimfelfe to the life of the countrie: pea, the ground bath before time bin tilled by the hands of Emperozs, the Carth in the meane time, rejoycing to be tozne with a victozers thare, and to be plowed with the hands of a trie umphant conquerer, either because they bealt with the like regard in their feed, as in their warres, oz bled fuch biligence in the come fields, as they bid in the campe, or elfe because all things handled with honest and vertuous fingers profper the better, being more carefully loked to. Serranus when he was called to hos mour, was found fowing of feed. The Dictators office was brought Cincinatus by the purceuant to Cincinatus, being all naked e befmeared with Iweat and duft. The purceuants had first their name of calling Senators and Conernors out of the Countrie to the Citie. In like fort had this name at the firft the Fabil the Pilons, the Curi, the Lentuli, the Ciceroes, the Pilumni, and other auncient houles. Horace telleth, that of hulbandmen have bene bacd the valianteff and worthieft fouldiers: affirming, that the band that bath bene bled to the fpade, proueth often of greatest balue in the field. Homer reporteth a great baliancie in Vliffes his neat hear b, in the flaughter of those fellowes that would have ranished his mir Arefle. Woft certaine it is, that a great number of Empercurs to be Em- have fraung from the plow And to let others goe, it is knowne that the Emperoze Galerius & Maximinus came both from poze Deardmen to the imperial dignitie. The like is written of lufline, Conftantianus, Probus, and Aurelianus, The Rozies report, that

Husbandmen come perours.

#### of Earable-ground and Tillage.

re

02

e,

3,

12

10

Es

t

ò

G

t.

0

3

S

2

i

.

2

£

10

Ć

n

E

2

ĝ

that M. Curius the Empereur was found in his house hapling of a rape rote, when he refuled the great fums of gold brought by the Samnits Emballadors. What thould I fpeake of the anti- The antionitie of it the holy Scriptures beclare bulbanday to be the and quitterf cientelt of all trades. And to begin with the bery beginning of Husbanman, that neither Oliris, not Dionilius, were the first founders diy. of this knowledge as the Baining fable, but that the most mightie Lord himfelfe bib firft ordaine it: for Adam and his fons were all hulvanomen, Noe was a planter of bines, Abraham. Ifaac, and The first Iacob, were thepheards, Saul from his Affes, David from his Vines. they were called to the crowne. Elius & Amos of theoberns were made prophets. Ozias as we read, professed bufbander, Ichus the forme of Syrach commending bul bander about the reft faith the customably bled himselfe to hald the plow to daine the cart a to kepe cattell:but what ned we moze: Dur Saufour Chaft hims felfe glozieth to be the fon of a hufbandman, & frameth his para bles of planting of bines of thepe a thepheards: mozeover as it is in Luke, our Lord femeth to be a teacher of hufbander lubere he thetreth that trees are to be digged about a bunged that they may profper the better. For fith this knowledge is of all other most innocent, without which it is most plaine we are not able to line: the best men have alwayes imbraced it and the old far thers have ever counted it bery Tolen-German to wiscome. Cicero calleth it the Diffris of Juftice, biligence, and theiftines: fome others call it the mother and nurse of all other arts. For Husbaninhereas ine may line without the other, without this we are not mother & able to fultaine our life: belides, the gaine that bereof arifeth, is nurse of most godiv, and least subject to enup, for it bath to beale with the all other earth, that reftozeth with gaine fuch things as is committed bn. Arts. to her specially if it be furthered with the bleffing of God. The onely gentlemanly way of encreasing the house, is the trade of husbander: and for this cause they were alwayes accounted the perfecteft Gentlemen , that, content with the lining their Aunceltoas left them , liuco in the Countric of their Lands, The womnot meddling with figging, chopping, and changing, noz fee, thinefle of king their litting by hanoicrafts. M. Varro in his time, fayth, dry, there was great complaint made, that the fathers forfaking the Plough and the Sickle, began to crape into the Tolone,

and

#### The first Booke, entreating

and buffed themfelves rather with Bagcants and Widfommers games, then with the Minepard of the Rield, whereas the Gonecessor Kome to benived the vere, as they affigued oncly the ninth day for bufmeffe of the Citie, othe reft of the time for the tiliage of the Countrie, whereby being barbened with labor in peace, they might the better be abte to abior the transile of warres. Which countrie people were alwayes preferred before the people of the Citie and more Pobility thought to be in them that till the ground abroad, then in those that lining idely within the walles, frent their time wider the flavow of the penthouse: except a man will, with the common fort, thinke it more honell to get his liming with the blod and calamitie of pore foules . 02 not paring to beale with the Mozo, to make his gaine of mars chandise, and being a creature of the land, contrary to his kinde. give himselfe to the rage of the Seas, and the pleasure of the Winder wandering like a bird, from those to those and country to countrie, or to follow this goody profession of bawling at a barre, for gaine to open his fatoes at every bench. Surely, as I fait befoze, this onely bath bene ener counted the immecentelt trade of life of all men, and in all ages. By hulbanday were made rich the gooly fathers, Abraham, Lot, Iacob, and loob, and most certaine it is, that this profession a this gaine is most acceptable to God, when hee commanoco Adam to till the ground, and to get his living with the fweat of his browes. Thus is hulbanday of fuch authority, as God with his open witnesse hath allowed it, and afterwards by his feruant Moles hath anded his bleffing buto it, faying, I will give the ground my bleffing in the firt piece, and it hall bring forth the fruits of three peeres. And againe, If pou will keepe mp commaundements . I will fend pou raine in due feafon, and the earth thall peeld her increase, and your tres shall be loden with fruit, the threshing time shall laste till the vintage, and the vintage hall endure till the fowing time, a vou thall eat your bread with plenteoufnes. What can there be now more pleafant to a Christian man, than to get his living by luch meanes as he knoweth both pleafe God, and to play the Philos Copher in the most floet contemplation of the benefits of God, and to acknowledge and reverence the wifpome & power of the anima

Genel.3.

Husbandry pleafing to God. Leuit.26. winter Paicitie, and his bounteenficile to mankinde, to give thanks and paids for his godnelle, the very hearbes and creatures in the field in the meane time preaching but obs.

R. 1 G O. You feame me here of a husbandman a dialite, and almost being mee in minde to become a husbandman, who almaies hitherto with the common sort, accounted this husband-

rie to be a beattly and beggarly occupation.

2

2

f

2

1

1

:

Ì

2

.

8

a

ß

t

2

Œ

3

0

10

١,

If

n

S

9

11

U

h

9.

0,

31

CONO. What divinitic there is in it, and what a field of the acknowledged benefits of God, you have beard. That the common fort bot thinke it a beauty and bengerly hinde of life. it is no maruell, fith the common people be never funges right. The common people doe wonder at the pompe of the Court. and jupge them for the happiest men that beckt with gold and purple, are in greatest fauour with Brinces, and Officers, and Councelloss to them, little knowing in the meane time lobat heaves of forothes lies his toroer that brane e glittering milery. The common fort preferreth thamefull and beath belicate be. fore honest & vertuous labour , toving to confirme the night in brunkennes, lechery and villany, and the day in Repet pastime. thinking fuch happy as neither behold the viling noz letting of the Sunne. Butthole that are of founder fungement, account the hulbandman most happy, if they knew their owne feli citie to whom the Carthin a facre quietermaner both minister. a fufficient liuina.

And though with gorgeous gates the building high,
With earthly greetings alwayes doe not flow,
Nor feeling garnisht gay with imagrie,

Nor rich attire wee fee, nor coffly flow:

Yet stedfast state and life waskild of guile, With wealth ynough and Pastures wide at will,

And people frong traind vp to paine and totle,

And youth with diet small contented still,

Where Godly zeale and vertues all did dwell, When Justice last did bid the world farewell.

As the Poet hath most granely written in the praise of the Georgen hisbandman. Agus Sophidius was indged happy by the Dracle of Apollo, because he occupied a small corner of Arcadia, but yet sufficient

#### The first Booke, entreating

fufficient for his livelod, where he spent his life without ener comming abroad: whose order of life sheweth, that he was now ther bered with greedy defire, neither with any other trouble of minde, as Pliny with esteth. But I holde you to long with commendation of that which of it selfe is sufficiently conuncided. Have, wife, I pray you let be goe to dinner.

METELLA. You hall fir by and by. Tod morrow maister Rigo, I thought Xenoplusus had beene here, who vieth to fetch my hul band away, he hath by chance bene now at home a weeke or twaine, which some missing, prefer him to most painefull and troublesome busines, procuring him to be sent in embassage beyond the pillers of Hercules, and (which they should be loath to beare themselves) they cast all byon his backe, as a common packhorse, who being now oid, reason would be would be spared and suffered to be in quiet, that being at the last fee from the turnolles of the world, he might give himselfe to his prayers, and we pare bimselfe so beaver.

Rigo. It were more for the benefit of his Country, that maker Cono came oftner to the court, but he is the felbomer there, became he taketh fuch pleasure in his husbandry howbest, I came for no such purpose, but oncly to visite him, being my old friend.

Co No. Dountif beare with a womans babling.

RIGO. I pray yon, fince it is not yet dinner time,let be walke about, that I may be wyour house till dinner be readic.

Co No. If it please you, I will thew you my house, where I have appointed my kingbome.

RIGO, Pow furely you have as happy and as pleafant a kingbome as may be.

Who is happy.

Man that most doth here possess.

Horace.

Thou canft not justly happy name,
But he whom God with gifts doth bleffe,
And well doth know to vie the fame:
Him maiest thou rather rightly call,
A happy man about them all.

Sourcely I,in this my kingdom, or rather page cottage, am more in happy

happy then a great lost of kings a princes of the world, that are lozos of many & large bominions. Riches are not to be meafured by their multitude, but by the mind of the pollefog. And as Da- Who is rich. uid faith, a little is better with the goolp, then the great riches of the wicked. Cincinatus occupied only 4. acres of ground. Socrates having but 20. Sparkes in all the world, was counted a rich man. So 3 with Virgill doe comment great pollellions, but hab rather occupie little. Therefore lake not to fe here the house of Lucullus oz Hyrcius, tohichis faio to be felb foz 4000000, H S. fuch fately Divellings & marble flores, as Cicero faith. Toefvile.

RIGO. Potwithfanding, here is all things faire, and as

it appeareth commodioully built.

ET b

10

no

B.

ET

cb ke

ull

32 th

no

da: be

5,

18

re. 310

10.

88

ic.

:38

ppy

CONO. For my part, I build my house, as they lap, accord ping to my parte, agreeable to my calling, to my living. I will thelp you in order bow I bave caft it, following the abuile of Ifcomachus in Xenophon, whom Cicero both greatly commend. And first, the feat of my house hath mooned me to build it after Theorder of this fort. Cato would have a man long in Determination to building of a build, but to plant and fow out of hand. Dur fathers bere be house for the fore, observed the same, and seemed to follow the councell of Countrie. Cato and Columella, with whom agreeth also Plinic, that the owner built his house in goo order lo as neither the house be to great for the land, nor the land to much for the boule. And here in it is written, that L. Lucullus, and Qu. Scavola, were both to blame: for one of them had agreater house then was answerable to his lining: the other, which was Scauola, built a fmaller boufe t a then his lining required, where both are bupzofitable to the ma-Her: for the great rumous boule, not only is more chargeable in nt, building, but also afterth greater coft in the maintaining. Again, ith. If the houle be to litle, it will be a beltruction a lotte of your come and fruit: therefore it is greatly to purpole, in what fort we build a ordaine our houfe. Cato would have the houfe is feated; as the arze be good about it, and (if it may be) placed at the bot The feat of a tome of a hill, toking biredly South a in a wholefome corner. house, Varros minde is, to have it places toward the Caft, that it map have the Madow in Summer, & the Sunne in Winter : with 1024 Inhom Columella agreeth, faying, that if abilitie, ferne the feate:

is to be withed in a holesome place (for Caro, as shall hereafter be theived, would have healthy standing chiefely regarded) with a fruitful mould, some part of it champion, some hilly, lying Cast of South, well watered and immoved and standing not facre off from some haven, or navigable river, to the end he may cary and transport such things as him listeth. Cornelius Tacinus writeth that the Germans were wont to build their houses, as the hill, the River, the Mod, or the Lake, would best suffer them.

RIGO. Dereof I thinke fixing at the first lo many fur-

Lakes, and Wiets.

CONO. It map be, pet others bo counfaile, in no cale to let your houle niere a Marth, or a great Miner : for the Fens and Barthes, in the beat of the pere Do fend forth peltilent and Beadly Dampes , and a great number of benomous creatures : which bring for laske of their olde moisture infecteth the appe, and bredeth fumber and france affeates. Homer affirmeth bery truly, that the ayee which in the meaning commeth from the Miner, is bery brightfome and pangerous : and therefore if the boule must needs be built niere a River, they would have fuch hade taken, as the Miver rather fand on the backlibe of the boule, then before it: and that the frunt of the houle be turned from the hartfull & buholefome winds, and placed towards the healthieff quarters. Since all waters commonly with Dampill bapours in Sommer and finking cold mifts in Wlinter ercept they be well purged with holefome Windes, bo infed both man and beaft with peffilence: beff is it therefore in goo & bealthy places, to let the house toward the Gaff, oz the Southet in fu Spected aires to place them against the Both. From the Sea it is got to be as far as may be because the winds that blow from the feature buholefome, and the fracelving betweet you and it, pelos alwayes a loathfame aire. You muft bemare belibes, that you fet not your house by any great hie-way, left you be mole Red with pattengers and troubled oftentmes with more quelts then you would have.

Neighbourbood.

Rigo. As far as I remember, oil fellewes bid measure the godnes of their bivelling, by the qualities of their neighbours

CONO

CONO. Pou say very well: indeed I had almost forgotten it, a froward knaue to a mans neighbour, is not one of the least mischieses, as that be sayd in the end of this boke. I have knowne sundry good men, desirous of quietnesse, that have forsaken good dwellings, rather then they would abide the insuries and trandles of such companions: wherefore Hesiodus had some reason in saying:

As great a mischiefe is a froward knaue, As is the joy a neighbour good to have.

But you maruell what I meane by fuch a long preamble fure ly I am the longer in this matter because you fould boder fand the reason of building of my bonic. for whereas there are sun-Day purpofes of building: fome build for pleafure forme for wantonnelle, and fome for necellitie, I thought it god to recite the minds of the old writers, concerning the building of a house. And inhen as every one will not fuffer fuch curiofitie as they require in the placing of a house, some building boon rivers, some with out or within the Darth wals, who cannot thun the neighborhoo of the river or the fea fome in lakes, fome in woods, & fome buils ding boon mountaines, are dituen to supply the defect of nature with art & industrie: I my felfe, fith I can by no means auoid the nerenelle of the river, bo feete as much as in me lies, to turne as way the discommodities and because I feele the discommoditie of the riling of the flods, I have let my house in this place without the banks, a mounted it as high as I could: and left the rage of the water, and force of the ife fould beare it away, I have planted round about it great tres; and that I might foun the damps of the ground, and the blatts of bnwholfome winds, I have turned my dozes and my windowes to the wholfomest quarters.

RIGO. Surely, either you, or your ancestors have both commodiously and handsomely placed this house; for the front is double, one part loking towards the Cast, the other towards the South, and so built with Galeries and Gables, as it both receiveth the Sunne in Winter, and the shadow in Sunmer: bestices, you have a faire Borch as you enter in, that keepeth away the winde and the raine from the done.

CONO. All the one five, if you marke it, where the front is,

W. 1

et

ith

off

nd

th

al,

110

rs,

to:

ns

mb

: S:

20,

erp

the

the

ueh

the

ned

the

illi

ept

nan

thy

(a)

att

mo:

Dit,

that

olo

effs

the

urs.

NO.

lieth South, receiving from the first corner, the rising of the sum in Exister, declining somewhat from the West, whereby it is warme in winter, and not troubled with ouer-great heat in sommer: for this kinde of building hath an equal medly of the winter windes esommer windes, so that it received the cole winds in sommer, and is not subject to the bitter blassin winter.

Rigo. Some part of the building, me thinketh, is after the

Italian manner.

CONO. Some part of it being ruinous, I built after my fantie, and fuch as I found found, I thought enough for mee to kope in reparations.

Rigo. I pray you, proceed to describing of the rest. This base tourt seemes to be after the Italian fashion, with two gates.

CONO. This Court I thus benifed my felfe. Here was a kind of Court before, but not so commodious: therefore I made a square wall here with a great gate, for the bringing in of my cariages, a leffer for people to passe in a out. In the void place here besides the porch. I have made a little walks, concred with a Time, with divers seats in it for shadow, where I many times walks & talks with such suters as I have: I have in it a table of stone to sup voon when I am disposed. Duer against the gate, as you six, at the south side of the Court, there is a Bake-house, & a Cornemil, with Duens sor bread, a other baked meates, there is also a Brewhouse, with an Dassed, wing of malt to make beere with.

Rigo. Surcly, all very handlome, and in very god order. Cono. Thele offices (for feare of fire) you lee, are all fenered from the houle: there is hereanto adiogning a faire Well, which befives the fernice here, both also ferne my littehin, and other houses of office: for within the house, I have neither Well nor Fountaine, which is a great discommodity, such as I would give a great deale of money to remedie, both for health a colones in some of the principalest things to be cared for, as the greatest cause of health both in man 4 beast: but this want is supplied partly by a god Well without, a partly by Testernes, receiving the raine water that fals in certaine Tonduits and Pipes, which water is most wholesome for the body: and beside, the river is not far off.

R 1 G O. Come on I pray you, let be fie this back-house, I beare that you have a new fathioned Will, of your owne beuile.

CONO. You thall fee it. When as in a great house, there is great need of Corne milles, and the common Hilles, being farre off, the way soute, and I at mine own libertie to grind at home, or where I like, thinking to make a Hill here at home, when neither place nor authoritie will serve mee to build either a water mill or a wino mill, and a Querne, or a hand mill, both but a litle god; and to build a horse mill were more troublesome. When I saw the wheles that they be to draw water with, turned with Affes or men, I thought in the like sort the whele of a mil might be turned, after this sort deutsed I this engine, which a couple of Affes, guided by a boy, doe easily turne, and make very fine meale, inflicient for mine ownehouse, and most times sor my neighbours, whom I suffer to grinde toll size.

RIGO. Surely 3 like well your Device. What will not the

biligence of man bring to paffe?

CONO. I finde it profitable buto me, but because it is not the specific way of grinding, I have beside a horse-mill, which it need require, is turned about with a Jade or two.

R 1 G o. Lo, here is a great lead placed handlowly in a brick furnace in the corner, which I thinke ferueth to brew withall.

Co No. Inded, to that end it is most occupied, but it ferueth other turnes beside.

RIGO. There is a Hopper (me thinketh) oner the top of the Dath: where to lerueth it?

Cono. It serveth to convey downe the Spalt, after it is was tered unto the haircoloth, where it is daved.

RIGO. Wiherefore ferueth that great Tunne ?

CONO. To water the Barley in, when need is, otherwise it ferneth for a math fat. Hereby is a bake-house, and a pastrie with two Duens, one setuing for household bread, the other for manchet for mine owne table, and for tacts and fine bakemeats. Here are also troughs to keepe meale in, and troughs to lay leaven in, and there is a faire table to mould opon.

Rico. All is handlome; but what meanes this building

about your Court ?

113 2

CONO.

è

a

10

e,

€

0

e,

C#

a

r.

CD

ch

er

02

ue

ín

ĹS

ıſe

yd

ne

18

ff.

0.

CONO. Thefe buildings fenered from the rest, do ferue for guest chambers, with a chamber for my hot bouse: this side you see lieth against the setting of the Sonne in Sommer, where the Sonne may lie from none till night.

RIGO. But that little 3le moated about, and seuered from the court with a bridge, seemeth to be more gorgiously and sumptuously built. I take it to bee your owne longing. where you.

pour wife, and pour fernants, meane to lye fafely.

CONO. It is even lo, and therefore it is built byon a higher ground, both for the better spre and fayrer proless: before, my Barben and my Drehard are adiopning to it, which with the liwest smell of the flowers, and the faire beautie of the trees, bringeth both health and pleasure. The windowes, for the mest part open all Bast, and some Porth, very sew West, except from such chambers or galleries Southward, where I vine and sup, to receive the sunne in winter abundantly, and in summer very little: the Cower that you see serveth for my Douchouse.

RIGO. The great flights of this house must needs fill the

Mailters purle, and ferue the Mitchin Well.

Cono. Indeed, if as that noble and passing well learned Varro affirmeth, they might be sold, as in some ages they have beine, at eight pound a payze, or that a man might meet with such soles, as Columella writeth of, that have given 40. pound for a paire: I graint I could make a good handsome gaine of them, but as they be, they hardly serve mine owne table.

RIGO. What both not the mad befire of belicaffe procure ? euen in our baics of late, I baue heard, there was threefcore

flozens ginen for a papre.

CONO. I will keepe you no longer here about mine owne lodging, you have fixne a great number of better houses, and peraduenture had rather overloke my out houses.

RICO. I had fo inded: pou haue, I fie, benibed pour house

into thee parts.

CONO. So I thought it belt; one for my felfe, another for my husbandmen, and the third for graine and fruit.

RIGO. What meaneth this Cell here, to handlomely built at the entrance

CO NO.

CONO. This is, fir, my Bailiffes longing, I lay him by the gate, that he may fix to be goeth in and out, and what is brought and goeth forth: from thence he may also loke into the Bitchin, and six, a heave what is there done: sor beside the meate that is dressed, there are other things done there in the Winter mornings. Duer my gate I have laid my Ateward, from whence he may loke into the Court, and to the gate, and overlie his neighbour the Basisse.

RIGO. Parry fir, here is watch and ward indeede, this 3

thinke, pour learned of Varro, for it is a part of his order.

CONO. Thus experience teacheth. Here by is my stozehouse.
RIGO. Perciful God! what a fort of twice have you here?
CONO. Hesiodus would have a husband have all his surniture ready, and will not have him borrow in any case.

Of others borrow not, left they refuse to lend,

So thou shalt want, the time shall patle, and busines never end. Therefore I have to furnithed my Bailiffe, as he bath of enery fort ting. Marcus Varro bibibeth his halbandan necessaries into thee parts : bowels, where he puts his owne fernants, and fuch as he bireth: halfe bowels, where his working cattel be: a mutes, be thefe that you fee, whereof the fmatter fort be thefe arcs, bat. chets, and fithes, of all forts, come fithes, graffe fithes, Subble fithes , handbils , fickles, knines, peafeholies, fpades, fhouels, wedges, braghokes, great falves, leffer falves, band falves, time ber fawes, pitchfozkes, fron hokes, fron fozkes, twobils, bound forkes, tonges, theares, fplars, mattockes, files, cleaners, clafpes, launcets, firings, cutting knives, gelbing toles, clipping theares, leaners , proffes , rulers , garben-rakes, hammers, chippe-ares, winches, pullepes, wheeles, rakes, fingle & bouble, vokes, collers, bridle reins, heaoftals balters, trances, coros, Baames, Balkets, Fannes, Wilhips, Flayles, Strikes, Spoakes, Dzawing kniues, Sackes, Wallets, Bottels, Wiedhokes, Brakes, Bempeber tels, Diftanes, Spinbles, Wharts, Firefpouels, Fireffones, Gredicons, Banobarrowes, Doung-Carts, Wilherbarrowes, Pannes, Wampers, Kopes, and Line, of all forts.

The forts and parts of Piotoes and Waines, I will field you when twee come into the Court, wert the Paybarne, Pog-

13 3 the

0

Ê

e

Ė

3

t

Asch, Launes, Mellels, for Wine, Bere, and Water, Pipes, Lonnels, and inchike, thall likewife be theined you, inken you come to the Breinhoufe, that inefeller: with Colerakes, Sines, Sercers, Boulting-tubs, Boulters, that you that fee in the Backboufe, and instruments for all other purposes, laid by every one in his place, till they be to be occupied: for it is very necessary to have of every sort two, as the number of your servants and no cessitie requires, that if one be lost or broken, you be not driven to goe a borrowing, or to leane your worke, wherby your men that it is idea, while your twees be a seeking: for to runne every day to get new, is not for a husbands profit. Beside in the mean time your servants lotter, and lose more then the balue of their twics.

RIG O. Eruely they be all placed in god orber.

Cono. I place first by themselves, such as are most in vie, that they may be the readier, a nert to them, such as be occupied once a moneth, o; in a pere: I give the keeping of them all by tale, to my steward o; my baplisse, that they may beliver them out as new is, and lay them by again, and charge them in any case to looke to them every moneth, that they may mend what is amisse in them.

R 16 0. Deder is afolly fellow, and no godlier a thing in a man, then to be every thing orderly, and to lay by every thing in fuch ofder, as it may readily be found: of which, a lingular erample both I comachus their in Xenophon, in his fibhinician barke, wherein a wonder it is to lie what a beale of Ausse hee had be stowed in so small a bessell: he carried with him all the surniture that a man should nied, and enery thing in such ofder placed, as they were at hand when nied was, without any trouble.

CONO. Imp felfe have an inventory of all my hulbandry implements, and to hath my Baily and his wife: my Steward hath the key of the florehouse, and belivers out and receives as I told you, what energman nieds: for I willingly neither borrow nor tend: I have a neighbor or twaine, of whom sometime I borow, and lend againe: but except them, to none as Cato teacheth me.

R 1 G O. The same Caro also, as I remember, teacheth to know a mans husbandzy by his toles, a thersozeby your great number of toles, a man may guesse you have a great deale of occupying.

Co No. The double number of them makes the mufter the

greater : otherwife, if there were but to forue the turne they moulo not fæme fo many.

RIGO. 3 prap pou goe forward with your description.

CONO. Dou fee a bood rome before the Bitchin, which is an entrie both to the Attchin, to the Folkes chamber, and to the Dre-houses, so that if any missortune happen to the cattell in the night, my men may fpeebily belve them.

RIGO. The Bitchin is very well handled in that you have The Kitchin-

to well pargetted the roffe.

È

0

0

n

n

p

31

ıť

8

p

to

a

iri

110

ż.

20

TE

15

210

th

lo

02

D,

12.

w

er

a.

be

T:

CONO. It is because I have a great number of scruants; inhich for lacke of other rome, doe dine and fun here: belide, the pargetting or fæling, is a god fafetie against fire.

RIGO. Here is a good hand fome rofe by the chimney, well Stored with red Berring, Bacon, and Partilmas befe, there is

alfo a bandfome Sincke by the Bitchin.

CONO. This lettifed wall that pou fex, towneth to my Bay. liffes chamber, to that bee may fe what is done in the Bitchin. and about the boule. Bereunto is alfo ispned my Larber, a bault Larder. with the comes, one ferning for Butter and Wilke, the other tor Bere and Wine, the third for to keeps fleth in : here hane Ins windowes to the South, not to the Watt, but all to the Borth, and to the Call, because these quarters are leaft subted to corruption, and will longest preferne any thing. Aboue in the loft ponder, doe 3 lay my come, byon a faire floge, closely fenced Corneloft. and fieled against Dife, receiving the light by Lattiffe windowes from the Boath. Dard by, is another loft very close, with like Appleloft. windowes toward the Both, ferning for my fruit: for that quarter is cold, and not moult, inhereby it preferves belt, both Deat, Come, and Fruit. Bow if you will goe through this doze, you may behold the back-fide of my houfe : loe here a faire thee thing flore, whereupon my corne is fundry times the cihed, fanned, and winnewed, and many other things bone, chiefly in the winter mornings, though I have belide a thrething place in mp barne. On each five are lodgings for mp Scruants, and other romes and lefts for Straw and Fooder for my Cattell: and there by the Stables, are also Servants lodge ings on every fibe, and my Daides chamber neere the Mitching

15 4.

and the walking house. You le this forestall closed round about. to the end that the cattell, when they be watred and put forthe while their boufes be made cleane, may be in fafety. And here ? kerealfo Gele. Duckes, Beacockes, Turkfockes, a other vouls trep. It is as you fee to encioled with Cables barnes, and other boules, that nothing can get out. Varro will in any case have time Courts, an inner court with a little pond in it of flanding water. or running water in manner of a fillboond, and there he would have Borfe and Dren, comming from the field, or fable, to be instered and mathed, a to ferue like toile for Shave. S wine, and Beefe. In the otter Court would bee baue a lake to caft in wheeles, flaues, and peeces of timber for intruments of bulbane Day that they might there be feafoned. This Court he monia have often Arawed with Araw, and chaffe, that being trampled with cattell it may ferue to lay boon the ground. Dou fee in this court a bouble bounghill, one of them newly throwen out of the fables, an other old, and ferning for the field : for new boung is nothing fo goo as the old, for manuring of the ground.

R 1 C O. Withat meanes thefe twigges, bowes, and firaines,

caft boon the boung ?

CONO. This preferres the boung, that the inverthat the ground requires, benot lucked out of the lunne: and hither also runs the water from the Laundry to moil it the better. Varro would have here also a lodging for sernants: But least we tarry to long among the dounghils, let be goe set the other builtings about the Court. These great romes that you sa, be Barnes to lay Corne in: in some places they die houses, in others againe, tackes, set donn props, which they call mowes: but the houses are a great deale better. Pert to the Barnes, are the Stables, tanding arow round about the court. And because Virgil would have the table stand toward the South, and Virrumus, neare the fire, I have sollowed their order in building my stables. And first have I set here my stable sor my cart-horse. I have another stable neare my owne lodging, sor my horses of service, and hackness.

RIGO. That femeth to be bery handlomely built.

CONO. The next are houses for my thepe,4 next them for kine, calues, and heylers. There is a hogitic with two romes, one

.

Stables.

Barnes.

fo<sub>2</sub>

for my farretoing fow s, the other for Hogs, and boares. There is a fo a third fie not farre from the walhhouse for the fatting of my Bookes: every kinde hath their keepers lying neere them, that they may be at hand whatfoener channeeth. Last of all, there fanos my Baybarne, which hath in the opper romes my Day, & beneath, waines, carts, carres, waggons, coaches, barrows, flebs, ploines, roin ers, tuheles, naues, potes, rakes, ploinbeames, and fuch like, which are there fafe from wet, and from pifferers.

RIGO. I pray you, who both loke to all this geare, and

keepeth enery man to his worke ?

Co No. 990 Bailiffe as I told pou before overfeth both my worke and my workemen : belides, I bane a Steward that los keth to the receasing of my renenues and commodities.

RIGO. Dour bailiffe had need to be a fkilful and truffe man.

CONO. Dou far true for as Xenophon faith the chorse of a Balliffe and a Bhilition ought to be one : you mult choice fuch a one, as being a very expert bulbanoman, may wel be able to take The the charge, and not to be ignorant of thole things himfelfe, that he Choife of a commandeth others to do, for nothing is well taught or learned, husbandry without example. For as Caro faith of a bufband of the old ftampe, it goeth ill with that mafter whom the Bayliffe muß teach. As I comachus being bemaunded of Socrates, whether he mould bure a Bapliffe, as he would hire a lmith or rather teach bim himfelfe at home : We answered, he would have him of his owne teaching.

RIGO. But this is after the old world. wherein no man was bufkilfull: but it is a wonder, bow you that have alwayes being brought by in princes affaires could in thefe caves when bery few, ercept plowmen, and fuch as hane no other trade of life haue any fafil in it) apply your mind to buto it, as a man would thinke

you had never minded any other profesion.

Cono Surely, I think he that never have a god Bailiffe, that is not able bimfelfe to judge failfully of him : noz let him euer thinke to have his worke well bone, that knoweth not how,noz which way things ought to be done, but must be faine to learne of his man: for there is none can indge of a worke, but a worke man. Therefore in the choyle of a Bailiffe, I would have foure things

Ò

D

Ò

le

B

D

5

2

g

5,

31

o

0

y

3

0

e,

.

D

12

Æ

le

B.

02

ne

32

What things ought to be in a Bailiffe of husbandry

things chicky confidered: that he be louing, ofligent, meet to rule. and truftie, if you will abbe a fift, Jam well contented, that is, that he be not given to brunkenne (Ic: for a arunken man lofeth with his memozy, the regard of his dutie. I do not enquire lubes ther hee have bene brought by civilly or daintely, but I would baue him a bard fellow, brought by from his childhoo to labour, and one that were throughly well fkilled, of a meane age, that he be not buwilling to worke for pouth, nor bushle to trauaile for age. I would have him have fome fkill in carpentrie. that if there happen to be any thing broken about his Stables, his Carts, or any other his inftruments, be might fpeedily mend them, & that be could mend Wals and Deoges. 3 would have him allo not bulkilfull in the difeafes of Cattell : fuch a one as bath beene brought by with fkilfull hufbands , will proue metel to have charge for there be a great number that though they be [kilfull enough in their profedion, vet have they not government in them: but eyther bling to much tharpenelle, or to much gentlenes to wards fuch as be under them, doe binder the profit of their masfer: and therefore I would have a Bailiffe well tried before be be taken : neither is it onely to be fought, whether he be fkilfull in this craft, but whether he be truffie and louing to his Pafter, without which, he is not mouth aruth, though his faill be never fo great. And chiefely be muft be fkilfullin this, to know what toozke is meeteff for every man: for fome works require frength moze then fail, and others, otherwife. And therefoze in appoint ting of thefe he ought to have great indgement a good differetion. which hee cannot have, except he have god fail. Therefore a Bailiffe is as well to be taught, as a Smith, oz a Carpenter : and the knowledge of bulbanday is greater & of moze difficultie: Therefore I meruaile, that in this fo necessary an occupation. there are found to few Bafters and Bentices.

RIGO. Perhaps the tediousnesse and havenesse thereof bab

neth them away.

CONO. Why: have not Deatoes bene likewife definen as image for as Cicero faith, there hath bin no perfect Deatoe found.

RIGO. Df whom would you have your Bailiffe to be taught:

CONO. Pour question is good, I will them you, though bery fein.

fein have taught what belongeth to a bulband in all things, neis ther Call you finde many fkilfull in enery poput. Therefore he that thall be a Bailiffe, muft be taught by degrees, be mufffirft begin when he is a chiloc, with keeping of Sheepe of Swine, and The tray-ning of a when he is cloer, with droues of Cattell, and keeping of Porfe: Ballife. he must learne next to bigge, to theeft, to fet, to fowe, to hedge, to build to mend fuch things as are broken to play the butcher, to give drinkes and medicines to ficke Cattell, art fuch other like things. And thus mult be proceede from one to another.

D

,

3

12.

9

32

ıt

٥É

18

18

ıll

n:

0.

184

be

ult

er,

er

at

th

ira

,110

6 3

r:

te:

ort.

DZV

I Be

no.

bt :

ery

few.

RIGO. Don fhew mee wonderfull Bhiloforbie. CONO. As 3 faid at the first, his best age is betwirt thirtie and the coze: for the flames of lufty youth beginning to abate. he will not be to bot in his woing: for whiles he followes that game, he will have no minde but of his minion, neither shall any remard be fo welcome buto him, as the fruit of his fancie, noz any griefe fo great to him, as the failing of his defire. If he once palle theelcoze, he wareth flothfull & bnable to labour : for 3 hat rather have the worke of a painefull & biligent Bailiffe. then the feruice of a great number of flethfull lubbers: as he that had rather have a Lion captaine over Barts, then a Bart captaine our Lions. This mult chiefly be loked buto (fince earely going to morke is a great matter) that the Balliffe be a goo rifer, a that, Supplying his Walters place be may be firft by in the morning. and the laft that goeth to bed, that he fee the boozes fast locked, and enery manin bed, that the cattell hane meat enough, a be weil littured, that he let fogward, according to the time of the peere, fuch as do lopterin their labor, that be himfelfe go luftily before, that he fuffer no man, after it is day, to lag behind, but that they follow the Bailiffe luftily with a courage, as if he were their cap. taine in alkirmith: and that he ble fundap deuiles to cheere them bp in their laboz, sometime to helpe him that fainteth, to take his toole out of his hand, & labour luftily before him. And as a carce full Chepheard, earely carrying out his theepe, & bringing them home late, looketh that he leave none of his flocke behinde him: fo likewife ought a good Bailiffe to carry out his men, to have good regard ouer them. If any of them be hurt or licke, let him looke to the dreffing of them, and if they be bery ficke, to carry them

them to the ficke folkes lodging, a to fee that they be well orbes red:and to that ble have I built ponder house that you fe remoned from the other buildings, that the ficke may be bad thither & twice buto, specially if their difeales be contagious, leaft other fould be infected. It is the Paiffers ontie to haue fuch regard of the health of his fervants, that their fickenes may be preuens ted by god medicines & god loking to: as to fix that their meate and brinke be wholeforne & god, and given in due feafon: belide, that the Bayliffe eate his meat with them, and not by himfelfe, whereby it thall be the better ogdered. And because Bhilitians are not alwayes at hand in the country, it behoueth to ble fuch remedies, as experience hath taught, fuch as bane holpen others of like difeales. Those that labour in the Sunne (because the Sunne burteth the body & baines) their diet mut be the thimmer, that they make not to great meales, but eate litle and often: this order kepeth them in health, & belpeth digeftion. Some de ble to give Mozmewod-Wine, or pottage made of Mozmewod. It is bery necellary for them fomtimes to recreate themfelucs, fo that in the means while they give not themselves to naughtis nelle. There must be heed taken, that they dainke not when they be bot noz lee boon the cold ground : if their water be not god, it must be well purified. It is bery god also to let them beinke barley water. The muft remember that fernants be men : bes Ades, fuch god loking to, will bred a greater god will a butie, and lightly they will ferue the faithfuller and better when they have their health, which have had good cherriffing in their ficker nelle: and befides (which is not well observed in greater goner, nozs) the Bailiffe unift beware that he deale not to gruelly, noz to gently with them, that be alwayes make much of those that be biligent e painefull, that be be not to baffie with the worfer fort, that they may rather reucrence bim for his feneritie, then hate him for his crueltie, which he thall eafely bring to palle, if he rather beware that they offend not, then after their offence, to late, to punily them. For there is none lo god a brible for an entil besposed person, as to let him alwayes be occupied. So that Caroes faying beerein is most true, that men in bothe nothing. learne to dos enil. Let them baue their allowance, and their meat

meate in bue feafon, let them allwaves feed together in one place, and the Bailiffe with them, that he may bean crample to them of all thriftines. If he finde any of them to have laboured paine fully and truly, let him give them a good countenance, and encourage them with rewards, to make them the willinger to bee their dutie: belide, let him looke that they bee rather well cle thed, then curioully apparelled, that their garments may keeps them from the coloe & the raine : let their mages be well paled them, that the want thereof be no excuse for them to loyter in their labour. And as meat and apparell is necellary for them, fo likewife is correction. For the wife man faith, give a Borfe the whip, an Alle the fnaffle, and a foole the rod. And againe , hee that deales too gently with his fernants, thall make them in the end Aubborne and froward. Aboue all things let him fee that they feare Goo, let him in no wife fuffer them to Meare, 02 to blafpheme, not to ble filthy of bigodly fpech : but let him proutde that they bee instructed in the Catechisme, that they be prayer, that they goe to Sermons boon the holy papes, and receive the Sacraments at times appointed, that they be not hunters of Alchoules of entil company. For, as the Boet layth, it is law. full to be well occupied, even on the feltivall daies. Withen they haue ferued God, & bined, let them walke abzoad in the ground, let them looke there be no Cattell in the Corne, and Stop fuch gaps as thep finde open, and looke that their Lattell be in fafety abzoad. To be thost, the Bailiffe mutt in all thefe matters be, as It were a Bilbop, of a Patter of the workes, to thall every man the better doe the worke that belongeth buto bin. The Bailiffe muft neuer be from their beles, leaft in his absence they fall to Loytering , neither must he luffer them any time to be idle: he himselfe must not be given to dainking or gaming, nor to hunting or filhing, ercept for his mafters profit: let him very feldome en tertaine any guelts, ercept they be of his mafters retinew : let him not beltow his malters money about his owne merchantize, for fuch kinde of bargaining makes him the flacker in his dutie, and maketh his accompts feldome fall out fuft. About all things ng, this is to be willed in the Bailiffe, that he do not thinke himfelfe wifer then his mafter, of suppose himselfe to have moze saill then be

20

100

er

EL

ED

eHs

ate

,30

fe,

ns

TC+

TS

be

er,

bis

ble

DD.

ES,

htt.

ga

DB,

ale

be,

tie,

gsd

BE

ers

RO2

hat

fer

bett

e, if

ice,

an

hat

rett

reat

he bath, & that he alwaics feche to learne fuch things as be is fas

nozant of. Foz as it is bery profitable to bo any thing failfully fo is it more burtful to be it entowardly. Columella had rather have a Bailiffe that could neither read noz waite, lo that his memory be good : for fuch a Bailiffe (faith he) will oftner bring his soals fer mony then a boke : because (not able to write ) he cannot so eafily frame a falle account. The Bayliffes wife muft alloaies The Bayliftes wife. he with him that the may keep him from ruming at rovers and may helpe him in his labours : her age must be fuch alfo, as toe required in the Bapliffe before the mult be painful bealthy cares full & honeft, the must not be to ill fauozed, left the be loathfome buto him, noz to beautifull, left he boat to much bpon her, and houe bome when he thould be abroad. She muft in the meane time loke to the Bitchin, and to other works at bome, governe the Maibes, and keepe them at their worke, loke to their neces faries, and give them their allowance.

RIGO. Don firme to me bere, to make the Bayliffe a Mais

ffer, and the Maifter a Bayliffe.

CON O. This age of ours, quite corrupted with belicacle and daintines, litle regardeth the honefte profitable orders of our fores fathers: for in those bates the Maitters themselves plato the bul bands, & thought if not to goe well with that Baifter that muft be tanget by his Bayliffe, as Cato witneffeth, & Varro alfo come plaineth, that the hulbands in his daies bad forfaken the plow & the lithe, a gotten themselves within the walls, and spent their time rather in margames & midlummer lights, then with tilling the ground, or planting of Wines. Therefore Caro & the old wate ters, bo attribute many things to the Maifter, that we aligne to the Bailife. And I, though I feme to put the charge of the bond hold in the hands of my Bayliffe, pet wil 3 mp felle be ouerfeer, and have enery thing done as 3 appoint, entreating gently (as 3 taught the Baylife afoze) both the Bailife a my labourers, regard bing more their labour then my gaines. But I carry you about to long, being falling, I pray you let be goe to binner: pon Iball not dine at Court to day neither meant I to thew you as you fee. the palace of Lucullus, but the page cotage of Cincinatus, Abdolominus, of Lacres, Bereyou le the comes for my bulbandmen,

feuereb

fenered from mine own house, but pet so, as I may easily fee what they boe. Dere 3 and my wife, with our household fernants tie.

RIGO. All bery excellently well as may be, there is no thing wanting that is to be wither for. Diffriffe Metella, por trouble your felfe to much, like Martha, about the proutoing of pour dinner.

METELLA. Pot a whit bir, you muft be contented with Countrey fare, pou hall neither baue red Diere, Barchpaine, noz Sturgion, noz any Courtiers fare : but an Egge, and a Sallet, a Bullet, oz a pecce of Lambe.

RIGO. This diet contenteth me aboue all other.

CONO. Fall to it then, and tell me how you like our countrep Wine.

Rigo. Burely it paffeth either wine of Dileans, or Aniow: Toid not thinke to have found to god a cup of wine in thefe quarters.

CONO. The hulbandy, and good leafon of the pere both peeld the fame.

RIGO. Well, we fit too long at dinner: the weather being fo faire and fo pleafant abroad, it is a frame to fit any longer, but to walke out and loke byon your ground.

CONO. The weather being faire, you bring a horfe to the field (as they fay ) when you freake to me of going abroad: for 1 my felfe, if the weather of bufinelle bo not let me, am enery day, according to Caroes counfel, abroad in my ground : a if it pleafe you. I will carry you abread and thew you my ground. You muft not los to fe the great countries of Merchus, oz Lucullus, but the polletions of a poze country man, that contented with his frate inould be as he is, t would not change lines with the Emperour.

RIGO. I pray you let me heare your opinion of the field and Of the tilthe tilture thereof: for 3 fe you area perfect hulband, and no ling and thing bulkilfull. I have a great defire to heare fome rules, and husbanfuch as ferue our turne beft.

Co No. If it bee a hame for an apprentife at the Law, and a ground. pleader of causes, to be ignozant of the law wherein he dealeth, a greater thaine is it for a profettor of bulbandry, to be buffilfull in the ground whereon his whole trade lyeth. How is he able to indge byzightly in hulbandzy, that knowes not which way to till

ding of the

The good nature of the huf-

his land: The profeffors of all other arts, do commonly keepe to themselves, such things as be the chiefemviteries of their know. ledge. Contractivile, the hulbandman reiopceth to have enery bandman, body made priup to his fkill, & being Demaunded in what fort be both this and that, he gladly declareth his whole dealing in enery point: fuch amb natured men both this knowledge make. I baue progred my ground here according to the diligence of the old fat there, rather then for the wantonnes of thefe times. Therefore I will first thew you their opinions, and afterwards mine olone grees and fancie. First, Cato appointed nine begres of the land in Italy. The first, the Minevaro that veloeth much and good wine: the nert the well watered Garden: the third, the Willow Grone: the fourth, the Dlive tras : the fift, for Deddow: the firt, Come ground : the feauenth, for Copie ground : the cight, for Timber tres : the laft for Maft. But thele begrees, as Varro lavth, are not generally allowed of neither have we the vie of them all in

forts of ground.

ground.

The de-

ground I will first entreat, and afterwards of Walture, Wedow. Of Corne Wood-land, and Willow Groves.

RIGO. I wan you then take the paines to thew the nature

thefe countries : but make moft account of fuch land as ferueth for Warden or Dichard ground, Come, or Filhponds. Df Come

of it, and which way the best ground may be knowen.

CONO. Caro counteth that the best ground, that list hat the foote of a mountaine, being levell, and lying toward the Sunne, as the whole countrie of Italie lieth. In colde and Portherly countries, it is good to have the land lying Call and South lead thefe two quarters, being bard off by any hill, the land be frozen with colde : but in hot countries it is better to have the ground ive Porth, both for pleafure and health.

RIGO. They fay it is needfull to know the conditions of euce

ry ground.

Cono. It is fo, and fooner thall you doe it, then the condi tions of a man: for being well tilled, it will not beceine you, but How to know the deale tuffly with you. To know the nature of every grounds goodnesse Iscomacus in Xenophon both Irill vou to marke well the plants of the and the peeld of the Countrie, except you will loofe your labour ground. or fight with God. Varro counsels you to looke whether there

be

be in the land either Stone , Barble, Sand , Czanell, Maddell, Chalke, Clay Breble, or Carbuncle, that is, ground oner beated and parched with the funne, which will burne the cotes of whatfoener commeth in it. Alfo if it be wet or tweeping ground, or fub ted buto other inconveniences, and fuch ground allo, according to the nature of the foile, is good or entil. In fome Countries fronie ground is altogether barren , specially for Come and Fruit: 34 other places againe, they ble flones in the manuring and better ring of their land, as in certaine places of Ardenis to befiene. Theophraftus writeth, that the Corinche die caft away all the frenes out of the fields of Sarragola , e there by made the ground the worfe, when, the frones being away, & the country hot, there was no fuccour left to befond the ground from the crtreame heat of the forme. In other places in fromie and billy ground. Dies do profper well. In like fort alfo, in all Countries we muft regard the large of the Countrie, and the nature of the fied that we folis: to: Granell in Come places, is caft boon the ground in fead of Dung & fome things profper beff in granelly grounds. In Barbary (as Columella both initneffe) the bery rotten fands ercedany o ther ground in fruitfulneffe. It is also comething to the purpole, whether the granell be white, red, 02 vellow: belides, fome ground both deceive both with colour and quality. In fome Countries the blacke mould is onely effeemed : in others, the fat red mould is thought bett. In England, the chalkie ground beareth god come. and pattures very well. Infome places the thicke and the clame mie ground is most fruitfull. In all thefeit is to be learned, what is best for the hilly ground, what for the bally what for the tilled, what for the lay ground, what the moift feggie ground requires. and what the day and barren. Allo in planting, what ground is belt for Mines, what for other trees, what belights in baie ground, what in moift ground. Virgil commendeth a mellow ground that is fat, and will fone be resolved, for such ground is tilled with fmalleft charge and labour : the next, that which is fat and ftiffe, which greatly recompenceth the hulbandman his travaile and charges : the worft is, that which is daye, leane, and fiffe : for both it is tilled with great labour: and befide, neither answereth in his crope the hulbandmans travaile, neither forneth it for god method or vallure any time after, and therefore fuch ground is

3

Ê

£

Êø

b

ıt

0.

fs

ur

33

30

ground.

Signes of not to be meddled withall. Alfo, the amountle of the ground is the good- easily perceived by perfect tokens: for a clod forinkled with a little nes of the water if in working with the band it be clammy, and cleuing, and Ricketh to the fingers like pitch, when it is handled, as the Boet farth, and breaketh not in falling to the ground, this the weth a naturall fatnete and richnede to be in it : befices, pou map know the mould that is god for Come if it beare Bulrufbes Thiftles. Thie eaued graffe, Danwort, Brambles, Blackethorne, and fuch like, as never grow but in good ground: as on the other five, lothfome and ill favoured toedes, begiare a leane and a bitter ground: Ferne, and withered plants a cold ground, fad and bear tite coloured, a moit and a wet ground: a radge! & a ftony ground, is difference by the epe, a fiffe and a tough clay by the labour and tolle of the Dren. A good token is it also of good ground, where the Crowcs & Dies follow in great number the Biolo, Graping in the fleps of the Plotoman. The goodneffe is like wife knowen, ff at the Sun fetting, after a Kainebow, and in a thowse of raine, following a great brought, it visiteth a pleafant fanour: also in talte it will appeare: if taffing a cloo that bath bene watered in an earthen beffell, pou finde it fret, it is a figne of rich ground, if bit. ter, a great token of barren ground ifit be faltith, it is to be thunned, and not to be bled boon the boungbill. Dou muft remember alfo, that ground will fometimes change, and of fruitfull become barren, tobich bath bene fæne as Plinic reporteth in the old time in Theilalie, and in our time, in fundep places of our Countrep. Befire, one kind of ground, though it be never fo fertill, will not

Ground will change.

fition of the hea-Bens to be observed.

The difpo- beare all things, as the Boet wifely noteth, Ne ferues one ground for every crop. Moreoner, the disposition of the Beauens is a great matter, a'l Countries have not the weather and apre alike; wherefore it is the part of a good hufband to anow the nature and propertie of his groun, and to marke the difposition of it for euce tp part of the pere: he must also confider what crop is best for euce ry laver. Some ground ferueth for Corne fome for Eines, fome for Diues fome for Beboole, fome for Bafture, neither map all things we' be fowen in rich ground, not nothing in barren ground. Such things as not not much moifture, are belt fowen in light ground, as the great Taluer, Sperie, Thich, and the other pulles that are pulied and not cut. Those that require more futenance,

are fotone in richer ground, as Pot-hearbs, Wibeat, Kye, Barly, Lin fab. Some of them Doe good to the ground the piere fol lowing as Lupines that are bled to be fowen for the bettering of the ground. There is difference alle to be put betwirt fruits for pleafure, and fuch as be for profit : as fruit tres and flowers. and fuch things as recio both pleafore and fuftenance, and are alfo profitable to the ground. Dou mut chole for Willowes, Digres, and Keebes, a wet and a marrift ground, and contrary where you will have Corne & Bulle, that Delights in Drie ground: Sperage and fuchlike, muft be fowen in thadowy places, and other ground for Quicklets, Timber, Datt, and Fewell: pea, fuch ground as is bery granelly and barren , hath his ble, where you may plant Birch, and fuch like, and watry grounds where you may fet Ab Ders. 1520me, and 15ulrufhes.

Rigo. Surely the temperature of the agre, both much in the fruitfulnes of the ground, for I have oftentimes marked, that one kind of ground is more fruitful in one Countrep then in another.

Co No. In Venefri, the granell ground beares Dlines bel. where as about Granado, they require the richeft ground that may be. When in other places the Time doth not profper bery well in Conp grounds, about the Rhine the bery ragged rockes boe pell as fruitfull Mines as map be fene. Plinic both witneste, that in come places the Mines doe groto even in the Fennes and Marthes, fuch a fecret force is therein nature. About Chalcia, an Ilano about the Robes, it is faid there is a piece of ground fo fruitfull, that they mow their barley being foined in his feafon, and their Croppe, fow it againe, and gather it with their other graine. The Albanoyles receive the fruit of their land angera HOL avneota butilled and bulowen, and being once lowen, it peels beth his croppe thee peres together. Homer calleth Phriges αμπελοίας αν. 4 Argos πολύπορου. Hedorotus inziteth, that Babilon is fo fruitfull as the ground perioeth increase two hundred & three hundred fold. Plinie affirmeth, the increale in his time to be fiftie, e to god hulbands an hundred fold. About Monte Gibello it is res parted by credible perfons, to be an hundred fold Iraly is fo fruit, Italy, the full, that Varro calleth it the garden of the world, because it is so the world. fertile & Wel planted in euerp place. Campania, being ful of come: Apulia, plenteons with wine: and Venefri, abounding with Dyle.

RIGO. 3 bane heard fay, that Germany & France bane not bene in times past very fertill, and that they have bene altogether butbout Tlines, a now we fee no country more fruitfull, that yel Deth greater abundance of all things. Wibere can you finde better wines, then about Mauaer and the Mbine ? 3 (peake not of their The fruit - areat floze of graine, wines of gold filver from and lead. In the fulneffe of countrie of Thurin in Germany,it is lave, that after wheat once

Germanic Colven, the ground will peeld Rie of it felle two peeres together. CONO. Dea, and in our Countrie here, we have ground that will beare Wheate enery pore. Have ford being once fowen with bs, both oftentimes pelo his Crop two peres together, without

folding of labouring.

R 1 G O. Ander the Bothzen Bole, it is reported the ground is to fertill, as they fowe in the Mouning, and reape at Mone. In

The fruit- Barbary where the ground is low they plant binber the Date tree fulneffe of the Dline, under the Dline the Figge tre, bnber the Figge the Barbary. Domegranate, biber it the Mine , binder the Wine they lowe Wilheat, and binder wheat Bulle, all profpering one binder the o. thers Chapole, and veelding their fruit the fame vere.

CONO. That made me to fay, that the ground followes the

disposition of the beauens.

Rico. But fith in all places the ground is not of like goods nelle, what if we chance boon a leane and a barren ground , as beathy, banthy, and granelly ground: may thefe be made fruitfull. and mended by Art :

CONO. Herely well, there is no countrey that the most grations Lozo bath left without lufficient peeld, if labour and tranell

be nat refuleb.

Rico. What fail I would glably bnberffand.

Of dunging of ground.

CONO. It is brought to valle biners waves, principally by bounging and biligent labour : and to this end ferue those beapes of boung that 3 lately theweb you.

Rigo. T pap you let me know what boung both most en-

rich the ground.

The fort of doung.

CONO. Varro and Columella his follower, appoint the forts of doungs: the first of Boultep, the nert of Den, the third of Cate tell. Df the firft foat, the beft is that which is had out of Donce boufes, the nert is of Bulline, all other fowle, ercept Defe and Duckes.

Buckes, which is burtful. The people in the old age had fuch froze of Banitry and Fotple, as the boung of them fuffice for the mann ring of their ground. The next to this, is mans ordure, if it be mired with other rubbilb of the boule : for of it felfe it is to hot. and burnes the ground. Bans brine, being fire moneths kept, and Vrine. poweed byon the rotes of Apple tres and Hines, bringeth great fruitfulnelle to the tres, and queth a pleafant talte to the fruit. In the third place is the boung of Cattell lobereof the belt is the boung of Affes, becanfe this beaft both chaw with most leafure. inhereby his meate being well digefted, is made the profitabler boung. Dert to this is the boung of Shepe nert of Coates then of Dren and Borfes; the work of all of Swine bery burtfull to Corne, but bled in fome places for Barbens, for lacke of other boung but is a great breeder of noviome weets : pet Plinic femeth to allow it, as the filth of a filthie creature. The boung of Borfes likeinife where the Horfes are fed with Barley both breed great ftoze of webs. The Lupine, befoze he beare his cod is moft commended being turned by with the Blow or Battocke and land in bungels about the rotes of Trees of Mines. Withere they have no flore of Cattell, they ble to mend their ground with frain and Ferne, with the ftalkes of Lupines, and the branches land together in fome Ditch : bereunto you may call Albes , the filth of finkes and privies, and fraw, with buff and other things raked to gether: but in the mioft, you must lay some found matter against the breding of Adders & Snakes: allo Bemlockes, Waltvort, and the wedes growing about willow Trees and ferne, with other fuch rotten wedes, von may gather and lav bnter pour Sheepe. They that bivel in Granelly and Beathy grounds, boe take the Turnes of the Carth and the Beath, and laving them in beaves polodzed with a little boung, fuffer them to lye and rot, and after lap it boon barren ground, but frecially where they keep great Hore of Shape, they caft into their folds fuch Turues pared from the ground, Columella counts them but cuill hufbands, that have of enery one of the leffer kinde of Cattel, leffe then a Cartioad of Old dong boung in 200. Dayes, e each of the greater fort ten load, befor the beit for fifth and eart of the pard. This is also to be noted, that the dung Corne, that hath line a piece, is belt for Corne, for it both is of sufficient doing for Brength, and biebeth leffe webes, but bpon Deobolu and Das Meddow. C 3

Aure.

fine, you must lay the newest because it brings most graffe, and this must be done in Februarp, the Mone encreating, for this is the belt time to cante encrease of graffe. In the manuring of pour ground, loke that you lay most boung byon the top of the Will, for the raine will beare it to the lower parts faft enough. Wee that mindes to have his ground beare Come,if bec meane to fowe in the end of Summer, muft turne in his boung in Deptember : if in the Spring, be may lay it on at any time all the winter. What

The obthe winde and the Moone, in mending of the ground.

field.

ferung of time focuer it be done, you mult loke that the wind be Westerly, and the Mone in the inapne. This observation belveth greatly to the bettering of the ground. Belide, you must not forget to let the boung be bipe befozeit bee lapd bpon the ground. For though Columella bo bid the contrary our ofone experience wils bs not to follow him: for boung while it is moilt, both more harme

Wet dung to the ground then god as baily experience teacheth. Dow as hurts the pour land will ware colpe, if it be not dounged, to will it be bateb or burnt,if it be manured perly,og to much. The watrie ground requireth more Rose of boung, and the drie ground the leffe.

RIGO. 3 remember, 3 haue per this feine Carth taken out of the fields nere adiopning, and lapo byon the land, I therefore

queffe the earth map be mended with earth.

Marle, a fat kinde of earth monly at this day in diucr3 parts of Suffex & Kent, for the enriching of land. Chalke v-

fed for

Co.N.o. The Bermanes, belides fundapother forts of en riching of their grounds, doe inteed of boung, cath boon it a kinde of pitch and fatnette of the earth; (Plinic counts it to be first de utled in England and Fraunce) called Marga, as it were the fat of the earth: but I rather thinke it to be the inucrition of the Ger. vied com- manes with whom pet both the name and the ble is retayned: it to gotten in the cove pits, but not alike in all forles. That part of France that lies byon the Magle both their a fanty kind of Marle. differing from the fat Barle of Germanic, but of the fame quality: which, carried byon the Sea in bellels, is folde as a great mar chandige. In fome places the foliving of Donds and Ditches,is bled, to the great enriching of the ground, in the mountaine and barrengrounds. In some Countries they make their land bery fruitfu'l with laying on of Chalke as Plinic teftifieth of the Bur gundians, and the Galcopnes, and in Germanie in our daves, this : mending manner of mending of ground is common. But long bfe of it, in of ground the end brings the ground to be Karke nought whereby the come

mon:

mon people have a fpech, that ground enriched with Chalke, makes a rich father, and a beggerly forme. A little lower, not farre from the Maale, in the Countrie of Lyege, they ment their land with a kind of flate frome, which caft upon the ground both moulder away, and makes the ground fatter. In Lombardie they Dunging like to well the ble of albes, as they eliceme it farre about any with alice boung, thinking boung not meet to be bled for the bulbholeform neffe thereof. Columella bouteth, that his ancie was wont to mend fanbie and granely grounds with Chalke, and chalkie and bard grounds with granell and fand, tobereby bee hab alwayes godly Come. So do I thinke that Kiner land by overflowings, and faft ground with mudde,mingled with fand and graveliswill be made much better.

RIGO. You have taught me fantay wayes of menting of ground, I would gladly now learne the right way of plowing

and foling.

CONO. In plowing, and orderly preparing ground for fied, The man conflits the chiefelt poynt of bulbandap. Caro affirmeth the first ner of poput of bulbandapto be to prepare the ground well : the fecond, ploring. to plow it well: and the third, to boung it well. Of plowing, and furning by the ground, the falbion is biners, according to the nature of every loyle and countrie. All great fields are tilled with the Blow and Share, the letter with the Spane. The Blowes are of funday fathious, according to the dinertitie of Countries. Some Angle , fome bomble , fome with whiles, fome without. The parts of the Ploto, are the Talle, the Shelfe, the Beame, The parts the frote, the Coulter, the Share, the Wheeles, and the faffe, of the The Share, is that which first cuts the way for the Coulter, that Plor. afteripards turnes by the furrow. Wibere the ground is light, they ble onely a finall thare. In Littland they have for their Plow nothing but a forke. In Syria, where they cannot goe bery Depe, they ble (as Theophraftus ingites) bery little plaines. Plinie witeth, that wheeles for plowes were venifed by the Frenchmen, and called Plugrat, a Germaine name, which cop ruptly is printed Planarati. In biners places, where the ground is fiffe, thep have a little wing on the right fibe of the Coulter, which wing is to be remouch to which fibe you lift: with the red of Raffe, well pointed, the Blowman maketh cleane his Coulter.

amben.

This draw. ing with the head. is vied in the vpper parts of Fraunce

The like is vied Norfolke, and Lincolnihire.

Withen you tooshe, your Dren molt be roked even together, that: they may braw more handlomly with their beads at libertte, and lette burt to their neckes. This kind of yoaking is better liked of many, then to be poked by the hornes: for the Cattell Chalbe able to draw better with the necke and the breff, then they thall with their heads: and this way they put to the force of their whole bedies, whereas the other way (being restrained by the poke on their heads) they are fo griened, as they fearcely race the bpper & Spaine, part of the earth. Withere horfes map be bled, their ble is moze commedious for the Blow and the fewer of them the better: for many horfes draw to halfily, e make to large farrolics, which is not god : whereby weefer the ground to be excellently well plomed in Gelderland, about Coleyne, where they plow alwaies with two horses, going very folly. In Fraunce, and other places, with vin where they plow with Dren, they make their Furrowes rather Dope then broad. Withere the ground is fiffe, the coulter will be the greater , the Bronger, that it may goe the beeper: for if the sent of the earth be turned by bery broad it remaineth fill whole. whereby neither the tweedes are killed not the ground can be wel barrowed. The furrow ought not to exceed one hundred a timen. to fot in length, for if it one, as Columeila faith, it is hurtfull to the bealls, because they are to much wearled withall: but this rule. lobere the fields are large is not in many places regarded, as in the Countrie of Gulicke, where the fields are great, their furrowes are drawne very long. Bon must not plow in wet wear ther not wet ground, not loben after a long brought a little raine falling bath but wet the byper part, e not gone beepe. If it be to wet when it is plowed it both no god that reere. Dou muft therefore have a regard to the temperature of your leafon, that it be neither to by not to wet: for to much mothere maketh it to burtie, and to great oppnette maketh that it will never worke well: for epther the hardnes of the Carth refifeth the Bloin or if it do enter, it breakes it not fmall enough, but turneth by great flakes, burtfull to the next plowing. For though the land be as rich as may be, get if you goe any bepth, you thall have it barren, which is turned by in thefe great cloddes, whereby it happeneth that the babbe mould, mired with the good, palbeth the worler. Corne.

Dead mould.

Wifers you have ploined in a bey feafon, it is good to have forme moisture in your second firring, which moistning the ground, shall make your labour the lighter. Where the ground is rich, and bath long borne water, it is to be firred again when the weather wareth warme, and when the wedes are full growns, and have their feedes in their toppe, which being plowed to thicke, as you can fcarfe fe where the Coulter bath gone, btterly killeth e befroy. eth the wedes : belives, through many firrings, pour fallow is brought to fo fine a mould as it hal need bery little or no barrow. ing at all when you fow it : for the old Komans, as Columella witheffeth, would far that the ground was ill bulbanben, that after folding had need of the harrow, Mozeoner the god bulband must Triall of trie whether it be well plowed or no, a not onely truft your eyes, good which (the balks being coursed with mould) may easily be beceis plowing. ued, but trie it with your hand, ( which is a certeinen profe ) by thenfting botone a rod into the furrow, which if it pierce a tike in enery place, it theweth that the ground is well plowed. If it be hallow in one place, & depe in another, it declares the ground to be suff handled in the plowing. If you are to plots byon a hill, you The plovemust plow overthwart, a not by and bowne: for thereby the incon. ing of hill nemence of the frepnes is met with, and the labour of both man and Cattell is lightned : But berein pon mulbeware, that pon ploto not alwates one way, but fortime higher, fometime lower, morking allope as you hall fee caufe, Couching the feafon of your The beft plowing,it muft be chiefly in the fpring, as the Boet wel teacheth: time of When as the pleafant fpring, &c. For in Summer the ground is to bard and charliff, and in Winter to foule and dirtie : but in the Dpzing, the ground being mellow, is easily to be tozought, and the wedes are then belt turned in which both do and for the enrich. ing of the ground, and plucked by by the rotes before they have feed, will never fpzing againe. And therefore with be, we ble to begin to ploto about the middeft of Warch: but in fandy and light ground, they bie to plow in the middelt of winter, if the fealon wil Infer. Plinic is of opinion, that fiffe ground also thould then be firred. A flender and levell ground, fubies to water, would be Arit plower in the end of August, a firred agains in September, and prepared for fotning about the twelfth of March. The light billy ground, is not to be broken by in Dunmer, but about the Balencs .

nations of Deptember: for if it be broken up alore, being barren and without inpee, it is burnt up with the Dunne, and hath no governed remaying in it. What ground, some would have broken up after the Noes of Aprill, which being plowed at that time, thould be frirred againe about the tenth of June, and after againe, about the halends of Deptember, according to Columellacs minue, But those that are skilfull in husbandry, agric that after the tenth of June, without great froze of raine, you shall not plow: for if the perce be wet, there is nothing to the contrary but you may plow in July. In the meane time, beware that you beale not with strough over-wet, as I gave you warning before.

Rico. May 3 plots in the night, if 3 lift ?

Plowing in the Night,

CONO. Don, bery well, in Dammer time, and in hot come tries you may begin in the evening, and continue till the bunne : rife, that the moilture and fatnete of the ground, may remaine Saphoweb biber the clob : and that the Cattell through ener, much heate of the Soume, be not difeafed not burt. Boto aft you thall blow the ground that you meane to fow, partly the mature of the loyle, and partly the condition of his leebe will teach you. as when we come to it, I will tell you : for it is not neofull to fir a granelly and a light ground, fo often as the friffe ground : pet ine finde, that land, the offner it is firred, the better it beares. De that for fome febe, you muft not onely tippfallow, and the fallow your ground, but also fourefallow it, as ther ble in the fruitfullet places of Italy and Germanie. In Milnia and Auftria they plate but thife. Sotiffe ground, as they commonly bee in Italy, is bell to be fower byon the fift firring : in Tulcan, byon the ninth. Thus bath enery Countrie, both in this, and other matters, bis fathion according to the nature of the ground.

R 1 GO. But may I not lowe one pecce of ground enery yers

without refting ?

Gono. There are some grounds you may sow parely, as in Italy, and in Austria, e like wife in some parts here about the Miener, that are fruitful either by nature, as by onerslowing. In other places you must observe the old laying of the huband, Take not soo much of your ground. Virgill would have ground red every other pares which if you have doze of ground, out of all boubt is best. Here of had the ground that is sowed every pare, his name

in the all time : but commonly cuen the beff ground remireth reft the third, the fourth, 02 (at the fartheft) the fift vere. Varro maiteth, that in Olynthia the land beareth every viere, and enery third yere most plentifully. But if you will do well you must let If the enery other pere according to the nature of the forle or elfe foine it with lighter feebe, that foketh out lelle the fubftance of the ground as Lupines & others, that we will hortly intreat of. It is alfo much to be confidered, whether the ground that you plow be lav ground persty fowne, or fallow: If you break by new ground. if it be rich, beaup, and prepared for feed, it fufficeth to ploin it once, and to fow it immediately and harrow it. If it be light a granelly ground, you must they fallow it, specially at the first breaking bp.

RIGO. Here you fpeake of divers tearmes belonging to this trade. I may you make me biderftand them, before you morede

any farther.

t

È

€ 0 NO. This Art, (as like wife all other) hath tertaine words Divers peculiar, and belonging to it felfe: and becaufe funday men of god words belearning have berein beine beceived, left my matter foculd be longing to marred with barke and france tearmes. I will beclare the words husbandry as planne as I can, digretting a while from mp former fpech.

interpreted.

RIGO. I befeech von heartily. Co No. We take Agrum, a field in our fpeth not for a Jus Agri Vera, rificition, a Dioceffe, or a Shire, as the old lawiers take it but with Iabolenus & Florentinus, we count it a parcell of ground either carable or pafture. Ager, Arous, or: A ruum, the call earable ground that is to be plowed and folone, Varro would rather have it called Aratum,and not Sarum. The Field that is called Relfibilis, is that which is renued, and enery yeare fotone, called of the Greekes παλομφιής because his fruitfulnesse continueth to the nert peers. and pecloeth his croppe enery pere. Ager Noualis, is called of Varro, the ground that hathbeene fowne and fallowed : of Plinie counted to be folune every other pare: with the Lawvers it is counted ground new plowed, that hath lyen a vere: we according to the bulgar (pech for we must freak with the most and Jubge with the Cewest) boe call Novale Agrum, that which is new broken bp, and hath not before beine plowed, tobereof commeth Novalium Decima, the Tithes of new broken-by land : pet ] anoin there are some learned that countit that, which after his

crop :

crop lies lay. Veruactum is of Varro taken for that ground that in the fozing time is turned by, and bath beene for a while frarch. Ditentimes is this also called Novale, both the Beld that bath the en a piere, and that which is broken by the first fering : for thus faith Varro : There is great difference whether you fow in bit tilled ground, or in that which is perely fowere, and is called Re-Stibilis, or in that which bathlien awhile, and is broken by in the fuzing, Mozeoner, both Columella and Plinie Do Ble not felbome. Veruactum, for ground new broken by in the furing, taking their reason of the time. The field is faid to be plowed, to be ffirred with the plots, when it is turned by. It is broken by when it is first plowed, lying in great clobs. The fecond plowing is called Offringere Agrum, or Iterare, to plot againe : Tertiare to theifale low it. Ager iteratus, and tertiatus, be bfuall mozos with Columella and Plinic, Novare, is to change the ground, well bufband bed before, and to plow it and prepare it for the folying. Occare, to harrow it as Varro faith, is fo to breake it, as tocre remaine no clob. The harrow is an inftrument croffe lettufed, to breake the clobs withall and to cover the feedes. Cratice is likefulle bled in the fame firmification. Arrare is, when that lubich is forme and come to fome growth, is turned in with the ploto. Plinic calleth Ararare, as it mere Aratrare, to vlow often that which is fotone. Sarrire, is to purge with the rake, Runcare, is to webe out of the ground notiome weeds, for which is also bled Auerruncare, & Deruncare : amb of Columella, Exherbare, Pallinare, and Repallinare, is to bigge about the Mines. Paltinum, is a forked inftrument be fed in the planting of Mines. Lirare and Occare, are almost one, where we plew fo as we leave betwirt two furrowes a Kidge. for the brie kieping of the graine, like a garden bed. And hereof is the space called Lira, a Hioge, which the husbandmen cal Porcas, because the place being raised bigh, Defendeth the come from the water, and Lira Hortenfis, a bed in a garben. Scampum-a balke. is the groffe earth that bath fcaped the plow. Plinic willeth, that there be no balke made, not great clobs remaining, meaning the great turffe that is turned by at the first plowing, Scamnatus ager, is called of Vibius Vrbicus, that land which runneth all in length from Welt to Gaft which if it be more of length then brebth and tyeth buon the Both is called Strigatus. The land it felfets allo called

called groffe and raw that is not well mellowed which bath nee to be featoned with the beat of the Summer and the cold of Wains ter, and to be plowed in the Spring. It is also called rich, fruitfull, fertill : and that which is nought, and polls not his fruit, is calleb leane, barren, bungry, or brinifh: alfo falt, bitter, femilh, where the water Will continues : Wett, that formetime lies bife: Carbunkled, that is burnt with the Sunne, rotten and moffie. At is also called pleasant ground, finet, blacke, rotten, and mellowed, which are the fignes of god ground : but hereof I thinke a haue now fpoken fufficiently.

RIGO. That you may continue your frech, 3 pray you goe

to your former matter againe.

CONO. Withen you have broken by your ground, thit be Noualis, as 3 faid, and not tilled before, pon may foine it prefently, and harrowit, and if neede bee, rake it. The ground that is yearely fowne, and that bath Ipen spare, is to be plowed thaile, according to the nature of the forle, and the feed that you meane to fowe.

Rigo. Dow you have told me bow to order my land for feede, I may you let me bnoerstand the forts of leebe, and in what fort

they must be fowed.

ío

5

1

-

e,

ir

.

ia

D

10

1-

th

c,

io

30

m

10

th

e.

he

c-

c,

ú

€,

e,

of

15,

be

e,

at

hs

er,

th

nD

(o

60

CONO. That must 3 doe : The feede that commeth of that Of Seede, which the Latines call Fruges, as Bulle, and Corne, we here Doe and their call Fruges, all forts of harneft graine : which the Germans call divertity. ymia and apaia, because they are gathered in their beautie, and their ripenelle. Iulian the Lawier, calleth Fruges, all things where with a man is fed. The ancient waiters doe bnderftand it moze largely for all the fruits of the earth. Plinic benibes it into two kindes: into Corne that growes on care, as Gallus the Lawier Befines it : the other, that beareth coos, as all kinde of Bulle, 02 Bedivare. Df the first kinde, is Wibeate, Kie, Barley, Bigge, Dates, Biechwheat, oz Buck, oz if pon will in Breeke pryomugos, Kife, and Lenten Wibeate, though all kindes grow not in all plas ces, not have in every place all one name. In some places pou hane not Lenten Wheate, chiefly where there is plenty of Big. In other places they ble neyther Dates noz Bucke. Df the kinds of Bulle are thele; Beanes, Bealon, Lentiles, Chiches, Tares, Lintels, Lupines, and fuch like. And though there be funday forts Old Seede office, and every Country hath his timbe, and fowes fuch as bell fowns.

agras .

saries with their nature : vet generally this is to be regarded. that you lowe none that are old and dayed, but the newell: for old feed both oftentimes, as they write, change their nature; as the feed of Colworts, that being fowne, turneth to Kapes ; and Kape feet like wife into Colworts. The feet of the firft vere is beft, of tipo viere old worle, and of thee work of all the reft is barren and naught. The best feed also is that inhich is martiest, and leth in the bottome, and fuch as is full, and being broken, hath a god cos lour: fuch as is wrinckled and thin in the care is to be throwne as inay. There is also another necessary note, to have the feed from Arange ground, e from the worle to the better and not the contraric,noz from cold Countries into hot,noz from the fozivaro to the flow, & to beware that it be not bitten with Birds. 9016,02 Ants: and to profper the better furinkle them before they be folin, with the tupes of Boufleke. If you mingle with your graine the feed of Bearfot, fow it about your ground, you hal fane it from the and

The order novance of birds. Pour must sow your Ridges with an equal hand, of sowing. xai i max as and all alike in every place, letting your fote (specially your right sot) and your hand goe together: Wheat, Rie, Barley, Dtcs, e other, chiefly such as bear ccbs, as Melium & Panicum, must be some with a full hand, but Rape see onely with the fingers.

R 1 G o. A man muft ble his hand I perceine, as the Harper,

both, to make it perfect.

CONO. He must inded. And as we put more water to from ger Mine, then we boe to finall, and lay the greater burden byon the Aronger man, and some Romacke requires the Aronger fod, to fome ground may beare much feed, and fome alpay with leffe: neither can it be certainely appointed, how much feed is generally to be call upon an Acre: though 3 know the old writers appoint ted a certaine quantitie to enery Acre, which perhaps might ferue with them: but we hould fonlely deceine our felues, if we thould observe the like in every place : first, because some ground requireth more lede then other, as the ground is of Aiffenelle or lightnette : for the ftiffer ground (as in Bolland niere the Khine) requires much feebe, where lighter ground requireth leffe. The timely fowing, the thinner : and the later, as Columella faith, the thicker. Secondly, their measures and Acres differ, as the thing that at this day is not throughly agreed boon. But now Pou

fon thall heare what feede enery ground requireth.

30

of

0

n

04

89

m

as

20

:

th

30

TV

d,

lp

ę,

Æ

s.

4

no

HO

D.

2:

lp

TH

9U

Ole

223

02

16)

be

th,

the

w

OM

YIIM

Rigo. That I long to beare. CON O. After long rett,og the first bunging, epther Barley oz Enheate is to be foime : but Wilheate, though it require gob ground, pet if the ground be to rich lobere it is fomen, it will ground ranke, and lye leadge boon the ground. And there fore boon fuch ground, it is belt to low your Wheat after a cron of Barley. Wasfe. oz Buche, and after your Wheat crop, to foine it with Rie: and then againe (if the ground ware not ponce ) with Barley. In bery rich ground, immediatly after the gathering of Kave feet, plow it prefently for Bucke, whereby pou map have two croppes in one pere. In the tike manner Cabegged rape fowen after Rie, maketh two barnelts in one pere. Beale, Beanes, Hares, and fitches, and almott all Bulle elle, requireth rich ground, which afterwards may perely ferue for Waheat, Milium, and Rape. Plinic would not have Rapes folgen, but in bery well bunger ground: but we finde by experience, that after a Crov of Kie in meane ground, you that have the fame pere great Mapes. Sandie and granelly ground, muft reft euery third vere. for the or three veres, that being then well bounged, you map folve Rie, oz Buck, after Dates. In good Balture ground new broken by, von may lowe Dates after the first plowing, after that, Kape fied, then Barlov, after that Wilheat, oz Mie, and at late Dates, 03 Rie, If the nature of the Countrie be foz it. Withen this ts done, you must epther doung it, oz let it lpe lay. If the ground be mellow after Barley, in fome places they fowe Millie, then Manish, after that Barley, and Wisheat, as in Campania: and furh ground is lufficiently plowed, when it is fowen in some place where Lenten Wheate is fowne, it refts their moneths, e after is fowen with Beancs in the Spring, in no other wife map you tharge indifferent ground. If after two fealons of Come, you fold Bulle or Dedware, the barrener ground muft reft thee veres. Some will in no cafe have you fowe wheat, or Barley, in ground Harrowthat lies fallow. After per have thus fowen your fiede in ground ing. thrice plowed & well prepared, then mult von fraightwaics hars row it, which is done with a lettuled instrument full of teth. beawen boon the ground, whereby the cloop are broken, a the feed covered: in fome places it is some with a boar tred to the lelow. which !

Raking.

which they call in lating Lirare. Sometime raking is netfult. inhich in the Spring. lofeth the earth, made clunged fuith the cold of winter, and letteth in the freth warmeth. It is bell to rake Waheate, Barley, and Beanes twife. Pozenner, they breake

Rowling. afunder with the Rowler the greater and fiffer clobs. Wiebing is when the Come is knotted, the noughtie weeds being plucked The time by belimereth the rotes of the Come, and fenerethit. To freake

for lowing of the featon of Dowing, it is agreed upon of all men, that there ought to be no forming in Winter: for the Winter corne, when it is formed before winter, appeareth about the ground fometimes

within a feanen-night after. which if it be fowen after winter is begun,it Carcely appearethin forty Dayes after. Dome bery fond ly thinkeit better to lowe in the Spring, then in Aurumne. Phnie toziteth that in Trevers the Baruelt being in,they bane folwed in the coldest of minter, and raking their ground in the Spring, baus had an excellent god crop after. Amongit our baruet feebes, there are forme barber, that are able to abide the twinter. Inhich are fowne in hot Countries, as Virgill faith, about the fetting of the feauen farres, which Columella binderstandeth to be about one and thirtie papes after the Autumne Acquinoctiall, that is, the 9. Halends of Bouember,and in France and Germanie in Sen

tember and the beginning of Daober as Kape feeb, Wheat, Rie. Winter Barley, that are nourified in the blade all Winter, and groin by towards earing in the Spring. Some there be that will pan to foine beface, onely in bev ground and hot Countries.

fayleth.

Late fow- the Autumne Acquinoctiall, in hot Countries later, left they ing alwaics thefile flourist before winter and be destroyed of wormes, or blad fred. Some on the other fide make balte laving. That foone fowing fometimes deceives, but late fowing ever. It is good reafon to foive timely in wet grounds, that the labe rot not with enermuch moiffure : and later in by grounds left lying long & not forois ting, it come to nought. Alfo, in timely fowing, to folue thicker. because it is flow in roting: and in later sowing thinner, left with the thickneffe it be cheaked, commer feedes, which are folded be fore the rifing of the feanen flarres, & in the spring, are Beanes. Beale, and fuch, Bulle, Billet, Banicum, Sclamum, Summer Barley, Flare, Dempe, Dates, Bucke, Sporja, and fuch other

Some againe would have you to lowe in cold Countries after

Summer graine.

are falurd in the Spring time. In Alia and Grecce they foine all, as they lap, at the fetting of the feaven tarces. Pow, although there be certaine precepts of the time of folining, and boin much fiebe is mete for every quantity of ground, furely, they might as I have laid before, for their ofone Countrey and nature of their ground, gins a kinde of guelle, but to betermine any thing berein certainely, there is no man that can bos if , but the ground and encry mans owne practife is herein the belt Patter. Dne anci. A generall ent generall rule of huf bandey there is, wherein we are warned tule. in cold Countries to foine late in temperate Countries foner and in one bote Regions Conell of all. Eratofthenes faith, that India is labled to much raines in Summer, and that then they low flar, Sefamum, Mice and Millet : and in Winter, Waheat, Barley, Debe ipare, and other fruits that we have not. Heliodus, the Brince in his time of hul bandy, wils be to low according to the cultome of Greece, his naturall Countrep. Virgil, Cato, Varro, Columella. and Plinic, appoint their rules for Iraly, whose mindes if you will have followed in all other places, pou thall but feeke to couer ene ry pot with one couer. But to come to the matter, fith the febes of funder natures require funder times of folding and divers forts of ozbering and that herein every Countrey bath his guile, I will bers (observing such customes as are most generall to them all) fenerally thew you of enery feede by himfelfe, and fo declare buto you the ozber of their fowing. And first, amongst all the fruits and graine that the earth both pelb for our fuftenance, the chiefeft place is rightly given buto wheat, called in Brocke me's in Italian Grano, in Spanish Trigo, in Dutch Weyls, in French Four- Wheate, ment, as a graine most needfull for a man, and therefore most fruits ful, because Boo hath oppained it to nourith man withal. It is wonberfull what pelo it hath bene of in some Countries. Augustus his Deputic fent him from Bilaice in Africa of one graine of wheat foure himbach bamches. And Plinie witneffeth, that in the fame place, one buffell bath yelbed a hundred and fiftie buffels.

RIGO. There are that hold opinion, that this which the common people call Wheat, the Germaines Weyls, and the Hollanders Teroe, is not the true Wheat, but a kinds of Rie, and that the true Wheat which the Italians call Grano, groweth onely in

Italy and in Spaine.

2

g

0

93

18

tt

25

ís

D

ie

in

112

TE

be

219

h

epi

lie

md

ofl

ter

hep

bla

ow-

n to

nch

OB

set.

vith

be

nes.

net,

ard

D

CONO

Como. That which growes in Italy and Cicillat this bay, differeth not from ours in fashion, colour, not stolute, though the graine there be comewhat great, and the floinge more clammic. which maketh it that it cannot be long kept, specially about Rome, And whereas our Wilheate is either bearded or pollard, theirs is altogether pold: the call it pold or pollara that bath no Ames boon the eares. And that the call the Aane, which grows eth out of the care, like a long pricks or a Dart, whereby the care is pefended from the banger of Birds. Whith Virgill the Aane is bled for the come, as the parke for the wheat. Gluma is the bulke of the come whole top is the Ame. Frit is the Small graine lefter then the corne that growes in the top of the ripe eare. To refurne to the wheat, I graunt there are some that boubt of this wheat of ours, fuch bath beene the infurp of the time (as all things almost forgotten) we fearfely know how to name the fode that we baily febe of Foi my part, I will follow common ble, as a Biffris in fpeach. The old writers have written of funday forts of wheate. whereof they have thought that most needfull to be fowne, which they called Robus, as the fayzelf and waightieft. The fecond called Swigo, they bled in their fine the cheate. The third, they called Trimeltre, because it would be ripe in the moneths after the foining. Though Columella alow no such kinde, pet was it mont aunch ent with the Greekes, and called Trimenon, growing ortely in the cold countries. In Thracia, they have a kinde that is ripe in tipo moneths, and is coucred with a number of hulks, against the ertreame coid of the countrep. In our Countries also we have Wilheat and Kie, that we fow with our Summer grame, as we like wife doe Hape feede, but to no great commoditie : for the wins ter feedes to farre ercede them, and being nourifhed in the earth. all winter, thep prome, as Theophrastus faith, of moze substance and profit. Among t all thele forts. Plinic recounteththe inbeat of Italie to be thebeff, both foz beauticand weight. To e ble with be onely two forts, differing in this, that the one bath fmothe eares without any beards, the other with long beards or Aines. bery rough and tharpe, not much bulke to Winter Barley:

The time in all other properties they are both alike. It is sowne in Seps for Wheat tember, the season being faire, the ground there plowed and sowing. Well raked or harrowed although you may sowit very well after

mee plowing boon ground where Deale, Tares or Bucke bath bene nemly has of in a goo forte. Plinic & Columella would have pou fow of Wa beat and Kie, fine bulbels boon an acre : but as 4 faio before, this measure is to be measured with reason. Wat at this day fow not fo much inheat byon an acre, as rie, noz fo much rie, as barley. It is belt, if the winter be like to be colo, to fow the Coner : if warme, the later. Witheat belight eth in a levell, rich. warme, and a pay ground : a habowed, wedp, and a billy ground, it loueth not though Plinic fay the bill vielbeth harder wheat, but no great flore. Afterit is folone, it putteth out a great company of finall rotes and appeareth at the first top or blade : it hath fime bap falks, but fuch as cannot branch all the winter, as other winter come is, it is nourtibed in blade : when the Spring braweth on it beginneth to frindle: boon the third or fourth fount thereof. commeth out the eare, which first appeareth inclosed in the blade, it flowzeth the fourth or fifth day after: if it grow to ranke at the firt it is eaten bowne with cattell,or in fome place mowed: it is after meden : it flowers about the 10. of June foner or later as the vere falles out, even at one time almost with the Wine : two noble flower, with comfortable faugur flourifbing at once. Varro affirmeth, that the wheat lyeth 15. dayes in the blade, flourisheth as, and ripeth is. After it bath flowed it wareth greater, and as Theophrastus faith, is within fortie baies after full ripe, where with the latest they reave in the cight moneth. Dther lay in fire and thirtie daies, and reaped in the ninth moneth. It never eares. till all bis iounts or knots be growne. There are foure tounts in Wheat, as Plinie faith, and eight in barley: but in our country and our paies, both Wheat, Rie, Barlev, & Dtes, have but foure, and not that almaies. Before the full number of the fornts, there is no appearing of the eare: which when it commeth, beginneth to flowie within foure or fine dayes, and fo many, or little more, it fabeth. Wahen the flower is gone, the graine begins to fwell, and in foure or fine dapes after, to ripe. The blade of the wheate is fomething like a Seoge, but narrower then the barley : the fpinble, falke, or frame thereof, is fmotherand gentler, and not fo brittle as Barley. It is closed in many coates. The falke that beareth the eare is higher than that of barlen; the cave groweth more boright, and farther from the blade, the chaffe is fofter, D 2 Ameter,

i

ħ.

2

f

h

31

5,

Ds.

D

er

ce:

fineter, and more full of tupce, the eare of wheate is out of order and bueuen, as well of the Wollard, as of the bearded, whereas Barley bath his care of inft number, and in perfect orber. In Ba-Ctris, it is fait a graine of inheat is equall in quantitie to an care of our wheat. In Babylon, the blades both of wheat and barley. as Herodotus reporteth, are foure inches broad. Witheat, as Columella wittethafter the third folying changeth to Kie which bath bene knowne in Bermanie, as I faid befoze in many places. Df wheat is made Amyl the making whereof, Cato and Diolcorides teacheth. After wheat we fow with be vie. There are that thinks it to be that which the Greekes call ower though Homer take ohup au, for a kinde of fode for horfes : forme others take it for a kinde of wheat. Herodows faith, bread was made of it. Df Laurenrius it is called Far. Df Gafa, Siligo, Diners learned mencall it Secale, and takeit for Plinics farrago. The French men call it Segle. The Dutchmen Rock. The Stalians, almost as the Latines, Sagala : the graine is Comething blacke, and maketh blackill beend, But to palle oner all controverfies, I follow the Country speech, & take Siligo for our common Mie, which is fowed immediately after inheat about the end of Deptember . or in the beginning of Des tober in god ground : in fandy and granelly ground, it is folded in February, & called Summer wheat:it requireth the best ground. warme, faft, and refufeth not light ground & grauelly, foit be hels ped with bung : it lougth met ground as ill as wheate, then both require to be folgen in a beepe mould and a plaine foile: but Kie is fower a little after wheat, in the folding whereof, you must occupie a third part moze then of Wheat : it profeseth lightly in any ground and many times with the veil of a bundzed for one. It must be folved after the third plowing, as Wilheat, and harrowed much after the fame fort, the falk or freale thereof, is finaller then the Waheate falke, taller, and ftronger, his care bangeth bowner marbs, and therefore more fubica to blaffing, because it receiveth and kepeth the water that fais while it flowzeth and fuffereth the biolence of miffs and frofts: the firato thereof is gentle and fiert. ble, ferning for Times and coverings of boufes. Pow followeth Barley, accounted in the olde generations among the worthiest fort of graine, and not of fmall estimation at this bay. The Hta. lians cail it Beade oz Beauc, oz Orza : the Spaniares Ceuada :

Barley.

the Dutch men Gerft; the French men Orge; the Grecians wei 34: and though it be bled in Spece and Italie, and fuch warme and fruitfull Countries for Cattels fod as Homer alfo witneffeth, pet in the Botherne Countries it Cupplies the place both of bread and wine. There are of it two foats, Hexaftichonand Polyflichum whole eares are their foure, and lometimes fire fquare, and biners eares foringing from one graphe, every eare contaming about fourefcoze graphes, to wonderfull are the gifts and bleffings of Bab. The other fort is called Diffichon, haning in the eare but two rancks or orders onely. Againe, there is one kinde of it to be fowed in winter, another for fummer. The winter Barley is of better peld, but it is some burt, specially with much wet a frosts following. There is nothing more burtfull to winter Corne. for cially Barley, Kape feede, and Rie, then the wet of winter, nipped with often frofts, and after a warme that, to be prefently from ten againe : both the forts of Barley require ground that is bery rich. Winter Barley, after two or thre ploinings, is to be folded in September : Summer Barley in Warch oz Apzillafter twife plowing; and many times, necellitie forcing, after once plowing: in the folding, you must occupy moze feebe by halfe then in folding of wheate : it requireth a mellow and a fat ground, and therefore is belt fowed, where the ground is most manured. The winter feede flowzeth in May, and is rive in June at the furtheff. This kinde was not wont to be fowed in thefe parts, but great numbers now moued by my example do ble and receive great gaines by it. The fummer Barley in many Countries is ripe and ready in the moneths after the lowing. In Aragon, as Plinie waiteth, it maketh bouble harmelts every pere. The feventh bay after it is fowne, it commeth by, and one end of the feede runneth downe in rote: the other, the somer springeth, a commeth by in blade: the greater end of the grapite maketh the rote, and the flenderer the floinge. In other gravne the rate and the blade furing both from one part, the blades of both kindes are rough. It must be gathered with moze freed then other graines for the fram of it is bery brits tle. Df Barley is made as Diofcorides matteth both Bere & Ale.

R 1 G O. I like pour Berre pou baue excellently well, I pray pou tell me in what fort pou make it?

.

Con o. I will not hibe my cuming in this matter. Dy Barly

is first theped in a Cefferne of water a day or two if it be winter feebe it is harder bulled and requireth the longer watring. The Sommer graine is thinner, and requireth a leffer time. When teis watred, I bay it boon a flore or abele, till it fivell and breake, putting out as it were little berbs or threbs, if it be lavo thin, it will in fummer, frecially in March, bay & breake of it felfe without any fire. Bou mult take god bed, that in fprowting it o. pen not to much and lofe his flowie. This being bone, I grinde it, and put the Meale into a Math-fat, whereunto I put my licour fodden, and after let it feethe thee or foure times, adding buto it, both for wholeformes and tatte the flower of the Bop: after this. 3 put on Dett, and fet it a wooking, and then cleanfe it. The moze it is cleanled, the whollomer a clearer it is : that which commeth of the fourging, is kept both for 18 zewing and Baking: the brinke will be the better, it you put to it a fourth part, or a firt part of wheat: the moze Come you lay on, the pleafanter and better coloured will your Bere be. Pour greateft care muft be to fe it well fodden, well cleanled, and well hopped, otherwise Malt of it felfe will some corrupt. Dbserving this order, your drinke hall be both wholefome & plcafant: that endureth belt and longest, that is brewed in March. There is made of Barley Alica, a reasonable god meat, and Prilan. Bow they mult be made, you may read in Plinic: Bert to wheat and barley, followeth Zea, which the common people, both in Italy, Spaine, and flanders, call Speka, the French call it Espeltra, with Homer is greatly commended, ZeiAweog agse ag, the fields that beareth the Zeam, being as Galen faith, the meane betwirt wheat and barley, for he hath the qualilities of each of them, t is of two forts, the one in falke, fort, and eare, like to inheat, and carrieth in every hulke two ledes, and therefore is called dinounce, the other having both stalke and eare thoster, and but one graine in enery bulke, growing into rancks, ein the top refembling Barly with his Charpe Aanes. In Italie. frecially about Mirandula and Concordia, it is bled in pronender for Horles, it is not in thelecountries in ble. I would fowit here. Ath the ground will ferue for it, & that both bread & brinke might be made of it very well, but that it is formething troublefome to grind, because of the bouble bulks. It befireth a moist ground rich and god, it is foined after the lame maner that toheat is fowed, in.

Zez,

in September oz Daober : it flowzeth in June, and is ripe in July, bery mete for colde Countries, because it can abide frofts and flormes.

RIGO. There is(as I remember)a kinde of wheat called Far, Far, Adoauncient people called it Adoreum, that groweth in many Coun.

tries.

2

b

2

ıf

b

it it

31 15

le

Ħ

ne 30

0,

en li

nB

Of

re

51

ie,

EE

a.

ht

to

ich

cD, u

CONO. You fay true, for with the olde fort, Far was a gene rall name to all corne, as toheat Far, Barley Far, and Mie Far, and when mils were not vet deniled, they did beat their corne in moza ters, wherof came, that the meale was called Farina: pet after, was the name of Far onely given to Adoreum, though Columella called it alwaics Far Adoreum , making foure funder forts of it. The Frenchmen call it Brance, the Italians Sandala, the Spaniares Elcandia, the most people of our Country call it Farro, the Dutch Keskorne, whole graine is bery like wheate, but that it is thorter and thicker, and where wheat hath a clift, there hath it a rifing. It is beauter then barly, a lighter then wheat, it veelbeth moze meale then any other Come. The people of Rome as Plinic faith, line with this Come at the first these hundred perces, it groweth in Egypt without Aane, with a greater eare and a waightier: it bath in the Italke feauen toints, and cannot be cleanfed except it be pare ched. France bath two losts thereof one of a readiff colour, which the people call red wheate, the other whiter, which they call white wheate : the eare is the fquare not bulike to fpelt. In Italie they make pottage of it for their labourers. Far or Adoreum, Virgil would have fowne before the letting of the leanen farres, after the Aequinoctiall of Autumne : but in wet and cold barren grounds, it is belt to fow it about the Balends of Detober, that it may take deeperate before the freezing and cold in winter. It is fowed in low ground, watriff, and chalky: after it is fowed it mult be harrowed, raked, and weded: the raking lofeth in the fpzing, the heavy hades of winter. In raking or harrowing, you must take hed, as I faid before, that you hart not the rotes : webing when it is knotted fenereth the Torne from all annovances. The French men fow it in hollow furrowes, because it is very sub. ted to blafting, thinking thereby to preferne it both from blaft and milbew. To fow it in hie ground is discomended, though it profe per there well inough, because cattell cannot away with it, for the

thatpuelle and ruffnes of the cares, and because it requireth great labour in getting off the bulks, which if it be not clerco of, is not ther god for mannor beaft : the buckeane chaffe both burt with the Court, the Cattels lungs. Amongft the winter febes, Kape fiede both challenge his place, which I take to be the fabe of the Rape, which Plinic maketh for his third kinde, and wide, whole rote, like the Kapoith, runneth in length, the leaves being ruffe, like the other kindes, and the stalke bushp and full of branches: the rate of it is good for nothing, but is onely fower for the feete, . whereof they make Dyle, feruing for pore mens kitchins, falts, and lights, frecially in Bermanie, where they want the Dple of Dlines, whereby arifeth great gaines to the buf bandman. In the bot Countries where they have other Dyle inough, this feed is of no ble, but in feeding of Birts : it is folved in the end of August. of the beginning of September: how be it fometime it is fowne in March among the Summer ledes, but to nothing fo great a profit : it is caft into bery rich ground, or well manured, thrice plowed and well tilled, it must be fowed bery thin : for being a very finall feed, it must not be fowed with the full hand, as wheat is, but onely with the fingers: it flowseth in Parch, oz thereabouts, as the peere is forward, and continueth his flowing a long time: the flowie is vellow, and bery fweet, wherein Bes doe much belight : as some as it bath left flowing, it is presently rive: it groweth two cubits in beight, bearing a plentifull feete in little fmall cobs, it rendereth for one bufbell, a hundred bufbels of feede. Witherto bane I fpoken of Wainter feedes, now muft 3 tell pou of fach as are folune towards Summer.

RIGO. Will you speake nothing of the Mape rote, which is greatly occupied of the husbandman, and not to be despited as a thing that groweth in great quantitie, and is meetely good meate

both for man and beaft ?

CONO. The Kape is named of the Grekes yerida, in Italian Rapo, in Spanish Nabo, in French Raven. The ordering of which, though I twke it to belong to the Garden, wherein you are able to say more then I, yet because you require it, a that sometime the husbandmen do plant them in their fields I wil tell you as much as I know therein. There are 2. kinds of them, the first doth rote all in length like the Radolih, which in many places of

Germanie

Rape.

Hauer,

Germanie is bled for a baintie meat: the other eyther groweth in great roundnette, or elle berp flat : they are nourithed with mifts frolks and cold the montths together and grow to an erreding greatneffe. Plinic witteth, that bee bath feene Motes of them that haue weigheb fortie pound. Some fap, thep haue fæne of them that have weighed an bundged pound. It is wonder. fall, that of fo little a feed thould come fo great a rot. The Gres cians make tipo kindes of them, the male & the female, both comming of one feed, the male when it is folded thicke, and the female inhen it is folived thin. There are two featons for the folling of it . epther in March, which will be ripe about the tenth of June. or in July or August, after the first plowing commonly byon the ground where Rie a winter Barley have bette newly hab of. It is thought they are the flucter by lying in the ground all winter. when as the encrease is not in the leafe, but in the rote. They are allo lowed (as Plinie writeth) in hot and moift Countries in the Spring, and will the better encrease if they be sowed with chaffe, who would also have the sower naked, and in casting the fiede, to with god lucke to himfelfe, and to his neighbours. They are preferned from the Caterpiller, which commonly confumeth the young leaves, by mingling the feed with Sote, or freping them all a night in the inpre of Doudeke: Columella affirmeth, that he himfelfe hath feene it proued.

RICO. Row proceed (I pray you) with your Sommer less.
CONO. The Sommer ledes are almost all such as are ripe within three moneths, or foure at the otternost after they are some and some of them somer, if the ground and the weather be god. Among the Sommer sedes we will first talke of graine, and after of pulse. Of the graine, Dates are the first that are Oates. sowed, though Virgill count them barren, a Plinic counteth them rather weds then come, affirming, that Barley when it prospereth not, will many times turne to Dates: pet the Frenchmen ethe Germanes count (it at this day) the best provender for Horses, and food for Cattell. Plinic also witnesseth, that the Germanes when to make pottage of Dates. And Dioscorides maketh mention of Daten pottage, πόλτος in βεάμε γίνηπα, pottage of gruell is made of Dates, it is called of the Grækes βεώρος, in Italian Vens, in Spanish Avens, in French Avoine, in Dutch

Haver, which though it grow not commonly in Itale, vet buon Monte Ficelto, and in the kingtome of Baples about Siponto it is found. Wiee have amongst be two kindes of them, one full and incightie, feruing in bere veres, to make bread and brinks of, specially if it be medled with a little Barley, and this kinde prospereth in rich and new broken-by ground erccebingly. The other kinde is lighter which the common people call Civen and Wzumhauer , it is bery light, and vælbeth but little flower noz fode: it groweth boon fandy and barren grounds, and ferueth inell for Tattell and for Borfe: both the kindes have bufby tops. from whence hangeth the feede in likewife refembling the graffe, hopper: the flowie of it is white, a from one graine, there fezine meth Divers Malkes: with Diofcoridos, Bromos, is a hinde of Dats that refembleth wheat in the falke and the blade, & groweth like inine inheat. Theophrastus calleth it anvidora. The Dat is not bangerous in the chople of his ground but groweth like a goo-fele low in enery place, where no feebe elfe will grow. Df the like die Confition almost is Buck of Bechipheat, buknofune to our old far thers. It is called φαγόπυρου Bechweat, ος μελάμπυρου, Black inheat though μελάμφου fignifieth another graine. I had rather call it Beechwheat, because the exame thereof is theecoznero, not bulike the Bechmaft both in colour & forme differing only in the Imalneffe. The Stalke is bery great, ftraken like to the greater fearne : it bath many branches, with a bulby top, a great fort of white flowers in a knop, like the flowers of Cloer : it floweth long together, eafter appeareth the graine, first white and gree milh, in thape the corners: after they be ripe the colour chaungeth to blacke or brownith, like a Theanut. This graine bath not long fince bene brought from Kullia & the Dorthren parte in Berma mie : now it is become common and bled for fatting of Hogs and ferneth the common people in beare featons, to make bread and winke withal. It may be fowed in any ground and is fowen in A. will, May and in June, after the reaping of Have fied. Dou muft fowe leffe of it boon an Acre by a fourth part then of Wilheat oz Rie: it is much bled to be folded boon the ground where Kapes grow, whereby the ground both well a bouble croy in one nere. Taken it is folden, it commeth bp, if it be moift weather, within foure or fine paves after baning two leaves at the first appearing. not

Buck.

not much bulike to Burffaine. Amongti the fommer febes is alfo receiped fommer Barley, twhich from the Sunnesentring into Sommer the Equinochiall, till the end of Barch & Apaill, is fotoen, and is Barley. reaped agains for the most part in the moneths, or at the biter moltfoure. It requireth (as winter Barley both) a rich and a mellow grounds to be fotwed after twice plotoing, though fomes time for neceditieit is lowed after the first plowing. And though it veilo not fo god noz fo perfect a graine as the winter Cozne both whole graine as Theophrastus writeth, is farre more perfeet and of fronger fubitance, bringing greater fram and weigh tier eares vet becaufe it is harber huften, and the Summer feb more fine and gentle, is therefore of most men befired and comten to pelo moze flowze then the winter graine : fome againe Millet. preferre the other Miller, called in Latine, Millium, in Greite KEYXCOP, in Italian Milio, or Miglio, banking as it were, a thous fand grames in a care, as Feftus fermeth to anoto, in Spanify Mijo, in French Miller, and in Dutch Hyers, where they make pottage of it and bread. The Ruffians and Dufcoulans are chief-In nourished with this kinde of pottage, which they make with . the flower mingled with milke, and the bloo that they let from their horfes. The men of Ind, as Plinic fapth, know no other graine but Barley and Billet, which grew in his time plentis fulleft in Campania, it is the belt leauen that map be mabe, netther is there any graine comparable to it for waight, that more increafeth in baking: foz of one buthell bath bin brawen threefcoze pound of bread, & a bulbell of lobben meat, made of the quartes wet and bufod. It is folded at this day in every place, though bery little in the low Countries: it groweth with a Stalke full of toynts a cubit bigh, a leafe like a rebe, a round and a fmall feine hanging bowne in long rimmes with many tops : it growethfometime feuen fote bigh, it belighteth in a watrifb mozp ground, and in granell, fo it be now and then overflowne, it bateth bile and chalkie grounds. Some give counfelt to fowe it firft in a cold and wet ground, and then in a hot ground : befoze the Spring you mult not folve it, for it belighteth much in warmth; A little fiebe of it, is fufficient fora great beale of ground: if it be folived thicke, it comes to nought: a great handfull will ferue a whole Acre, wherefore he raking , you must rake out what is more then

ê

Ľ

f

b

20 h

g

3

D

D

1.

Œ

02

CS

e.

ÚT

g,

ot

# The first Booke, entreating then needfull: an acre beareth fourtic buthels, if it be well folioed.

every febe pelocth about a pottell. It is forbibben to be folune as

mong Times or fruit Trees, and mult continually be weeded and raked. Withen the eare is full growne, it muft be gathered with the band, and baved in the Sunne, left the bot weather thatter the feedes. This graine map bery long be pecferued, for being well layb by where the winde cannot come, it will well laft an bundzed pære. There is another like graine that they call Inbian Willet with a great graine, and a blacke and big redy falke, which was first brought into Italie in the raigne of Nero, which (as Plinic faith) was called Loba, whereas Loba are rather the Coos of all Bulle, and Phobz, the manes and toppes of willet, as it appeareth by Theophrastus. Panicum is called of the @zeks Ehunes, of the Dutch Plennich, og Heidengreifis, of the Italia Pannicle. ans Pannacho, the Spaniards Panizo, the Frenchmen Paniz, fo called of the little Bannicles, wherein the leed lieth. It commeth by like Willet, with many leaves, and flippes, glittering with a rebotth buthie top, full of feedes, like Buftarb lebe, fome vellet. purple blacke and white : it muft be ordered in all things almost as Billet : being fowed in Sommer , it is ripe in forty baves af ter : in other places folved in Day in wet ground,it is to be gar thered in September. The baruelt and the ble of it is almost all one with Willet , neither can it, as Willet, be fined without par ching: inben it beginnes to fpinole, it muft be well weeded, leaft the wedes onergrow it : being well beeft with Chefill and Bilke, it maketh indifferent god meat:in bread it is not fo much bled as Willet, for the bread is bery die, and crumbleth like Dand or Albes, being altogether without moifture or cleaving: but the common people remedying that with Larde or Dyle do make a thift with it as well as they can. They that divel about Pontus, are lavo to effeme it aboue all other fode, asthe people of Nauare boe at this pap. In many countryes it is bled onely to fabe Digeons withall.

Rife.

Di the number of outlandish graine, is Rife, in thape as Theophrastus sapth, like Darnell, having a bushie toppe like Willet ex Pannicle, but no eare: his grapne is like the kinde of Barley, called Zca, the leaves are thicke like the leaves of Leekes, but broader, the stalks a cubit high, the source purple. This graine is

but

but gealon in France ont Germanie, but in Italie and Lumbarbie common, tobere it is called Elrifo, and Meneltro Delrilo, the french men leaning the first letter, boe call it Rison, the Greekes Egula , the Spaniards call it Arrole. Plinic Cuppoleth it to be engendred of the water Sebge. There is made of it furmentie, as Horace callenit, Mile Furmentie. It is fomen in Barch, as Willet and Bannicle is. The Antiens (thep fap) Doe brufe it before they foweit to make it the lighter of Digellion. And as Strabo reporteth, they make printe of it.

Rico. Withat far you to Sefamum, that mas greatly in ble

1

9

h

2

t,

S

10

ò

b

8

r,

Œ

f

20

il

10

I

10

ch

ke

g:

00

ut

sic

to

0-

82

p,

ut

15

ut

a Selament, to this thinde, becaule Cont mittedlo set ut Co No. Sefamum is named with the Freites chongop, the Sefamum. Italians Selamo, the Spaniaros Aionioli, the Frenchmen Lugiolin. In times palt, it hath beens more bleb and greatly commended, both of Columella and Plinic. At this pay it is known to a bery felo, as a great fort of feedes elle ate in fomuch as the bery come that the batty feed of, we feartely know to hat it is, Some reckon it in the number of Graine, and forme of Bulles the Stalke there. of is not like Billet or Barnicle, full of jounts, but playne and fmoth, like a reede, the leanes thereof rudby, the feed tobite, not fo bigge as Linfe sand is contained in little knows like Boppie : it is fowen before the rifing of the leanen flarres, after the manner of Italy. Columella fayth, that he hath fene it in Cilicia and Syria Cowed in June & July, and reaped in Autumne. It requires a mellow blacke monto, though it will grow byon good fandy ground, forced ground, raine is burtfull buto it after it is folded, where as it doth got to all other Braine : no great Cattell not Merinine will meddle with it, it burteth ground bery much , because of the great quantitie and thickens Went the falke, and the number of the rotes. Plinic writeth, that it was brought out of India, and bled both for meate and aple. But to returne to futh graine as we are acquainted with. Amongst the fommer fabes is Micelin to be reckanen. The bulbanomen Doe fome. time make a medley of funday forts of fedes, and fowe them partly for Cattell, and partly for hope that though fome of them faile, pet fome Will growe. But heremuft you beware,left you mingle not winter Come and former Come together, for that were a great overfight; and one of them must neces perith. Some

Some barley may well be uningled with Dates of Buck, as well for bretoing, as for fixing of Cattell: and Cares or other like Pulls may be mingled with Dates, as very good for bealts. They are to be follows in time and place as I have tolde before, in my fenerall entreating of them.

Rtoo. Don have well latiffenmes for Braine and Corne,

pon may note (if it pleafe pon) boe as much in Bulle.

Con o. Bulle oz Bedware, is called of the Oriekes on meia, the other parts of the fruites of the ground : of thefe there are furiory fortes as pop haue fiene of Come: fome put Willet Wannicle, and Selamum, to this kinde, because Columella sometimes puts them in the number of Oraine and Cometime of Bulle: but I following Plinie berein, boe put them amongst the kindes of Graine, accounting those to be Bulle, whole fiebes are contained in condes as Beanes, Beale, Lentilea, Tares, Chyches, Fitches, and fach like lobich all are to be folom in the fuzing. Df all kings of Bulle, the greatest honour is bue to the Beane, as Plinie witneffeth, as to a Bulle that is most commobious for man and beatt. In Greeke it is called wia pos, in Italian and Latine Faba, in Spanith Haus, in French Feve in Dutch Bonen, This amonatt all other Bulle groweth in beight without any flay , it bath a thicke leafe, a created flowse of omers colours, footted white and blacke, which Varro calles the lamentable letters : it bath a long cobbe, his fruit within broad, like the nayle of a man, of ob ners colours , it appeareth at the first with many leanes like a Beafe, and not with one alone like Wibeat, It is folded first of all other Bulfe in the fring time, as Virgill will baneit, and timely, because of Fabalia, which is the offall of the Beanes, for both the code and the stalke, is a fode that cattell much belights in. Columells reporteth bow be heard a failfull bufbandman fap that he hap rather have the offall of Beanes timely fowed, then the Crop of that which is ripe in the moneths, you mult foice thein in the encrease of the Mone and after once ploining. It is faid, that if they bee enclosed in Goates boing and folived, they will pielo great encreafe, and the parts that are eaten or gnatone, in the encrease of the Bone will fill by againe. If they be folived

nece to the rates of Trees, they will kill them. Some holde opin

mon, that if they be fleeped in Capans blod, they will be fafe from

Beanes.

Of Pulle.

h

Ø

m

all

all hurtfull webes, that layed in water a bay or two before they he fomen they will grow the foner. The Beane belightoth in rich & well bunged ground as all other Bulle both: wet and lome ground it both not refule thoughall the rell befire baie ground it majeth not weeding, being able to onergrow them. De all other Buile it onely fpringeth with an byzight stalke fall of knots, and bollow And whereas at other Bullears long in flower this flows reth longelt, flowsing fortie baves together, one flaike beginning inhen others end, e notall at one time as wheat, they coo in fund bay bayes, the lowest part of the Stalke flowing first, a fo bolvard Will in ozber. So fruitful are they in fome places, as you fall find one Stalke to beare a bundled beanes. The Beanes Sticke close to their Toos: the blacke in their tops, the Latines call Hillumithe cons Valuuli, the wormes that breed in them, Mida, Lomentum is the meale which the people in olde time did ble for the imothing of their fhing, Frefa Faba was the beane that was but finally bear ken, and builed in the Mil. Refring was that tobich they bled to offer in facrifice for goodnehe with their Come. It is good to fren pour Beanes in the water of Saltpeter, a bay before vou foin them, you that keep them from Tapnels, as (Palladies faith)if you gather them in the loane of the Pone, t cheriff them, a lay them by before the encrease. Beanes amoul other Bulfe borineng the ground that they are fowen in. The next to beanes in morthines and folwing, is Beafe, called in Greeke mitoc, in Italian Pife, and Peafe. Pilelle, in Spanish Arucra, in French Pele, in Dutth Errettem, a Dulle that groweth with hollow Calkes and full of branches ly ing upon the ground, many leaves and long, the cods round, containing in them cound feeds and white: though Plinte lugite, that they be cornerd as Chych, of which fort me have forme at this day blewift with flowes in have like the Butterflie purnle colonich toward the mitt. There are two forts of peafe, the one fort co neteth to climbe aloft, a runneth up boar flickes, which with little winders he bindeth bimfelfe, a is for the most part only fower in gardens: the other fort groweth low, a crepeth byon the ground: will both kindes are bery goo to be eaten, specially when they beyong , to and tender, they mult be folione in warme ground, for they can in ned no heife away with cold, they are folived cyther byon fallowes, oz rather in rich and werely bearing ground once plowed, and asalk all

f

D

,

2

.

0

4.

ft

a

te

a

Die

a

all

lp,

he

lu-

he

the

MIS

nio.

opi

cost

all other pulle, in a gentle and a mellow mould, the featon being marine and mouth Columella fauth, that ground is made bery rich with them, if they be prefently plotned, and the coulter turns in, and couer that which the Boke bath newly left. They are fowed among fummer Come, commonly with the firft. Firft Beancs, Deafe and Lentiles, then Tares and Dates as is faio before. Beale and Zares mult be fowen in Barch and Apzill. and in the mane of the Mone left they groty to ranke and flower out of order tobereas the best folding for all other pulse a graine. is in the encrease of the Mone. There are that count Deale to be the Bulle that the Orekes call SeoBoc, the Latines Eruum, the Italians Eruo, the Spaniarns Yeruo, the Dutchmen Eruen, of which there are two kindes, the one white, the other red. The latter is wilde, and groweth in henges and come fields : it is a fmall plant, having bis leaves narrow and dender, his flower evther white as mebled with purple grothing nere together like Beale, there is no great buffreffe about it: tt deligitethin a leane barren ground not moult for it will be full twith to much ranches neffe : it muft be fomen before March, with which moneth it a greeth not, because it is then bortfull buto Cattell. Eruilia is a pulfe like fmall beanes, forms white, forme blacke, and others free bled , it bath a falke like yeale, and climbeth like a boppe, the Cobbes are fmoth like Beafcobs. The leaves longer then the leanes of Beanes: the flowe is a pleasant foot to Bes. In France and Lumbardie it is called Dora, oz Dorella, Phaleolus in Latine in Oreche our of workin, garben Smalar, fome call it Fasiolum, Dolichium, among the Italians formecall it Faginoli, fome Smilace, de glihorti, others Faginolo Turcheles, others La fanio, the Spantaros call it Frifoles, the Frenchmen Fafioles, and Fales Pinccos, the Dutchmen Facelen, at willbe bonen. It is a kinds of Bulle, tobereof there are white rebbe, and vellow, and fome fpethich with blacke fpots, the leaves are like Juie leaves, but force thing temperer, the stalke is slender, winding with claspes about such plants as are next him, running by to bigh, as you may make Arbours buter hin : the coodes are longer then Fermigreke, the Braines within divers coloured, and falbioned like Bibneyes: it profpereth in a fat and a verely bearing ground, in Garbens, or where pou will : and because it climeth aloft, then

there mill be let by them poles of Alanes, from the running to the tops, it climbeth upon trees, leving well for the haddwing of Arbours and Sommer houses. It is sowen of divers from the Joes of October to the kalendes of Ponember in some places, and with us in Parth. It flowseth in Sommer, the meat of them is but modifierent, the suprenot very god, the code and the grains are eaten together, or like Sperage. The Lewes sell them at Rome, preserved, to be eaten raive. Lens and Lenicula, in Greeke Lyndes. Paris, and Paris, in Italian Lendi ix bon manastre, in Spanish Lenceza, in French Lenvilla, in Dutch Linsen, is a police very thick and bushie, with leanes like the Aare, with their or source very small graines in every cod, of all Pulses the least, they are soft and stat. The white ones so, their pleasantnesse are the best, and such as are aptest to seth a consume most water in their borling.

It is fowne with be in Germanie, in March and in Apaill, the Mone encreasing, in mellow ground, being rich, and dape : pet Plinic would rather have the ground leane then rich, and the leas fon brie: It floweth in July, at which time by overmuch ranchnes and morture, it come corrupteth. Therefore to cause it quickely to fpring and well to profper, it must be mingled with dry doung before it be fower, and when it bath Iven fo mingled foure or five dayes, it must be call into the ground. It groweth bigb (as they (ap) when it is wet in warme water and faltpeter, befoze it be folwen, and will never corrupt being fprinckled with 15 engwing and Mineger. Varro willeth, that you fow it from the five and twentie day of the Moone to the thirtieth, so thall it be fafe from Snayles. And Columella affirmeth, that if it be mingled with albes, it will be late from all annovance. Cicer in Latine, in Breke see Biv 905, in Italian Ceci, Cicere Rollo, and Cicere biance, in Spar nill Garvangos, in French Chiche, and in Dutch Cicererbs, is a Ciche. bulbie kinde of Bulle, baning a round Cod, a therein a couple of thie cornerd feedes, tobereof there are that make thie kindes. white, rep, and black, differing onely in the colour of their flower: the beft kinde hath a ftickie ftalke, croked, little leanes inbented, a white, a purple, or a blacke flower. And whereas other pulle bane their Cobs long and broad, according to their fiede, this bear reth them round: it pelighteth in a black and a rich mould, it is a great fpopler of land, and therefore not good for new broken by ground :

VIII

ŧ

18

e,

20

D,

n.

be

.

na ke

ne.

.

.

1930

the

the

30

lue Il it

oli,

and

151

ant

ties.

with

b, as

then

ond

ant,

flofa

then

ground: it may be fowen at any time in Barch.in rainie weather. and in bery rich ground : the feet muft be freped in water a bap before it be folven, to the end it may foring the foner:it flowreth in June and July, and then falleth to feebe : it flowicth a bery long while, and is gathered the fourth day, being rive in a bery Short time : when it is in flowe, of all other pulle it receiveth. harme by raine: when it is ripe it mult be gathered out of hand, for it feattereth bery fone, and lieth bid when it is fallen. In the Chich there never bredeth any worme, contrary to all Buile elle: and because it betreth afpay Caterpillers,it is counted good to be Cicercula, fet in garbens, Cicercula in Latine, in Greke hoi Dueoc, in 3ta lian Cicerle,in Spanith Cizerche,it differeth from the Chich, only in that it is fomelohat blacker, which Plinic accounteth to have buenen corners, as peafe bath: and in many places about bs, they ble them in theb of Beale, exeming themfarre aboue pealon : for they both well more flower then peale, e is lighter of digellis on, and not fo fubice to wormes. Columella counta it rather in the Tares and number offooder foz Cattell, then of pulle foz man:in which nums fodder for ber are thefe that follow. And firft, Vicia in Latine , in Oreke Binesov, in Dutch Wycken, in French Vellac, fo called, as Varro thinks, of winding, because it bath tendzels oz claspes, as the Wine bath. Inhereby it climbeth boon fuch Calkes as grow nert it: it groweth balle a gard bigh, leavedlike Tintare, lauing that they be fomething narrower, the flowie like the flowie of Beale, bas ninglittle blacke feedes in cobs , not altogether round, but broad like the Lintell : it requireth a bare ground, though it fuill also grow well enough in thatolup places, or in any ground, with final labour, being not troubleforme to the bufbandman : it requiretts but once plowing, and loketh for neither harrowing nor dunging. but enricheth the land of it felfe fuccially if the ground be plowed when the crop is of, to that the Staikes may be turned in: for others wife theretes and falkes remaining, Do fucke out the gooneffe of the ground; pet Caro would have it fowen in graffie ground, not watrifb, e mnew broken-bp ground, after the beate be gone, and the moldure dried or with the Sunne a the winde. Don muft. beware that you fowe no moze, then you may well couer the fame bay: for the least beame in the world both fpople it. A rither. must you fow them before the Mone be twentie-foure baies olde,

athera

Cattell.

atherwife the Smaile will benoure it : his time of forming is. as Plinic Inzitethat the fetting of the Carre called the Berward that it may ferue to feed in December: the fecond folding is in Janua rie : the laft in Parch. In Bermanie they ble to fow them in Parch oz Apzill, chiefely foz fooder foz their Cattell. To foto Tares, as Plinic faith Beanes in not broken by ground without loffe is a great piece of bufbandap: they flower in Jane at which time they are bery god to fcowie Horfes : it is god to lay them by in the cod, & to been them to ferue cattell withall. Hares and Dates make a god melline fowed together. Lupinus in Latine, in Lupines. Diete Reude nuegos, in Italian & French, almost as in latine, in Spanith Altramuz, in Dutch Roomiche Boonen, is a Bulle bas wing one onely Stalke, the leafe tagged in five Divisions like a Karre, the flower white, the cods lagged, e indented about bauing within them fine or fire feedes, hard broad, a red the leaves therof bo fall. This Bulle requireth leaft trouble,e is of small price, and vet most belyeth the ground of any thing that is fowne : for there can be no better manuring for barraine Winepards & Come fields then this, which either boon barraine ground profpereth or, kept in the Garner, endureth a wonderfull while: being fodden e laid in water it febeth Dren in winter Very well ein time of bearth (as Columella faith) ferueth men to affwage their hunger:it profpereth in fandy e granelly grounds, in the work land that may be: neither loneth it to have any labour bestowed boon it, not maigheth the goones of the ground. So fruitfull it is, as if it be caft among Buthes & Briers, vet will it rote and profper : it refuleth both harrowing and raking, & is not annoyed with wedes, but killeth the wedes about it. If bung be wanting to mend the ground withall, this ferues the turne about all other; for being fowed and turned in with the plow, it ferueth the turne in fload of bunging : it is fawed timeliest of all other, and reaped last : it is fowed before all other Bulle, a little after Baruett: coner it how denderly you will, it careth not (an excellent god fiebe for an entil husband) pet belireth it the warmth of Autumne, that it may be well roted before winter some, for other wife the colo is burtfull bito it. It flowzeth thaile, firth in Day, then againe in June, and taft in July: after every flowing it beareth his cobbe. Before it flowerth, they ble to put in cattell: for where as they will face E 2 boom

2

:

13

2

0

12

ít

ep

an

ab.

Co

ial

th

g,

D3

ere

Me

nD,

ne,

uft.

the

her

De.

bera

# The first Booke, entreating boon all ther graffe of wedge, onely this for the bitternes there.

of while it is greene, they leave butouched. Being bried, it ferneth for fuftenance both of man and beaft, to cattell it is given medice with chaffe, and for bread for mans ble, it is mingled with wheat flowie, or barly flowie: it is very god to keepe it in a fmoky loaft, for if it live any thing mouth, it is eaten of little wormes. and thereby fpopled. The leafe tiepeth a certaine course and turneth with the Sunne, whereby it theweth euer to the bulband. man, even in cloudy weather, what time of the bavit is. Fenum grecum in Latine, in French Fenegres, and Fenigrent, in Italian Fænigræco, in Spanish Alholuas, in Dutch sometime by the Latine name, and commonly Rohorne, and Lockshorne: commeth by with a small stalke, the leafe like a theeleaned graffe it is fowed well in a flender barren ground vou must take hed pon plow it thicke, and not very depe, for if the feed be cours red about foure fingers thicke, it will bery hardly grow. There. fore the ground muft be tild with fmall Plowes, and the feed vers fently courred with Bakes. There are two logis of it, the one called of the common people Siliqua or Todde, which they fold for Fooder in September, the other in January, or the beginning of February: When they fow it for feebe. it flowseth in June and July, when also it beareth his Codde, but the seede is not ripe till Angult: it is drelled to be caten after the order of Lupins, with bineger, loater, and falt, fome but to a little ovle : it is bled both for fooder, and biners other bles. Furthermoze, of Bulle called of Gellius, Legamenta, we have thefe generall rules, that they all beare cobs, & baue fingle rotes enery one, except the Beane, the Chich grolving bepelt. The falke of the beane & the Lapine is alfo lingle, the others are all full of branches and flender flips, and all hollow. All Bulle for the most part, are to be fowed in the fpring, and require bery rich ground, ercopt the Lupine, that cares not where belies, they are all fowen in the encrease of the Mone, ercept Beale: if thep be watered before their lowing they profper the better: thep are speedilp to be gathered when thep be ripe, for they suddenly hotter, they will endure longest, being gathered in the change of the Done. It is much to be regarded whether von will keepe or fell them, for the feeds in the encrease of the Mone Doe ware greater: there are that preferne them in earthen beffels, Arabina

đ

Fenugreek

Brawing albes binder them, and fpzinckling them with Wineger: fome ble albes alone, others ble to fminckle them with Berace inine bineger as 3 haue faid of the lentill Dozeouer, the Breekes have willed to mingle with the bung a little faltpeter when you fow them, whereby they hall the better feth and be the tenderer. and if they be not presently tender, they will to call into the pot a little Duftard fed, which will make them fraightinay well. Theophraftus addeth divers things belide, which were to long to tell.

RICO. Is it needfull for enery bulbantman to low all thele Braine and Bulle in his ground :

CONO. 20: but as a lapo before in freaking of ground and leed you must chiefely foth fuch as best agree with the nature of pour ground : bowbeit , there are fome of them that refule no ground. There are certaine of them, as Varro farth, that are not fowed for prefent necessitie, but for other afterturnes And others againe that are of necessitis to be fowen, as Come for man, and Fodber for Cattell ; of which mult fpeciall care be hab, that there be no want of them, without which wee can not live : as Rie. Dates, and Buck. Lupines, and certaine Bulle elle, for foober, refuse no ground though it be neuer fo barren. Belides when as Fodder the bulbandman must not onely have a care of proutding fuch for Catas ferne for the full enance of man, but alfo for fuch as ferne for tell, the fixding of page Cattell, without which the ground cannot be bufbanded : therefore muft be folve Bulfe for the ble of man and beaft, and fooder in moze abundance for the fuftenance of beafts. Among & all forts of Fooder, that is counted for the chiefe and the best which the people of olde time, a the Italians at this day call Medica, some call it Trefoile, the Frenchmen call it Grandreffe, Medica! the Spaniards Alfalfa others call it Burgundie graffe because it was brought in by the Burgundians, it is now also come into Germanie, and there called Welfholken. Plinic waiteth, that it was brought by the Komanes, out of Media into Italy, differing almost nothing from Trufolly, or threeleaned graffe: but that it is greater, higher, and ranker, for in stalke, leafe, and flowe it is all one: it groweth altogether buibing in leaves. In the toppe of the Calke it putteth forth Chort coodes, writhen like hornes indented about, and baning as it were, little prickles, wherein is the

fixbe thaped like a Done, and growing to the Cod in bignes as the lentill, which being chawed, taffeth like Deale: every cod bath his fiede, it requireth a fat ground without ftones, full of invee and rich in many places it commeth not by in others it fpringeth bery thicke. Vairo giveth charge, that it be not fowed in to byp a ground of tickle , but in god and well feafoneb. Plinic would haue the ground be bave and bery rich. Columella biobeth, that the field where this Medica thall be fowed, thould be broken bu about Daber, and fo to lie mellowing all the winter, and then to ffirreit in Frbauary , & the ftones caft out, to barrow it well, and after in Barch to ozder it garben-wife, caffing it into beds. cuery bed ten fate broad, and fiftie in length, fo that they may be eafily watred, and of enery five well weded : then laying on god old doung, let it lie till Apzill, and at the end of Apzill fowe it in fuch proportion, as every handfull of feed may occupie five forcin bredth, and ten in length, and couer the feed out of hand, raking them with woben rakes, for the Somne will fone burne them. After it is fowen, that it come by an inch in beight, you mult be ware you touch not the ground with any your instrument, but epther with your fingers, or with Kakes of wood: wede it well from all other noviome things, otherwife it will grow wilde and turns to patture. Let the first harnel be long beferred, to the end he may fomelwhat thed his feedes: at other times you may molo it as some as you will, and give it to your Cattell. Such as are Chilfull in hulbander, doe far, that if you mingle Dates with the feed of Medica, and foin them, they will canfe them to fock bery well: It is fowed in Aprill, or later, in Map, to fcape the frofts, and the feed is call in like fort as wheat is. When it beginneth to beanch, all other toxpes muft be toxped away, and being thus oze bered, you may mowe it fire times a piere. It flowseth fire times, or at the leaft five times fo it be not cut. When you have molved it, water it well, as it fpringeth, weede it agains. And thus as I fapo, you map mow it fire times a piere, and it hall thus conti nue ten peres together, it enricheth the ground, all poze and feble Cattell are foone brought by with it, it likewife bealeth Cattell that are difealed, but when it first foringeth, till cattel be acquaint ted with it, you must give them but little at once, least the stranges melle of the foods burt them for it maketh them to finell, and bree Detb?

beth great abundance of blood. Columella ingiteth that one acre of it will well finde the Bosts apiere. In fome Countries this hearbe both growin great plentie m every Bedoow, epther of the nature of the ground or through the disposition of the Beauens. and fametime the relickes of that which bath bene long ages formen both perely foung of the feese that falleth, & overgrowen with Graffe and weedes, both change into Debboin. I fe no rause but that it map grow of it felfe, but that perhars such Dlants as are brought out of ftrange Countries require folding and becling: it is beft to be mowed when it beginneth to flower. for it muft not be luffered to led, whereby the fcoder hall bee the better: which being well lapd up, will continue in goodneffe three veres, to the great profit of the graffer, for as I have fand befoze, there can be no better Fobber Beuiled for Cattell, where with they will better febe, and fooner rife. The nert in goodings to this Medica is Cyclus wonderfully as Plinie waiteth, commen Cytifus. ned of Ariftomachus, and as Virgill fayth, a good fober for Shepe and being brie, a delightfull food to Swine: it may be mowed funday times in the peere, to the great commoditie of the bufoanoman : a little whereof both foone fat by cattell, neither is there any other graffe that pelbeth eyther moze abundance oz better wilke, the most fourraigne medicine for the fickenelle of Cattell that map be: befor the Philosophers promife, that 18 ces will never faile that have this graffe growing nere them: there fore it is necessary to have your ground fored with it as the thing that beft ferneth for Boultrie and Cattell : the leaves and fiedes are to be given to leane and brouping Bullen: fome call it Telinen, fome Trefoile, fome great Delilot, the Romanes call it Trifolumaius, great trafle, it is a plant all hairy and whitilh, as Rhamnus is hauing branches baife a varo long a more inhercupor groweth leanes like buto fenigræke og Clauer,but fomething leffe, having a rifing creft in the mioft of them. This plant was first found in the Fland Cythno, and from thence spread through out the Cyclads , and fo to Greece , whereby the Stoze of Thale came to be great: neither is there any countrey at this day, where they may not have great plenty (as Columella faith) of this found. In Italy it groweth about the enclotiers of binevaros, it theinketh meither for heat cold froft nor inowit requireth and ground if the C 4. weather

B I

20

20

weather be bery by it would be waterd, and when it first frings well barrowed; after the veres, you may cut it bolone, and give it your Cattell. Varro would haneit fowen in well ozdaed ground, as the feet of Colemosts (bould be,and after remoned and fet a fot and a halfe alumber, or elfe to be fet of the flips. The time of folding of Cytifus is either in Aurumpe, or in the frzing, in ground. well ploined and lavo out in beds: if you want the feed, you may take the flipe fo that you fet them foure fot afunder and a bancke call about them with earth well bounged; you may also set them. before September, when they will very well grow and abide the colde in winter, it lafteth but the pere, Columella hath two kindes of Cyrifus, one wilde, the other of the garden. The wilde both with his claspers feede very well: it windeth about, and kils his neighbours as the Juie both: it is found in Come fields, fpecially amongst Barley, the flower thereof is like the flower of Deafe, the leafe, if it be bruffed, fmelleth like rocket, and being champed in the mouth, it tafteth like Thiche, 02 Weale. There is an other kinde of Fooder among the plants, buknowen to the olde waiters, very good to feed both Cattell and Poultrie. I know not whether it be knowen in other Countries befide Germanie. the common people call it Spurie, or Sperie ; it bath a falke a fote in beight of more, bulbes forth in many branches, it hath a white flotoge without any leafe: the flowie enbeth in little knops as flare bath containing in them a bery little fablike Rapelad. They are much beceived that take it for Cycifus, when that (as. Dioscorides faith) bath leaves like Fenuareke, and this is altogether without leanes : neither is the feed any thing like, though the ble be atmost one. The best milke and butter in Germanic, commeth of this feeding : wherefore it is effemed almost as god as Barley,02 other graine: the arawis better then any Dev: the chaffe feedeth as well as any graines: the feed feedth Digcons and Boultrie in winter palling well: it is fowed in fandie and light grounds all the Sommer long, and fome fowe it in Spring time with Dates, for the facte fake: in Autumne and Barucit time it is fowed to feede Cattell : it is profitable for Bulbandmen that swell in fandy and gravelly Countries, luberefore they thould neuer bee without good ftoze of it, foz Dennes, Bics, Boates, Shepe, Dren, and all kinde of Cattell belight bery much in:

Sperie.

fr

tl

th

02

ÍB

in

fre

fpt

De

init: now remaineth the folding of Clare and Dempe.

Ri's o. Tloke for ft.

CON O. Thefe although they be not to be received in the num. ber of Coane not Bulle, Fonder noz Bearbs, yet is there great account to be made of them with the bufbandmans things, with out which no boufe can be furnified, noz man well apparrelled : which being beaten to a foftneffe, ferneth for webs of linnen, and tinifing of Cords: and more, of this to little a leede both foring that, which (as Plinie faith ) carrieth the whole world bither and thether, that bringeth Cappt to Italy, e carrieth be from Cales to Offia in 7. baics. Linum in Latine: in Breche, ywov in Italian and Spanish Lino: in French Dulin: in Dutch almest like Saving that they call the feed Lin. And the plant Flaxe, is a bery common Flaxe. hearbe, inherewith women are fet a marke : it hath a flender falbe, not much bnlike to Spery, but that it groweth bigher a little, and bigger, with narrois leanes, and long blets flowers in the top, which falling awap, leaueth behind them little round knops. as big as a yeafe, wherm are enclosed vellow fiers: it belighteth in rich ground, & fome what moitt: fome fow it in barraine ground, after once plowing, it is fowed in the fpring, and gathered in fums mer. In Welderland and Bulicke, where there is great floze of it: they fow it about the beginning of May: there are agains that ob. ferne the featons for forming of it, as the meather shall fall out. for it requirethraine a moisture : the ripenesse of it is perceined by the waring vellow, a fwelling of the knows that hold the feed. being then plucked by and made in little bundles it is deved in the Sunne, the rotes fanding byward, that the fede map fall out. Some ble againe to card off the knops with an gron combe a bay. ing them in the funne to gather the feed. The bundles afterwards are laid in water heated with the funne, with some waight byon them to keepe them downe the rinde iparing infe, theweth when they have beene freped enough. Then the bundles bulofed and baped in the fum, are beaten with beetles, when as the outer rinde is pilled off, and combed & backet boon an yzon combe : the moze wrong it fuffereth, the better both it proue : the towe is feuered from the flare, and appointed for his ble, fo are they feuerally fpun bpon the distaste, made bp in bottomes, and fent to the weauers, whereof are woven webs, to the great commoditie of all

men.

men. Laft of all the web is laid out in the bot Sunne, and forinche led with water, whereby it is brought in a naffing whiteneffe. It may be remembred, that not long fince the women of Berms. nie linew no collier attwee. The belt Flare that is at this pap. is brought from Mulcouia, Liuonia, and those Countries, far ercele ling ours in beight and gooncile, except there be great encreale of it, and plentie in the Country where you bivell. Columella would not have you medale with the fowing of it, for it is mall burtfull to the ground, as Virgill bath noteo.

And therefore (but that women must have some things to occupe

Flaxe, where it growes doth burne the Field. The like doth Oates and Poppey yeeld.

their hands withall it were more profit to fow the ground with Come and to buy linnen abroad, especially if you waigh the burt of your ground, the charges of the making. Hempe, in latine is Cannabis, in Wzete nevva Gic Museos, in Italian. Canabe, in Spar mith Cannamo, in French Chamura, and in Dutch Haueph, is a plant of the Revolth kinde haning a very Arong lauour : it grow eth with a fingle falk, a many times to fuch a beight, that it mate cheth with indifferent trees: it is of great necessitie for the vie of man, and ferueth both for making of Canuas, e framing of ropes: the falk bath many knots, out of which procedeth branches with marrow leanes inbented a tharpe. Dioleorides Deferibeth both the Inibe Dempe, the garben Dempe, to have leaves like the Athe. hollow falks, a ffinking favour, e round feed. There are two kinds of it, the Male, that is without flowie, t beareth a leede of fundin colours : and the female, that, to recompence her barrennelle, both peld a white flower, It is fomed in Cardens Dechards, oz other and ground, (as Plinic mould have it) after a Southings winde, with be it is fowne in the end of Aprill, for it cannot away with cold : fome fow it at the rifing of the ftar, called the Berward, which is at the end of February, or the beginning of Parch: it loueth rich ground well bunged & watred and beepe plowed: it is naughtie fowing of it in raynie weather, the thicker pou fow it, the tenderer it will be, and therfore many times it is fowne thaile, though fome there be that appoint to every fot fquare fire feeds.

The Female, or firble Dempe is fird pulled by, afterivard the

maic or the carle, when his lede is ripe, is plucked by, and

1

.1

:

mabe

Hempe.

made up in bundels, layd in the Sumne for their or foure dayes, and after is call into the water, with weight laive upon him for eight or tenne dayes, till he be fufficiently waters, and as flare, till the rinde ware lode: then taken out, it is dried with the Sum, and after broken in thebrake, and then combed and hacked for Parne and Ropes. Of Hemp, are made Cables, Cords, Pets, and Sailes for Shippes, garments for Labourers, Shirts, and Shetes: the chales or Calkes ferue for heating of Duens, or kindling of frees.

RIGO. In the Countrey of Bulithe, and some parts of Fraunce, I remember an hearbe planted of the common people

with great biligence, that forueth as they fait for Diars.

b

30

€,

05

22

Le,

02

cff

gar

rd,

: it

it is

vit,

zife,

œDS.

o the

made

CON O. Doular true, that hearbe, Cefar in his Commentas ries of the warres of Fraunce, calleth Glaffum, in Brete ioaris Woade. ingeos, in Italian Gnado, in Spanith Paltel, in French Gudum, and Guelde, in Dutch Weye: the Diars Doe ble it, and with them it is greatly effeemed, & great game arifeth thereof buto the people of Welberlam, Julies and Aurin, & divers Countries elfe: the leaves as Plinic writeth are like unto Dock leaves. Diofcorides muiteth of two kindes, the wilde, and the Garden Woode, faving, that the Garden Wloade which Diars ble baue leaves like Blane tine but Comething thicker, and the wilde leaves like Lentill, with velloin flowers : with this hearbe Celar, faith the people of Eng. land , were wont to paint their faces and bodies, to feme more terrible to their enemics: it requireth like folling and foile as Witheate both : but it is a great foker of the ground, and much burteth it : it would have a bery rich and a fat ground, and well bigged: for the ground were better to be turned by with foabes then with Dlowes for the fowing of this plante it mult be bery mel meded. It is fowed in Welderland in Apail, and after the common veoples rule,in Cafter wek at the firtt fallowing theo marle the ground, after folve it : pou mult be bery hebefull in the wee. bing of it. When it is growen a handfull he and more ther fulfer it not to flower, but with an inftrument for the purpole, they sut it close by the rote, walh it, and carry it to the spill, and fuffic ring it to grow againe, they cut it thee or foure times, and fo leave it to feebe. The greene hearbe thep grinde in Spilles like Apple Mispeding it til they get out al the inice therof, then roule they it

pp

by with their bands in round balles, and to lay it book beined

Amzes to be baveb.

R 1 G 0. Don bane greatly belighted me in peferibing buto me the order of folining of feeds, without inbich, not onely the people of the Countrey, but also the Courtier and Citizen are not able to line : my befire is noin to binberfrand the order of barneft, the Country mans long loked-for-time stbe remard of all his tople.

Harneft.

CONO. I will proceed in the accomplishing of pour request. Wilhen the corne is ripe, before it be fcorched with the great heat of the funne (which is most extreame at the rifing of the leffer bog) it is to be cut bowne out of band : for belay berein is bangerous. First, because that birds and other bermine will devoure it: and againe, both the Graine and the Care, the toppe and the fraw being brittle and over by will fone fall to the ground; if ftorme or tempel chance to artie the greatest part therof wil to the ground, and therfoze it must not be lingred, but when it both loke vellow in cuery place, and before that the Graine he thoroto hard fuben they come to toke redbith, you must then have it in, that it may rather ware in the barne, then in the field. Erperience teacheth, that if it be cut bowne in due time, the feede will graw in fulnes as it weth in the barne : for the Mone increasing, the Come growes greater : at the change you must gather fuch feede as you would thould be leaft faultie. Varro faith, that the best time for Baruelt, is betwirt the Sunne flay, and the Dogge baves : for the Corne they fay, both lie in the blabe fiftene baies, flow reth fiftene baves, and riveth in fiftene baies. Amongft Graine Rape Har. and Bulle, the first that is to be gathered, is Mape febe. And be cause the sede, when the coo beginneth to ware vellow, beclareth rivenelle, it must be gathered out of band : and fith the feete will eafily fratter it muft be lavo eyther in plaine fmoth places in the Field, 02 bpon Canualle : and tfit be prefently to be carried the Wayne or Cart must be lined with thetes, left with logging and trotting of the carriage, the feede fall thosolo, Dou must take god hade as well beer ein as in all other Bulle, that you prepent the rayne, for the rayne falling, the cons boe open. As fone as pour Rapelede is off, if the ground be plowed, von may fow Bucke, or Manke, as they call it: fo that of one piece of ground in one pere, pot map make two Baruells. Pert buto Rapebaruell in thele

321

weft.

thefe Countries, followeth the harvett of Whiter Barlen, which Harvelt is to bedifpatched befoze the feede (the Cares being ouer oned) on for Winfall, for they have not bufdes to containe them as detheate bath, ter Barley. and the eares being brittell, will fone fall : pet fome thinke it beft to let the Barley lie a while in the field, whereby they thinke the Graine will ware the greater. Then followeth the Bempe har, Hempharueft. But firtt (as 3 fato befoze) the Fimble of the Frinale, is ueft. pulled, and is dried a while in the Sunne, then (bound by in buns dels) it is throwne into the water, and kept bowne with some weight, that it fwimme not abone. After likewife the Bale, the fiebe beclaring his ripeneffe is pulled bp, and the fiebe being threathed out, it is call into the water, till the Malke be foft : af ter, being bried in the Sunne, it is mabe by in bundels to be knockt and thaled in Winter evenings. Hipe is to be mowed in Rie and June of July, and after that, Withcate. Do better rule, then before barueft. the Graine be hard, and when it bath changed colour. An old 1920nerbe (as Plinie faith) it is better to have in harveft two daves to fone, then thee dayes to late. In Mie there is not fuch feate in feattering as in Wheate, which as some as it is rive, will ther with every winde. Wherefore god hebe mult be taken, that poulinger not with Theate after it is ripe : although Plinic af. firmeth, that Witheat will have greater volo when it france long: but furely deferring of it is bangerous, as well for the benouring of birds and bermine, as for thattering and falling of the feebe through frome and weather : as the profe was feene in the great windes that were in the peere of our reveniption, 1 56 7. Then The harfolloweth the harueft of Beale, Beanes, Wates and Lentils, ac, well of all cording as they are timely foloco, wherein you must take heeve as other corn I warned you before in Rape feed, that they lie not abroad in the raine: for if they one, they will open and lofe their feed. Laft of all commeth the Barnelt of the other Summer feete, as of Bars lep, Pannicle, Millet, and Dates. It is found by experience, that taine is god for Dates after they be downe: for it causeth them to fivell and to be fuller, and to that end they are left in the field many times tivo or three weekes after they be bolune.

4

1,

D

2

þ,

21

15

31

:

200

ne

104

th

til

he

be

mb

mb

the

auc

be,

one

t in

pele

Rico. What ofder have you in your reaping?

CONO. There are diners forts of reaping, according to the Divers manner of energ Country. Some with Sythes, which offer also forts of as reaping.

as the morke requires. In this Countrey me ble thee forts of tome bithes, for either we baue a Sithe like a Sickle, which hole ben in the right band, they cut the frain close by the ground, and have in the left hand a long boke, wherewith they will together that that they have cut, and lap it in heapes: and in this fort Wilheat and Mie, and fuch Graine as bath the Aurdicht Grain, is reaped. In other places as in Julis, where the ground being bery rich, the Come groweth bigher and rancher, there they hold their left hand full of Come, and with the right hand with tothed Sickles they cutit, leaning the frate bnder their hands long, to belve the ground withall. In other places they ble a greater withe with a long bwath, and fenced with a croked frame of fickes. wherewith with both their hands they cut downe the Come, and lay it in Swathes as they boe Graffe when they moine it . and with that they mow the higher forts of Corne. Varro and Columella,and other Doe tell of funday other forts of reaping. Palladius teacheth, belide the labour of men, a Chozter wap to be bone with an Dre, that Chall in Choat time cut bowne all that groweth, which was wont to be bled in France. The benile was, a low kinds of Carre with a couple of whiles, and the frunt armed with tharpe fickles , which ferced by the beatt through the Corne, bid cut bowne all befoze it. This tricke might be bled in levell and champion Countries: but with be it would make butill-favoured worke. In reaping, you must regard to goe with the winde : for if you worke against the winde, it will be hurtfull, as Xenophon faith both to your eies and your hand. If the Grain be but thoat, pou must goe nærer the ground, if it be long, you may put your Dichles to the middeft to bispatch if the foner, & to make it thech the better : and the Aubble boon the ground must either according to Virgils rule be burnt, og rot byon the ground, fog the bettering of the land. Some weferue that which is longelt, to thatch Barns, Stables, Countrey Cottages withall. And lobere Bay is fcant, it ferneth for fooding of Cattell : for Barley fram is a foo that Bullocks love well, and befine, all kinde of framis and to litter withall. When the Come is bowne,it is prefently to be bound in heaucs : although Barley, Dates, and other Come and Bulle is made by in Cops and Mickes, but not without burt and hazard. The Come being cut, is not to be bad into the Barne presently, but

but to be let day, according to the nature of enery Grapne and Hulle: for if it be carried in before it be through day, it corrupteth and rotteth. Dates and Bucke, are longest left abroad, as als so Lentiles, Beale and Pulle, because they are longest in daying. Wheat may somest be carryed, if it be not mingled with to many wedes, that hinder the daying of it. When Harnest is in, the plowing ground must out of hand be plowed, both to kill the wedes, and after harmond make it the meeter so, the next sowing. The Corne cut volume uest, and dates is to be laid either in Barnes, Houels, or Stacks: and after in Winter, to be trose out with Bealts, or threshed out with Plailes, and to be cleaned with Fannes.

RIGO. In Italy they ble to tread out their Come with Cat.

tell: the like reperteth Xenophon of the Brakes.

CONO. I have teme it my felfe, where they rather take Hogse then Dren: and that time they also winnow their Corne, thinking the Southwest winde to bee best for that purpose; but to stay for that, Columcila thinketh but the part of a small husband.

R 1 G 0, I fee you have bery large Barnes, what ozber ob

forme you in the building of them ?

b

b

12

n

t,

ar

H

m

ng

15,

nt,

hat

ter

o in

alle

art.

tly.

but

be well brought into it, and for it be very close on every side, leasing open a space for two vores, a fore vore, and a backe vore, but so, as neither of them open to the West, but rather Porthand Bast, and at both sides of the side beked your Corne in scuerall tastes and moins, so that you may easily come to every one at your pleasure. And though the Corne be layd voon battes in the slowers, yet let there be a space lest in the midst, that may be open to the very top, that you may fetch what sort you list to be three shed. In some places they have a Bully in the midst, wherewith they hopse by the Corne to the very rafters of the house. In Holland they have set close Barnes, but all Houses and Stacks, so placed with hanging rosses upon postes, that with pinnes and winches, they may heighten it, or let it downe as they list.

RIGO. Thole kinde of Barnes they fay, are not fo lubicato

Dife and Kats, noz fo chargeable as the other. . .

CONO. Powfocuer the Barne be, you must place it as bigh as you may, lest the Corne be spoyled with morsture or namps.

Damys : fome thinks it better for them to be thatched then tyled: the largenelle must be according to the greatnes of your occupy. ing. Some to the end Cats and Casels may the better come by. they bo bault the floze with bricks, and laping rafters thereon, do lap on their Come. The flore muft be fayze and fmoth made, to as the Come may be well threshed or treben out. Columella frould have the flore faire pauco with flint or Cone, lubereby the Corne will the foner be threshed, and the flore not burt with bear ting and trampling of Dren, and when it is fan'd or winnowed, it will not be full of gravell and burt, as the earthen flores veil. But we content our felues with our earthen Ames, well made, and of god earth, mired with a little Chaffe, and the grounds of Dyle, for this preferueth the Comefrom Dile and Emets. Dou must make it bery even and levell, and after it is mingled with Chaffe let it be well troben and fo fuffered to day. Dou muft keepe allo from it Beaffes, and Boultrie, which with trampling & fcras ping will make it rugged and bneuen. When the floze is dap, the Come laid on it, is beaten out with flavles, and cleanled with Fans, though in some place they rather like to tread it out with Dren, and to wimow it after the old fathion, with the winde,

R 1 G o. Well Dir, when you have thus threffed your Corne,

what wates have you to keepe it from winels ?

Garners.

Co No. The Garners, 02 Corne Lofts, wherein pour Corne thus threfbed and cleanled thall be layd, must frand bigh, that they may be blowne through with the Cafferne & Dortherne winds, to which no morffure from the places adjountement be fuffered to come: for the quarters of the beauen that are coldeft and biveft, Doe both preferue Corne the longelt. In Spaine and Apulia, being hot Countries, the winde is not onely let in on the fides, by win doives, but alfo at the bottome by grates. Some againe preferues it in vaults bnder the ground, where the day earth ooth cherify fuch fruites as the bath brought forth, bled as Varro faith, in Spaine and Carthage : and in our dapes wee ble to kepe both Wine and Ozaine in fuch baults. In Countries that are wet and watrilb, it is better to make them in Garrets, as high as may be, baning god regard that it be well walled and floged. Mozequer, where as Corne is lubica to Winels and Wermine, ercept it be very fafely land by, it will fone be confumed ; there fore

fore pou muft make with Clay, mingled in fread of Graio, with Against have, then onercaft it within and loithout with white Botters breeding Clap : laft of all, freps the rotes and leanes of wilde County of Wyucls. bers in water two papes, and with that Water, and Lime, and Sand, make Blatter, and wall therewithall the walles within : atheit. Plinic counts Lime as buttfull a thing as may be for Corne. Some mingle with Lime the Wrine of Cattell, as a thing that will bettrop Winels of the leanes of Bouleleike, or Wormes mon, or Doppes: but fperfally if you have it, there is nothing to god to bekroy all fuch Wermine, as the bregges and bottoms of Dole : fome ble in the feat thereof, the pickle of Derrings. Daning in this fort ordred their feelings, and their flores being Drie, they Suppose that no butfull woune thall annoy whatfor euer Come theplay in them. Some lay bnder their Come, fle wort: others thinke it an affared remedy, if they be often fanned and winnoloed, and thereby coled: but Collumella thinkes it butrue, and that by this meanes the Mermine Chall not onely be not beinen out, but they shall be dispearled throughout all the Come, which if they otherwise be left alone, will meddle with no moze then the outward parts, for a bandbreoth beuth within. there never breezes any Myuels, and therefore he thinks it bet ter to let that alone that is already corrupted, and will goe no further then with farther medling to marreall; fogit is an eafie matter, whenfoever ve nieve to occupy it to take away that is tainted, and to ble the reft. But for all this, experience teacheth bs, that there is not is god a remedy to deftroy the Maguell, as is the often fanning and winnowing in Summer. After the firt two pieres, they halo opinion, they will not meddle with Come: but I weary you with carrying you to much about, and if it please pon, we will returne home.

2

b

e,

18

ep

B,

co

Œ,

ng

in

acs

rith

, in

oth

wet

as

200.

ine,

ere

fore

R 1 G o. If it befor your case so to do: otherwise there can be no greater pleasure to me, then walking abroad to heare you talks of husbanday. Are thefethat I for pour Baftures, where your fat Of Pafture Dren, and your Bares, and your Colts goe leaping.

CONO. They are fo. I lay all my pastures severall, for every kinde of Cattell to be by himfelfe : in the hithermost that you fie, are mp Cattell that I fat : in the nert are mp Bogles mp Bares, and my Colts : in the nert are my poung brede, Derelings, and

Two:

Emoperelings. The Peddowes that you lie in yonder Galley, lye all to be Powed. Herencet to my house, are my Sucklings, that are brought to their Dams to sucke their a day, and therefore ought to be neere: howbeit, such as seed farre off, much diligently and bally be loked to, for feare of diseases.

R 1 G O. Since I have troubled you thusfarre, I cannot leane

till 3 bnberftand all pour ozders.

CONO. Do trouble at all to me, but rather as I falo before, the recording hereof, is my great toy: for in talking of these mate

ters vou bring me a bed.

RIGO. I pray you then take the paints to beferibe me the ordering of Paltures and Pocowes, when as there fremeth to be a great affinitie betwirt them and Corne ground, and because they are sometimes also to be plowed, me thinketh this part re-

maineth to be fpoken of.

CONO. With all my beart , I will fatiffie pour defire in as much as 3 am able : and inded lince 3 have all this while froken of Come ground, it is not out of order to tel you my minde of 13a. flure : a although Cato in fome places both give the precminence to the Winevard : pet other old writers boe moft of all preferre Baffures, as the ground that requireth leaft to boe about it: and therefore they were called, as Varra faith, Prata, because they were Parata, allmay in readines, a needebneither great charge noz labour, noz are in banger of Rozme oz tempetts, as other hinbe of ground is except fuch parcels as lie nice Kiners & Hands, which are fometimes overflowed: and that difcommodities fufficiently recommenced with the fatnette that the water leaves behinde it; which enricheth the ground, and makes it the better perely to pelo bis gaine cyther in Paffnre o: Debdoin. The Paffures with be doe commonip ferue both for Walture or Deboole when two lift specially in such places where the ground is rich and drie, which they had rather to employ to Walture, because with bung. ing of Cattell, it wareth alwaies the better, whereas with continuall bearing of Bay, it bath growne to be modic and naught: but lobere the ground is alwaies wet and watriff, there it is bet ter to let it lye for Meddow Columella maketh two kindes of Dafture ground, whereof one is alwaics bay, the other over flowed. The god and rich ground bath no niede of querflowing. the.

the Bay being much better that groweth of the felle goonelle of the ground , therethat which is forced by waters : which fome time notinithstanding is needfull, if the barrennelle of the ground requireth it : for in bad and naughty ground, god Bedoow may be made . If it ke to be over flowne : but then mult the ground neither lie hollow, noz in hils, leaft the one of them kepe the was ters byon it to long, and the other prefently let it forth againe. Therefore lyeth the ground belt, that lieth levelleft, which fuffer reth not the water to remaine bery long, no; avoideth it to fone, If in fuch ground it chaunce to fand over-long, it may be another mith mater freame at your pleafure : for both onerplus, and the want of water are alike purtfull buto Deboowes. It is bery handforne, where by and barraine ground lieth fo by the Miner. as the water may be let in by trenches when you lift : in fine the occupping of Baffure grounds require more care then tranaile. Firft, that we fuffer not Bulbes, Thornes, nor great Webes, to over-grow them, but to bettroy fome of them, as Brambles, Briers, Bulrufbes, and Sedges in the end of Summer, and the other that be Summer weedes, as Soluthiffell, and all other Thiltels, in the Spring. Don mutt take bebe of Swine, that Spoile and turne by the ground illauouredly, and all other Late tell : except it be in hard and dap weather, for otherwife they quit and marre the ground with the beipe fincking of their feete treads ing in the Graffe, and breaking of the Motes. The bad and bar raine grounds are to be helped with bung in Winter, fpccially in February, the Morre encrealing, and the Rones, Miches, and fuch baggage as the feattered abroad, are to be throwns out for ner, or later as the ground is. There are fome Deboowes that with long lying, are our growne with Patte, which the old haf. bands were wont to remedy with calling of certaine fixtes as broad, with laying on of bung, frecially Bigeons bung : but no thing is fo goo for this purpole, as often to caft Athes boon it. for that bettropeth Bothe out of hand. Botwithfranding thefe are but troublesome remedies. The belt and certaineff is to Blowe it : for the ground after his long reft; will beare goody Come. But after you have plowed it,it will frarle reconer his old effate again for Baffure & Debboto in thee or foure peres. Withen pou means to let pour ground lie againe foz Deboolo of Dallure,

b

g

t,

.

25

m

e,

g.

me

tı

ete

of

era

and

the.

\$ 2

pour

your beff is to fowe it with Dates , and to Barrow the ground enen and leucil, and to burle out all the fromes and fuch things as may burt the Sythe : for Dates is a great breeder of graffe. Some boe caft Bapfeebe , gathered from the Bar-loft on the Mackes, over the ground before they barrow it. Dthersagaine, when their Deddowes have lien long, fowe Beanes byon them. or Mape feebe, or Billet, and the vere after Wheate: and the thiro pere they let them lie againe for Debboto or Daffure. Don mult beware, that while the ground is lafe and fort, you let not in the water, for the force of the water will walh away the earth from the rotes of the Graffe, and will not fuffer them to grow together : neither muft von (for the like banger) fuffer Cattell to come boon it, ercept in the fecond peire Goates, og Shicpe,og fuch like, after von hane momed it, and that if the feafon be very brie. The third pere pou may put on your greater fort of Cattell a. gaine, and if the ground be billy and barraine, you may bung the highest part of it in February, as I fait before, calling on it fome Day feede, for the bigber part being mended, the raine or water that comes to it, will carrie bowne fome part of the richneffe to the bottome, as I faid befoze, when I fpake of the manuting of earable ground. But if you will lay fineto ground for Medenin. and that you may have your choife, take fuch as is rich, dewy, les uell, or a little hanging, or choice fuch a baller, where the water can neither .ge tong, nog runne away to fall : neither to the ranke Baffe alwayes a figne of got ground : for what godier Graffe is there faith Plinie , then is in Germanie ; and pet you fall there baue fand within a little of the opper part. Aeither isit alway a watry ground where the Graffe groives high, for the bery Mouns taines in Sycherland periogreat and bigh graffe fez Cattell. The Baffures that lies by the Lakes of Dumone in Auftry and Hungarie are but flender, noz about the Rhine, frecially at his fale ling into the Sea about Holland, as likewife in Frecleland and Flaunders, Cafar Vopifcus, the ficiosof Rofcius were the prins civall of Ataly , lubere the Graffe would fo foone grome, as it would bide a faffe in a bay. Dou may make goed Debbows of any ground, fo it may be watred. Bour Bedbowes are to be purged in September and Drober , and to be rid of all . bulbes, beambles, and great foule Wioods, and all things elfe: that:

that amony them, then after that it bath often beine Mirred, and with many times plowing made fine, the flones caft away, and the clobs in every place broken, you must bong it well with fresh hung the Bone encreafing. Let them be kept from gulling and trampling of Cattell. The mouldhils and dunging of bosle and bullocks . muft with your fpade be caft abroad. which if they remains, would either be barbarours of Ants & fuch like Mermine. at elle bacebers of hurtfull & buprofitable webs, pour Beddowes mult be land in towards March, and kept from Cattell, and made bery cleane : if they be not rich they mult be mented with bima, which must be laid on, the Mone encreasing, and the newer the bung bethe better it is and the more Graffe it makes: which muft be laid byon the top of the highest of the ground, that the goones may rume to the bottome. The best hearbe foz Basture oz Bedbow is the Erefoile oz Claner: the next is fwet Czaffe: the worft as Plinic laith, is Hulbes, Fearne, and Bogletaile.

Rico. How thall I know twhen the Graffe is ripe, and ready

to be cut ?

Ľ

e

8

2

a

no

hε

n-

ale

on

ine

sit

me

e to

fall

cife:

that:

CONO. The time of cutting of it, is when the Bent beginneth to fade and ware fiffe, and before it wither. Caro bids not to mow your Braffe with the lates, but before the feed be ripe. It is best cut downe before it wither, whereby you had have both more, and better Hey of it. Some, where they may overflow it, do water it a day before they cut it, it cutteth better after a dewie evening.

Rigo. Doe you cut graffe in the like lost as you doe Comer Cono. Almost in the like lost, some doe de thost Sithes, moining it with one hand; but we here doe de the common great Sith, mowing with both our hands, as I said befose, that Dates, and Barly, and such other like Come was mowed, which Sithes we de to tharpe with Whetstones, or instruments of wood desired with sand. The Graffe being cut, must be well tedded and turned in the Summer, and not cocked till it be dry: and if it chance to be wet with raine, it must not be turned, till the opper part be dried. There is a measure to be ded in making of it, that it be not had in two; more two greene. The one sort, if the surce be dried by, scructh onely sor litter: the other (two greene and moust) if it be carried into the Lost, rotterth, and the bapour being over-heated, salleth on streams burneth. And if so be the raine chance to fall by on

bpon the grade that is new cut bowne, if it be not firred it takes not fo much barme : but if it be once turned, you muft ftill be ftic. ring of it, otherwife it will rot. Therefore the oppermoft part before it be turned , must be well pried with the Sunne and the winde : when it is brich, we lay it in windrowes, and then make it bp in Cockes, and after that in Dowes, which muft be Charps and piked in the top, the better to befend it from the raine, which if it boe not fall, pet is it good fo to boe, that they may flucat in the faid Dowes, and digest whatfocuer moisture is in it. And therefore god bulbands doe not lay it by in their loftes, till fuch time as it hath fineat in the ficlo. Graffe is commonly molved twile a pere, in May or June, and againe after Barneft : the firft mowing is counted the beft. As some as the Bay is off after the. first mowing, it would be overflowed (if you may conveniently) to the end the after (wath may be mowed in Autumne, which they call in Latine Cordum. In the Dukedome of Spoleto, it is faid they moine foure times a piere, being date ground, and biners other places there a pere. Medica may be cut fire times a pere, if it be ordered as it ought to be. It is best mowed .. when it beginneth to flowe, for it must not growe to lade: being bried it is made by in bundels, and kept goothee percs, to the great comfort of pore Cattell : but because I have tolde. pou of Medica before, it is but baine to rehearle it againe.

R.1 G O. You have spoken of a very large and great know ledge of husbanday, which out of boubt requireth in a man great

trauaile and biligence.

Cono. At requireth indeede great diligence and travalle, howbeit, it recompences the paines and the charges, not without great gaines, whereof Plinie bringeth for example Caius Crasinus, who when boon a little piece of ground he reaped more fruit and graines a great deale, then his neighbours did byon their great eccupiers, grew into great hatred amongst them, as though hee had bewitched their sield: whereof being accused by Spurius Albinus, and scaring to be condemned, when the Duest should passe byon him, he brings all his instruments of husbandry into the common place; and brought in therewithall his daughter, a solly great Koile, his iron twice perfectly well made; great Spades, mightie Coulters, and lustic Cattell: Loo here (quoth

(quothhe) mine enchauntments, neither can 3 bzing befose von The dilimp great and painefull lacours . watchings, and flueat, where Canscrabuon be was prefentip quit by the boyces of them all. But I finus. kepe you to long about my busoandry, it is god time we leave and goe home.

RIGO. With a god will, If I map obtayne one thing at pour bands, which when pon have made an end with. I will trouble you no longer.

CONO. What is that ?

RIGO. If a man would bar a farme of a Manuer, in what fort thall be belt poe it . for I boubt not but you have goo faill

in fuch matters.

y

ho:

at.

TE.

tb

CONO. Ischomachus in Xenophon, telleth, that his father taught bim that he Chould never buy a peece of ground, that had beene fkilfully oz curioufly husbanded befoze, but rather fuch ground as by the flothfulneffe and pouerty of the Maiffer, bath iven butilled and neglected and pet feme to be bery god ground: as it is better to buy a leane Borie, fo that hebe not old, and that be have the tokens of a god Bosle, then a fatte Bosle, and one that is curioully kept. A well ordered pace of land is held beere. and valos no great encreale, and therefore is newther fo pleas fant, not fo profitable, as that which by good husbander may be made better. Cato inould have two thinges to beabferned in buying of land : The godnette of the ground, and the wholes fomenette of the aire : of which two, if either be lacking whole ener both buyit, be indgeth him madde, and mete to be fent to Bedlam : for none that is well in bis wittes, will beftom coff buon barraine ground, not basard binefelfe for a little rich ground; to be alwaies fubled to peffilentiall bileales : for where a man must deals with the Dinell, there is not onelp biscommoditie but his life bombtfull , and rather his beath then his gaine certaine. After thefe two principalinotes, as Columella faith, Caro abbed of like weight their that follow to be regarded : the Wan. the Water, and the Reighbour. The geoneffe of the way is a great matter, fozit both makes the Matter hane a belight to goe about it, and it is commobious for carriage, tohich bringeth great gains, and little charges. Of the commoditie of water who bomb toth without whole he no man is able to line: Dfa mans neigh.

#### The first Booke, entreating

bour; he would have a man have speciall regard. Hesiodus saith,  $\pi^0\mu\alpha$  xanos herop, an cuill neighbour is a great mishiefe. I have knowne divers, that so, the troublesowness of their neighbour, have so, said divellings, and changed gold so, copper, because they have had sale knames to their neighbours, and quarrellers, that suffering their cattell to runne at large in every mans ground to spoile their Corne and their Times, would also cut downe wood, and take what sower they find, alwairs bradling about the bounds of their ground, that a man could never be in quiet so, them: or else have dwelt by some Caterpiller, Kussian, or swald-buckler, that would leave no kind of mischiefe undone. Amongst all which commonly there is not so ill a neighbour, as the new upstart, that takes upon him the name of a Gentleman, who though you we him never so well, will at one time or other give you to understand from whence he comes, and make you sing with Claudian.

Aperius nibil est humili cum surget in altum.

Alewder wretch there lives not vnder skie.

Then Clowne that climes from base estate to hie.

As the Proverbe in England is, let a knave on horseback, and you thall so him thousers knight: so, an Ape will be an Ape, though you cloath him in purple. Surely H. Portius would have a man thunne the neighbourhood of such, as the pessilence. I so, my particularly in this point, that I have no neighbour that I need to seate.

Rico. Perhaps they dare not for your authoritie to bor, as otherwise they would.

Cono. But fince death and other casualties rios a man of them, the dwelling is not to be lest, if it have other god commondities, except it be places in the bodders of sunday Countries that be subject to great sicknesses. Some commend the dwelling that hath faire waies about it, is never some Kiver or god Parket, whereby a man may carried is Perchandize with lesse charges. The old fellowes would never have a man place himselfeners the bigh way, for pistering of such as passe by, and troublesommesses guests, as I said before in speaking of the placing of an house. In the letting of a Farme, these things are to be observed that I spake of before, in describing of a Ballisse of Husbandie and his labour: that you let it to such, whose transile and god behaviour

Pilli

The letting of a Farme.

hehanfour you may be affured of and that you regard more their god ordering of the land then the rent, which is least burtful, and most gainefull. For whereas the ground is well bulbander vou thall commonly have gaine, e never loffe, except by bureafamable, neffe of the meather, which the Civil Lawrer favth, thould not be any damage of the Tenant, or the innafton of the encurte. wherethe Ernant cannot helpe it. Befibes , the Lozb muft not beale with his Tenant fo Araightly in every point, as by law be might, for his rent bayes, bargaines of wood,quittents, or fuch, the rigour wherein is more troublelome, then beneficiali:neither ought wee to take enery abuantage, for law many times is right plaine wrong : netther must be to flacke on the other five for to much gentlenelle many times makes a man the morfe. And therefore it is god if the Farmer be flacke in bis vannents, to make him to know it : butin no wife to be a raifer oz enhaunfer of rents for that bilcomforts, and many times booth the tenant. Mozeoner. you muit not lightly thange the olde farmer, both because of his beferts, and that hee is better acquainted with the ground then a new. L. Volulius would alwayes fay, that bee was in best cafe for his Lands, that had alwayes his Tenants borne and bredde by in them, whereby the long familiaritie fould make them more louingly to ble themfelues: for fure it is an cuill ble often to change Tenants, and therefore 3 Doe like well that order where the land is let for the lines of the Tenant, . his wife, and his childe, paying a perely rent, fo that as long as he papes his rent, and keeps the reparations, it thall not be lawfull to beceive him : for hereby the Eenant Chall be pronoked to order the ground with moze tiligence, to repaire the boufe, and to loke to it in all points as to his owne, bestowing many times as much as he bath boon it. This way of letting Land me femes is bet, where the ground is subject to the Sea or the River, or other bans ger, that the Emant bee charged with the maintenance of it. And here be fure that you let it rather to one of habilitie, then to an buthaiftie man, that is not able to beare it, whereby you may lofe both your Land and your rent. In fuch place as lies nere the Lozd , hee may eccupie it by his Bapliffe, oz to hawues: but where it is far off, it is better to let it out for a verely tent boon the forelate covenants. For if you occupie it with your feruants.

t

t

,

2

af.

e.

at.

ie.

.00

nt.

#### The first Booke, entreating

fernants, they will epither loke fil to pour cattell, or your ground, or suffer things to be ficine, or fieale themselves, or make you be at more charges then needeth, and be careless in enery thing. In letting of ground commonly it is covenanted, that the Tenant shall not letings sell without leave of the Lord, and that he shall not breake any pasture or meddow land, and what, and how much he shall some of every kinds of grains, how much hes shall have so Basture, how much he shall let ite, and how much he shall mand. Dare have you almost as much as I am able to say in husbanding of the ground.

Co No. 3 thanke you, you have greatly belightes me trith

the helcribing of pour Walturs ground and Carable,

The end of the first Booke.

The

h



# The fecond Booke: Of Gardens, Orchards, and VVoods.

THRASYBULUS. MARIUS. IVLIA.

is this part of hulbander estamed, seing it both not alonely being great pleasure, but also is greatly profitable for the maintenance of householde, and the sparing of charges, instiffing to the hulband daily sode, and sufficient sustance without cost. For when (as Columella saith) in the olde time the people lined more temperately, and the pope at more libertie fed of sich t mike, and such things as the ground a sodes yeided, but in the latterage when ryot and daintines began to come in, and the wealthier soft to esseme no fare but costly, and farre setched, not content with means diet, but courting such things as were of greatest

Eres, and Come, and because their bul bandep is almost one it is reason that nert the firft boke, waitten of Barable ground and Willage, thould follow the Defcription of Dacharbs, Barbens, and their fruits. Virgill in weiting of Bulbanbep, left this part butwaitten of: bowbeit, biners others both old a new watters have not without fome diligence waitten of this part, but pet by fnatches (as it were) a not throughly : whole opinions toyned with mine own experience it femeth and to me in this boke to declare. And fince the ble of Dachards & Bardens The vie is great and ancient, a that Homer writeth, how Lacres the olde of Garman, was wont with his trauaile in his Dechards, to beine from dens of his minde the forcow her toke for the absence of his sonne. And great anti-Xenophon reporteth, that king Cyrus, as great a prince as he quitie. was would plant with his owne bands a fet tres in his ozchards. in fuch ozder, as it feemed an earthly paradife. Q. Curtius wate teth of Ab Jolominus that for his great bertne of a pore garaner. came to be king of the Sidonians. And furely, not bnivosthily

price,

Caple of the aliance betwirt Bearbes.

#### The fecond Booke, entreating mice, the pour people as notable to beare the charges, were bas

nithed from the coffice sates, and dainen to content themfelnes

An enill Garden token of an ill buf-

verte.

with the baleft fode. And hereof frang at the first the planting of Dechards and making of Carpens, where with the popelf creat ture that was might froze his lattchin, and baue his biduals ale waves at band, the Dechard and Carden ferning for his Shame bles . with a great beate more commendable and burtleffe biet. Derein were the olde buf bands bery carefull and bled, alipaves to indge, that where they found the garden out of order, the fuffe of the boufe (for bute ber belonged the charge therof ) was no god bolimite, for they thould be forced to have their viewals from the Shambles of the Warket, not making fo great account of Colinerts then as they bee now , conbemning them for the charges that were about them. As for fieth, it was rather lothed then to fed amonatt them. Only Dechards and Carbens Die chiefly pleafe them because the fruits that they peeld meded no fire for the breffing of them, but spared wood, being alwayes of themselues ready breffed, rafe of bigettion, and nothing burbenfome to the ftomacke: and fome of them feruing alfo to pouder or preferue with all, as god marchandize at home, as Plinic fayth, not beteing men to feeke pepper as farre as Inbie. Of Lucrin, I the Doffer not regard as the Boet layth. And therefore to make them of more worthinede, and that for their common profite, they thould not be the lefferegarded, there were divers noble men of the house of Or Leun. Valerius, that toke their furnames of Lettufe, and were not affice men to be named Lettismen. The old people hab in great effi mation the Gardens of the baughters of Atlas, and of the kings Adonis and Alcinoi, of whom Homer to much freaketh as also the great baulteb Barbens, epther built by Semiramis, 62 by Cyrus the king of Affiria. Epicure is reported to be the first that ever Deuiled garben in Athens, befoze his time it was not fone, that the pleafures of the Countrie were had in the Citie. Dow when Thrafybulus transiling in the affaptes of his prince, chaunced to come to the house of Marius, & carried by him into a Garden that be had, which was very beautifull, being led about among the fivet finelling flowers, and bover the pleafant Arbours, what a godly fight (quoth Thrafybulus) is heere ? holo ercellently haue you garnithed this paradife of pours with all kinds of pleafures?

The month

a

b

i

Dour

Gas.

Four Barlets, and your banketting houses both within and without as all bedecked with pigures of beautiful Foluses & Tres. that you may not onely force your eyes with the beholding of the true and liurly flamer, but also belight pour felle with the counterfait in the miot of winter feeing in the one, the painted flower to contene in beautie with the very flower in the other the mone berfull worke of Fature, and in both, the palling godnes of God. Boreoner, your pleafant Arbones to malke in whole fanboines keepe off the heate of the funne, and if it for time to raine, the close fters are hard by. But specially this little River with most clere water encompating the garden both wonderfully let it forth and brrewithall the grane and gooly quicklet bebges, no chargeable kinde of enclofares biffereth it both from Dan & Beat. I fpeake. nothing of the well papered quarters whereas the Dearbes and Tres are fenered enery fast in their due place the Bot-bearbes by themselves, the flowers in another place the Tres & Impes in another quarter, all in inff fowere and proportion, with Alleis and walkes among them. Among these amble fights, I war you remember accorbing to your promise (for so the time requireth) to thew mee forme part of pour great knowledge in garden mats ters, fith you have byon this condition heard me heretofoze grabling, or rather wearping you with the declaiming of my pore fail in the tilling of the field:

MARIVS. Pour memorie is herein a little to quicke, but what that I noer Promite must be kept, and fince you will need force me, you that I heare me babble as well as I can, of my know ledge in Carbening: but not with the like pleasure that I heare

you talking of your grapfing and your ground.

3

Ľ

£

11

a

ıt

31

.

10

10

u

THRA. Pestruby, with as great pleasure evolve as may be.

MARIVS. Come on then, let us here lit volume in this Arbour, and we will not another rise e walke, reling us as oft as you will: in the means time lulia hall make ready our supper.

And first, even as you began with the chouling of a place (meet to set your house open, so must I with the choyle of a Plot meets so a Garden. The othering of Sarvens is divers, so; some are made by the Anama's houses, some in the Suburbs, some in the Citie, where some they be, if the place will suffer, they must be made as neare to the house as may be; but so, as they be as far from the Barnes.

An epill Garden token of an ill bufveife.

mice, the pope people as notable to beare the charges were bas nimed from the collier sates, and beinen to content themfelnes with the baleft fode. And hereof furang at the first the planting of Dechards, and making of Garbens, where with the porefferes ture that was might flore his hitchin, and have his bituals ale waves at hand, the Dechard and Carden feruing for his Shame bles . with a great beate more commendable and burtleffe biet. Derein were the olde buf bands bery carefull, and bled, alipaves to indge, that where they found the garden out of order, the fuffe of the benfe (for bute ber belonged the charge therof ) was no god bufwife, for they thould be forced to have their vietuals from the Shambles or the Market, not making fo great account of Colinozts then, as they bee now , conbemning them for the charges that were about them. As for fleth, it was rather lothed then to fed amongt them. Dnly Dzchards and Carbens die chiefly pleafe them became the fruits that they peeld, needed no fire for the dreffing of them, but spared wood, being alwayes of themselues ready breffed, rafte of Digettion, and nothing burbenfome to the flos macke: and fome of them ferning alfo to pouder of preferue with all, as god marchandise at home, as Plinic fayth, not bylining men to leke pepper as farre as Inbie. Df Lucrin, I the Doffer not regard as the Boet layth. And therefore to make them of more worthinelle, and that for their common profite, they thould not be the leffe regarded, there were divers noble men of the house of Or Leun. Valerius, that toke their furnames of Lettule, and were not alba med to be named Lettifmsit. The old people hab in great effi mation the Barbens of the baughters of Atlas, and of the kings Adonis and Alcinoi, of whom Homer to much freaketh, as also the great baultet Carbens, epther built by Semiramis, 62 by Cyrus the king of Affiria. Epicure is reported to be the first that cuer beuiled garben in Athens, befoze his time it was not fone, that the pleafures of the Countrie were had in the Citie. Dow when Thrafybulus tranailing in the affapres of his prince, chaunced to come to the house of Marius, & carried by him into a Garden that be had, which was very beautifull, being led about among the floet finelling flowers, and boper the pleafant Arbours, what a ambly fight (quoth Thrafybulus) is heere ? how ercellently have you garnifed this paradife of yours with all kinde of pleafures: Dour

b

9

fe

8.

by

m

as

Gas.

Four Barlets, and your bankstring boules both within and with. out as all bedecked with pigures of beautiful foluces & Eras. that you may not onely fiche your eyes with the beholding of the true and liusly Minmer, but also belight pour felle with the counterfait in the mioft of winter foring in the one the painted hower to conteno in beautie with the very flower in the other, the wonberfull works of fature and in both, the palling godnes of God. Porconer, your pleafant Arbours to malke in whole habbowes keepe off the heate of the funne and if it for tune to raine, the close fters are hard by. But specially this little Kiner, with most clere water encompating the garden both wonderfully let it forth and bereintiball the grane and gooly quicklet bedges no chargeable kinde of enclofares differeth it both from Wan & Beat. I fpeaks nothing of the well orbered quarters, whereas the Dearbes and Tres are fenered enery fast in their due place, the Bot-hearbes by themfelues, the flowers in another place, the Tras & Impes in another quarter, all in inft fquare and proportion, with Alleis and walkes among them. Among thele good gapts, 3 pray you remember according to your momile (for to the time requirety) to thew mee fome part of your great knowledge in garden mats ters, fith you have boon this condition heard me heretofoze grabs ling, or rather wearping you with the declaiming of my pore fail in the tilling of the field:

MARIVS. Pour memorie is herein a little to quicke, but what that I noe? Promise must be kept, and since you will need force me, you thall heare me babble as well as I can, of my know, ledge in Gardening: but not with the like pleasure that I heard

you talking of pour grapling and your ground.

e

Ò

f

2

a

e

10

ıĽ

THRA. Destroy, with as great pleasure evelire as may be.

MARIVS. Come on then, let us bere fit volume in this Arbour, and we will not and then rife e walke, refting us as oft as you will: in the means time luia thall make ready our supper.

And first, even as you began with the chosing of a place (meet to set your house voon, so must I with the chosing of a place (meet to a Garden. The opering of Carbens is divers, so; some are made by the Pamuo; houses, some in the Suburbs, some in the Citte, where some they be, if the place will suffer, they must be made as neare to the house as may be; but so, as they be as far from the Barnes.

Barnes as you can for the Chaffe or buff blowing into them and efther fubied to the Dounge heape, whereby it may be maberich. or elfe in fome bery good ground that bath fome finall Brooke rimning by it at if it have none fush, forme Meleli or Conbuit. inhereby it may be watered. An excellent plat for the purpofe is. that inhich peclineth a little, and bath certains gutters of water running through biners parts thereof: for garbens muft alipaics be to be eafily watered, if not with fome running freame, fome pumpe to be mabe, or kettle, Still, or fuch like, as may ferne the turne of a natural Arcame. Columella would bane you make your fearth for mater, when the Sunne is in the latter part of Virgo. which is in September , befoze bis entrance into the Winter Aguinochiall, for then may you best buderstand the strength or groneffe of the furings, toben after the great burning heat of the Sommer, the ground bath a long while continued without raine. If you cannot thus have water, you want make fome flanding pond at the boper part of the ground, that may receive a containe fuch water as fals from about, wherefuith vee may water your Barben in the extremne beat of Sommer: but inhere neither the nature of the forle nor convergnce by Conduit or Dumpe, or rune ming ftreame is to be had, you have no other helpe but the raine water of winter, which if you also have not, then must you belue and lay your Carben thee or foure fote beepe: which being to or bered will well be able to abide whatforner brought boe happen. This is also to be regarded that in gardens that are bellitute of thater, you fo order them into fenerall parts, that what part you will occupie in winter, may he towards the South, e that which hall ferne you for Sommer, map lie towards the Both. In a Barben, as in the chople of Come ground, you mult loke whe ther the goodnelle of the ground be not hindered by the bulkilful neffe of him that hath occupied it. Dou muft allo make choyle of pour waters, of which the bett (as Plinicfayth) are the coldett, and Inch as be livet to beinke: the worlt that comes from Bonbs, or is brought fir by trenches, because they bring with them the leds of graffe and weedes : but the ground both moft belight in raine water, which killeth wormes and baggage that breeds in it : but for fome hearbs, falt water is neebful, as the Mabbilh, Bete, Melu, Saurell, to lobich al fait water they fay is a frecial belper making them

£

n

t

th

The time of fearching for water,

them both pleafant and fruitfull: to all others fweet water is only to be bleb. And becaule 3 have begun to entreat of watering. The time mult give this note, that the times of watring is not in the heat of water of the day but earely in the morning, at night, leaft the water ring of he heated with the Summe: onely Bafill you muft mater at none, Gardens, the feed fomething will come the foner op, if they be formekled at the first with hot water. Bou have bere heard, that the first need. full thing for a Barden, is water. The next to that is encloture, Enclofing that it be wel enclosed, both from buruly folks & thence, and like of Garmile from bealts : let tying in waite for your hearbs and your dens fruits, they may both bereaue you of your paines, and your pleas fore: for if epther thep be bitten with beafts, or to often handleb mith men, it bindzeth them both of their growth a festing; and therefore it is of necellitie to haue the Carden well enciofen. Rom for enclosures, there are simbly kindes forme making earth in mould doe counterfeit Brickwals: Dthers make them of lime + fromes: forme others of fromes lavo one buon another in beapes. taffing a Ditch for water round about them, lobieb kinde Palladius forbids to follow, because it will beato out the morfture from the Carben , ercept it be in a marith ground. Dther mate their fence with the feeder and fets of Thorne : forme make them of mubbe walles, coursed with fraw or heath. Varro maketh mens tion of foure hindes of enclosure : the first naturall , the fecond ivilde, the third fouldierly, the fourth, of cirpenters worke. The firft & naturall is the quickelet heoge, being let of pomng thomes, which once well growen, regardethneither fire naz other burt. The fecond is the common bedge made of Dead wood well faked and thicke plathed or railes. The third the fouldiours fortifving. is a deepe ditch with a rampier : but the ditch must be formade, as it may receive all the water that comes from above, or fals into it. wherein the banure must be to stepe, that it may not easily be climed. This kinde of fence is to be made, where the groundlies noce the hie way, or buts boon the Miver, of which fort I that! have occasion to speake moze hereafter. The fourth fencemane by the Carpenter or by the Balon, is commonly knowen: Whereof there is foure forts, either of Stones, of brickes, or Turfe, and earth, a little fromes frames fir monite. Columella following the ancienteff authors, preferreth the quicklet henge before the bead.

8

.

of:

u

ch

a

180

de

of

md

ot

203

ine

but

eiv.

sing.

bem

both.

The making of a quick-fet bedge.

because it is lette chargeable, and also endureth the lenger confe nuing a long time : which bedge of yong thomes be teacheth to make in this fast. The place that you betermine to enclafe miff after the beginning of Beptember, when the ground bath brene well foked with raine, be trenched about with two furroines, a pard diffant one from the other, the bepth e breath of cuery one of them muß be two fot, which you must fuffer to lye emptic all winter proping in the meane time the fixacs that you meane to Tome in them, which mult be the berries of tharpe thornes, briers, holly, and wilde Eglantine, which the Orakes call bog baier. The herries of thefe you must gather as ripe as you may, and mingle them with the flowe or seale of tares, which when it is foring kich with water must be put boon old ropes of thins, or any other ropes, the ropes being thus handled and bried, must be land by in fome borded flore. Afterward when winter is done, within forty payes after about the comming of the Swallew, if there be any water remaining in the furrowes, it must be let out, the mel lowed earth, which was call out of the furrowes in the enne of Summer, muft now be caft in againe, fill pou baue filled them by to the midft : then muft you bandfomely bufolde the ropes, and lap them in longth through both the furrowes, and fo couer them. taking and boo that you throw not too much earth byon them far hindering the furing which common'y birth to appears with in thirtie bayes after and when they be growne to be of forme height, they must be made to encline to the space betweet the time furromes: in which (pace you muft have a little mailed heage, to teach the fuzings of other furrowes to climbe by which mill bes folly far and a comfort to them. But I have another and a more newcrand readier way of making of them, which I first practiting in this Countrie, bluers others have followed. I alfo bo make a certains a quick-fet Ditch, e gathering in the wood, the young fprings of thornes, cut ting off their tops, I fet them on the bancke of the Ditch, fo that they fand balfe a foot out of the ground, plucking by all the wall (frecially the first Sommer) that grow about them and fucke o way the invee that comforts the fet. The rootes being this rio,3 couer all the earth about them with ffram, whereby both the bealt of the night is let into the rostes, and the pooze plant is be fended from the burning of the Summe. The poere after a make is at

Another better way of making hedge.

a little flender rafle of plants . Inbereunte I lay by the frings. meaning them in fuch fort as 3 will have them to grow , which I perely make higher, according to the beight that I would baue the Debae to foring. Cight, or at the bttermoft nine fote. is a fufficient beight, and whatfoener fpring above, must be plathed of one lide of the other , to make the fence the fronger. Tahen I have thus done, I mat it thicker and thicker every verce. filling by the places where I fe it thinne, with fuch bowes as I fee grow out of order : and thus is it wouen fo thicke with peeres le bindings , that not fo much as a fmall bird is able to paffe the row it . noz any man to loke through it. Withen it is thicke o nough and bigge enough, the laperfluous fraings must cuery pere be cut. This hedge can neuer be beftroved, ercept it be placked by by the rotes : neither feareth it the burt of fire. but will growe the better for it. And this is my way of encloting a Garben, as the pleafanteft, molt profitable, and of leaft charges.

THEA. There is another way of making of a quick-let Pedge, Another which our Pedgers in the Countrey doe die, which is concething fore of the fironger. For letting the young Sets, as you have laid before, hedging when they be growne to some greatnesse, they cut the Thome naive to the ground, and being halfe cut and broken a sunder, they bowe it along the Pedge, and plash it. From these cuts spring up new plants, which still as they growe to any highnesse they cut them, and plash them againe: so doing continually, till the Pedge be come to his full height. This way the Pedge is made so strong, that neither Pogge nor other beath, is able to breake through it: but the other is a great deale more pleasant to the eye. But if I have not Sets enough to serve, may I make an Impe Garden of their see:

MARIVS. Dea very well. Pake your Thorne Garben or toze plot in this fort. Take your Berries or tiones, and mingle them with earth, lay them by for the first years in some place meets for them, the next years sowe them as thicke as you can, and year thall twithin a little time have a whole Mod of thornes.

THRA. Fon have noto spoken of Water and enclosure, two principall points in a Garden: It noto remaineth to speake of the ground material a Garden, and the order of drellinger.

MARIVS. Of the funday forts of ground, and of the differning

of

YIIN

14

m

b

111

pe

to

28

024

his

int

cut

hat

eds

es

10,3

the

5 00

nak

of them, because you in your discribing of Come ground before have sufficiently spoken, I do not think it needfull so, me to repeat it. Againe, it is enough to me to adde onely this, that the ground ought not to be to rich, not to leane, but sat and mellow, which bringeth south a small kinde of Grasse like haires: such ground requires least labour, the stiffe and the rich ground asketh greater paines about it, but doth recompence it agains with his fruitfulnces. The stiffe, leane, and cold ground, is not to be medled with, as Columella writeth in appointing god ground so. Bardens.

The ground that gives the ripe and mellowed mould, And doth in working crumble like the fands:
That of his owne good nature yeeldeth manifold,
Where Walwoort with his purple Berrie stands.
For neither doth the ground that still is dry,
Content my minde, nor yet the watrie soyle:
Whereas the Frogge continually doth cry,
While in the stinking Lakes he still doth moile.
I like the land that of it selfe doth yeeld,
The mighty Elmethat branches broad doth beare,
And round about with Trees bedecks the field
With Trees, that wilde beares Apple, Plumme, and Peare,
But will no Bearefoot breed, nor stinking Gumme,
Nor Yewe, nor Plants, whence deadly poysons come.

What to be confidered in the choise of garden ground. Ayre. Windes.

The ordering of Gardens.

And thus much of the Carten ground, which as I faid, is was treb, or may be watred, and is enclosed either with a wall,a hebae. or fome other fafe enclofure. After this it is needfull it lie well to the Sunne, and warme: for in ground that is very colde, the warmth of the Sunne will not much auaile it. And contrarp, if it be a hot burning fand, the benefit of the Beauens can little helpe it. Boumuft pet loke, that it lie not fubied to il winocs, that are day and feesching, and being frofts and miffs. 13ut now to the oas bering of your Barben. Firft, pon muft be fure that the ground which you meane to folv in the Spring, be well digged in the fall of the leafe, about the Balends of October: and that which you garden in the fall of the leafe, muft be digged in Dap, that cither by the coloe of Winter , or the heate of Summer , both the cloo may be mellowed, and the rotes of the wedes befroged, not much before this time must you dung it. And when the time of fotwing:

folding is at hand a fine dayes before, the weeks must be got out, and the bung layed on and fo often and biligently muft it be digged.

as the ground may be throughly medled fuitb the mouit.

Therefore the parts of the Barbens muft be fo orbered, as that which you meane to fowe in the end of Summer, may be digued in the Spring : and the part that you will folve in the Spring. mult be bigged in the end of Summer : fo shall both pour fallowes be feasoned by the benefit of the colde and the Sunne. The Beds. beds are to be made narrow and long, as rif. fore in length, and fire in breath, that they may be the eaffer wooden : they mult lie in wet and watrie ground two for high, in bap ground a fore is fufficient. If your beds ige to bap, as thep will fuffer no water to tarry bpon them, you must make the spaces betwirt higher , that the water may be forced to lie and anothe when you will. De Of digthe kindes & forts of bunging being fufficiently entreated of by you, ging and I will fay nothing : onely, adding this that the dung of Alles is dunging of Garthe beft, because it breedeth fewelt webes : the nert is Cattels dens. bung, and Sheepes bung, if it have lien a pere. The ground as 3 faid which we meane to fowe in the Spring, we muft after the end of Summer let live fallow, to be feasoned with the frost and the cold : for as the heate of Summer, fo both the cold of the Winter bake and feafon the ground. When winter is done, then must we begin to bung it: and about the fourteenth or afteenth of January, we must vig it againe . Deviding it in quarters and beds. First must the weedes be plucked by , and turffes of barraine ground must be layo in the Alleges, which being well beaten with Bes tles, and fo trod bpon , that the graffe be worne alway, fo that it fcarce appeare, it will after fpring by as fine as little bayre, and pold a pleasant light to the epe, which will be very beautifull. Tahen you have fevered your flowers by themfelucs, your Whis ficke hearbs by themselues, and your Dot-hearbs and Sallets in another place: the beds and the bozders must be fo cast, as the Weders hands may reach to the miott of them, fo thail they not neede in their labour to tread byon the beddes, not to hurt the hearbs. And this I thinke lufficient for the preparing of your ground before the folding. Dow will I speake of folding, and Of Son luhat thail be foined in enery featon. To fpeake of all forts of ine. Dearbs and Flowacs, were an endleffe labour, onely of those that

U

dl

u

er

00

07

of

ng

O 2

Three feafons to lowe in.

are molt needfull, I meane to entreat. And first of bearbs, fome are to; the Bot fome for the light, fome for pleafure and firet faucur. and fome for Philicke. And againe, fome are for Winter, fome for Summer, and fome betwirt both. The firft time of lowing after Winter, is the moneth of Barch, Apetland Bap, wherein we ble to fow Tollworts, Kapifb, Hope, and after Botcs, Lettufe, Sozel, Bultard-febe, Coziander, Dill, and Barden Creffes. The fecond feafon for folding, is in the beginning of Daober, wherein they fet Betes , and fow Smallage in Nigella and Arreche. The third feafon, which they call the bummer feafon, in some place the Garoners beginne in January, wherein they fet Cucumbers, Bourds, Spinnach, Bafill, Burflaine, and Sauerie. Many things may be fowed betweet thefe feafons, and pet ooe berp well. All Carden hearbs are commonly fowen befoze the tenth of June fuch things as you would not have feed you may for after this time.

Some things are folved onely two times a vere,in the Spring, and in the end of Summer. Dthers againe at lunday times, as Lettufe, Collwarts, Rocket, Radift, Creffes, Coriander, Cherwill, and Dill. Thefe are fowed about Barch, oz about Septems ber and Columella faith ope come either of the frede oz of the flip: fome of the rate, fome of the falke, fome of the leafe, fome of the Clot, fome of the Dead, fome of both : bthers of the Barke, others of the With, fome both of the feede and the flippe, as Kew, wilde Marierum, and Bafill, this they cut off, when it comes to be a handfull high : Dthers growe both of the fabe and the rote, as Dnions, Garlicke, and fuch like. And although all things will grow of their feetes, yet this they fay, Rew will not bee : for it bery feldome fpzings, therefore they rather fet the flips. Thefe that are let of the rote, boe commonly last longer, and branch bet ter, putting forth poung flippes from his fices, as the Dnion and With. The Calke being cut, they all doe fring againe for the most part, ercept fuch as have fpeciali falkes, caller by Theophraftus άπολαυλα, that is, fuch as when the stalke is cut grow no moze : Gala interprets it Secaulia. The Hape and the Hadilly their leaves being pulled away and conered with earth, doe grow and continue till bummer. The fruits of fome is in the earth, fome without, Of feedes, and fome both within and without, fome lie and grow, as the Cui cumber and the Bourd, and lometimes hang, though of greater

weight

ineiabt by much then the fruits of Tres : fome requires flaves and belpes to clime by as Bops, Lupines, and Beale : fome fecoe groweth better, the newer they oe, as Lettes, Nigeba Romana, Quembers, and Bournes and therefore fome ble to frepe their Cucumbers, in milke of water, to caule them to grow the fped, lier. Dn the other fine, of olde febe better groweth the Bate, Barben Creffes, Benfriall, great Barferum, and Conlander. In the Bete this is onely obferned, that the febe commeth not all by in one pere, but part the fecond pere, and fome the third : and therefore of a great deale of fed, fpringeth but a little. Touching feed this is to be inell feene to that they be not to old and bay that they be not mingled, og taken one for another : old feb in fome is of fuch force, as tt changeth the nature : for of old Colwort febe Chaingeth the Kape and likewife of Kape febe Colworts. Alfo that we gather not your feeteste fone, not to late. The bery time, as Theophraltus writeth, is at the fpring, the fall of the leafe, and the rifing of the Dog : but not in all places and kindes alike. Di Seebs, the fornell that fpring are thele Bafill, Arach, Dauen, What Seed Kocket, that commeth by the third day after the fowing, Lettule fpring the fourth pay the Cucumber and the Gourd, the fift day, Bur, foone, and din, longer ere it come, Dill, the fourth day, Creffes & Spultard, Morely. fiede the fift day , 18 eetes in fummer the firt day, in hunter the tenth or the twelfth, Lekes the rir. day, fometime the rr. Coris ander later : which if it be new, (ercept it be thauft together) it groweth not at all. Beniriall and great Parierum, come op al. ter rrr. Daves. Barfly is of all other the longeft before it come bp. appearing the fortieth day after, or many times the fiftieth. You The week must also confider, that the weather in folding is of great force: ther for for the feafon being faire & warme, they some by the foner. Some Sowing. forts fied one piere, mener after come by: fome againe continue, as Bardy, Smalledge, Lettes, Aigella, that being once fowed, come by every pere. Such as continue but a pere, prefently byon their feeding die: other fpzing againe after the loffe of their faite, as Lekes, Digella, Pnions, and Barlicke: and commonly all fuch as put out from the five: and all thefe require dunging & watring. In folding be fide forme think you must have regard to the some, The and to fow amblet in the encrease, and not in the wane. Some as Moone. gaine thinke it beft from that the is foure baves old, till the box sighteene:

t,

v

tiggtiene : forme after the third, others from the tenth, till the twenticth: and beft (as thepall suppose) the spone being a loft, and not fet.

THRA. But now 3 Dany pou tell be fomething of the oades

ring of the belt Carben hearbs von banc.

M ARIVS. Some benibe their Garbening time by the Do.

neths, as they boe their other busbanday.

THE A. I care not whether by Moneths or other waves, but I would fagne know the ozdering of pour Garden bere, for 3 know in hot Countries they Barben all the Winter long, but 3 am altogether for our Country, whole order we muft here follow.

Thetime ning.

MARIVS. In thefe parts they commonly begin their Bar. for Garde- bening (if the weather be faire and feafonable) in the end of fo bynarie. At this time therefoze the Carben being bunged, bigged, raked, and cleanled, they ble to plant Sperage, and Meine.

Of pothearbs.

THE A. 3 pray pour begin with Afparagus, or Sperage, and the other Bot-hearbs, cuery one in his ozder: and afterward with Flowers and Whylicke hearbs.

Asparagus.

M ARIVS. Afparagus was wont to growwilde, but now is brought into the Barben it is called in Brecke, àmapales, in Itahan, Spanish and French, it is almost all one; the one call it Afparago, the other Afperge, the Dutchmen call it Sperages and Spiricus, becaufeit comes bp of it felfe: for the Barben Sperage they were not acquainted with. It is planted in two forts, either of the feede, or the rote : they take of the feede as much as you may take by with their fingers, and bestowing it in little bales, enery two of the febes halfe a fote afunder : they fet them in rich ground, in February, and couer the ground with bung. The wares that grow, must be well placked away, after the fourth eth day they come by as it were to one rote, and tangled togo ther: the rotes have fundin arong thiers, which then call the Sponge. In ground that is baie, the lebes are to be let bepe, and well tempered with bung. In wet growids, on the other fide, they are to be fet fallow in the top of bogbers, left the mov Aure beftroy them. The first vere you must breake off the Stalks that grow : for if you plucke thein by by the rates, the whole fets will follow which are to be preferued for two pere with dunging and wieding. All the pierco after, you mult not gather them in the

f

the falke, but pull them from the rot, that the rots being evened. may the better fyzing which except you boe you burt the Spring. Dim that you meane to hape for feed, pountult in no wife mebble mithall, after, burne by the bulbes, and in Winter bung well the rotes with bung and aches, they are planted also of the rotes. inhich after two yeares you must remoue into a warme and inell bunged ground. The trenches where you meane to fet them must frant a fot a funder, and a fhaft-man in benth inherein you must fo lap your Sponges (as being coucred) they may beft grote : but in the Spring before they come by, you muft lofe the earth with a little forke, to cause them the better to spring, and to make the rots the greater. Cato ivould have you to rake them, but fo as you burt not the rots, and after to pull the plant from the rot : for if you other wife breake it, the rot will bie, a come to nothing, 18ut von may fo long crop it, till you fe it begin to grow to febe : in lebich peere for the Wainter time, you must according to Catoes nunde, couer it with Araw, or fuch like, leaft the cold doe kill them, and in the Spring open it agains, and dung it well. Some thinks. that the first pere it is needlesse to dee any thing to the plant, but onely to wave it. From the rots, which they call the Sponges, there foringeth firft certaine buds with crumpled knops, bery god and pleafant for Sallets : which if pon fuffer to grow, it fraight way butheth forth with branches like Fennel and at length grow to be vaickly: after it bath floward, it bearetha Berry fu ft grane. and when it is ripe red. If you would have Sailets of Alparagus all the pere through : when you have gathered the Berrics.open the rotes that runne aloft by the ground with tigging, and you that have the roots fend forth new buds out of hand. It is thought. that if you becake to powder the home of a Kam , and fowe it. matring it well, it will come to be good Sperage. In the Spring time they make a bery good Sallet, being foode in water, og fatte Broath, till they be tender : for if pou leth them too much, they will wafte away. When they befod, they deeffe them with Minegar, Dple, Depper and Salt, and fo catethem : 02 as my friend William Prat, bery fkilfull in thefe matters, telleth me they cut them in small peeces like Dice, and after thep have parbots led them, butter them with floct Butter, a little Tinegar and Wepper.

.

8

ne

ti

C

he

ic,

die

hs

ets

pri

a in

th

THRA. You have very well theived me the opering of Afpa-

ragus : I prap you goe formard to Meme.

Rew.

MARIVS. Kew, which the Gzekes call midgeor, the Latines Ruram, the Italians Rurache, the Spaniards Ruda, the Frenchmen Rude de gardin, is planted at the end of February, or in Sparch, prospering best in drie and Sunnie grounds, it abhores reth both water and dung, inhich all other heards med delight in, it most delighteth in others: and where all other plants will spring of the sees, this they say will never doc it. The branches being sipped off, and set in the spring, will very well grow, but if you remove the oldrest, it dieth: it delighteth in the haddow of the Figge tree, and being stolne (as they say) it prospereth the better: it is sowed with cursing, as Cummin, and divers other, and cannot abide the presence of an bucleane woman.

THE A. 3 fie good Lettule bere, 3 pap you boto boe pou oze

Der it :

MARIVS. Lettuse is called in Dutch Lattich, in French Laictue, in Czeeke Sewaf, in Italian Lactuca, and so in Latine, in Spanish Lechugas, whereof bestoes the wilve, there are three kindes, one crumpled, which Columella calleth Cacilia, and Spanish Lettuse, of the Countries where it most groweth, and is greatest estemb, in Dutch called Krauser Lattich, in French Crespue, the other Cabbedge Lettuse, in Dutch Knops Lettice, in French Laictue testue, of Plinie called Laconica, and Sessilia, because it groweth round like an head, or an Apple. The third sort is called Rotunda, because it groweth in compasse upon the ground.

THE A. But how come you to have fo good Lettule, and boto

doe you oaber them ?

Lettule.

MARIYS. At the end of February, or in the beginning of Parch, we vie to sowit, that it may be remoned about Aprill or Pap. In hot Countries as Palladius telleth, they sow it in Januarie, or in December, with intent to remone it in February: but you may sow it at any time of the years, to the ground be god, well dunged, and watred. When you remone them, the rotes must be pared and rubbed oner with dung, and such as be already planted, their rotes must be pared and dunged: they lone a god ground, most and well dunged, they spread the better (if you set by them the Rape) or when they begin to Kalke, the stalke being tenerty clouen,

clonen you lay byon it a clop or a Wilehard: they will be white if you formakle them often with fand or the fand within the leaves. and both tender and white you fiall have them. If two daics before they be gathered, their tops be tred by they wil be round and Cabbedged. If the rote being remoned when it is growne a hand broad in beight, be pared and freech with freth Cow bung, and earth call about it, be well watred, and when it groweth high, the top be cut, a potibard laid byon it, the fweeter also they will be : the more you restraine the stalke from shorting by which mult as I faid, be kept bowne with fome ftone or waight, that they may foread the better. If the Lettufe chaunce by reason of the babrielle of the loyle, the feede, or the feafor, to ware hard, the remouing of it will bung it agains to his tenberneffe : it will have funday and bivers talls, if taking a Treeble of Shepe, 02 Coates dung, and hollowing it cummingly with an Awle or a Bookin, pour thruft into it the feede of Lettufe, Creffes, Balill. Rocket, Smallage, Wercely, and Maddith, and after wapping it in bung, you put it into very god ground a water it well. The Percelp, 02 Smallage goeth to rote, the others grow in height, having still the tast of enery one. Constantine affirmeth Lettule to be a mort and cold hearbe, a quencher of thirt, and caufer of flepe: and that being boyled, it mourifieth most, and abateth Letcherie, for which the Pythagorians call it Eunuchion. Galen himselfe the Drince of Physitions both greatly commend it, who in his youth did alwaies ble to eate it rate, and after in his slocr pæres boyled, whereby he kept his body in god temperature. Endiue, in Latine, Intubum, oz Intubus, not bnilke to Lettule, Endiue. fomecall it Garben Succoste, the Dutchmen, and common fort, Endiviam, the Italians and the french, Cicoriam, the Spanis ards, Endibia : it is fowne as other Barben bearbs in Barch, it loueth morffure and god earth, but you must make your beds when you fow it the flatter, left the earth falling alway, the rotes be bared : when it hath put fouth leanes, you must remove it into well dunged ground: that which is solve before the Bas lends of July, both come to feede: but that which is fowne after. feebeth not. Don mult fow that which you would have to ferue pou in winter, in Dctober in warine fonie places foz Sallets in winter; they ble at this day when his leaves be out, to fold them

g

bn

by together, and the them round in the top with some small thing, covering them with some little earthen bestell, the rotes still remaining to nours them withall: thus doing, they will grow to be white and tender, and to lose a great part of their bitternesse. It is said, that they will be white, if they be sprinkled a sew daies abroad, and lying bour sand, be walked with the raine: And thus is Enduce with his encrease prescrued all Wainter. Some there be, that contenting themselves with less charges and labour, doe only cover them with earth, others againe with straw: this order of wintering of it, is now in enery place growne to be common.

Colworts.

THR A. I fe alfo in this pleasant Barben Colwoorts, that

ive Countrey folkes be fo well acquainted with.

MARIVS, It is meete my Garden Could not loant that. tobich as you know Cato preferreth before all other hearbes, in pefcribing the wonderfull properties and bles thereof : and this place I onely appoint for fuch common Dothearbes, as Colwoores Betes, Endine, Dnions, Hapes, Pauencs, Lakes, Carrets. Kabbilb. Barliche, and Barlneps : the worthier fort T place by themselves, and as the nature of every one requireth. Colworts is commonly called in Latine Braffica, or Caulis, in Ozeke Roguen, in French Choux, in Italian Caule, in Spanish Verza, in Dutch Koil. The olde waiters made diners loats of it, as at this day there be. One fort with great and broad leaues, a big falke. and bery fruitfull. This fort is commonly knowne, which being the pleasanter in Winter, when it is bitten with the frosts, is soo with Baken, and bled in Borredge. The tender part of the top being a little boyled, is ferued for Sallets, Dreffed with ovic and falt. The fecond fort with the crumpled leafe, of the refemblance that it bath to Smallage, is called belinocis of Apiaria, of the come mon people crumpled Coll, oz wrinckled Coll. The third fort which is properly called Crambe, bath a fmaller falke and leafe. smoth, tender, and not very full of tupce. The fourth fort is the great Cabbedge, with broad leaues and a great bead, called in Dutch Rappes, in french Cheuz Cabuz of the olde weiters Tritiana Braffice, and this kinde is oncly molt fet by. In Germanie there is one kinde of them that they call Lumbardy Colwort, or Sauor Colwest, fweter then the other, and not able to endure the Winter; and another with very broad leaves crumpled, and full

Bill of weinckles, but a great deale blacker which the Halians call Nigrecaules , and the Latines Nigra Braffica , of the number of those that they call commonly red Coll, of the olde weiters Marucina Brassica. There are beliocs other forts, taking their names of the Countrey where they grow, as Aricina and Cumana. The belt time for fetting and fowing of Colworts, is after the Abes of Anzill. An cold and raynie Countries, the offner it is bungen and raked, the better a great deale will the Colworts be : Come ble to fome them about the Balends of Barch, but the chiefeft of it go, eth out in leafe, and when it is once sut, maketh no good falke for the Winterafter : pet may pout wife remone your greatest Coll, and if pon lo doe, you hall have both moze let, and greater pelo: for it fo aboundeth with feebe, as it is folved with no leffe aduan tage then Rape feede. For the making of ovle, Collucts may be fowen all the piere long, but chiefly in Warch after it is fowed it appeareth within ten daves, except your feedes be old and bap, for old feede will grow to Kapes, as old Kape feede will to Colworts. Some favit profpereth best in falt ground, and therefore they ble to call bpen the ground Saltpeter og albes, which also beltropeth the Caterpiller : it is remoued in June , chiefly when it bath put forth fire leaves, and that when the weather is rainie, fo that you coner the rate befoze with a little freth bung, and wan it in Scawebe, and fo fet it. Boze biligence is to be bird about the Cab. bedge : it muft be folven in Parch in the full of the Bone, that it may remaine in the ground two Dones and in Day pou must take them by, and let them againe two fote alumder. The ground muft be well digged where you let them, and as fast as they grow, the earth mult be raifed about them: fo that there appeare no moze than the very tops of them : for to cause them to grow faire and great : you must as oft as you remove them, banke them by with earth about them, that nothing but the leanes appeare. And thus you must often boe to all the kindes of them, the hoare froits make them have the greater (wetneffe. The Uinevarts (thep fap) where Collucts groto, doe pelothe worfer Times, and the Coll corrupteth the Wine.

THE A. 3 pray you procede with the reft of thefe pothearbs.

MARIVS. Pou fie hereby Spinage, so tearmed (as you spinage, may know) of the paickly sedes, called in Latine Spinacia, and

enen fo in Italian, Spanith, French, and Dutch : it is fowne as thole before in Barch, Aprill, and fo till September: if it may be ivell watrebit commeth by in franen bapes after the fowing you thall not niebe to remouett. The fiebe muft vzefently after the fowing be couered, and afterward well weded: it refufeth no kinde of ground but profeereth in enery place: you must often cut it for it continually groweth, it is to be boiled without any water, wherein the boyling it both vield great flore of juvce, and contene ting it felfe with his ammeliquour,it requireth none other. After. ward, being beaten and Kirred with the Lable, till the claumis nes be mone : it is made by in little balles, the inve Brained out, and bepled boon a Chafpnoith with Dyle o; Butter, fome adde thereunto Elergius, or the tupce of fowre Chapes, to make the talle moze tarte. I them von in ozber as pou fet, all my Bitchin hearbs: now followeth Sorrell, called in Latine, Acetofa, in Ital lian likemile, in Spanille, Romaza, in French, Oxella, in Dutch. Surick, of the fowgenes thereof. There are funday fogts of it: tos baue at this day two kinds, the garden Sozrell & the wilde, which are pleasant both in broth & ballets, and of this bearbe, the wilde forts are both fower in talte, and fmaller in leafe : it is fowed as all other pot-bearbs are, and it groweth of it felfe in Beddelics and Barbens. Cummin and Coriander require wel ozbeed ground: they are fowed in the fpring, and must be well toebed. Cummin Coriander is called in Latine, Cuminum, and almost like in all other Land quages: it is foined bett (as they thinke ) with curling and erecration that it may profper the better. Coriander is called in Latine Coriandrum, and is almost by the fame name in al other tongues: tt both beft mofver when it is fowed of feede that is oldeft. Smal-Smalledge ledge and Parfly called in Latine, Apium Perrolelinum, and Apium or Parfley. horrenfe, in Italian, Apro domeflico, and Petrofello, in Spanift,

Cummin and

Sorrell.

Peterfillie, or Peterlin : it is fowed at the Aequinoctiall, in the fpring time, t he feet beaten a little, and made by in round vellets: we call it Acquinoctiall when the night and the bapes are of co quall length over all the westo : that is, when the Sonne, the Captaine and Authour of the other lights, the bery foule of the world, both enter into the fignes of Aries and Libra. It is thought to profper the better the older the fiede is, a to fraing the foner: it commeth by the aftieth bay, or at the forest the fortieth bay

after

after it is fowne : when it is once forme, it abideth a long time. it resopreth in water of wet. Fenell, in Italian Fenochio, in Fenell, Spanith Hinozo, in French Fenoil, in Dutch Fenchel, is folwed in the beginning of the Dung in hot funty places Conp ground. or any ground being once folune, it formgeth enery pare, Annile, Annile, in Latine Anifum, fo knotone in moft tongues, as Cummin and Coziander : requireth a ground well ozdred and breffed. Dyll, in Dyll. Latine Anethum, in French and Italian almost fo, in Spanish Eneldo, in Butch Dyll, endureth and abideth all kinde of weathers, but belights most in warme ground : if it be not well was tred, it must be fomed thinner. Some neur couer the fiedes when they fow them, supposing that no Bird will meddle with it : it commeth by also of it felfe as formett both. Chervill, in Chervile. Latine Cerofolium, in Dutch Kerbell, in Italian Gingidia, in french Cerfucil, defireth a good ground, moult and well dunged: it is fowed with the reft in cold places. In this fame Woneth they allo fow Beetes, though post may fow them when you will at as Beetes. my other time of the viere as Spinage, it is a common Countrep hearbe : they call it in Italian Beitola, in Spanish Acelga, in Dutch Becer, 02 Mangelt. Do Barben hearbe hath greater leanes, lo that with one ozdaing, it groweth like a young tree. It is called Bera, because when it sedeth it is (as Columella affirmeth) to the likenelle of the Greke letter B. There be two forts of them, the white and the blacke, the ordging of them is after one fort : it is lowed as Colwarts, Sorrell, and Haddith are, in March, Aprill, or May. Some thinks the best time for folding it is while the Domegranate both flowie: it map be fowed neuerthetelle as Lettule, Cols, and divers others, at any time of the Summer. The fiede, the older it is, the better it is to be fowne, as are the feedes of Smallage, Parlley, Garven Creffes, Sauerie, Wilde Barierum, and Coziander, though in all other the newell be belt. It commeth by in Summer the firt Day in winter the tenth after the folding: it touch a mort, a rich, and a mellow ground: you map remone it when it hath put forth fine leaves if your ground like well to be watred: if it be baie ground, it must be fet in the end of the Summer, as I have fait of Coilwaits, though it make no great matter at lobat other time pondoe it. Wiben youres moue it, you must cubbe ouer the rate with new dung. This is proper

euen lo in Italian, Spanith, French, and Dutch : it is fowne as thole before in March, Aprill, and fo till September: if it may be well watreb,it commeth by in franen bapes after the fowing you thail not nebe to remouett. The fabe muft perfently after the fowing be covered, and afterward well weded: it refuseth no kinde of ground, but profpereth in enery place: you must often cut it for it continually groweth it is to be boiled without any water, wherein the boyling it both pelo great flore of inpre, and contenting it felfe with his owneliquour, it requireth none other. After. ward, being beaten and Kirred with the Lable, till the claumie nes be gone : it is made by in little balles, the inpre Grained out. and booled boon a Chafpnail with Dyle of Butter, fome aboe thereunto Eleraius, or the juvce of fowre Grapes, to make the talle moze tarte. I them you in ozber as pou fer, all my Bitchin hearbs: now followeth Sorrell, called in Latine, Acetofa, in Ital lian likewile, in Spanile, Romaza, in French, Oxella, in Dutch, Surick, of the fowenes thereof. There are fundan forts of it: we baue at this bay two kinds, the garden Sozrell & the wilde, which are pleasant both in broth & Ballets, and of this hearbe, the wilde forts are both fower in tatte, and fmaller in leafe : it is fowed as all other pot-bearbs are, and it groweth of it felfe in Deboowes and Barbens. Cummin and Coriander require wel ozbzed ground: they are fowed in the fpzing, and must be well weded. Cummin Coriander is called in Latine, Cuminum, and almost like in all other Land quages: it is fowed bett (as they thinke ) with curling and erecras tion that it may profper the better. Coriander is called in Latine Coriandrum, and is almost by the fame name in al other tongues: tt both belt profper when it is fowed of feede that is olbett. Smal-Smalledge ledge and Parfly called in Latine, Apium Petrolelinum, and Apium or Parfley. horrenfe, in Italian, Apro domeltico, and Petrofello, in Spanish,

Cummin and

Sorrell.

Peterfillie, or Peterlin : it is folbed at the Acquinoctiall, in the fpring time,t he feet beaten a little, and made by in round pellets: we call it Acquinoctiall when the night and the dayes are of co quall length oner all the world : that is, when the Sunne, the Captaine and Authour of the other lights, the bery foule of the world, both enter into the fignes of Aries and Libra. It is thought to profper the better the older the fiede is, a to fpring the foner: it commeth by the fiftieth day, or at the somest the fortieth day

after

after it is fowne : when it is once fowne, it abibeth a long time, it rejoyceth in mater of wet. Fenell, in Italian Fenochio, in Fenell. Sparify Hinozo, in French Fenoil, in Dutch Fenchel, is folwed in the beginning of the Spring, in hot fump places, Comp ground, or any ground being once folune, it foringeth enery pore, Annile, Annile. in Latine Anifum, to knowne in most tongues, as Cummin and Cozianter : requireth a ground well ozozen and breffed. Dyll, in Dylt. Latine Anethum, in french and Italian almott fo, in Spanish Eneldo, in Butch Dyll, enbureth and abideth all kinde of weathers, but belights most in warme ground : if it be not well was tred, it muft be fowed thinner. Some neur couer the feedes when they low them, supposing that no Bird will meddle with it : it commeth by also of it felfe as fermell both. Cheruil, in Cheruile. Latine Cerofolium, in Dutch Kerbell, in Italian Gingidia, in French Cerfucil, delireth a good ground, moult and well dunged; it is fowed with the reft in cold places. In this fame Woneth they alfo fow Beetes, though pout map fow them when you will at as Beetes. ny other time of the yeare as Spinage, it is a common Countrey Bearbe : they call it in Italian Beitola, in Spanish Acelga, in Dutch Becer, 02 Mangelt. Do Barben hearbe hath greater leanes, to that with one ozdama, it groweth like a young tree. It is called Bera, because when it feebeth, it is (as Columella affirmeth) to the likenede of the Backe letter B. There be tino foats of them, the white and the blacke, the ordzing of them is after one fort: it is folded as Colworts, Sorrell, and Haddith are, in March, April, or May. Some thinks the best time for solving it is while the Pomegranate both flowe: it map be fowed neuerthelelle as Lettule, Cols, and divers others, at any time of the Summer. The fiede, the older it is, the better it is to be fowne, as are the feedes of Smallage, Parlley, Garven Creffes, Sauerie, wilde Barierum, and Coziander, though in all other the newell be belt. It commeth by in Summer the firt day, in winter the tenth after the fowing : it touch a mort, a rich, and a mellow ground: you may remone it when it hath put forth fine leaves, if your ground like well to be watred: if it be baie ground, it muft be fet in the end of the Summer, as I have fait of Coilvoits, though it make no great matter at what other time poudoe it. Wihen youres move it, you must cubbe over the rate with new dung. This is proper

Garden Creffes,

fome the vere after fome the third vere : and therefore of a great beale of lede, there is at the first but a little thew, it groweth the broader and the whiter, if when it is fomething growne, you lay bpon it Tile fromes, or fuch like, to caufe it to fpread, as I fpake before of Lettule. Barben Creffes,in Italian Nalturtio, & Agretto. in Spanish Meltuerzo, in French Crelles de gardin, in Dutch Kerls, are folived both in the Spring, and at the Fall of the leafe, tt commeth by the first day after it is fowne, and damketh away the moviture from fuch hearbs as grow nere him iningled with other bearbs, he careth not what weather come, and therefore prospereth both as well in Winter as in Sommer : ifit be folune with Lettule, it commeth by ercebingly, it belighteth in moy Aure, which if it want, it will boe well enough : in water places it groweth of his owne accord : as about Padelbor, a towne in Weltphalia, it groweth in great abundance in the River, and therefore is called of forme Water Creffes : it was called in the old time Silimbrium. The branches when they ware old, are netted together with white happy rings. Barden Poppy, called in Latine Paupauer fattuum, is thought best to grow where olde Stalks have beene burnt : it is fowed in warme places, with other Dot hearbs. Mullard-feede, in Latine Smapi, in Dutch Seneff, in Italian Senape, in Spanily Moltaza, in French Seneue, there are ting kindes, white and blacke : it is best to be folwed in the end of Summer, and againe in Barch. Where it is once fowne, it is bard to ridde the ground of it againe, because the feede both Afil grow as it falleth. It loueth to grow byon dung-hils, and caft bancks.

Garden poppy.

Mustard-

THRA. I fe pouhaue berpfapre Raddiffes bere-

Raddish.

MARIVS. Rothing lo faire as I have had them, for where as they delight in the Sunne, in warme ground, my Gardners have here let them in the chaodw. The order of them is to be let in very god ground, and lying byon the Sunne: some say, it doth not greatly care for dung, so it may have chasse craived byon it: when it is come to some growth, they must be covered with earth, for if it courish once above the ground, the rotes will never borgod, but hard and full of pith. It is called Kaddish, because it exceeded all other rotes in greatnesse. Plinic swriteth, that he saw

fi

tl

m

ba

fé

fain at Erford in Dermanie, Raddiff as bigge as the body of an Infant. It is folved twife in the peere, in February of Barch. the Done being in the wane, left it grow to much in leaves foure fingers billant one from the other : and againe in August which is the bett featon for them. Those that you fet after the tenth of June, will never feede, the like is to be observed in all other feeds: it commeth by commonly the third day after it is fowen : in bot and Southerly Countries, the weather being faire, it groweth fone to falke: and quickelp feedes. The leanes as thep aroto. muft fill be trampled downe and troden boon, whereby the rote thall grow the greater: otherwise it flowsisheth with leanes and gineth encrease to the leafe, and not to the rote: the lesse and the Imother the leafe is the milber and the Cwater is the rote: colbe as fome fap, both further the godneffe of them, they fav they will be bery pleafant, if the feebe be freeped in Detoth, oz in the juvee of Kaising: they ware fweet with coloe as the Kape both, and their bitternesse is taken away with brine, and therefore some would have Kapilhes watred a nourithed with falt waters: being fodden they come to be very fivet, and ferue the turne of Rapes : gie uen faffing, they prouoke bomite, they are hurtfull to the beines and to the teeth. Raddill eaten at firth, is a god preferuative as gainft poyfon: eaten befoze meate, it breaketh winde, and vrougs keth brine: & after meate it lofeth the belly, it is called in Latine Raphanus, in Italian Raphano, in Spanish Ravano, in French Raue, in Dutch Retich.

THRA. There is another kinds of them, that the Dutch men call Merrettich, I take it to be that which the Romanes ealled Armaracia, called commonly in Italy Ramaracia, the first let-

ter mifplaced.

b

D

te

rs

ín

th

it:

th,

boz.

bet aw MARIVS. Dou say well, but this is more full of braunthes, greater in leanes, thinne in body: the leanes are not bulke to the somer Radish, but that they are a little sharper and longer, and the rote slenderer, and therefore there are some that denie it to be Armaracia: but here let the Phisitions contend. The ophrasus maketh mention of sundry sorts of Radish: This kind of Radish bath a wonderfull byting taste, a great deale more then Pustartish, and setcheth teares from the eyes of them that eate it: it is set

and planted in this fort. The rote is cut in a great number of peces, whereof enery piece profeceth: for if you plucke by this hinde of Kabbith by the rotes you may cut off a goo quantitie of the rote, and benibing them into finall parts, letting the side rote againe by himfelfe, and they will all grow and profper bery mell.

THRA. Dea : have pou gotten the Rape ? Ditherto 3 thought bee bad onely belonged buto be for we ble to low them after the Sunne bath beine at the higheft, and immediately after our other Corne, for the futtenance both of man and beat.

Rapes.

MARIVS. Don boe well, and we fow it now in spay, and in water ground foner, and in fome places in July. There are biners forts of them fome of them round, fome grow all in length. and are most pleasant in taste, as at Binga, and in the Country of Bauar. Some againe of the quantitie of a mans bead, and of a hundred pound weight: but the fmallett fort is the floctett. There is another kind of Rape that they ble to fowe, which carrieth bis febe in little Coos, & is chiefly planted in Germaniefoz to make ople of the which you the other Dap, fpake of it is called in Oreke volakes, in French Rave, in Italian Rapo, in Spanish Nabe, in The little Dutch Ruben. There is also another wilde kinde callet Rapunculus, that groweth balle a part high, full of feed, and tender top

Rape.

Nauens.

ueb. This they gather in the Spring time, before the Calke be forma bo, s pulling it by by the rates, bo ble it in Sallets, for poling it to be a wilde kinde of Rape. The Pauens allo calles in Greeke yoldudus, in Latine Napus, in French Naver, in Italian Napo, in Spanish Nabicas, in Dutch Stockruben, may be counted in the number of Rapes, for Rapes in Come ground change inte Pauens. e in fome ground, Pauens into Kapes. Thefe alfo lout to grow in a well watred, mellow, and a rich ground: though fuch as grow in landie and barren ground, proue often the livetell in eating. They ble to lowe them in Barch, and in Come places be fore, as allo in August. Barlneppe in Greeke sapahious in La tin Paftinaca in other tongues almost as in Latine, is bery ples fant to be eaten , and requireth a fat and rich ground, and been bigger, whereby the rate may have come enough to grow in : #

Parineps.

Red and vealow Carrets.

is formed and fet in the foring, and in the end of Sommer. THRA. Don have bere allo in this Garden red Carrets.

MARIVS

ti

le

b

ri

Tron.

MARIVS. I have fo. Pellow Carrets is called in Latine Sifer, in French Cheruille, in Italian Silero, in Spanith Chiriuias, in Dutch Querlin, I thinke you know it. Plinie togiteth, that Tiberius was fo in lone with this rote, that be caused Carrets to be perely brought him out of Germanie, from the Caffell of Gelduba ftanbing byon the Khine. It belighteth in colde plas ces, and is lowed befoze the Balends of Parch, and of fome in September : but the third and the best kinde of folwing as fome thinke, is in August. There is also wilde Carrets, a kinde of Barinen, in Latine Daucus, in Italian Dauco, in French Carote fauage, in Dutch Woortzel, there are that suppose it to be the pellow rote, that is to common in Germanie, they are to be folved in Barch. It is generall to Kapes, Kabifbes, Barineps, Carrets, Dnions, and Lokes, that they be well troden bpon, oz kept cut, to the end the rotes may grow the greater. Df Leekes Leekes. there are two forts, the one called Capitatum, and the other Secliuum, which they ble alwaies to cut close by the ground. The headed, og fet Læke, in Latine Capitatum, in Italian Porro capitato, in Spanish Puerro con Cabeza, in Dutch Lauch, in French Porreau, the other Leke in Latine Sectile, in Dutch Schnitlauch. belide the often raking and bunging, must be watered as oft as pou cut it boime. The liedes in botte Countries, is folved in Januarie oz Februarie, and in colder places, in Barch : to caufe it to growe the fairer and the better. They ble to knit by a god deale of fiede together in thinne Linnen cloathes, and fo to lay them in the ground : but to make them greater headed, when it hath well taken rote, they ble to pluckett by by the blades, and raife it fo, that as it were hanging and borne by by the earth, it is forced to fill the emptie place that lies buder it : the blades and the rotes cut off, they ble to let the heads, budeclaving them with a Tilefard, that when as they are not able to runne downe in length, they thould be driven to grow in bigneffe and breath. The Leke belighteth in god ground, and hateth watry ground: fowed in the Spring, it mult be remoued or let againe after Bar, well, that they may be the greater, the earth must be continually lofed about it, and they must be pulted and rapled by, as 3 faid before : if when you remoue them, you make in the heads of euc. rie one a little hole with a piece of Riede, or any thing except

20

an

el l

te

jut

ach

t in

be

La

Len

èpi

i: tt

5.

V S.

From, and thank therein a Cucumber feede, they will grow to a Ivonderfuli greatnelle: fome ble in thead of Cucumberfece, to put in Rape lece. To have bery large and great Lecken, pou mult hollow a Treatle of Goates bung, and fill it full of Leke fabe, for the little foront at the first restrained, will runne altoges ther in one, and fo come forth of the ground: and this as Hieronimus Cardanus waiteth, hath beine often tried to be true. They Shall not fanour of Leekes of Pnions, that have eaten Cummin after. It commeth by the tenth day after the fowing, and lafteth two years: the first years it contenteth it felfe onely with bearing of leanes, the next pere it rifeth in a long falke hollow within, the top garnished with round knops of flowers. The Onion : in Latine Cepa, oz Cepe, in Italian Cipella, in Spanich Cebolla, in French Oignon, the nert neighbour to the Leke : is also of two kindes, the one kinde called Capitatum, that groweth to head, the other Fifile, that without any head onely flourisheth in blades. and is often gathered as Liches are, and therefore onely is folone, and not let in Februarie or Barch in faire weather, and in the Ivane of the Mone: it belighteth in rich ground, well digged and bunged, and therefore Columella would have the ground well fallowed, that it may be mellewed with the Winter frofts, and afe ter bunged, after well bigged againe, and the rotes and weedes caft out, laid out in bees and foluco: it is called Fiffile, because it is parted and bivided below, for in the Winter it is left with his top naked: in the Spring time the blades are pulled off, and others come by in their places. The hears are let, and if you plucke away the taples and the out-growings when you fet them, they will grow to be bern great. Twinty baves before you fet them, digge the ground well, and lay it bay, and fo thall they profper the better. The heads are let in Automne, and grelo to feed as other plants doc : if you meane to gather the feedes, when the falke is growne, you must propit by with little fickes, that the windes Baking of the Stalke, Matternot the fabes, noz bzenke the Stalke: which feede pon muft gather befoge it be all blacke, for the blacks neffe is a true figne of the full ripeneffe: if you will not have it fied but head, plucke off the blade fill close by the ground . fo fail all the maintenance goe to the rote. Among all other hearbs, onely the Onion is not subject to the force of the Mone, but hath a cons

Onions.

Fiffile.

Onions.

trarie:

frary power, for it wareth in the wane of the Done and becreafeth in the encrease of it : pet there are that holo opinion, that if pon few them in the wane, they will be the fmaller, and fower; and in the encrease, they will be the greater, and the milber, The red Dopan, is more tharpe then the white, they are beff preferued in Barley chaffe, if ficit you dip them in hot water, and after dap them in the Sunne, till they be through day. They are of the common people thought to last longest, being banged by in the langke : for the kindred it hath with the Dayon, I procede to fpeake nort of Garlicke, called in Latine Allium, in Italian Garlicke. Aglio, in Spanish Aio, in Dutch Knobloich, in French Aux, it groweth with a blade like the Dowon, but not hollow, the falke round, and the flowers in the top in a round tuft where the feet lveth. Barlicke groweth both of the bead and the feede, as the Duyon and other of this kinde both. It is commonly fowed in Februarie or March, according to the disposition of the weather. as the Down is. It would be fet in the bovermoft part of little narrow rioges, the Cloues being biffant foure of Aus inchesons from the other, and not bery beepe. After, when the Cloues have put forth the little Arings, or when their blades are come by, they mut be well raked, for the oftner ye boe fo, the greater they will be ! but if you will have the heads the greater, before it grow to stalke, you shall winde and wreathe the greene blades together, and tread them to the ground, for that continuall treading byon them will make them the greater. In Detober the Cloues muft be plucked alunder, & fet in row byon high bozders. that they may fcare the banger of the winter fformes. They fav the frent of them will ceafe if you eate after them the rote of Bets tofted at the fire: thus faith Plinie out of Menander.

THRA. What hearbe is that ponder, that commeth by so hie as a man may make a staffe of the stalke, the leaves large and round, the slowe in shape terming to compare with the Kose?

Marivs. It is Holioke, of Barben Ballow, in Latine Mallowes. Malua hortensis, in Dutch Peppel, in Italian and French almost as in Latine.

THE A. Withat, the fame that Horace taketh to be so inholes forme for the body and which of Hesiodus and Martial is so highly commended?

D

H

lp

na

16

势 2

MARIVS. The bery fame: and also tobich is more wonders full init, the leaves turne about with the Sunne, fo that it may ferue in fead of a Dyall , beclaring by the turning of his leaves inhat time of the day it is, though the Sunne doe not fine, which the Philosophers thinke to be bone, by the braining of his mov. flure. In Afficia, as Plinie waiteth,it commeth in feauen moneths to be like a young tree, and ferues well for a walking faff. It is folet in Daober, or in the end of the Summer, as alfa at other times, that by the comming on of winter, it may be reftragued of his high growth: it rejoyceth in rich and moift ground, and must be removed when it commeth to have foure or fine leaves, it growith best whenit is young: when it comes to be greater, it bies in the remouing. The ble it both for the pot and for fatlets, the talte is better toben it is not removed: you must folie it but thinne for growing to rancke, and in the midt of them, you must lap little clobs or fromes, it requireth continuall raking, and maketh better the ground where it growes.

THRA. 3 maruaile whether you fow Purcelaine, fith it

groweth wilbe abroad.

Purslaine.

MARIVS. The Latines call it Portulacan, with the Italiams it hath the fame name, in Spanish Verdolaga, in French and Dutch Porchelle, it is follow in Barbens, and well of ordered both grow the better, and incesset the farther, it hath a blacke face.

growing in little griene cups.

Buglofe,

THE A. Boglose, that the Latines call Buglossum, the Dutchmen Ochsenzung, or Burrersth, the Frenchmen Borauge, the Italians Borache, the Spaniards Boraic. Is not this it that I see here with the same blew sowre, and a stalke a feet long, and

full of branches ?

MARIVS. Buglose is at this day with the Pothicaries called Bozage, though they differ something in the slower, and in very diede they are two summer Pearles: for some call the common Bozage, the tester Buglose, and the greater Buglose is thought to be that which Dioscorides calleth Circium, the trus-Buglose: the slowers of both sozts are vised in Sallets and in Wime, because it maketh the heart merry, and therefore is called in Pricke in Pearle, that is to say, gladnes: the leanes are also been in dressing of meates, it is sowen about Parch, 4 once sowen

it will never away, there is also a wilde kinde of it.

THRA. I pray you goe forward, and tell be fome thing of Strawberries, which here grow with great plenty and beauty,

belped as it femeth with god ordering.

MARIVS. They are fo, for we ble to bring rotes out of Straw. the woods, tuhich being fet and planted in the Garden, profper er. beries. codingly tivo or three yeares together : and after, wee evther remone them againe, because they ware wide, or fet the wide in their places : and fo have we them to vielo their fruit twife in a pere in the Spring, and in the end of Summer. And although it grometh of it felfe in thaddown inode in great plenty, as if it belighted in thatow of Trees, pet being brought into the Oar. bea, it delighteth in funny places, and good ordering, pelbing a great deale moze and better fruit : it crepeth boon the ground without a stalke with small strings comming from the rote. with a white flower, and a leafe like a Trefoile, indented about. The berries, which is the fruit, are red, and taffe bery pleafants ly: the Dutch mencall them Erdbern , the Frenchmen Frefes. There is another fruit that groweth fomething higher. whose berry is also like the Strawbery. Diolcorides ferneth to call it Rubus Idaus, the Baper of Ida, because it grows Raspes. eth in great abundance byon the Bountaine Ida. It is not full of prickles, as the other brambles are, but foft and tender, full of branches and whitifh leanes, it beareth reade berries, fomething paler than the Strawbery, and very pleasant in talte. The Dutch. men call it Imberen, the Frenchmen Frambolas,

THRA. What is that groweth yonder, a pard in height?

MARIVS. It is commonly called Liquerife, in Latine Dulcis Liquerife.

Radix, in Italian Regolitia, in Spanish Regaliza, in French Re-

cliffe, in Dutch Clarits, oz Susfholts.

THRAA. I did not thinke to have found it here. I heare it groweth very plentifull about the Deine, I would be glad to heare how doe you odder it, for it hath a rate for the lwestnelle thereof (whence it taketh his name) very commendable.

MARIVS. It is fet of pound forings of the rote: as the

Doppe is, in dzie light ground and funnie.

THRA. What fay you to small Keazins, called in Latine SmallReadibles, doe you thinke the olde waiters knew this bush? zins.

19 3

MARIVS.

MARIVS. Ehat which we call at this day Ribes, and the Dutchmen Saint Johns Pearle, besause about Diblummer it is garnifled with red and rich berries, baning a tarte talte, quench ing thirft, chiefly, the raging and extreame thirft of feners and coling the Comacke, which the Apothecarics in Suger or Bonie keep all the vere, it is thought it was buknowen to the old wife ters : but now a common buib bled for enclofing of Garbens. and making of Borders and Arbours: it will eafily grow, but that it is fomething troublefome, by reason of his tharpe prickles to be bent about Sommer beules.

Hoppes.

THR A. Dou Spake enen now of Bops, boe pou let in these your princely Baradifes, that plant that is to common with the Countrey man about bs: they make great gaine of it.

MARIVS. Eell pou therefore, I prappou, bow they boe bfeit.

Reade the dering hereof, in Mafter Reymold Scots booke of Hoppe-Gard, ns .

THR A. It is fet of the pong thotes, as you tolde alittle beperfect or- fore of Liquerife, and that in the end of Sommer: or if they feare a hard winter, in March. The fets or thotes are cut from the olde rotes, and are let in ground well covered with boung and good mould, and afterward billed, and fo fuffered to remaine all Wainter. In the fpzing the earth is firred with Makes and not with Spapes, and the hilles raifed, and the ground rid of all burts full webes. About Baje certaine polules are fet bp, bpon which the Hoppe climbeth: all the fpray that fpringeth about the flower is commonly cut off. About September, or in the end of August. the flowers or bels are gathered and kept to make Bere with: When the Boppes are gathered, the remaines are cut bowne close to the ground, and the Bils being againe railed, are coursed with bing. The tops, and the young bues that come first out in April. are bled to be gathered for Sallets, and kiepeth them from grole ing to ranke. But now 3 pap you goe on, and returns to the befeription of your Garben. D what ercellent Belons , Bont pens, Cucumbers, and Courdes have you here, 3 prap pou tell in: iphat fort you order them.

MARIVS. Melons (which fome, because they are fathioned like Apples, call Domes) are of like kinde of Cucumbers, and fo are the Depons which the Frenchmen call Dompeons. The Cucumbers are called in Latine Cucumer, in Italian Cucumero

Cacumbers.

02

monbere

or Gedruolo, in French and Dutch Cocumbre. They change to Dampeons, and Duftemillions, from which they onely biffer in hape and greatnede : when they erceed in greatnede, they bee come Bompeons, and when they grow round, they are Melone pompeons : all thefe kindes are called of fome waiters Delons. The Brecians call all the forts, as well Cucumbers as Delens pompeons, by the name of Bompcons and Belons, though there are some that make a difference betweene Bompeons and Belong, neither ope the learned pet throughly agree byon thefe names, not can it be certainely faid what kinds the olde intiters meant by Bompeons, & Aslonpompeons. Bompeons doc crape along boon the ground with rough leaues and velicio floinge, and are pleafant to be eaten when they are ripe. The fwestell fort of them they call Succrino , 02 Muskemillions. The Opelone pompeons are supposed to spring first in Campania, being falbica neb like a Duince. This kinde bangeth not, but groweth round lying byon the ground, and being rive, boe leave the falke,

Some Cucumbers are called Cirrini, of their vellownes toben they be rive, and alfo Cirruli, or Cirroli, they grow all in length. and are spotted as the Titrons are : some be called Marin, and be called in Italian Cuculla Marina the fied whereof is to be eaten before they be ripe: they are cut in vices, and porredge made of them, not much bulike in fathion to the Delon. There is also another kinde of Cucumber of a buge compaffe, almost as big as a buffell: the Mowers and Baruelt folkes in Italie, ble to carry great pieces of them to the field with them to quench their thirft. Dou muft fet all thefe kindes in Darch, the feeces muft bee fet thinne, two foote one from another, in watrie ground well downged and bigged, fpecially famoie ground : you must lay them in Bilke, or water and Honny the dayes: and after orie them and folse them. fo thall you have them bery pleasant. They will have a very fret fauour, if their fedes be kept many bayes as mong Hole-leaves. Dour Tucumbers thall be long and tender, if you fet bnder them water in a broad beffell two bandfuls bue der them. They belight in water fo much as if they be cut off, they will yet bent toward it, and if they hang or have any flay, they wit grow croked, as also if you set oile ty them which they greatly abhorre. The flowers being luffered to grow in pipes, do grow a

Gourds.

wonderfull length. They lone not the Winter no moze then both the Bourd , inhereunto they are almost like in nature : foz the flowers, the leanes, and the claspers, are like of them both : but the Courd is more buffe in climbing, to that with hally growth, it fuseabeth quickly oner the hearts and Summer boules, running by by the walls, and mounting by to the bery Tiles of the houses, having a great feuit of a monftrous bigneffe : hanging by a fmail Stalke, in fastion libe a Beare, and greene in colour, although when it hath flowerd, it will grow in what fathion you will have it : they fay, there bath teene fome of them nine fote in length. The round ones also grow to be bled for great beffels : the rince of the new ones, is foft and tender, but of the old ones hard, where. of when the meate is out, trangilers make great botteis to carrie Deinkein. The Courts that are bled to be caten in Summer, are funday in hape, forme are round, forme long, forme baoad : and though the fashion be bivers, yet the nature is all one: for it is made by Art to grow in what Chape you will, as in the forme of a cree ping Dragon, or what von lift, they are called in Italian Zuma, in Spanish Calabaz, in Dutch Kuirbisch, in French Vne courge. The fiedes that the Courd beareth nert to the falke (as Paladius faith) are longest, they in the middest round, and those that lie on the libe, thoat, broade, and flat : if you let the tharpe end of the feete bowneward, as Columcila faith, pou fall have them both greater Courts and Cucumbers. It belighteth in a moilt, rith, well dunged, and well watred ground. That which growith without water, beings the pleafanter fruit : and that which bath water enough, needes the leke loking to. The flowers where they be let, maft be bigged a fote and a halfe beipe, the third part whereof must be filled with frame, and then with good rich mould : it muft be filled to the middeft , then the feetes being fet, must be watred, this they be forung, and after, carthiais to them Rillas they growe, till the Furrow be filled. They muft be fet thinne, two fote a funder, it commeth by in fire ez featien dayes after the fetting. Those that are fet in bate ground, muft be berie well watered, therefore they ble to let by them earthen pots full of water, with ragges or cloutes in them to water them. When they be a little growen , they muft haue helpes fet by them to simbe boon, the longer they be, the better the meate is. Bon

Pau must beware there come no woman nere where you lette them, for their presence doth greatly hurt them. Those that you keepe for seed, you must suffer to remains byon the stalke till Winter, and then gather them, and drie them, either in the Sume or in the smoothe, for other wise the seed will vot and pertill. They will long be preserved, and continue frest, if after they begathered, they be put into a close vestell with the Less of white wine, or hanged in a vessell of Ainegar, so that they touch not the Ainegar.

THRA. What meaneth that great Thistell that springeth

there ?

MARIVS. Did you never read in your Columella of the Bartichoch, specially in his verses that he wrote of Gardening, where he saith:

Goe fet the brystled Hartichoch, That well with wine agrees, &c.

Athenaus in his fecond bake Dipnosophus out of Sophoclus. A Thiftell is the Bartichoch that euerp where both grow. It is a Artichoch kinde of Thiffell, by the viligence of the Baroner, brought to be a god Barden Bearbe, and in great effimation at Boblemens tables: it is as you fee, framed with a ground prickly head, having a great fort of flakes fet in order theplewife. The Latines call it Strobilum because the fruit of it something resembleth the Dince apple. The Frenchmen call it Alticocalum of the Arabicke atircle Al, and Cocalos a Dineapple, whereof it is corruptly called Artichault, in Italian and Spanish Cardo, in Dutch, sometime by the French name, Cometime Strobrin. It is called of Columella Cinara, becanfe in his growing, bee chiefely belighteth in Albes. The feed is best folven in Barch, and the fets in Bouember : if pou will have it peeld fruit in the fozing, pou must bestow much aftes boon it:it will hardly beare the first veere that it is folven. Beware that you fet not the feede with the incong end uploard, for fo thall your Artichoch proue very tittle and emit fausured : It loueth good around and well bunged, and prospereth belt in fat ground. Palladius would have you mozconer, to fet the febes in well ordered beds, in the encrease of the Done, halfe a fote a funder, and not depe, but taking them in thee of your fingers, thrust them dolune, till the earth come to the first iomts of your fingers,

Angers, then couer them tenberly, and water them often, frech ally toward Summer, fo thall you have the bigger fruit. Wiben they grow by, they mult be continually weeded and bunged, as 3 faid, with albes. They fav, they will lose their prickles, if the tons of the fabe be made blunt byon a fone before they be fet: and fweet they will be, if the feede be laid in Bilke. Don muft hiene them from Dowles and Dife, with Cats of tame Wefels. as Ruellius teacheth you. Athen zus calleth the Stalke of the Artis thoch, wantou, that lieth byon the ground, and that which fante eth bpzight, wagvixa.

THRA. Well, what bearbe is ponder fame that commeth by as it were baires, with a blewith flower e pale, haufing in the

micheft of the belles, as it were, fierte pellow tonques ?

MARIVS. It is Saffron, in Ozeke neonoc, in Latine Crocus, in Italian and french, le in Spanish Aczafran.

THE A. Withat neede the care any more for either Coricum. Sicil, oz Cyren, from whence wee fetch it with fo great char-

ges :

MARIYS. Dea, there groweth great plentie of it in Bermanie about Spirs, and Diners other places, which may compare in gooneffe with any other place. It is fet in March, of the head that it bath round, and in Cloucs as the Lollie, the Leke, and the Dea Dnion. Conffantine affirmeth, that it map be fet of the rot, as fone as the flower is off. The rotes of the heads boe fo en creafe under the ground, that of one of them fome vere furingeth eight or nine others. In many places they are removed every feauenth or eight piere into bitter ground, whereby they come a gaine to be as god as at the firft. In the Countries lying about the Khine they pluck them by enery third piere, & lay them a bay ing in the Sunne till August, and then pulling off the outer fkin, they let them againe halfe a fote one from the other : the best heads are those that are fattelt, and have little haires, the world loke rottenly and ill fanouredly, and have an ill fanour : It de lighteth to grow by high wates and neere forings, and to be troad and tramples on, profpering as it were by oppreffion: it groweth greene all the Winter , it is gathered in Antumne , when it is come to his colour by plucking out the little vellow tongues from the bell- which are afterwards dried thee or foure bates together,

Seffron.

1 96

and well picked and purged, and to made by in Bores : fome thinke it belt to bay it in the Chabolo. It is craftily counterfeited by the Apothecaries, braying it in fod wine, which they befmeare. adding thereto the foum of filuer or lead to encrease the ineight. the craft is perceived by the dustincte thereof, and by the favour of the for wine. The profe of the god is, if it crackle betwene the hands as a brittle thing, which the counterfait both not. or if in putting it to your mouth, it cause pour eves to water. Witheres fore, the best is that which is new, and hath a pleasant smell, in co. lour like to Gold, and dieth the fingers in touching it. In March you must purge the ground where it groweth, and whether ve placke it by 02 not, not with fanding, other hearbs may bery well grow there ontill August : Burlleme, Bartley, og foch like brarbs Doe best grow there. And when the Saffron beginneth to flower. you must rid away the other hearbs : for in Barueft time about September oz Daober it flowzeth.

THRA. Here is great stoze of Molemarie, the chiefest beauty Rolemary.

of Carbens, and not to be wanted in the Bitchin.

Œ

Œ

2

ab

th

is

m

et,

uig

MARIVS. Dithe ordering of Kolemarie, fith you will have me. I will speake a little. There are which supposet to be the fame which the Wickes call AlCavoric, because it favoureth like Frankencenle, in Latine it is called Rolmarinus, and in all other tongues it kepeth the name, it ferueth both for pleafure and profit. Theophrastus maketh two kindes of it, a barraine, and a fruitfull, and is let of small flips in Aprill : it is fet by women for their pleasure, to growin funday proportions, as in the falbion of a Cart, a Decocke, or fuch like thing as they fanfie. It beligh teth in Chonic or rough ground, and in the tops is the feed enclosed in little hulaes white and round. It floweth twife a viere, in the Spring, and inthe ent of Summer: it is gathered from Way till September , and it is god to plucke off the flowige often, that it may not flowze to much. In the bigher parts of Fraunce it groweth wide in such plentie, that they we a'most no other fewell : it is in colde Countries in Wlinterfet in Sellers and hot boules , and is brought againe in the Spring into the Garden. But here you must beware, that when you first bring it out, you bape it from the Parch Sunne, letting it in the thaboole, acquainting it by little and little with the agre; fome ble to boufe it with.

#### The fecond Booke entreating with Straw and Bosfe-bung, and fo leaueit in the Barben.

Sage, in Latine Saluia, and like in other Languages, is an Bearbe

common in every Garben : it is planted both of the feede, and of the flip, in March, in any kinde of ground, it maketh no matter where : the Gardners ble to lay bucking albes about it, where

Sage.

Mints.

by it profpereth the better. Pert to Sage, is Mint, in Latine Menta,in Dutch Myntz,in Italian and French,after the Latine, in Spanith Yerua buena : it is planted and orderd in all things as Sage is : it profeseth both in Dry and wet grounds, and grow, eth well by waters. If you lacke fiebes, you may take the feets of the wilde Dint, and let them with the tous bolunivard. where by they thall leave their rankneffe; and being once fowne of fet, Pimpernel groweth enery vere. Pimpernell, in Latine Pimpinella, is bled both in the Bitchin, and in Bhilicke : and being once fowne grow, eth enery pere, both in funnie places and in Chabolup: it grow, eth in most places wilde. Hylope, in Latine Hillopus, and lo cal Hylop. led in most Tonques in Curope : a common Dearbe, knowne to enery Barbener : it befireth , though no funny ground, pet god and rich ground, it is planted both of the fiede and of the flippe: when it bath once taken rote, it earcth not for the Charpneffe of winter. Sauorie, in Latine Satureia, 02, as Columella fatth. Cunila, Sauorie. in Italian Coniella, Sauoreggia, Thymbre, in French, Sauoreie, in Dutch Kuuelzwibelhifop, groweth in barraine places, and is fet and fewed as the plants befoze. The nert is that lwhich come Bafyll. monly is called Bafyll, in Latine Ocymum, in French, Italian, and Dutch, Balilica: an bearbe that is bled to be fet in the mieff of knots, and in windowes, for the excellent favour that it hath: it is also good for the pot: it is sowed in March & Aprill, and beligh teth in funny ground, you muft put two feeds Will together. Balill is belt watred at none, whereas all other hearbes are to be was tred in the morning and in the evening, it may be removed in May. Theophrastus sayth, that it prospereth best, somen it is Marierum fomed with curfes, Marierum, in Latine Amaracus, and Majorana. is also in like fort bled : the Dutch and the Italians call it after the Latine, the Spaniards Amoredux, the French Mariolaiene and Thyn, in Greeke of Dioscorides & Paulus Ægineta συμποικοί: this also for the pleasant lausur it hath is fet in pots and in Gari bens : it is fetwed in Barchtbac or foure fabs together and halfs

E H

th

th

Cal

a fate alumber, in Way when it groweth to some height, as Bas fell. it is remoued. Time, nere of kindged to thele, in French, Time. Italian, and Dutch like the Latine, in Spanish Tomillo, beligh, teth in fromp, light, and funnie ground: it fpzingeth both of the feb and of the flippe, and also of the flower, as Theophrastus faith, Thefe their tenver and belicate Bearbs, are to be fowed with great bebe, either in earthen pots, or in Garben bebs. Ditherto have I vefcribed buto you fuch Bearbs as ferne for the ikitchin : and because the later fort are also elienned for the fauours, 3 will goe forward with the description of the rest that are set in Bar. bens for the pleafure of them, and for the fanour, doe garnif the faid Barbens, and ferue allo for other purpoles. De Molemarie I spake before, I will now proceede with these that grow before mp fiete. Lauender, called in Latine Lauende, oz Lauendula, that Lauender. groweth in bozders about the beds, and keepeth the Latine name in other tongues, both grow in wilde places and Conie: it is fet of the flips, and remaned : it groweth to bothe in June, and in July is gathered and tyed in bundles for the fauour, the flower is biltilled for finet waters. Flowre-gentle, in Latine Amaranthus, Flowre though it have no favour at all : yet hath it a belightfull beautie gentle. to the eye: the Frenchmen, for the fairenesse of the colours, ertelling both Crimfon and Burple in graine, doe sall it Palleuclleurs, the Italians Fiorucluto, because it contendeth in colour with Crimfon in graine : it loueth to be often gathered and pluc. ken, whereby it foringeth the better : the flowers after they be dead, with a little water come againe to their colour : it is called Amaranthus, because it byeth not.

THRA. Dere followeth Lauender-cotten.

C

V:

re

fe

MARIVS. This Lauender-conten: some call it Santonia, Lauender and semale Southernewood, in Dutch it is called Cypressen, in cotten. French Cyprez: it groweth commonly in Gardens, springing energy exes. Myrtell, in Latine Myrtus, in Italian Myrto, in Spas Myrtell. with Arabian, in French Medice, in Dutch Welscheidelber, the leanes are not much brikke the leanes of the Diluc trèe, something smaller, with sementes, and leanes growing in order one by another, as you see, with blacke beries, and leased like the Pomegranate. It groweth alwaies greene: it is set and sowed both of the sexe and sippe, and the stocke; but you must

still rasse by the earth about it: till it be throughly roted. Some sow the berries being a little beaten, and concred in Furrowes of earth: it delighteth in continual wading: so groweth it to a handsome height, make to shadow Heards: it loueth to be watred with the Urine of men, or of shape. This onely is to be wondred at, that of the signour thereof alone, may be made all sorts of Wine and Oyle: Cato teacheth to make Mine of the berries, being dryed, and put in water and hony sodden together: if they be not dryed, they some to Oyle; how the Mine of them is made, Dioscorides sufficiently beclareth. Plinic reporteth, that Cato made three sorts of Pyrtels, white, blacke, and a third kind, that he calleth Consugale: it delighteth to grow by the Sea bankes, as Servius saith, it graweth at this day common ly in Italy, along by the Sea coasts.

Gdiflowrs

THEA. Dh what liviete and goodly Geliflowers are hiere! You may truely lay, that Salomon in all his Princely pompe, was never able to attaine to this beautie: some of them glitter with a perfect Crimson dye, some with a diepe Purple, and some with a pading beautifull Carnation: I maruaile theold writers know

nothing of thele in their time.

MARIVS. There are some that suppose it to be a hinde of Barden Betonie, which the Bardners fetching out of the field, and thaufting Cloues into the rotes of them, with diligent plane ting, have brought to this excellency : others thinke it to be called Vetonica of the Spaniards, who first found it. Some thinke it to be Ocnanthe, because it flowseth with the Wine : it belighe teth in warme funnie ground: it is sowed selbome of sede, but commonly let of the Clips, as I laps of Rolemarie. The Bard ners in the end of Summer, doe take the rotes and fet them in Bannes, Bots, oz Bailes, and when the frofts come, they carry them into their Dellers, and in fanze warme paves bring them abroad againe, and fuffer them to be now or then watred with the rapne. It hath beene often feene, that in fuch baults og fellers they have flowed all the Mainter long, through warmenche of the place : fome fet boughes about them, and couer them with Araw and Bosle-bung, to preferve them against the cold: it offen happeneth that one rate beareth one yere white flowers and red, and the third fueckled or Carnation.

THAL

ń

1

g

Đ

90

fel

b

92

THRASIVS. Loe, ponder are Roles growing in Bozs pers, and made in a mage : doe they grow of the fiede, or of the fet ?

MARIVS. Roles, called in Latine Rola, and in all other land Roles. suages as in Latine, are diverly planted, fometime of the rotes, formetime of the beaunches, being cut in small fets, and planted a fote afunder. Some wzeathe them in Garlands , and fo fet them to have them smell the pleasanter. The vic of folying of them is beft : how be it, they will very well grow of the face. though it be long ere they fpring, and therefore thep fet them of fets a fote in length, it neither delighteth in rich noz mort ground, but is well contented to grow among trubbith, and bue ber walles. The places lubere they must grow must be bigged deper then Come ground, and not fo deepe as the Winepard: the Role is rather a Thomne then a plant, and groweth woon the bery beambles: it commeth first out in a little budde and long marve beard, which after they be opened, it discloseth it felfe and Imeabeth abroad, with a pellow hairie tufke in the mioff. Plinic maketh mention of fundap forts of them : one fort he calleth Milefia hauing an Dzient and fiery rolour, an other Alabandica, with white leaves, and Spermonia, the bafelt fort of all: the Damafke and the Wahite, are bled for fweet waters: they differ in roughnes. wickles , colour and fmell. There are that have but onely five leaves and others with an handled leaves neither god in beauty noz in finell: the roughnes of the rinde (as Plinic farth) is a figne of the fauour. There are some little pale ones, called Carnation Muske and Beauthears, these doe wonderfully grow where they once are Roses. planted, and have a most excellent favour. Rofes aro bee to be fet in February, which is either some with the feed, or the fet planted in little furroives. The fabes (as Paladius fapth) are not the little vellow things in the miot of the Role, but the graines that grow within the red riped Berry: the ripenes whereof is beined by the fwarthineffe and the foftmelle of the berrie: fohere they ance are planted, they continue long, and after they bie, they fend ont new buds and fpzings. If you lacke fets, and would of a few have a great number, take the braunches that begin as it were, to thew their buds, and cutting them in funday fets, foure Affine fingers in length, let them in god ground well bunged and

đ

,

10

b

10

be ut

0

in

TP

AIS ith

ers

e of

vith

ften

red.

R A.

watered:

matered : and when they be of a pieres growth, take them bu. and let them a forte afunder , proine them and trimme them with often digging about them. Roles muft Gill be cut, for the more you cut them, the thicker and the doubler they grow, otherwife they will ware fingle and wilde, it will also doe them good some time to burne them : being removed, it foringeth bery fone and well, being fet of fets foure fingers long and moze, after the fet ting of the feauen Starres, and after remoued in a Welterip ininge, and fet a fote afunder, and often bigged. The old Hofvars mult have the earth loced about them in Febquary, and the dead tiniques cut off and where they ware thinne, they must be repair red with the young fpringes. To have Roles of fine funday colours boon one rote , make when they begin to burgen , a fine hale beneath in the Rocke buder the toynt, a fill it with red colour made of Brafell fod in water, and thruft it in with a cloath, and in the like fort put into another part of the flocke greene colour. and in an other pellow, and what other colours pou will, e couer the holes wel with Dre boung & Lome, 02 bery god earth. If you will have your Roles beare betimes, make a little trench of tive hand bredths round about it, and power in hot water twife a Day, and thus boing, ( as Democritus promifeth) you hall bane Roles in January. Dou may preferue Roles before they oven if making a fit in a Kebe, von enclose the blostome, and inhen von would have freth Rofes, take them out of the Rebes: others put them in Carthen Bots clofe couered, and fet them abroad : the Roles continue alwaies fresh that are bipt in the Dregges of Dyle. If you will have them at all times, you must fet them every moneth, and bung them, and fo (as Didymus faith) you thall have them continually. To cause them, or any other flowers to grow bouble, put two or thee of the feedes in a Wilheat fraw, and fo lav them in the ground. If you fet Barlicke by your Rofes, they will be the fineter: the dayer the ground is where they grow the Iweter they will be, as it appeareth by the leafon of the peere, for fome veres they are fineter then others : the Rofe will be white, that is smoaked with Binnstone, when it beginnethto open: amongft all Roles, those are moft to be commended, that they call Carnations and Pouncials. The Dyle of Rofes was greatly had in estimation even in Homer his time, and at this day the

1

C

the Minegar of Roles is greatly bled. Aert buto the Role in worthineffe, for his favour and beautifull whiteneffe is the Lilly, Lillies. called in Italian Giglio, in Spanish Tirio, in French Fleur de Lis, in Dutch Lilien. The Ozekes bold opinion : that it forang firtt of lunos Milke fpzinckled bpon the ground. In febzuarie we begin to fet Lillies, or if they grew before, to lofe the earth about them with a take, taking god heroe that the poung tender thotes about the rote be not burt, not the little head, which taben from the old rote, we let for new Lillies. As the Holes are, to are the Lillies, the fweter, the drier the ground is where they grow : Lillies and Kofes being once fet continue both bery long. There are red Lillies made to by Art , for they take the Stalkes and rotes of the Lillie, and hang them in the Imoake till they wis ther, and when the knots begin to bucouer, they are laid in Barch in the Les of red wine, till they be coloured, and then fet in the ground with the Les poweed about them, to will they come to be purple. Miolet in Breke is Iov, in Latine Viola, Miolet black and Miolet purple, Iou μέλαμ, καὶ ίομ ποςφυσεμ, in Italian it is called Viola porporia, in Spanis Violetta, in French Violets de Marts Violets, & Carefme, in Dutch Fiolen : thefe although they grow wilde a. bout every Bedge and Wall : pet are they let in Barbens with other flowers.

There are funday foats of Miolets, both of kinde and colour,

but the ordering of them is in a manner all one.

if

u

rÉ

of

30

w

to cy

re,

be

ote

hat

250

Day

the

THRA. I have now heard enough of kitchin heardes and flowess, therefore now, I pray you, let me heare you lay fomething of the third fort, that is Ibiliche heardes, for me femeth I

fe a great fort of bealing bearbs here in your Barden.

MARIVS. Pature hath appointed remedies in a readinche It is but for all diseases, but the crast and subtilitie of man, sor gaine, hath the opiniousled Apothecaries shops, in which a mans life is to be sold and Gardiner. bought: where sor a little byle, they setch their medicines from Hierusalem, and out of Turkie, while in the meane time curry pope man hath the right remedies growing in his Barden: sor is men would make their Gardens their Philitians, the Philitians crast would some decay. You know what your olde friend Cato saith, and what a deale of Philicke he setched out of a pope Tole wort.

THRA. I Doe remember it, and that he faith he was wont both to helpe himfelfe, and his whole family with the hearbes of his Barben. But what hearbe is vonder with the long Kalke, and the long blacke indented leaucs on the top ? If I be not beceineb ttis Bearefote, with whose rote we ble to heale our cattell when thep be fiche.

Betrefoote Mort.

MAAIVS. It is fo indeede, and is called in Latine Veraor Sener- trum, there are two kindes of it, the blacke and the white: the White is that which the Dutchmen call Nylwurts Wranckraut, the Blacke they cail Kriftwurts, becaufe it flowarth about Chaile malle: the Italians, the Spaniards, and the frenchmen kepe the Breite name. The rote of the Bearefot they that through the earc, or into the breaft of the beaft, that is either difeafed fir his lungs, or hath the Murren. Columella femeth totall it Conligillo : it grometh not in Gardens, ercept it be fowed, it contis much long, and lougth colde and woodie ground. There francs, not farre from that, another very noble hearbe in Whitche called Angelica, it is fuppofed to be called in Backe wieger, and whether it be Myrrhis with the Latines or no. I leave that to the Philitie ans to difcuffe: it is called with the Italians, Spaniards, French

men, and Germanes Angelica. Dis rote, because it is a soue.

Angelica.

Helicam-

raigne remedic against the plaque, and hath divers other god oper rations, it is therithed in our Barbens, and being once folied, it commeth by cuery pere: it groweth also wilde in the mountaine Countrey, and flolviethin July and August. Bere is alfe Helicampana, in Latine Enula, in Italian Encla, in Spanish Enula campana, in French Aulne, in Dutch Alaur, this alfo is let in our Cardens for medicines fake, and we make much of it for theret. it groweth wilde in the hely Countries, and by haddowie places. In Summer the rote is taken out of the ground, and cut in Small. peres and fa daicd ; at this day it is called Enula campanatit hath. a pellow flower, a leafe like Bullin; but white and hoarie at the one fibe. Womelumd, though it grow in curry place, pet this that pour for here is Komane or Bontike. Wormewood, the Las tines callit Cerephium oz Ablinthium Romanum the Dutchmen. Romichewermer, the Italians Allenfo, the Spaniards Enfanfos,

Wormewood.

pana.

the Frenchmen Alune and Ablince, this kinde is fet in our Barbens, and thought to be the beft. Sauine which we have here Sauine.

alfo

alfo in our Barbens, for Divers bileales of Cattell, is called in Las tine Sabina , in Dutch Sevenboun, in Atalian as in Batine, in Spanifb likewife, in French Sauinier, it hath leaues like Juni. per of Types, alwayes greene, there are two kindes of it, one like the Tamariske, the other like Types : it is a bufb rather foreading in breadth, then growing in height : the Berries which be beareth, may be gathered in the end of Summer, or any other time.

THRA. But many times we fee Bardens to be deffroved fuith wormes and bermine, what remedy have you for this?

MARIVS. Of the faults of the ground, and the remedie thereof, as the amending of either to much meillure or brinelle: I pake in the beginning touching Wloznies. Fires, and other bermine that annoy the Barbens, which for the most part are thefe, Caterpillers, Snailes, Welcs, Wice, Onats, and Antes. There are that fap, that if you mingle with pour ledes lote, or Against the June of Boufelake, oz Singræn, the Caterpillers Will not Caterpilmeddle with the hearbe that fpringeth of fuch feed: and that thep lers. will doe no harme to your Tres, if you fprinckle them with the mater wherem the albes of Times bath beene laid : mozeouer the falkes of Barlicke made in bundels, and burnt in Dechards oz Cardens, befroveth the Catervillers. They will not bied (as they fay) if you burne about the rotes of your bearbes of Trees. quicke Brimftone and Lime: the fame they report of Lie mabe of the Fir tre. Ants will not amoy your come or hearbs, if you encompate it round with Chalke, or put into their hils, the affers of burnt Snailes and if fome of them be taken & burnt, the reft will not come nere the lauour : if Alla focida be laid in Dole and pole red boon their bills, it btterip beltropeth them, they wil not touch the tres not the bearbs, if you annoint the stalkes with bitter Lus pines.oz lime laid foith ople. Dou muft thake off the Catervillers in the morning, or late in the eneming when they be numbed : alfo water wherein Dill bath beine foppen, caft about in the Dechard when it is colde, beftraveth them. It is written , that if you fet Chiches about rour Garden, Catervillers wil not bzed andif they be already beed, you must feeth the tupce of Worms wood, and caft among them. The bung of Bullecks burnt open the coales, Deftropeth Gnats: the like also doth brimftone; a fpunge wet with Gnate.

binegar and hanged by, draweth also swarmes of Gnates buto it : alfo the maw of a Shape new billed , not walhed no; made cleane, if it be laid in the place where Bothes, oz other fuch ber. mine doe ble, and covered a little the byper part, pon shall after two dayes finde all the nopfome Mermine crept into it: thus must you boe twife or thrife, till you thinke you have bettroyed them all. Df killing and prining away Boles, Socion the Grake wit teth, that you must take a But, or any like fruit, and making it hollow within, fill it by with Chaffe, Kozen, and Bzimftone, after ward Coppe the bent holes that the Bole bath in every place, that the smoake breake not out, onely leauing one open, tobere you hall lay the Aut.in fuch fort as it may receive the winde on the backe part, that may beine the Imoake into the Mines, there are also traps to be made, for the bestroping of Boles: a frame is to be let boon the new billes, with a piece of wood fo hollow and framed, that it may receive (as it were in a Sheath) an other piece of wood made in falbion like a knife, to this is toyned an co ther little Micke that lieth in the hole, and is fatined to a Catch without, that as some as the Bole toucheth the Micke within, she is taken prefently as it were, with a payre of Sheares. Dife are taken, if ve powze into a platter, the thickelt mother of Dple, and let in the house a night, as many as come at it are taken: also the rate of Bearefot mingled with Chafe, Bread, flowie, or greale, killeth them. Marte and bery harpe Winegar mingled with the ingce of Benbane, and Spainkled byon the Bearbes, kile leth the Fleas,oglittle blacke wozmes that be in them. Ro kinde of bermine will annoy your Bearbes, if you take a god fort of Crefiches, and call them in an earthen bellel with water, fuffering them to worke abroad in the Sunne for the fpace of ten baves, and after with their liquour fpainchle your Bearbes. But I kepe pou long in this ill-fauoured Garten , if it pleafe pou wee will walke into the Dzchard abfoyning.

THER A. With a very good will, although the goodly fayze colour and fwet favours of these Bearbes and flowings, before the fayze hedges inclosing it, as it ivere, with a gozgeous greene tape

Arie, make me that I could abide here east.

MARIVS. Both the Garben and the Dechard are inclosed.

with severall hedges and ditches, whereby they are defended from burtfull

Moles.

Myle.

Garden Fleas.

Of Or-

burtfull beatts and onruly folks (as 3 told you at the first) when Thegan to fpeake of the encloting of Barbens and Dichards.

THRA. Query thing liketh me palling well: Bod Lord inhat a pleafant ground, what a Paracife is this - methinkes 3 fie the Dechards of Alcinous, the Tres are let Checkerwife, and focatred, as loke which way you will, they lie leneil : Bing Cyrus bimtelfe neuer hab better. If Lylander hab euer fone this Dichard be would have wonded a great beale moze, then he bit at Cyrus his Dechard.

n

MARIVS. Such gozgeous Garbens and Dzehards as 102ins ces have, I neither belire, not meane to counterfeit : but bling the diligence of a pore Countrep Baroner, 3 build (as they fay). mp walls according to mp wealth. I framed the order, and fet the most part of these Tres with mine owne hands, following berein, the Fathers of the old time, who belighted themfelucs chiefly with this kinde of Philosophie. So then (as 3 thinke) the Trees and Woods to be the greatest commoditie given to men: for befides the house pleasure that they minister buto be, the gras cious Lozo, that is the giver of all god things, bath allo given bs a number of other gooly commodities by them, which at the first ferued men for fode, covering, and clothing : which commodities, the bery @thnicks hab in ellimation. But bnto bs that know God, by tohom the haue received our preheminence aboue all o. ther creatures, which benefit we ought with thankes to acknows lenge, the boly Scripture both teach a moze higher and myfficall confideration : for before that gracious Lord had framed man, willing to proute him of fode and apparell, he caused all kinde of pleasant Trees bearing fruit to spring out of the earth, that they might ferue for the luttenance of man: and in the mioft be planted the Tre of life : and thereby, the Tre of knowledge of god and cuill : to the end that Adam might bane an affered figne of his dutie and renerence towards God, out of which the Lozd (as in a Temple Dio Speake buto Adam) and Adam himfelfe, if he had continued in his innocencie after his refection of the Ere of life, had with his potteritie preached God, and alivaies bene thankfull bito bim , for his authoritie given bito bim oner all other creatures , as the Propheticall Plalmitt ling. eth. This that through the bountifull liberalitie of God was 3 3 giucu

given he to lo god su end, the langually and foiched posteritie turned to Idolatrie, conferrating both Trees and Granes, to the Ibols of the Beathen.

THRA. Wilhat + me thinks you begin to play the Breather

with me.

MARINS. Surely, there is no better a place to preach in then here, to acknowledge the Creator in his creatures, and by these visible workes: to behold the Almightie and everlasting power, blessemente, bountifulnesse, and Codhead, of the incomprehensible workman, and climates to heade and preach of them: but I will say more hereafter. The planting of Trues doth out of all points (so I said) bring water be both profit and pleasures: and therefore this part of hulbandry, make not be neglected, for Columnity accounts it one of the chiefest points of husbandry, which the loost seems to agree buty.

Of cylinge all this while, and of the flarres,

We here have talked.

And Barchus now of thee I meane to fing &c.

THE A. I may you then peclare into me, the other of planting and preferring of Eres.

MARIVS. Let be first fit boinne under the shatoon of this faire Wine, that polosth both pleasant Wine, and comfortable shaboon.

THE A. Sered.

MARLY S. The losts of True ore diners and manifold: lame grow builde, loune come of the links, loune of the rate, as the lelislame Post laith.

Same forts there are, that of the feede are found.

Some doe grow and spring of themselves: a number of others agains are to be solven. These that grow indice initiout the labour of man, due beare their senes each one according to his kinds; but those that are set and rell, due peld greater energals. There are diversagains that are alwairs grave, and ose neurs lose their leafs, inhich are (as Constantine reporteth) these the Pate, the Pring, the Lemon, the Cytron, the Bay, the Mine, the Cypress, the Pring, the Police, the Pare, the Pring, the Police, the Bore, Pyrill, Centr, and Luniper. As say Grange Trais, and those that will growens where

f

f

n

inhere but at home, we wiltnot meddle withail : we will there fare begin first with those that yeld be full enauce, and beare fruit. and those are vintoes into thee forts : for either of the wets they come to be Tres as the Dine is, or elfe linubs as the beive Date, or neither Tra nor thub as the Wine.

THE NA. 3 believe to heave your opinion of enery fort, for \$ thinke it no fmall failt to plant futh faite Garbens . Debaros. and Minerarus. We thinkes pour baue biebra immocefirit amy of per, that amongst your Mines, pour have entermeded Dlive trees, Finge trees, Alumonos, and Appecots, and that you have feaceed vone Dechard from poor Barden, and pour Timepart from them

both, with faire bedges and Ditches.

1

t.

er

1

En

10

10

TE.

MARIVS. It was necessful for to doe, leaft my folkes labour ring in fome of them (bonto come into the reft , contrarie to my pleasure. First, if you will, I will freake of those that bring by fruit, and them of the wite, and the other of fetting and planting of Winds. Fire (as Columella faith) that ground that ferneth for an Drebard, will ferurtopa Elinepard; as pourfe it both here: and if the ground be billy, rugged, and burnen, it is more metefor a Winepard then for an Orthard. If therefore you will make an How to Dichard, you muft chole futh a ground asis miete fortt: a rich make an ground, level, and tong boon the Southe, tobich when you have Orchard. fomo, pon muß wett enclose it : an i taught pou before in the enclofure of Carbens, that it may lie out of banger of Sattell and knames : for although that the trampling, and bunging of Cattell , is not bunzoftable to the Trees , vetif they be either banfed or broken whiles they be poung, they will fone come to nought. When you means to breffe pour Dichard place thus fenced, pou fail make your farrolves a peere before pou plant them, fo hall they be well feafened with the Summe and theyaine: and inhatfocuer you plant, that the fomer take. But if you will neves plant the fame perc, that you make your furrowes, let the furrowes be made at least two moneths before : after fill them full of frain, and fet if on fire. The broader and wiver that pour make pour farcowes, the fairer and more foutfull will your Trees be, and the fruit the better. Done forrolbes must be made like an onen, or finensce, wiver at the bottomethen about, that the rote map forear the better, and the color in Wanter, and the heate in Summer. 3 4

Summer , may the better bee kept from it , and alle in frepe grounds, the earth thall not fo cafely be walked away. In fetting of pour fruit tres & Wines , you mut place them in orber enther Checkerlvile, oz Betivile: lubich neofull ozber of fetting, is not onely profitable, by receiping the apre, but also bery beautifull to. the eye: when as which war focuer you loke, pou thall fee them fand in ranke, and which allo is to god purpole, for the Eres thall equally receive their mortture from the ground.

THE A. 3 for the Waroners in euery place obserue this oza ber, letting their Trees in fuch proportion, as which way foener pou loke, pour eye thall not bee let, but thall fe the Eres fand

Araight in eader.

MARIVS. I bave bled two fortes of this catred order.one wherein my Trees stand foure square like the Chequer of: Thellebord: the other not in fquare as the first but Loling-wife or Diamond-wife , like the glaffe windowes or Rets. You mult frame it according to the nature of the trees, left the lower fort be profunco of the higher. You muft allo fet them a good biffance afunder, that their branches may foread at pleafure. for if you fet them to thicke, you hall be able to fow nothing betwirt them, and they will be the leffefruitfull. Therefore Palla.

Dropping of l recs.

dius would have the space betwirt them, thirtie fote at the leaft : there is more profit in the generall disposing of them, entermed. ling the greater with the leffer, to as the great ones boe not ans noy their binderlings, either with their thadow oz dropping, for that they grow not equall to them in Arength or bigneffe. Bomes granates and Spraties muft be folved never together, as nine fote afunder, Apples neerer then they, and Beares neerer then them both : but of them there are fundap forts. Almonds and Fig Friendflip tres muft alfo be fet nerer. And becaufe there is a naturall

amonga Trees.

friendship and love betwirt certaine Tres, you muft fet them the nerer together, as the Wine & the Ditue, the Domegranate and the Meztell. On the other live you mutt fet farre afunder fuchas baue mutuall hatred among them, as the Wine with the filbert e the Bar. There are fome of them, that befire to fand, two and two together, as the Cheanut: the droppings also bo great burt of all forts, but fpecially the broppings of Dakes, Dinetres, Dalle

Shadowes bolmes. Pozeouer, the Hadowes of divers of them are hurtfull, of Trees.

as of the Walnut tree, whose that bow is brimbole some for men. and the Wine tree that killeth young fprings: yet they both refife the winde, and therefore are beff to be fet in the outer fibes of the Dichards as hereafter thall be faib. Df the place and the order. nerbans von thinke 3 haue lapd enough , and loke that 3 foult mocied to the order of planting and letting.

THRA. Withat time is the belt for planting and fetting of

Eres :

MARIVS. The chiefest time of planting (as Florentine Time of fauth) is the end of Sommer, for then is nature most occupied planting. about the rot, as in the fpring about the byper parts; and there fore grafting is meetelt in the fyzing, and fetting in the end of Commer : for the plants are watted all the Winter, & therefore it is belt fetting or planting, from the fetting of the feauen flars. butill the twelfth of December. In the Spring time, you may Time for fet those things that you foggat before: at what feafon focuer it graffing. be, loke that you fet them in the afternone, in a fagge wefferly winde, and in the wane of the Mone. Plinic faith, that this note is of great importance for the encreale of the Ere, and godneffe of the fruit. Af the Tre be planted in the encreafe of the Mone, The ob-A groweth to be very great : but if it beinthe waine, it will be feruation fmaller, pet a great deale moze laffing. of the Moone.

THR A. But are there moze wayes then one of Planting

and letting ?

MARIVS. A great fort: we plant epther by Graffing, fets The kinds ting of the Bernell, og the frone, letting the rotes, foches, og flips, of plangrafting betwirt the Barke and the Ere: fome are planted ting, and in fome of thefe forts, others in all. In Babilon (as they fay) grafing one'p the leafe let comes to be a tree first 3 will freake of Graf. fing, and then of the reft. There are that appoint but the kinds Three of Graffing, betwirt the barke and the made, in the foche, and kindes of implattring, or moculation. The firtt fort they call Graffing, the Graffing. fecond imbranching , the third inoculation, or imbudding. Such What Tres as have thickeft barkes, and brawmoft Sappe from the pressare ground, are belt graffed betwirt the barke and the wood, as the beft to be , Figge , the Cherie, and the Dline: thole that have thin rindes, graffed beand content themselucs with less moisture, as if the Sappe lea, twist the ning the barke fould gather it felfe to the heart, as the Drenge the wood trees

What trees agree beft together.

trie, the Apple trie, the Bine, and divers others, in thefeit is be to over the flocks, and graffe in the mone. Some I ras are also bell Graffet bpon other fame, the figge that molpereth bell boon the Bulbery Hoche, and the Mainstree: the Bulbery boon the Cheffnut, and the Breche, the Apple, the Bears, the Cime. and the fobite Boplar tobereinit you graffe you half bace your Bulbertes white : boon the fame Hocke are graffed the Beare. the Quince, the Debler, and the Seruille : the Deare bpon the red Peares Braffe pour Beare bpon a Quibery, pon fall haure ned Beares:

To have

A Peach with an Almond

in it.

Bomegranate, the Duince the Butberie and the Almon. If pou & Apples, the Apple is Braffen boon all Beare Roches, and Crab fets, Willelin, and Waplar : being Graffed buon the Duinee it bring. eth forth the fruit which the Greekes call Melimella: it is alfa Braffed bpon the Blamtre, but being Graffed boon the Blaine tret, if bringeth forth red Appies. The Bedlar being Braffes buon the Thoma, the Graffe groweth to great bigroffe. but the Bocke continues Small : buen the Dime-tue, it beingeth a fmet fruit, but not lafting The Beach graffebin the Mborne. or the Beche, groweth to be berpfaire, and great : the Himona and the Beach being towned together, and Graffes in the Blum trie, willbeare a Peach with an Almond in the ftone. The file bert will onely be graffed in the Willbing, not agracing with any other. The Bomegranate belighteth in biuers foches as in the Millow, the Bap, the Ache, the Damion , the Blome, and the Almond , buon all which her profpereth well. The Damfon grafueth bery mell boon any kinds of wilde Weare, Duince, and Apple : the Chellmut liketh well the Walnut, and the Beech. The Cherrie refuseth not the companie of the Beach, not the Turpenting not they his : the Quince will well be graffed mon the Barberie: the Wittle bonthe Sallow : the Blom bon the Damfon: the Almond boon the filbert : the Citron, becaufe of his tender Tree, and thinnerinde, will frarcely brare any other graffe, and therefore contents himfelle with his owne branneb. The Mine that is graffed byon the Therie tree (Florentinus promifeth) will beate Grapes, and graffed boon the Dline, milt . bring forth a fruit that bearing the name of both his parents, is called Elzoffaphilos. In fine, all poung Eres that have far in the barke man be Graffed: ifit be greater it is belt Graffing ners the

Oline grape,

the rate, takere both the bankeans the woodby the reason of the naremede of the ground are full offance. Wethen that will graft sither in the Cocke, or betwirt the froshe and the rinhe, let him gather his Graffes from a fruithfil temper trie, and full of invite, and out of theneup faring, except he meane to Graffe an all tree. The choise buhen as, the thurbier Orottes be, the better they are, otherfuife of Grafthe last thotes of fuch tress as bane lately borne will be the best. fing. You must gather them on that five the trie that lyeth byon the Auth : others like better the Caff fibe then the Spadowp, Virgill forbisocth those that groweth on the top, thinking them hetter that growes out of the fine. To be fort, pour Braffes mult be full of buds, lately growne out, fmothe, the rinde fromthe god, and readie to grow they must be of the last pares growth which is knowne by the mots or tounts, that because every parces The know growth Belibe, Graffes of all trees are not to be gathered alike: for mines and finge tres are moetin the mibble parts, and take belt of the top, and therefore from thence you muft gather your Graffes. Dlines are fulleft of fappe in the stible, and the outer parts develt. Those belt agree tagether, inhose pindes are nerelt of nature, and see blottome, and beare both about a time. you must gather pour Wastes in the mane of the Dome, tenne bapes before pou Graffe them. Confrantine abbeth this resion. Ebat it is nobe the Caffe bor a little wither, that he may the better berereined of the Cocke. Bou must appoput your Grafting The time time in the Spring, from Barrb, Juherras the bubs boebegin to for Grafe burgen, but not come out (although you may Graffe the Beare fing. inben besieaues be out) butilt Dep : for Gaffing in raine is penfitable, but not for inchanching. The Dine, whose swings one langed but, and have much fappe brider the barke, the abundance tohereof both hurt the Graffe, muft be Bauffed (as Florentine fapth) from Day, till June. Columella moute have the Dline Graffed from the thelith of Barth, till the first, or the first of S. The man-Pull, and the time of Wraffing to be the Some entrealing, in the ner of affectione, when there bloweth no Southwinde. When pour Graffing. barefound a goo Graffe, take pour knife (being bery tharpe and pare it about a their fingers from the topat bowneward, to much as field be mete to be fet in the Bothe : that part that is baber the fapet (not perilbing the pith) you must cut with pour knife,

as if you thould make a pen, fo as the wood with the wood, and the barke with the barke, may topne together, as inft as may be-Wabich being bone, if you meane to graffe in the flock, you must first baive it founth, and then cleave it in the midft with a fbarpe linife, about their fingers : and to the end you may bandfomely put in pour Wraffe, von muft have a little webge of woo or Fron. (Plinie thinks it better of bone) which wedge (when you will graffe betweene the rinde and the flocke muft be made flatte on the one fibe, and round on the other, and the Wraffe muft be par red alfo flat on that fibe that must frand nert the wood, taking ale maies god bede, that the pith be not perifhed : the other part must onely have the rinde pulled off, which after you must let in the cleft, or betwirt the barke, till you fee all parts agree together. Some boe cut the pornt of their Graffe threiguare, fo as two fines are bare, and the other courred with his barke : and in that fort they ble to Braffe in a ftocke one againft another : but it is thought beft to Braffe no moze but one. Baben pon bane thus fet in your Braffe in the focke, plucke out the luedes : but bers is a great carefulnelle, and heede to be bled : and therefore god Bafters,thinke it beft to bold the Graffe euen with both bands, left in the binding and pulling out of the wedge, the Craffe ba burt, of fand bneuen. For anording of which, some ble for to binne the flocke about, and after to put the webge, the banns kee ing it from opening to wide. The barber they be let in, the low ger will they be ere they beare, but will indure the better : you muft take bebe therefore, that the cleft be not to flacke nor to fraight. Wihen you bane thus Wzaffed, binde the flocke with a tinia, and couer it with loame, well tempred with chaffe, two fingers thicknelle, and (putting molle round about it) treit by fo, that there come no raine at it, not be burt with the Sunne or the winde. This is the order both in the old time, and at this day bled: though in Columellas time (as it apeareth) they were not wont to Graffe, but onely betweet the barke and the wood : for the old people (as Plinic writeth) burffnot as pet meddle with cleaning of the flocke : at length they prefumed to make holes, and Craffe in the pith, and fo at laft wared bold to cleane the · frocke. Cato mould bane the frocke coursed with clay and chalke, mingled with fand and Dre-bung, and fo made in mozter. Some tims

tt

P

time they Braffe with the top of the Braft bowneward, and they poe it to make a little Tre (pread in breadth. It is beft Braffing nest the ground, if the knots and the flocke will fuffer: and Plinic mould have the Wraffe grow forth not about fire fingers. If you will Braffe a little Tree, cut it neere the ground, fo as it be a fote and a halfe bigh. If you would carry your Brafts farre, they To keepe toil longest heepe their fappe, if they be thaust into the rote of a your Rape : and that they will be preferned, if they lye betwirt two Graffes, little guts, running out of fome River of fill pond, and be well covered with earth.

THRA. 3 boe noto greatly beffre to beare you fay fomes Of Implathing of Implattering, of Inoculation, that is, in Graffing with ftering and the bud or the leafe, which you call in Ozethe Empuller wow, which Inoculakinde of Graffing, I fe those that are ginen to new fathions be-

light much in.

È

MARIVS. This is no new manner of Graffing, but wee finde that it was bled both of the Latines, and of the Brekes, when taking off a leafe or little bub, with fome part of the rinde with him, we Braffe it into another braunch, from which we have taken as much barke. This order (Columella faith) the bul bands in his pales were wont to call Implaffring or Inoculation: and before Columellas bairs, Theophraftus in his Boke De caufis Plantarum, both their the reafon of Inoculation. Plinie both fap it was first learned of Dawes, hiding of feeds in caues and holes of Tres. This kinde of Ozaffing, as Columella both waite, and our Caroners themfelues confelle, is belt to be bico in Summer about the twelfth of June: pet Didymus faith, be bath Baaf. fo in this maner, and bath had god encreafe with it in the fpzing time. And fith it is the baintieft kinde of Braffing, it is not to be bled in all Tres, but onely in fuch as have a ftrong, a mout, and a lappy rinde as the Dline, the Beach and the figge, which are full of milke, and hane a big barke. Of that Tree that you meane to Graffe, chofe the poungeft and the faireft branches pou can, and in them take the bud that is likelieft to grow, and marke it round about two inches fquare, fo as the bud fand even in the mioff, and then with a tharpe knife cut it round about, and flaw of the rinde, taking god bede you burt not the bud, and take out the pace. Afterwards, goe to the Era that you meane to Graffe on, and

and choic likewife the faireft braunch, and pare away the rine a little fpace, and toyne in your bubbe fo intt, as the rindes may a are together fo clofe as neither water not winde may enter in. You mult looke that you burt not the Wand, and that the rindes be of one thickenelle. When you have this done, binde it bp.fo as you burt not the bub : Then clay it oner all, leaning libertie enough for the bub. Cut off all the foring that growes about it. that there be nothing left to braw away the Sappe, but that it may onely ferue the Graffe : After one and thentic bayes, by loofe it, and take off your conering, and you hall fee your bud in corporated in the branch of a ftrange tree. Columcila freaketh of an other fort of Braffing, to boze a bole in a Ere with an Au aur, either to the pithe, or the bttermeft rinbe, going fomething floanewife bowneward, and getting out all the chips cleane, take a Wine, or an arme of the belt Wine, not cut from his olde mother. and paring away the oner rinde, thruft it fall into the bole, being all moit and full of Sappe, leaning a bud or two onely boon it : afterward foure the hole well with soofe and Clay and commit it to the earth. In this fort may you Graffe Mines byon Cimes. to thall the branch line, being both nourithed by bis olde mother. and his new father. Two viere after, you hall cut off the neip graffed branch, and the frocke toherein pou graffed, pou fall faire off a little about the bozing, fo thail the graffe become the chiefelt part of the plant. The like bo our Countrymen, taking a branch of a Beech a forte thicke : and when they have cut it, and bozed it, they let in it the branches of the belt Weare or Apple that they can get, fetting the fame in a bery wet ground in March, and in the fame Moneth the peere after taking by the Bech, they cut It a funder with a faw betwirt the holes and the branches : and co nery peece of focke with his branch, they let in bery rich a fruit full ground. There are fome that beag of another kind of graffing, not much builke to the former whereof netwith Canbing, African in Confrancine maketh mention, as tried in a Deach. They will a man to take the branch of a Willow as big as your arme, and two Cubits in length or more: this they would have you to bot through the mide, and after flipping off the branches of a Beach manner of as he frands, leaving onely the top butouched , they would have Graffing. you to make the Beach palle through the Willow batte, and that

f t

b

th th

m

Coz

99 Ch

alco the

Wimble Graffing.

that bont, to boin the Willow like a Boine, fetting both his ends into the earth, and to to binde the hole by with moffe, moze ter and bands. The peere after, when as the head of the Weach. hath joynco himfelfe with the pith of the Willow, that both the bootes are become one. You thati cut the Trebeneath, and remone it, and raife by the earth, fo as poucouer the Millow bom with the top of the Beach, and this thall bring you Beaches mithe ant fromes. This kinde of Graffing muft be done in movit plas ces, and the Willowes muft be holpen with often watrings, that the nature of the Tree map be of force. The kinors and manners Proposation of propagation, are beclared by Punic, who telleth of the kinges : on, and his the first wherein a branch of the Tree being bowed bowne, and kindnede, buried in a little furrow, and after two percs cut off, and the plant in the third peere remoned : which if you intend to carry any far biffance off, it is beft ioz pou to buric pour branches in Baskets. or earther beffels, in which you may aptipelt carry them. And another more belicater way be speaketh of, which is to get the rote out of the bery Tree, laying the branches in Baskets of earth, and by that meanes, obtaining rotes betweet the bery fruit and the tops, (for by this meanes the rote is fetchen from the bery top, fo farre they prefume ) and from thence fetch them. bling it as befoze : in which fort you may also beale with Boles marie and Sauine. Columelia heweth a war how firmes of all. manner of Tresmap be Graffet in what Trespon lift.

THE A. And some are also set of the suppres, or summes : my selfe have plucked a branch from a Poliberie Trie, and bruising the end a little with a Pallet, have set it in the ground, and it both growne to be a fatte Tree. The like hath beine tryed (as

thep fap) in Applesant Pearcs.

8

D

ıD

nt

it

ıg,

an

ofll

mò

018

ach

ant

and

that

MARIVS. Poular well, for Pature hath theweves, that they young Genes, plushed from the cotes of the trees will grow: the poungest are best to be planted, and so to be pulled by as they may bring with them some part of their mothers bodie. In this soft you may plant demegranates, Filberts, Apples Scruiss, Wedlars, Polomes, Figges, but specially Unines and sometimes. Therries, and Apyrilles. Of the stocke and the branches are also planted the Almond, the Peare, the Police, the Orenge, the Olive, the Quince, the Quince the Munch.

which the oftner you remove them the better they prove. Plinic fayth, the branches cut from the Aracheer at the first onely view for Hedges, Cloer, Quinches, and Briers medled together, at terwards for vie, as the Poplar, the Alder, and the Wallow, at this day wee let them where we belt like. Hede must be taken, that the stockes, or the lets be of a god kinde, not croked, knottle, nor sorked, nor slenderer then that a man may well gripe with his band, nor less then a forte in length.

THE A. It remaineth now, that pour fpeake of the fetting

of the fruit oz kernell.

MARIVS. Pature (as Plinic fapth) bath taught be to fet the Bernell, by the fedes ocuoured of Birds, and moiftened with the warmth of their enthales, and after boided in the boughes and rifes of Trees: whereby we finde many times a Plains Tre growing out of a Bave, a Bay out of a Cherry, and a Therry out of a Willow. Many Trees are let of the fruit kermell, or frome, which grow perely of themselves, by reason of the falling of the fruit : as Chelinuts, Baleinuts, and Walenuts. Columella favth , they are the fruitfuller Tres that fuzing of their fruite, then those that are fet of the flocke, or the branch, Some beliatt to be let in Tres, and not in the ground : When they have no loyle of their owne, they line in a ftranger. Df the fruit og kernell, are planted Auts, Almonds, Diffaces, Cheffe nuts, Damfons, Blums, Bineapples, Dates, Cypreffe, Bayes, Apples, Beares, Maples, Firtres, Cherries, Beaches, and Abit cocks : but fet oz planted, they proue to be the kindlier. Some of thele boe grow in Waffing and other waies : for erperience tea theth, that the Aut and the Acrebinth are Waffed; and Demegeron witneffeth as much : neither are all fruits, kernels, and Rones let in like fort, as hereafter Chall be fæne. Some are land in water before, others not: some lye three payes in hony and water, and at the fall of the leafe are buried in the ground till Warch : and then let Buts are onely layd in mort dung a bay before, and of fome in water and hony onely a night, left the harpnelle of the bony bestroy the spout. Some are let with their toppes flanding byward, as the Cheffnut : others powner inard, as the Alinond, though this is not greatly to be regati bed, fithe we fe the fruite that falles from the Ere, of let

The keeping of plants. let fall by Birdes, both worder beft of any other.

THE A. I baue a womerfull belight in the Ampe Barbens

of thefe Countries. I way you tell me boto they be ordered.

MARIVS. The extering of an Impe Warben map not be Of Impe paffed oner, toherein as in a Barke, the young Plants are nouri, Gardens. theb. And because the Quele Cometimes ought to be kinber, and tenberer then the Bother, a mete ground mult be cholen for the purpole : that is, a ground bate, fat, and well laboured with the Battoche, wherein the Granger map be well cherifbed, and berp like buto the foile, into which you meane to cemone them. The kernels, og Kones, mult not be altogether naked, but little cousreb with fome part of the fruit, to thall they afterward endure the longer. Thep muft be let a fote, og there abouts a fumber : After two yeeres they mult be removed : and because their Motes bae runne bery bepe into the ground, they must be comewhat bent, or turned in, to the end they may fpread abroad, and not runne bowneward. Above all things, you must fie it be free from Cones and rubbilly, well fenced against Boultrie, and not full of chinkes or clefts, that the Summe burns not the tender rates : they muft be fet a fote and a balfe a funder, that they burt not one the other with their nære growing. Among other euils, they will be full of Mozmes, and therefore muft be well raked and webed : belide, growing ranke, they must be trimmed and provined. Caro would have them covered over with Lattules byon forkes, to let in the Sume, and to keepe out the colde: Thus are the Bernels of Beares, Bine apples, Buts, Copzelle, and fuch others cherified. They must be gently watred for the first three dayes, at the going botwne of the Summe, that they equally receining the water, may open the foner. Zizipha, or Turker Blumbs, Buttes, Walls nuts, and Chefinuts, Bayes, Cheries, Billaces, Apples, Dates, Beares, Paples, Firres, Blumbs, and divers others, are fet of the ftone , or kernels. In removing of them , have fpetiall regard, that they be fet in the like foile, or in better, not from bot and forward grounds, into colbe and backward, noz contracie from thefe to the other. You must make pour furrowes fo long before, if you can, that they be over-growne with goo mould. Mago would have them made a piere before, that they may be well feafoned with the Sunne, and the weather : Datf you cans

of

2

10

po

till

ay

the

ett

nes

rar

215

let

not fo, pourmust kindle fires in the middest of them two moneths afore, and not to fet them , but after a howe. The depth of their letting muft be in fiffeelap og bard ground, the Cubites : and for Blumb Trees a hancfull more. The Furrow must be made furnace like, Graight aboue, and broade in the bottome : and in blacke mould, tipo Cubites and a hand broade, being fquare cornered, never beener then tipo fote and a balfe noz broader then two fote broade, nor never of lette bepth, then a fote and a halfe, lubich in a wet ground will draw nere the water. Such as delight in the bepth of the ground, are to be let the beper, as the Albe, and the Dline : thefe and fuch like, muft be fet foure fote deepe, the others it lufficeth if they fand thee fote depe. Some ble to let bnoer their Rotes round little fones, both to containe, and convay away the water : others lay gravell budceneath them. The greater Tres are to be fet toward the Porth and the West, the smaller toward the South and the Cast. Some will have no Ere remoued beder two pere olde, og aboue thie: and others when they be of a perce growth. Cato relitteth Virgils authoritie, that it is to great purpole to marke the fand ing of the Tree, as it grewe at the first, and to place it towards the fame quarters of the heaven againe. Dthers observe the contratie in the Mine, and the Figge Tree, being of opinion that the leaves thall thereby be the thicker, and better defend the fruit, and not fo fone fall : belide, the figge Tre will be the better to be climbed boon. Dozeoner, you must beware that by long tarping, the Rootes be not withered, not the winde in the Porth when ve remoue them, whereby many times they die, the hulband not knowing the cause. Cato condemneth betterly all manner of windes or frozines, in the removing of Trees, and therefore it is to great good purpose to take them by with the earth about them . and to couer the Rootes with a Aurife, and for this cause Caro would have them to be carried in Bashets file led with earth by to the toppe : the Tree mutt fo be fet, as it may frand in the middelt of the Trench, and fo great heede must be taken of the Rootes, that they may not be broken, noz. mangled.

THE A. Let us note goe forward with enery Tree in his order.

th

I

the

tol

MARIVS. Among all Trees and Blants, the Mine by god The Vine. right chalenacth the Doueraignetie, læing there is no plant bled in bufbandzie moze fruitfull and moze commodious then it , not alonely for the beautifulnette, and amolinette of the fruit, but als fo for the eafineffe be bath in growing, whereby he refufeth not almost any kinde of Countrey in the whole woold, ercept fuch as are to ertreamely fcosched with the burning beate of the Sunne, or elle to extreamely frozen with the behement colde, profpering also as well in the plaine and champion Countrey, as it both by on the hilly and Dountaine Countrey : Likewife as well in the fiffe and fall ground, as in the foft and mellow ground: And of tentimes in the Loamie and leane ground as in the fat and foggie, and in the bate, as in the mout and mirie, yea, and in many places, in the bery Kockes it groweth most aboundantly and mest fruitfully, as is to be feene and proued at this day about the River of Whine in Germanie, and the Kiver of Mofell in France : and about all this, it belt abideth and beareth the contrarie tilpolition of the beauens.

THE A. Do boubt it is the most excellent Plant : But whom doe you suppose to be the first Authour of the planting of it: The common soft doe attribute the first invention of it to

Bacchus.

1

10

5.

MARIVS. The that are taught by Gods holy word, doe Theinknow that it was first found out by the Patriarke Noah, immediate union at ly after the decouning of the world: It may be, the Thine was vine, before that time, though the planting and the vie thereof was not then knowne. The Peathen both most falsty and very fond, ly, as in many other things, doe give the invention of the same unto the God Bacchus. But Noah lived many pieces before eighter Bacchus, Saturnus, or Vranius were borne.

THRA. It is most likely fo: But I won'd faine know whether the planting of Mines both moze enrich the husand then

other hulbandzies doe.

MARIVS. About this question there is no little adoe among the Maiters of old, where there are some that preferre Graffing, Eilling, and Modales sarre about the Unes: and yet agains there wants not great and learned men, that affirme the Une to be most gainefull; and declareth that olde fruitfulnesse of the

B 2

Mines.

gainefull.

The Vine. Wines, mentioned by Cato, Varro, and Columella, which byon yard most enery Acre perioed franch bundred Gellonds of Wine, and the Mineparos of Seneca, wherein he had yeerely byon one Acre 1000. Gailands : when ag in Corne ground, Bafture, or Wiob land, if a man boe get buon one Acre rr. s. a pore, it is thought a great matter.

Cornfields pared.

THE A. But the Thine afketh great charges , and great tras and Vinc- uaile about it, and it is lubicat to many methaps, as the colde yards com- Froits of Winter, the blattes and burning of Summer : and from the first appearing, till the third of May (which is the last decretopic day of the Uline) the burt of the colde and fret is feared. Wiben it bath fcaped this banger , then commeth a greater mife thice, which lightly every pere both great barme : for either with blattes in the Dogge baies, or for lacke of raine, the Grapes are withered and fpoiled, or elfe with oner much rame they ware foluze, and not ripe. Sunday other miffaps there happen, that the Wine is lubica to.

MARIVS. 3 graunt : fo is pour Come likewife, for both it afacth great charges, and fuch cafualties oftenmes budgeth the rose Bulbandman. For in all kinde of Bulbanden, if there be not great biligence, and goo fail imploted, thete will be but fmall commoditic reaped. And efpecially the Mine requireth great buf banday about it for it is tender, and fone barmed, and therefore in choile of the Timepard, there muft be god bede, a both the nature of the Country, and the disposition of the bequens to well con-Aberch. Boft men plant their Wines without aup great care . oz. bode of them : and when they grow by, we tittle biligence in the trimming of them, by which negligence, many times they wither before they be ripe. Dthers againe thinke it makes no great mate ter, what ground they beftow about it, and most times lay out for. this purpole, the worst ground they have, as though it would firme for this Wiant that will ferne for no other thing. Some agains reape all the commodity they can the first years, not previous for farther time, and fo complaine that their gaines both neither and Avere their trauaile, noz their charges, whereas int cete their alune folly and negligence is the caufe : for if there be biligence & paints he towed bron it, as Columella preneth by many reafons, there is no bulbanday to pactitable, as the planting of Times.

THRA.

THE A. 3 doe not verie but that there is great profit in it, where the ground is meete for Ames, and not folist for Come: otherwise 3 thinks the sowing of Come to be an easier matter, and specier was to enrich the busbandman.

MARIVS. Surely as touching the east of the husbandie, and the greatnesse of the gaine, the olde writers have ever preserved the Minepard afore the Corne field: for as Columcila reporteth, Sisterna writeth, that the tabour of one man is sufficient so eight acres of Mines, or at the least sor seaven: of the increase I have spoken before.

THEA. Parry fir, at this day one man thinkes the Acres to much for him: but not to trouble your talke, I pray you goe

forward with the hulbander of your Hines.

MARIVS. The ordering of the Mine bearing Mines . as the facts of Wines are funder, neither can they be contained in certaine numbers for there is as many forts as there is of ground. Homer giveth the chiefelt maple to the Waine of Maronia, and Prampium, Virgill moft commendeth Rhenith wine: others the wine of Aminia, Lamentana, Candy, and Corlega, but I meane to fpeake of those that are commonly in our dayes. In Italy at this day they make most account of wine of Corlege, Romani, and Merlina. In Spaine the beft eftermethe wine of S. Martine, of Ribodari, and Giberalter. In France the greatest praile is given to the wine of Orleans, Anino, and Greues: Germanie began but of late to mebble with planting of Mines, fo: Varro writeth, that the Frenchmen and Bermanes had in his time both Wines and Dlives : but at this day the Rhine, the Necker, the Mene, Molel, and Danaw, may compare with any Countries, for goodnelle of their Mines.

THRA. I fie that the Aines are dinerly decled, otherwise in Italy, then in France, and otherwise in France then in Ger

many, every Countrey bling his feuerall fathion.

12.

Ê

18

32

no

31

12

IS

A.

M A R I V S. True: for as Plinic, after Columella, teacheth, the Unine may be planted five fundry wayes: for eyther his branches are suffered to runne in safetie byon the ground, or else without any stay grow byright, or having a stay or a prop set for them, they climbe by by it, or else runne by by a couple of stiffe props, called of Livic a yoke, or else sustained with source of those

1 3

poakes.

poakes, which of the refemblance that they have with the bollow gutters of a bonfe, are fare to be gutteren : others againe fuffe, red to runne bpen frames like Arbours, ferning to fit bnder, and are called Arbour Wines: others runne bu by the walles of hou. fes. Pozeouer, the poaked Times, called in Broke Enigenplace, are tyed together, and toyned with their or foure props, as if they were poaked : fome boelet them runne bpon tres, as commonly in Lumbardy, they are fuffered to climbe byon Climes, Wails lowes, and Alhes, where they greatly profper: neyther doe they like all manner of trees, for they bate the Aut tree, the Bap, the Rabilh, and the Toll : as againe, thep loue the Boplar, the Clime, the Willow, the fig, & the Dline tree. The Mines that are you ked, or flaved by with props, receive more agre, and beare their fruit the higher, and ripe the better, but afke moze trouble in the loking to: and these are so ordeed, that they may be plowed whereby they are the moze fruitfull, because they may the oftner, and with the leffe charge be tilled The Mines that creep boon the ground, make much Waine, but not (as Columella faith) is god.

THRA. Pow to pour ozbzing of them.

MARIVS. First, I will speake of the ground, and of the big ging of it, and after of the planting and rutting of them. And first The order you must take for a frestall note, that every Wing will not agree with enery place, noz pelo his Edine in like gobnelle, of fuch force is the qualitie of the apre, nepther will all kinde of ground ferne: Foz Columella both counfaile to fet the Wine in a wilde ground, rather then where Come or bulbes baue grolone : foz as for old Minevarts, it is most certaine, they are the worst places of all other to fet new in . because the ground is matted, and as it were netted with the remaines of the old rotes : nevther bathit loft the poplon of the rotten and old frincking Kotes, where with the foile (glutted as it locke with benime) isbenummed : and therefore the wilte and buttled ground is chicfely to be chofen. which though it be over-growne with thenbbes and trees, may pet eafily be riode. If fuch wilde ground be not to be hat, the beft is the plame champion land without tres: if neither fuch a ground, then the light and thinne bulbie ground, oz Dlive ground. The laft and worlf (as I fand) is the old rotten Wineyard, which if necessitie compell you to take, you must first rio the ground of all

the

Trees which be friends or focs to the Vine.

ring of Vines.

What ground is belt for the Vinc.

the olde rotten rotes, and then cover it either with olde dung, or with the newest of any other kinde of mannuring: the rotes being thus digged by must be layd by together, and burned. After must the ground be considered, whether it be mellow and gentle: It is thought to be god, that is something greate and granelly, and full of small peoples, so that it be mingled with fatte mould withall, which if it be not, is betterly dislowed.

Dame Cores joyes in heavy ground, and Baeches in the light.

Pour shall preceive it to be masse and thicke, if being bigged, and cast into the hole againe, it riseth over: if it scarsely fill the hole, it is a signe that it is light and thinke. The Flint, by the generall consent of Ousbandmen, is counted a friend to the Tine, specially where it is well covered with good mondorfor being cold and a keper of mousture, it suffereth not the rotes to be scall bed with the heate of Summer: so much, that Columella doil will men to lay certaine stones about the sides of the Tine tries, so that they speece not the weight of sine pound a piece; which as Virgill hath notes, kepes away the water in Winter, and the heate in Summer.

Hurle in the thirftie ftone, or therein throw the naftie fhelles,

So bo we fee the banks of the Khine being full of thele frones. to pelban excellent god Waine : but the frones that lye about ground, are to becalt away : foz in the Summer, being beated with the Sunne, they burne the Wine, and in the Winter they burt them with their colonelle, contrarie to those that Ive in the bottome. But the best of all is the fote of an bill, which receis ueth the falling mould from the fource, or the bally, that with overflowing of Kivers hath bene made rich. Repther is Chalhie ground to be refused, though the Chalke of it selfe that Bots ters ble is burtfull to the Wine. The bungry landy ground the falt, bitter, and thirffie ground, is not mete for the Eline : pet the blacke and reddith fande, medled with fome mort earth, is of some allowed well enough. Worcouer, neither ground to hotte, or to colde, to day, nor to mouth, to flenber, nor to fliffe, that will not luffer the raine to finke, as meete is to be bled for Mines, for it will easily gape and open, whereby the Sunne somming in at the craineffes, bostb burne the Rotes : 1 4 That

### The fecond Booke, entreating That againe which is operthime, letting in as it were,by bents

the Maine, the Sunne, and the Winde, ooth ozie by the mordure of the rotes: the thicke and friffe ground is hardly to be laboured, the fat ground fubice to to much rantenide , the leane ground to barremelle : wherefore there muft be an cuen temperature amongst these extreamities, as is required in our bobics whose health is preferued by the equall mepley of heate and colbe. bryth and mortture, fulneffe and emptineffe, oz thickeneffe and thine nes:neither petis this temperature in ground for Mines fo fully to be enened, but that there is required a moze enclining to the one part, as that the earth be more bot then colbe, more baye then mort, more lubtill then groffe, specially if the fate of the Beauens agre: againe, what quarter thereof the Mineyard ought to lye, it is an olde controuerlie, fome like beft the riling of the quarter of Summe, fome the Wett, fome the Boath : Virgill militheth the theheaven Wieft: others againe thinke the bell lying to be byon the South. But in generall it is thought best in colde Countries, to have it must lie alye toward the South in warme Countries bron the Caft in bot burning Countries, as Ægypt & Barbaric, bpon the Pozth. Plinie would have the Mine himselfe fand towards the Roth, and his fpring, or thotes towards the South. A fit ground, and well ly ing bring fennt but, muft be biligently bigged, bounged, and wee, bediall but offtable webs must be pulled by and the wen away. left they flouid foring againe, and either corrupt the pong plants, as hinder the laborer.

> THRA. Before you come to trenching, 3 would gladly beare in what lost pourplant pour Wine, and what leafon is fitteft

tt g

ti te

四日日 四日日

La

foz it.

The time for planting of Vines.

What

the Vine

gainft.

MARIVS. Twill first freake of the feafon, and afterwards. of the planting. The Time is planted according to Virgils rule, in the fait of the leafe , but better in the Spring, if the weather be rapnie, or colbe, or the ground be fat, champion, or a watriff batlep : and belt in the fall of the leafe, if the weather be bave and warme, the ground baie and light, a barren, or a rugged hill. The time of planting , in the Spring (as Columella fapth) ene bureth fortie paper from the Hors of Februar p.bntill the Aquinochial:and in the fall of the leafe, from the 30cs of Deober, to the Balends of December, Callian in Conflaptine, being taught by erperiences.

experience, faith, in watere grounds you thould rather plant in Auturne, when the leaves are falme, and the plants after the Wince tare belittered of the burthen of their duffers , folund and firong. before they be nipped with the feafis, for then they belt arre with the ground, nature applying her felfe toholly to the nourithing of the rote. The time of graffing Columella, fatth, is of fame er, tended from the first of Bouember, to the first of June, till which Graffing time the thate or graffe map be preferred : but it is not well liked of Vines. of him, who rather would have it to be some in warmer weather. when the Winter is past, when both but and rinde is naturally moned, and it fafe from cold, that might annov either the Graffe. of the Stocke : yet be granteth (when halt requireth) it may be pone in the fall of the leafe, when as the femperature of the ave. is not much builthe to the Spring: for which purpole, you mult thole a warme day, and no winde firring. The Graffe must be round and found, not full of pith, but of buds, and thicke of tomits, VVbat the Tenant whereof muft not excepe thate inches and fmoth and Graffes enen cutte : the flocke and the cleft must be well closen with clay to be choand mode. Those that grow toward the Bouth must be marken. which Virgill obferuing, faith:

But on the barke, they also note the quarter of the skie. The order how it flood and grew and where the South did lie.

The like is to be done with all other Trees. Of planting of Wines, there is tino waves, the one of the Kate, the other of the branch, or foray: The Mote is counted a great beale better then the branch or let, by reason of the fortometnete, and bantage that it bath, in that it bath alreadie taken rote. The Mote is fet in Riffe ground, well bigged and laboured, in a trench of thee fate, the fet or forap, in a gentle and mellow ground : in brie ground,it is neither goo to fet the Kote, nor the Branch ara opp feafen : it is belt to plant in the fall of the leafe in a but feafor, and in a colde and mort, in the Spring: in much feet pour must fet them thinner, in great brieth, thicker:in what fort por thell make a trope Garben for Mines Palladius tearbeth von. The fet requireth a time to rate, and being remoued well beare the better fruit. The rootes Doe beare fruit the fecond piere, or Cooner: the Bots, or Branches, larle in the third of fourth piere, though in tome places fooner.

Didymus.

Didymus in Conftantine teacheth an easie and a readie way of planting the Quicklet, which is, to take of a frong and ten pere Mine, the longest and fairest branch, that groweth lowest, a fote from the ground, and laying it long in a Trench of a fote bepth. to coner it with earth the space of foure townts, so that remaine in the top, ercebe not two or three fornts: and if the branch be fo long, as it will ferue for two burnings, you may make thereof ting rotes. You mult not luffer two rotes to runne by byon one flav, but allow every rote bis fupporter. The Branches, or Set that you meane to plant, you must cut from a bery fruitfull and Hourithing Hine, that bath borne ripe and perfect god fruit, full of founts, and not any waves tainted, but whole and found, Di fuch you must chose your Sets, and not of young Wines, that are meake and feble, but fuch as are in their chiefe ftate. Pozesucr, you muft gather your Set, not of the bigheft, noz the loiveft, but from the middelt of the Wine : the Set muft be round, finoth, full of knots and founts, and many little burgeons. Allone as you baue cut it off, loke that you let it : for better both it agree with the ground, and foner grow. If you are brinen to keepe them, burie them in the ground either lole, or lolely bound : and if the time be long that you meane to kepe them , you must lay their in emptie barrels, Arawing earth bober them, and boon them, that the earth may lie round about them : and the barrell you must stop closely with clay, that there enter neither winde no; aire, to thall you preferue them two moneths in their gooneffe. Such as are oner bie, you must lay them in water foure and twentie houres afoze poulet them, and pou must fet two Sets together, that though the one faile, the other may take: anoth they both grow, you may take by the leffer of them : you must not make a medley of funday forts, fpecially tobite and blacke tout ther : but as Columella faith, muft fort them feuerally. Dou mut beware that the Sets have not put out their fpzings, and that pou fet not a withered Set. Constantine would baue the Set fomething croked, affirming that it will the somer take rote Bon muft lay about them thee og foure fones, and then ratte the earth, that it may equally with the bung be troben bolone: for the fones keepeth the earth firme, and as I fait before, colet the Kote. Both the ends of the Set you must amoint with On bung,

ti

24

bung, for the killing of the wormes: as for the length if it be full of tornts, it may be the floster, if it have felt tornts, you muff make it the longer, e pet not ercebing a fet in length, noz a fhafte man in fastnede, the one for being burnt with over birnede in Dominer : the other, leaft being fet to diepe, it be withgreat hardneffe taken by, but this is for the levell ground : for byonhils, where the earth till falleth, you map have them a fot and a hand bredth in length. Florentine would not have the trench leffe then foure fote in Depth : for being fet Challow, they foner becap, both for the want of fustenance, and great heat of the Somme . which is thought to pierce foure fote into the ground: The though some there bee that thinke the fote sufficient for the length of plant. The Erenches for Times, Virgill would not have berp the fees, Depe : but deper a great deale for Tres. Such Mines as pop meane Chall runne byon tros, you must plant their cubits wiffant from the Tre : afterwards, when they be well growen and need to bee lovned with the Tre (which pou thall perceine by his thickenes) you shall lap it bowne in length, & buric it, till it come within afot of the Ere, fuffering the remaine to goe at libers tie, nipping off all the bubs with your naile ercept one or two. that it map the better profper, which when it is growen by you must jours by little and little to the Erce, that it may rest byon it: which part of the Ere mult be biligently propned, and the frings and friences that grow out of the rote, muft according to Florentinus, be cut cleane away. The trees, as much as may be, muft be forced to the Caft and Welft; and both the Ere and the Wine, mut have the earth well bigged, and bunger about them. In rich ground, you may luffer the Trees to grows in height, but in barren ground they muft bee pulled at fear uen or erght fot, leaft all the fubitance of the Carth be foaked by of the Ere. After pour planting, you mult bigge the ground The ordsenery Moneth , and wede it , specially from the first of March, ring of Vines aftill the firft of Daober : enery thirtieth Day you muft bigge ter their about the young plants, and plucke by the weedes, specially planting, the graffe, which except it be cleane pluckt by and call away, though it be never to well covered, will foring againe, and to Of digburne the plants, as they will make them both foule and withe, ging and red; the oftner you bigge them, the moze god you doe them, of Vincia.

Ħ

01

e.

ts

if

not

gu

uf

hat oct

ote.

afft

ne:

lett

DH

mg,

Wiben

Of digging and dunging of Vines.

Withen the Cappe beginnes to alter, you must in hand with your third bigging, and when it is ripe, before name when it wareth bot, and after nome when the beate betreafeth, you muft bigge it, and raile the buff, which boing, ocfendeth the Grape both from the Sunne and the spitte. According to Virgils minde, the Wine mult be bigget and toeset cuery Moneth : fome toould have them bigged all the Summer long, after cuery beata; othersas gaine will not have them bigged as long as they bud or burgen, for burting the fprings, laving, that it is enough to digge them thrife in the pere, from the entring of the Sunne into Arics, till the riling of the leauen Starres and the Dogge. Some againe Louis have it done from the Wintage before Winter, and from the 3bes of Aprill before it take, and then againe before it flowre, and likewife before the burning boures of the bap. In fome plas ces when they have bigged them, they bae not Braight-wates car ner them, but fuffer the trenches to lpe open all the duinter : in wet and rappie places they couer them foner, cloting by the rots with earth, and Kopping all the pallages of the water. Some make the trenches bery beeps, and fome not pasting a forte beeps; and when they have bone, they cover them aloft with Dre-bung. Sheepes bung, oz Bogges bung, oz ofother Cattell : Bibgions bung is the hotteft, and fuch as cauleth the Wine fafteft to grow, but maketh the morfer Wine. The bung muft not be lapo close to the dine, but a little biffant from it, whereby the rotes that fpread abroad, may have fome beine of it, and the bung must not touch the rotes, for breaking of them: if there be no bung at bank. the Balkes of Beanes and other Buile, will well ferne the turne. which both befendeth the Wine from froft and cold, and keepes them likewife from noplome wormes : the kernels, and the Stalkes of the Brapes, Dae likewife fupplie the want of dung; but the best of all, is old fale Thine. The plants of a viere, or tipe best dung. peere old, and so footh, till fine peeres, must be discreetly digged, and bungeb, according to their fate : in fanty ground, the belt bung is of Sheepe and Goates : and in fuch fort you must bigge The order the ground, that the earth that lyeth bigheft, be caft to the bob of digging tome, and that which was at the bottome, be lapt aloft : fo thall or firring that that was ber, by the morfture within, be helped, and that which was mort and Riffe by the heate aboue, be lofened. You

2 4 6

1

ct

af

ba

mult

What dung is best for Vines.

VVhere the dung must be layde.

theground

must aife for that there be no boles not with in the Winepard, but that it lie enen. Withen you have thus bigged it, and that the Wines have taken rote the first piere, the rotes that grain about must becut away with a Garpe brife: for the Wine, if it be luffe, red to rate every may, it bindereth the beipe botone grotning of the rate. The Wines that are noin of tine peres growth, me must bigge and trench about two foote bepe, and the foote hinab, according to the rule of Socion. Of those Wines that climbe bon Trees, you must likewife ent off the fprings that runne as mong the rootes of the Tree, left the small rote tangling with thegreater be frangled: and therefore you must leave fome little frace betivirt the Wine and the Ere. Diten bigging caufeth. great fruithinete : good beed must be taken, that the plants be not burt in the bigging : also it mult be bigged before his flourihing, at thooting out of his leanes: for as immediately therewithall be beginneth to thank out his fruit, to bee that diggeth after the comming footh thereof, lafeth much fruit with the biolent thishing, and therefore must viege the timclier. Cutting and beciling of the rootes, you must begin in hand with at the Joes of Daober: to that they may be trimmed and dispatched afore Winter. After Winter bigge about the rootes that pour Dreffine have breffed: and before the Sunne enter the Equinochium, of Vines, irrell the rootes that you have trimmed. After the 30cs of Appill, raife by the earth about pour Wine: in Summer let the ground be oftentimes harrowed. After the Joes of Daber as There fair ) before the coids come in, you must beste the rootes of your Unes, which labour laveth open the Summer fprings, which the good bufbandman cutteth away with his knife: for if you faffer them to grow, the rates that grow bewne will perift, and it happeneth that the rootes foread all abone, which will be Abled both to cold and heat : and therefore whatforner is within afoot and a halfe, is to be cut off, but fo, as you hurt not the printhall. Don must make this ribbance of the rootes at enery fall of the leafe , for the first fine peeres, till the Ame be full growen: after, pon muft dreffe them enery fourth yere : fuch Times as are topico with Trees, for the unhandlomnelle, cannot be thus band'ed. Clines and Eres, the fooner their Bootes bee thus breffed, the Aronger and weightier they will bee; but fuch as groin

t

dl

grow bpon the fives offile, must to be breffed, as the bpper rates meare to the frocke may foread largely, and buberneath towards the foote of the hill the earth must be banked to keepe the water and the mould the better. The old Time mult not have his roote medled withall for withering, nor be plowed, for breaking of them, but the earth a little loofed with a Mattocke, and when you have thus breft the roote, lay bung about it. After this ribbing of the rootes, then followeth proping, or cutting, whereby the inhole Mine is brought to one twigge, and that also cut within tipo jounts of the earth: which cutting must not be in the jount. but betwirt the toynts, with a flope cut, for anothing the water neither muft the cut bee on that five that the budde comes out of but on the contrarie, left with his blebing bee kill the bubbe. Columella appointeth two feafons for the cutting of Wines, the fuzing, and the fall of the leafe, judging in colde Countries the cutting in the Spring to be belt, and in bot Countries where the Winters be milde, the fall of the leafe: at which time both Tres and Plants, by the benine and everlatting appointment of Gol. pielo by their fruit and their leafe. Det mult not vour lets be to nearely cut, ercept they be bery fæble: but the first pære they be fet they must be bolven with often bigging, and pulling off the leanes monethly libbile they beare, that they may grow the better, Phamphilus in Conflantine, beclareth the time of cutting, 02 provi ning, to begin in February, or March, from the fifteenth of fee bauary till the twentieth of Barch: fome (he faith) thought got to cut them immediately after the gathering of the Grapes, left by bleeding in the fyzing they loofe their fuftenance : though by ing cut in the fall of the leafe, it fpzingeth the fooner in the fpzing, and if the colds of frost happen to come, it is Spoyled. Therefore in colde Countries, it were better to propne it alittle, then to cut it throughly, that is, to fuffer the principall frings and branches to grow. Againe, it is very necessary to cut them in the Spring the cuts must be made with a very harve knife: that thep may be fmooth, and that the water may not frand in them, to the engen bring of wormes, and corrupting of the Wine: you muft cut them round: fo will the cut be fooner growen out againe : but Plinie inould have them dope wife, for the better anophing of the war ter. The branches that be broad, old, crooked, or written, cut away,

6

fi

th

le

助

away, and let your and better in their place. You must make an and of pour cutting with as much fpebe as you may to from the Thes of December, till the Ites of January, you muft, not touch pour Wines with a knife : for Columella witnesseth, that wines in winter may not be cut. In cutting, remember well to mtit betwirt two toputs, for if you cut it in the toput, you foill it: let the cut be alwaies downeward, fo thail it be fafe both from Somme and weather. Dou muft not cut them bery earely, but inhen the Sun bath brunke by the froft, or the bealu, & fvarined the branch: the fprings of the fets the first yere, must be cut with good differetion, noz fuffered to grow too ranke, noz cut too neare. but making the cloe fet to fuffer a fraing or two to grow out. Bert buto cutting, followeth the propping, or supporting of the Propping Mine: and it is beft for the yong and tender Mine not to be flaged of Vines. by with any firong fray, but with some small thing at the first, and while it is rong, it mut be baintely tyed to the flay with final thics of Willow, Clime, Brome, Hulhes, or Straw: this latter binding is thought to be belt, for the tipigs when they ware brie boe pierce and burt the rinde. There is an bearbe, which because of his autnes for tring of Wines, the Sicillians call autre of offending. The belt flaves for Wines, as Plinie faith are made of Willoin. Dhe Kood, Juniper, Copreffe and Cloer. And in another place. bee preferreth the Chestnut for this purpose, abone all the reft. The beft for the Uine, is the Rave, which well endurcth fine peres. Ocloing of the leaves, & cutting the Wine, is almost in one manner : the geloing of the leanes, or braunches, muft be bone Gelding thise a yere, to the end that the superfluous springs ; leanes map or pluckbe plucked off. The firth (as Pliny waiteth) mutt bedone within ten leaues, baics after the Abcs of Day, befoze the Wine begin to flower: for about the tenth of June, both the Time a the Wiheat, the two ne ble fruits, to flowie. Of the fecond time, the opinions are funding for fome fuppole it belt to plucke off the leanes & branches as fone as it hath left flowing : others, when the feuit is full rive. The fu perfluous fprings being pong & tender are to be taken away, that the Wine may be moze at libertie, and through blowen with the winde. This gelding, or cutting away the fuper fluous beanthes a leaves is as needful as the propping: for both the fruit both profper the better, the propping the next yeare will be the bantfommers

ø

g,

ut

CS

g:

be

un

em

nie

na

cut

ap,

and the Mine will be the leffe full of galles : for that which is cut being greene and tenber, both the former and the fourfolier reconer himselfe, and the Came riveth the better. Wen bates before the Wine beginnes to Avione, fe that you geto it mibis fort : Cut off all the fuperfluous branches, both on the toppe, and on the flocs, but mesole not where the rinters grow, firthe off the tops of the bamches for growing to ranke : fuch Graves as grow to warps the South, or the Wack, leane them their branches to be fend them from the beate of the Semme: cut atomy most from the pound Mine, for oner-burbening him. After the bente of the Sounne beginneth to fabe, alway with the leaves, for timbing the Ozapes of their riping : and while the Ozape is a flowring bulle pour felle with bigging about it. Such Wines, as with thicknes of their leaves corrupteth their fruit, are to be rid of their fuper flagus branches and leaves a Boneth before the gathering of pour Grapes, that the winde may blow the better through them: but the leaves that growalaft in the bery top, must not be med led with, but left as a beforce, and thatow against the beat of the Summe : but if to be, the end of Summer be given to much raine. and that the Graves fivell in greatness, then baroly placke of the leaves from the top alfo.

THEA. You have told be of a great beale of labour about

Mines.

MARIVS. The Wine keeper mutt often go about his wines,

and fet by his props, and make enen his poakes.

THE A. One thing I peap you, let me heare more, the fignes and tokens of the ripenedle: for as I budertiand, we may not be to butte in gathering them to fone, not be any linguing after

they be ripe, without great harme.

MARIVS. Don laytrue: for being gathered before they be ripe, they will make but small Wine, and not durable. And a gaine, if you suffer them to long, you shall not onely hart the Wine with the over-long bearing of her burden, but also it haple or frost happen to come, you put your Wine in great danger. Democritus systeth, that the Grape endureth in his repensite not above size dayes, and therfore the sudgement of his ripensit, is not alonely to be given byon the fight, but byon his talk, though Columella thinketh there can be no certaine sudgement

giuell

gluen of the tafte. But if the Kones doe change their colour, and be no longer græne, but be almost blacke, it is a signe the Grape is ripe. Some againe do presse the Grape betwirt their singers, a if they see the Kone to slip out smooth, without any thing cleaning to it, they thinke them meete to be gathered; but if they come out with some part of the Grape cleaning to them, they count them not to be ripe. Others prove them in this sort: Out of a very thicke cluster they take a Grape, and as they behold the cluster well, wherein they see no change, they take it sor a token of ripenesse. You must gather your Grapes, the Pone being in Cancer, Leo, Libra, Scorpius, Capricorne, or Aquari, and underneath the earth.

THRA. Is there no way to make the Grape ripe freedily?
MARIVS. Plinic teacheth, to rubbe over the Rotes with
tart Umegar, and very old Urine, and thus to be often digged,
and covered.

THE A. Wahat eyder have you for preferuing of your Grapes

when they be gathered ?

MARIVS. Some keepe them hanged by in the rufe of chambers, and some in earthen pots, close concred with wooden befoles. Palladius theweth away how to keepe them byon the Aine, till the Spring.

THRA. 3 pasy you procede with the other fruit Eres of

pour Dechard.

t

ti

上面以北京

tell

MARIVS. Among other fruit tres nert buto the Time (as The Olive Columella faith) the thiefe place is given to the Dlive, in Latine Olca. Df all other Blants it requireth leaft tranaile and chars ges, where as the Time requireth most: and though it beare not every pere, but every other pere, petis he to be borne with all, because he asketh neither coft noz labour : and if you bestow any bpon him, he recompenseth it throughly, with the abundance of his fruite. And fince there is fo great profit and commoditie in this tree, and that the bles of it are fo many, and fo necefull, it is god reason to be diligent and carefull about it : be loueth a ground neither to high noz to low but rather the ade of a bill, fuch as is the most part of Italie and Spaine: for in fuch ground the extreame beate of the Sunne, is something mollified with the cold blafts of the winde: for in Dline tres (as Plinic faith) the loyle and the clime is of great importance: it belighteth in

in a warme, and a baie ayre; and therefore in Barbary, Sicil, Anda. lufia, fundap parts of Italie, fpectally Campania, it profpereth wonderfully : it liketh not to great heat, not to much oil. And therefore in hot Countries, it joyneth boon the Borthabe of the billes, and in cold, byon the South fibe. It is thought, that if it Hand aboue theelcoze miles from the bea, that it cyther overh. or prometh not fruitfull. The best ground is the granelly ground, having aloft a little chalke mingled with fand : it is also god ground where the fand or granell is medied with rich mould : yea, the fiffe ground, if it be rich and linely, both bery well agree with this tree. Chalkie ground is utterly to be refuled, and watry and marifh ground worft of all. The like is a barraine fand, and bungry land : but pou may let it well in Corne ground, lubere sither the Wilding or Mathelme bath growne : but betwirt the Dake and it there is great hatred, for if the Dake groweth nære. it fireth away, and figinketh towards the earth : and though you cut bolune the Dake, pet the very rotes poploneth and killeth the pope Diine. The like fome affirme of the Tres called Cerrus. and Elculus : for twhere they be pulled bp, if you let the Dlive, be bieth : fo both it (as Plinic faith) if it chaunce to be bruifed of the Boate. Dn the other fibe, betwirt the Dline and the Mine there. is great friendfhip and lone : and it is faid, that if you graffe the Dline bpon the Hins, it will beare a fruit that Chalbe halfe Czape. and halfe Dline, called Vuolea, an Olive-Grape, There are funday waves of planting of Dlines : fome take the biggeft beans thes from the Eres, and Dawing off the youngelt plants of two cubits in length, they fet them ozderly in the ground; fome Lette the whole Tre together : fome againe cutting off the tors, and all the branches, let the flocke about the rifing of the Starre Arcturus. Many make them Impe Bardensin god ground and mellow, fuch as is commonly the blacks moulde : berein they fet the roung branches the lowett, and the faprett, two or their inches in thicknesse, and very fertill, which they gather not from. the body of the Tree, but from the newell and lateft boughes. Thefe thepcut into pactty Settes of a fote and a halfe in length, tsking god beede that they burt not the riade, and paring the ends berp fmothe with a harpe Bnife, and marking them with redde Dker, that they may know which way they frod afore, and.

and to fetting the lowest part into the ground, and the bigheft to warps the heaven, they put them in the ground, and fo they grow the fafter, & beare the better : for if you fould fet them with the lower end beward, they would epther hardly grow, or prome bufrutfull : and therefore they have a regard of the fetting of them. Don muft belide, befoze pou fet them, rubbe ouer both the toppe and the fote with boung mingled with Albes, and lo fet them beepe in the ground, concring them foure fingers thicke with rotten mould. Dou may chose whether you will fette them all bnoer the ground or fet fome part within the ground and fulfer the reft to appears about the ground : those that be fette all within the ground, neede not to be marked, but fuch as thail Band with one part about the ground. Dydimus would have them fo let as they may appeare foure Angers abone the ground, and then to anake a little trench for the receiving of the water: and this many ner of planting with the boughs, is of Dydimus beft iked. Withers you mean to plant you must purge the ground of all other plants. buthes and freedes: and the trenches muft fo be made, as with the winde, the funne and raine, it may be mellowed e madecrome bling, that the plants may the foner take rote. If your bufinese require balte, you must a moneth or two before, burne in the trenches either flicks of rede, of fuch things as will eafilie take fire : and this you muft bo biners bates together. Dour trenches muft be the cubits or thereabout in benth, & 40. cubits alimber. whereby the trees may have apre enough: the first fecond and the third pere, the earth must be trimmed with often raking : the first two peres you must not medale with proposing: the third pere, pon must leave upon every one a couple of branches, e often rake your Impegarben: the fourth yeer, you that of the two brans thes cut away the weaker: being thus ordred, in the fift yeer they will be met to be remoued : the Cocke that is as big as a mans arme, is best to be removed : let it stand but a little above the ground fo that it profper the better. Wefore you remoneit, marke the part that from South with a piece of Daer, that you may fet it in like maner againe. Dou muft firft big the trencheb ground with Mattocks, after turne in fone-plowed earth, a fow it with Barley : if there be any water Canbing in them, you must let it out, and caft in a few imali foncs, and fo fetting your Settes,

saft in a little bung. After the tenth of June, when the ground gaves with the heate of the Summe, you must take heete that the Sonne pierce not through the clefts to the rate. From the entring of the Sunne into Libra, you must riobe the rotes of all Superfluous fuzings : and if the Tre grow byon the edge of a bill, you must with little gutters draw away the muddy water. The dung muft be caft on at the fall of the leafe, that being ming, led in Whinter with the mould, it may keepe the rotes of the tres warme. The mother of Dyle muft be polized byon the great ones, and the molle mult be cut off with an Iron Intrument. 02 elfe it will veeld vou no fruit. Alfo after certaine veres, vou muft cut and loppe pour Dline trees : for it is an old pronerbe. That who fo ploweth his Dline Barben, craueth fruit : who bungeth it, mometh fruit : inho cutteth the tres, fozceth fruit. In the Dline Tree vou thall cometime have one branch more gallant then his fellowes, which if you cut not away, you discourage all the reft. The Dlive is also graffed in the wilds Dlive, specially betwirt the rinde and the wood, and by implatiring: others graffe it in the rote, and when it bath taken, they pull by a parcell of the rote withall, and remone it as they boe other plants. Those Dlines that have the thickest barks are graffed in the barke. The time of Graffing them, is from the entring of the Summe into Arice, and with some from the rry of Day, till the first of June. The time of gathering of Dlines , is when the greater part of halfe the fruit wareth black, and in faire weather: the riper the Dline is, the fat, ter will be the Dole. In gathering of Olives, there is more cunning in making Dyle, then in making Wine : the letter Dlines. ferne for Dole, the greater for meate. There is funday forts of Dylemade of an Olive : the first of all is raw and pleasantest in talt: the first streame that comes from the presses best, and fo in azber. The beft Dyle is about Venafri in Italie, & Licinia in Spaine: the next in goonette, in Provence, except in the fruitfull parts of Barbary. The Dlines that you may come by with your bands, you must epther bpon the ground, or with Ladders gather, and not beat them boluxe : for those that are beaten bowne wither, and pelo net fo much Dole as the other : and better is the Difue that is gathered with the bare hand, then with gloves: there is an old law for Dlines, Bruile not the Olive, nor beate him. Those that paffe.

naffe the reach of the hand, must be rather beaten boinne with Keedes then Bowles: the Dole is increased from the rifing of the Berward, to the roi. of the kalends of Daober : after, the Kone and the meat doe grow. D! Dplc. Some part ferueth for meat, and other for the fotopling of the body : and therefore as Varro faith. it accompanieth his maifter not onely to the Bath, but allo to the field, or wherefoeuer he goeth. The Pline whereof von make pour Dyle, mult be taken from the ground: and if it be foule, muft be walked : for the arping three dayes is lufficient : if it be froftp meather, they must be pressed the fourth day : sucry first heave mult be put in earthen pots, and Dple beffels, where with hard and rough fromes they are grinded. The gathered Dlive, if it live to long in heapes, putrifieth by realon of heat, e makes bulanery Dyle. Wils are moze bandlome for the making of Dyle then the trough and the fote : for the wils may be bandled with great ail rection : the inhole flore may be rapled or let bowne, according to the quantitie of the Berry, least the Rone which would marre the tafte of the Dyle Bould be broken. The Breffes chiefely, and the Dole boules ought to be marme, for the freeder ruming of the Dyle, which with cold would make the longer fay. And fith beat and warmth is fo neofull, you must prouide that your boule the toward the Sunne, fo thall pou neede neither flame not fire. inhich with finake or fate, may corrupt the taft of pour Dole, The lawes and order of gathering, and bestowing of Dline, bath Caro befcribed : the manner of preferuing them is beclared by Columella, which were to much for me to weake at this time.

THEA. Goe on then, and let be heare what you can fay of Apple trees: whose bie is more commonly knowne buto be.

MARIVS. The Apple, called in Latine Pomum. There Apples are that put this difference betwirt the Apple and the Putte, that whatfoever fruit is to be eaten fost without, and hard within, is an Apple, and the contracte a Putte. Pomum generally spoken, is to be understood of all that the Grakes comprehended in the word, owege, as Beaches, Duinces, and Beares, where but the Lawyer agreeth: but in this place I spoake of Apples, according to the common phrase: as so, Ruinces, Howegranates, and Turkie Plomes, I will speake of in their due places. There are such sundry sorts of Apples, differing both in shape and succur,

1 3

as arefearcely to be numbred. In the olde time the chiefeft Anples mere Septians , berp great and round, Martians, Claudians, Marians, and Appians, fo called of their first founders : fome as gaine toke their names of their Countries, as Camerians, and Grecians: fo others of their colours, as red, fanguine, filken, and golden. Tele bane at this bar that are chiefe in paice the Dippen. the Komet, the Domerovall, the Parigolo, with a great number of others that were to long to fpeake of. There is but one man, ner of planting and graffing of them all , fauing that the Beach, the Lemon, the Apricot, the Quince, and the Eptron, which are all, of Diolcorides, accounted in the number of Apples, require adittie more offigent care, as thall be fait bercafter, then the o. thers, for they are all both planted and graffed : the manner of an Impe Garben Cato befcribeth. Apple tres are fet either in Februarie, or in March: or if the Countrey be hot and dap, in Daober and Douember. But all kindes of Apples toe better profper by graffing, and insculation, or imbubbing, as I faibbe foreabout sparch or Appill, or what time to ever the fay be in the rinde. They are also graffed by implatiring , about the tenthof June : though fome (as they fay) haue had good fucceffe in doing it after the entrance of the Sunne into Aries, as 3 haue faib bce fore, where I fpake of implatiring and Braffing. The Appleis commonly Graffed boon the Crab ftocke, or boon the Bramble. being first planted, and the pereafter cut off within a fote of the earth : bpon this tocke you may Ozaffe (as 3 fait) the tender poung Graffes of any Apples. Palladius fatth, peu may graffe. the Apple bpon the Bertie, the Bainthorne, Blumb tre, Ser, miffetere, Beath, Plane tre, Boplar, Willow, and Beare : but in fuch difference of Countries, we can fet bolone no certaine ou ber for them all : and therefore as farre as mine ofone experience, and the knowledge that I have learned of others will aretch, I will gladly theto pou. There are that according to the olde or ber, Dos Graffe the Apple either bpan a foilbe Berry, oz bpana Duince, whereof they have a moft ercellent fruit ; called of the olde Waiters Melimela. If you Graffe byon the Blane tre. you thall have a red fruit : pou may also well Braffe pour Apple by on the Damion tree, and if you Graffe bpon the Cytren. von thall have thembeare, as Diophanes faith, fruit almost all the pors.

pere long. The Apple loneth a fat, and a good ground, fell fratred rather by nature, then by industrie. In mountaine Course tries, they muft alwayes be fet toward the South : it profpereth mell enough, to it be fomething bolpen with the Soume, neither noe they refule either rough of marrith grounds. A leane and a barraine forle bringeth out worme caten, and falling fruit: the noviome Wormes are bettroped with Bogges bung, mingled with mans brine, and power bpon the rotes. And if the tre Against be bery full of Wormes, being fcraped bowne with a brafen fcra, hurtfull per, they never come againe, if the place tobence you fcrared wormes, them be rubbed over with Bullocks bung : fome appe buto be rine Boates bung . and nother buon the rotes the Less of olne wine. The tree that is licke, og profpereth not, is holpen being inatred with Affe bung , and water fire bayes : they muft be of ten watered at the fetting of the Summe, till the Spring be come out. Plinic fouteth, that the water wherein Lupines bath bens fod police been the tree, both the fruit god. They fay, if the tre be much watred with brine, the fruit will be red. Others as gaine let bnder their Trees Holes, thinking thereby to have their Apples red. Apple Tres (as I faid before) muft be fet enery fort by themselues, as Columella biodeth, least the small tres be burt of the great, because they be not all of one growth, or ftrength. Beffee you must let them bery thin, that they may bane rome to that out their branches: For if you let them thick, they will never heare well therefore you must let them forty, or at the least thirty fot a funder: The Apple beclareth his rivenes, by the blacknes of his kernels. They are gathered after the fourtenth of entember. or there about according to their kinde, and not before the Bone be feauenteene bates old, in faire weather, and in the after none : Those that fall from the tree, must be late by themselnes : it is bet ter to pull them.then to thake them, leaft they be banifed in their falling. They are kept in faire lefts, baults, og colb places, with To keepe windowes opening toward the Parth, which in faire weather Apples. must be fet wide open: therfore Varro would have all Apple lofts have their windowes Boath, that they may receive the Boath aire: the South winds muft be thut out: The blaffs of the Boath minde, both make them wainklede rugged : they muft be laid thin bpon Straw, Chaffe, oz Bats. I had an Apple brought me out of Dolland,

#### The second Booke, entreating Bolland, that endured thee yeeres : 3 hane a tre of them here

in this Dachard of his colone, called a Greening. You mutt lap enery fast by themfelues, left fandap fasts lying together, they

foner rotte. Some ble to lay them in Rut leaves, which both queth them good colour and good finell. They are also kept from rotting, if they be land in Barley of Wilheate. Palladius would have them kept in earthen bellelsclofe thopped,in Selterns,og in Caues : Apulcius in Conflantine, would have every Apple ways ped in Aut leaves, and to laid by : a great fort of wates befine of keping them, you shall read in divers Authours. Some to avoice the burt of the froft, ble to couer them with wette Linnen cloth. lubich being frozen, the fruit that lucth binder it, is preferued. Dour Apples muft be fo lapd by as the falkes frand boton ward ; neither muft you touch any, but fuch as you neede. Apples are burtfull to bearing cattell, fo as the fauour caufeth them to tyze, as Lucian in his Alle witnelleth : the like is waitten of Bearcs: the remedy, they lap, is to let them eate forme of the fruit afoze. Df Apples, with certaine Bas for the purpole, they make a brink ralled Ciber, and a fmall brinke befide with water, and the refuse of the Apples frained, a good brinke to cole the thirst of the poze labourer. A hinde of Winiger also they make of Crabs, and foreze Apples, which lying in beave together the or foure baies, they afterwards put into a Bipc of Tunne, wherewith they mingle Spring water, or Mayne water, and fo is it fuffered to fand clofe conered thirtie baies, and after taking out what Wineget The pears, they neede, they put in againe as much water. The Peare, in La tine Pirus, challengeth the next place, tis one of the chiefeft beaus ties of the Dzchard. The Apple treefpreadeth in broad bra nches: the Deare tre rifeth in height , e belighteth in a rich and a moift dround: it both grow of the Bernell, and of the Bippen, but is a great while before it ceme to god : and when it is growne, tt begenerateth from them his old god Rature, and therefore it is better to take the wilbe plants, and to fet them in their ground in Bouember, and when they be well roted, you may graffe bpon them. It is fato, that it to profpereth with often bice ging, and much moifture, as it neuer loteth his flowige. Dout thall boe great god buto it, if enery other pete pon bestow fome bung byouit. Dre dung is thought to make great and mallie Dearcs:

Beares : Come put to a little Athes to make their talte the please fanter. They are not alonely planted of the rotes, but also the bery little twigs, being plucked from the rate, will grow. If you will fet goung plants, let them be their yere old, or at the leaft two pere old before pou let them. Some againetake the fapzeft branches they finde boon the tree, and fet them as they doe the Dline. The time of graffing the Beare, is Parch and Apzill : Plinic faith, you may well graffe it when the bloffome is on it, which I my felfe have treed to be true. It is graffed boon the Duince the Almond tre, the Pomegranate, the Apple, and the Bulberie tre : if pou graffe bpon the Bulberie, pour Beare Chall be red. Virgill teacheth to graffe it boon an Ache, whereas inbabe it will agree with any tock: the Graffe muft be the growth of a pere, and afore it be graffed, clered of all leanes and tender parts. And if you would have the fruit pleasant, and the tree fruitfull, you thall boare a hole through the stocke close by the ground, and deluing in an Dken or a Brechen pinne, couer it by with earth : if the tree profper not, wash the rotes, and water them with the less of old Whine fifteene baies, to thall it beare the better and pleafanter fruit. It thall never be burt with wommes, if when ve plant it, you boe annoint it with the Baule of an Dre: if the træ (whole rates have beene cut) feme not to profper, Palladius his remedy is, to piercetherate thozow, and to brine in a pinne, made either of Dake of Plumtre. If your Pearcs be fto, nie, and choake Beares, big by the earth from the rotes, cleanle them of fromes, and lift in god new mould againe in the place : let your Weare tres Rand thirtie fote afander, og little lelle : pour Apple tre farther, as Thave fait. They are kept preferned To keepe funday wates, fome dipping the stalks in boyling Witch, doe after, peares. wards hang them bp, and fo keepe them : others heepe them in new boyled Wine, or elfe in a close beffell : others in fand, fome in flocks, and forme againe concred with wheate, or chaffe ! forme are of opinion, there is no kinde of fruit, but may be preferued in bonep. Df Beares Pallodius teacheth as of Apples, to make both brinke and faule the tuyce being preff out with the preffe women bane a pretty bill made of Beares for their religious falts, called Callimoniale. Bert in orber, after Apples and Beares, coms The meth the Quince, which was first by Caro called Coroneum, the Quince. Brickes.

t.

distacks call it, Eud www, of the Title Cydon, from whence it inge first brought : the Italians, Mciecotogne, the Spaniards, Membrillo : the French men. Vn coiginer : both the Brekes and Virgil, call them of the colour xevoquida, Golben Apples, & Struthia. Inhich kinde (though they differ a little) are of this fort : for Columella fpeaketh of thee forts of Duinces, Struthia, Chryfomela. and Muctes, which all ferue both for bealth and pleafure. They are planted after the fame manner that Deares and Cherics are: fome affirme, that the lettes that have bene let in Darch, pain February, have taken fuch rote, as they have borne fruit the pere after. They grow well in cold and mogit Countries, in plaine & billie grounds. In bot by Countries, you must fet them in Doober Dany let them with the tops and the let, but neither of them both is bery god : and being let of litence, they fone degenerate. They are better graffed in the Rock then in the barke, and that in February or Warch. They receive into their flocks. the Craffes (in a manner) of all manner of trees, the Bomegra nate the Seruife all the forts of Apples, and make the fruit the better. The Quince tre muft be fet in that order that in the the king of the winde, they beop not one boon the other. When it is young or newly planted, it is helped with bung, or better with Athes: they must be watred as often as the featon is bery bie. and bigged about continually : in hot Countries in Daober, at Ponember : in cold Countries, in Februarie oz March : for if you boe not often big about them, they will either be barraine, or beare naughtfe fruit : they must be provined, cut, and ribbe of all encombraunces. If the tree be ficke, or profper not well, the rote must be watred with the mother of Dyle, mingled with the like quantitie of water, as Didymus in Conflantine faith, 02 bullecht Lime mingled with chalke, or Rosen and Tarre muft be polived bpon the rates : you fall gather themin a fayze bay being found and bufpotted, and bery ripe, and in the wane of the Mone. They To keepe are beft kept coffened betwirt time hollow Tiles, well closed on enery five with Clay : formelay them onely in by places, inhere no winde commeth : others kepe them in Chaffe and Witheate, many in Honey: fome in Wine, and maketh the Wine moss pleafant. Democritus bibbeth pon beware, that you lay thein nat nece other fruit, because with the ayre they will corrupt them. Mbert.

h

m

Quinces.

There is also made a kinde of Wine of Quinces (being beaten and preffed) and a little Bony & Dyle put into it: our Countrimen make of them a precious Conferne, and Marmelane, being congeales with long fething, and boyles with Sugar, Wine, and Spices. I will now thew gon of the Pedlar, which the Latines TheMedcall Mefpilus, the Italians Mefpilo the Spaniaros Mefpero, the lar. Frenchmen Melplier, og Nefflier, the Dutchmen Melpelen: this Tre is alfo of the number of Apple tres, and Beare tres : it is planted in like manner as the Quince is : it belighteth in hat places, but well watered, though it doe well enough in cold. Wie hane feene it profper berp well among Dkes, and El wbes:for ine have force great Woods of them growing among Dkes, that have verely pielbed a great beale of money. Some fap, it is planted of the frience, in March oz Ponember, in a well bounged ground and mellow, to that both the ends be rubbed ouer with boung. It is also let of the Bone, but then it is berp long before it come to any thing : it is excellently well graffed in the Bzamble, the the Pirrie, or the Apple. The Declars that von meane to trepe, muft be gathered befoze they be tipe : and being fuffered to grow byon the Ere, they last a great part of the Winter : they are allo preferned in lobden Wine, and Mineger, and Wia ter. In Catoes time they were not brotone in Italie. Plinic and others have Spoken of them: neither is it certaine. whether the ald waiters toke them for Seruilles. Plinic fpeaketh of tilies kindes of them: The first kinde bauing but thee Rones in them. called therefore Tricoccum : we have at this pay two kindes, the one having here and there prickles, growing in every delod and Thicket, bery fowze afoze it be mellomed, a unde fort with froff. and colo of Whinter : the other hanny no parkles at all foith a great fruit, lobich fæmeth to be brought hereunto by biligent Blanting and Braffing. The Wood of the wilbe Dedlar we ble to make Spokes for Wahetes of and the things of them ferue for Carters tohips: Bert onto the Beolar, for neighbourboo fake. be muft fpeake of the Deruiffe, a high tree with a round berry, 02 Inflioned like an Egge: wherfore it is called ova, as Theophraftus witnelleth, and the fruit sou, the Latines call it Sorbus, the Italia ansas the Latines, the Spaniards Servall, the Frenchmen Cormigoz Cormier, the Dutchmen Sporeffelbaum, The fruit grotues m.

å

tio

33

te,

926

nat

an.

ers

in clufters as the Grape both : the wilde is better then the Gare ben fruit. It belighteth in cold places, and if pon plant it in botte Countries it will mare barraine. It hath no prickles as the Met lar bath, it groweth of the Rone, the fet, the rote, or the fcience, and prospereth in a cold and wet sople boon billes : it is planted in Ferquary and Pareh in colo Countties; and bot, in Daober and Bouember. It is graffed either buon bis owne focke, az on the Quince or Bainthorne, eyther in the Rocke or thebarke.

THRA. I maruell boto can you have Bomegranates here, MARIVS. Among the ftrange fruits, there is none compa

I pray you their what order you ble.

rable to the Bomegratate (fo called I thinke) because of his Countrey, Carthage and Africa, where the best doe grow: the tre (as per le ) is not high, the leafe narrow, e of a bery faire greene, the flature Burple and long like a Coffine, the Apple that is comvalled with a thicke ringe, is all full of graines within : it is called of the Brekes goà or goià , as well the tre as the fruit eax younge xai of vadus, the Pomegranate Iwete and fewes it is called in Latine Malum Puaicum , and Malum Granatum in Italian Male grano, in Sanith Granada, in French Pomes de Granad, in Dutch Granatapffel. This Tre onelp as the Figge and the Mine, the body being clouen, bieth not : the beanches are full of prickles as the Gorff is: it loueth both a bot ground, and a hot Countrie , and liketh not watrie places. In fome bot Count tries, it groweth wilde in the bulbes : it is planted in the fpring time, the rootes being watred with Bogs bung and fale: It is graffed byon his owne focke, and allo byon other trees, a like wife of the friences that grow from theretes of the olde tree. And though it may be planted funder wages, pet the best way is the branches of a cubit in length, fmother with pour knife at both the ends and let flopewife in the ground , with both his endes mell (meared with Bogges bung and state. There is also and other way of planting it, which is, to take a bery fruitfull facks, which may be brought to the earth, and him after the manner of ther trees they Braffe by infolliation, betwirt the barke and the

rinde, and well and closely bindeit: after, they let it in the ground,

not touching the graffed part, but the parts beneath, annoing

ting it with the mother of oyle, and make it fall with cordes.

1

Û

p

th

DO

na

He the

that

mates,

that it flip not backe, till the branch be growne. It much belighe teth(as Democritus faith) in the Mystill, in fo much as the rots will mete and tangle together with great fev. Ehe fruit will grain without kernels,if as in the Wine the pith being taken out. the fet be covered with earth and (when it bath taken ) the fuzing be morned. There is (as African reporteth) in enery Womegranate a like number of graines, though they differ in bignes, Balill miteth in his Hexam, that the fowe Domegranate will grow to be fivet, if the body of the tre nere to the rot be vierced through. and filled by with a fat Witch tree pin: you thall have them endure a bery great while, it they be first bipped in scaulding water, and taken out quickely, be laine in bay fand, or elfe in fome heape of inheate in the Chaddow, till they be wainckled, or elfe fo coursed with chaffe, as they touch not one the other. Dther lay it is bell to keepe them like Quinces, coursed with platter, og chalke : fog in cold places they are kept without corrupting. The ringe of the Demegranate is called in Latine Malicorium : the flower of the Carpen Bomegranate, Dioscorides calleth, KUTIVOV, and of the inite Badgotop.

THRA. I heare allo, the Dut-landilh Cytronis here berie

tarefully planted.

H

18

B,

T

s,

MAR IVS. The Cotron, called alfo the Median, the Perlian, Cytrons. and the Affirian Apple, becaufe it was firft brought out of Perlia, sfrom the Medes:others lap it was first brought out of Africa in to Greece, by Hercules : and therefore Varro calleth it, the Apple of Africa : they are called in Italian Citroni, in Spanish Zidras, in Dutch Gerernapffel Pomerancen, in French Citron: theftruit is celled in Latine Hipericum, & Aureum malum, the golben Apple, allo the mariage Apple of lupiter and luno : fuch of them as are vellow, & of a golden colour, they commonly call Danges : fuch as are of a granify pale pellow, they call Cotrols, or Citruls: those that are long fashioned like an Egge, if they be pellow, are called Citrons, if they be grane, Limons: if they be bery great and round like Bompeons, they call them Bomciozons : the tree both alwaies beare fruit, Come falling, Come rive, & Come foringing: nature the wing in them a wonderfull fertilitie as in the trees that Homer beferibeth in the Dzchards of Alcinous. E he leafe is like the Bay leafe, fauing that there grow prickles among them :

The fruit is vellow , winchten without, floct in Causer, and foime in talte : the kernels like the kernels of a Beare, a great refifter of poplons. The Tre is planted (as Palladius faith) foure manner of wates. Dfthe Bernell, the Science, the Branch. and the Stocke. If you will fet the kernell, you muft biage the earth two fate enery way, and mingle it with Albes : you must make thost beds, that thep may be watred with gutters on every five. In thefe beds you muft spen the earth with pour bands a hand breath and fet three kernels together, with the tops downer fpard, and being concred, water them enery bay; and when they foring, leave no wedes neere them : they will foring the foner. if you water them with warme water: others fap it is bell the grains being taken out in the fuzing to let them biligently in gas melloweb furroives, and to water them enery fourth of fift day: and when they begin to grow, to removue them againe in the Spring, to agentle and a move ground. for it belighteth in much met : if you let the branch, you mult not let it aboue a fote and a halfe in the ground, left it rot. The fcience and the focke, Palladius thinketh it better to be planted, and theweth which way. If any man meane to sherift this tree let him befend it well from the Roath, and fet it toward the South, and the Somme, in the Winter in frailes and baskets: inherefore fome that are carefull and diligent in the tendering of this tree. to make little baults to ipard the South close couered : and within them, niere the wall, they plant the Dzenge, luffering the baults all Summer to lies pen to the Summe, and to have the heat thereof : and as fone as Winter comes, they couer them fraight with fram, or mattes, Specially with the Balks of gourds. This tre pelighteth to be con tinually bigged about : they are graffed in bot places in Appillin cold Countries in May, not bnoer the barke, but cleaving to the Rocke hard by the rote: they may be graffed both on the Beart tree and the Bulberie : but when they are graffed, must be fence either with a wicker basket, og fome earthen beffell. The fruit inill be fivet, if the kernels be freped in water fodde with hones or which is better in Shapes milke. Such as von meane ti keepe, muft be gathered in the night, the Mone being downe, and gathered with branches and all, as they bang. Where the fruit buroneth the Arce, you must pull them off, and leave but few

£

ÍS

.

Pe

ttı

let

th:

cut

inh

Dad

m it which will be the pleafanter, and the kindler fruit. It is at this day nourifhed bothin Germanie and France and is plane ten in bellels full of earth, and in bot weather is fet abroad in the hume : in cold weather let in Socilars,or in bot houses. I have Gene in Germanie certaine bot-boules of purpofe made of fire beibes that in Winter haue warmeb all the Barben. e in Some mer the frames taken alway, baue given place to the Sunne. If while they be poung and little they be put into earthen bellels,02 missie, they grow according to the proportion thereof: fo that you may have them falbioned either like a man or like a beaff.accor bing to pour fancie: but you must fo order your moulds as the aire may come to them. But left I here you to long with thefe out landith Trees. I will weake fomething of our owne trees, inberes with we are better acquainted. Among which we baue the Buls The Mulberp, in Latine Moros, in Italian Moro, in Spanith Mora, in bery tree. French Meure, in Dutch Mulbern: this is accounted of all other tres the mifett because he never bloffometh til all colo weather be quite palt: fo that when focuer you fee the Bulbery begin to fpring roumap be fure that Winter is at an end : he is rive with the first, and buddeth out so hastily, as in one night with a notice be thufteth out his leaves : they die the hands (as Plinie faith ) with. the tutee of the rive berrie, t wall it off with the grane berries be dangeth bis colour theile, first white, then red, and lastly black the leneth bot places, and gravelly, and belights in bigging and bungs ing, but not in watering : his rotes muft be opened about Dag. ber, and the Les of Wine powers boon them : it is lette of the fones, but thinne : it often groweth to be wilde: the best planting is the frience, and the tops, a forte and a halfelong, front at both moes, and rubbed ouer with bung. The place lobercin pou fet your Sets, they cover with Albes mingled with earth, but cover thot about foure fingers thicke. Palladius bibs you to fet it in Darch, and to remoueit in Datober, oz Bonember. Deritius tele: leth, that the Quiberie may be planted in the fall of the leafe, by thrufting into the ground the branches, after the order of the fig tre. inbich Imp felfe haue proned , fpecially, if the end that is: e to out be well banifed, that it map the quicklier take rote: and fo ant fruit when you have made your hole with a fake, thouf it in : it is bett graffed on the Bech, e the white Boplar, either by graffing, few

il

il,

.

25

es,

ath

Lin

the

are

tee

ruit

nep

in the flocke, or by inoculation: and to thall the berries be white It is graffed also in the Fig. 4 the Elme, which in old time they would not inffer, so, feare of corrupting. Of the Pulberie is made a very moble medicine for the stomacke, and for the gout: they will longest induce (as it is said) keptin glasses. The leaves do ferue to seed Dilke-wormes withall, whereof some make a very great gaine, and set them rather for that purpose then for the fruit.

THRA. What trais that with the rubble coloured fruit, that

is like a Cherrie:

The Cornell,

MARIVS. It is a Cornell trie, called in Latine Cornus, in Italian Corneolo, in Spanish Zereko selvestro, in French Cornier, in Dutch Cornelbaum: this trie is thought never to erein tivelne embits in height: the body is sound and thicke, the home: the lease is like an almond lease, but satter: the storye and the fruits like the Oline, with many beries hanging doon one stalke, sirk white, and after red: the supre of the ripe berries, is of a bloudy colour: it loneth both Hommatines and Uallies, and prospect both in moyst ground and drie: it groweth both of the slippe, and of the siede. You must beware you plant it not neve to your Bies, so the slowee both kill as many of them as taketh it.

The Ray Wilhat Trie is the same that groweth next be

Ziziphus.

giole, in Spanish Azofeiso, in French lniubæ, in Dutch Burchbyrle, the beries whereof, are like the Coznel berries, the flowe like the Dline flower, but more sweter. Columella speaketh of two kindes thereof, the one red, the other white: they are set of the flones, in hot Countries, in Aprill, and in cold places in Pay, or else in June: you may set both the flone, and the branch: it is bery flow in arowing: if you set the plant, you must doe it in

MARIVS. That Ere is called Ziziphus, in Italian Guie

Sparch in fost ground: but if you set the stone, you must set them in a little trench of a hand broad, three stones together, with their points downchard. It loueth not twich a ground, but rather a light ground, and a warine place. In Winter (as Palladius saith) it is good to lay stones about the body of the Tree. The next are Italian Filberts, in Latine Pistacea, in Italian Pistinachi, in Spanish Alhozigo, in French Pistaches, in Dutch Welsee pim-

pernus : the leafe is marrow and brotune : for byon the branches

Italian Filbert.

bang

jung the Auts, like the Auts of the Pline. Of this trie it is thought there is both male and formale, and therefore they grow commonly together, the male having innerneath his fhell as it were, tong stones: It is grassed about the sect of Aprill, but by on his stone stocke, and upon the Teretanth, and the Almond Loie, they are also let (as Palladius initnesseth) in the sail afthe lease in October, both of the slips, and the Aut. It delighteth in a hot and a mouth countrie, and invest in often watering.

THE A. Because I remember pour toine me beisee, that of plants and Eries, some dor grow of the sied, extent, and some are Graffed : and because I have heard the Graffing of most of them. I would not same heard you speake of sinh Axies as grown

onely of the tone, o) berrie. Ilai amust weed deside cont cases a

ď

S

III

t

b)

rt

in

m-

es

ng

Max 1 vs. Pour remembrance is god: for though they commonly grow better when they be graffes, pet fome there be that profest the better being fower, and intil fearce grow any at ther way. And though some of the forefat Erica being fet, wer well profest, as the Pediar, the Cornell, and diversather, yet sometimes they wave tolder, and are long before they come to perfection, which Virgill also affirmeth:

For that same Tree that of the seed, the stone or berrie growes, Doth slowly spring, and long it is, ere any fruit he shewes. And when it comes, it proueth wilde, and doth degenerate, And soleth that same relish sweet, that longeth to his state.

But by Praffingit is relicated agains: Some of them agains, bew some refer they be some on set, box not degenerate an grow out of kinde, at the Buy, the Date, the Cypreste, the Peach, the Abre wit, the Damson, the Pistace, the Firre Cree, and the Sperie; and became they be not all of one oper, I will tell you severally eithe chiefeth of them. To plant Crees of the since, Pature (as I say before) taught men at the first; the since being denonced of Bicos, and with the boung let fall in the cless of Erres, where they after spring and grein.

The Bay, in Latine Laurus, in all other tongues abnott as in The Bay.
Latine. The betty is called in Latine Lauri Bacce, in Italian
Bacche do Lauro, in Spanish Vaya de laurell in Dutth Lorboren,
a most gratefull Cose to the bouls, a porter to Comperours and

30

Bilboys,

Bilhops, which chiefely garnifieth the boufe, and fameth ale waves at the entric. Caromaketh tion kindes thereof, the Delphick and Cyprelle I the Delphick, equally coloured and graner, with great berrice, in colour betwirt greene and red, whereboth the Conquerous at Delphos were wont to be crowned. The Coppelle Bay hath a thorter leafe, and a barker greene, guttereb (as it incre) cound about the cours, which fome (as Plinie fauth) suppose to be a wilve kinne: it growethalwayes greene. and beareth berries, hee Choteth out his branches from the fines and therefore wareth fone old and rotten : it both not bery well away with colo ground, being hot of nature : it is planted divers. water, the berries being baped with the anth winde, are gathe red and lapd abroad bery thimme, left they clufter together, after ward being wet with Tirme, they are let in turrowes a handfull bope, and bery neere together : in Barch they be also planted of the flip, and the science. If you fet them of the flip, you much fet thein not paffing nine fot afunder: but fo they grow out of kind, Some think that they may be graffed one in another as also byon Scruffe & the Athe: the berries are to be gathered about the be ginning of December , and to be let in the beginning of Barch. But tres are commonly planted of the But, as all other theil-

Nut trees.

The Al-

fruits are. Df all puts, the Almond is counted to be the weethielt. mond tree, called in Ttalfan Mandorle, in Spanilly Almeidras, itt French Amandes, in Dutch Mandeles : they are fet in february, e profper ina clere and bot ground, in a fat and a mout ground they will grow barren: they chiefely fet fuch as are croked, and the nong plants? they are let both of the Slips, the Hot, the herneth The Buts that you intend to let, mult be laide a bay before in foft bung : others flepe them in water foode with honey, letting them lee therein but onely one night, least the tharpnette of the boney Spople the Plant: and being thus expered, Columella faith, they will be both the pleafanter; and grow the better. The tops and the warve ends you must fet polynewarb : for from thence come meth the rate, the coge must stand toward the Routh: pou must fet thee of them in a Extangle, a bandfull one from the other: they must be watred cuery ten bates, till they grow to be great ! It is also planted with the branches, taken from the mint of the tree. The Almond is graffed not niere the top of the Brocke, but about

th

mount the midit, upon the bolice that grow out. This Erie both fone beare froit, and Motogeth before all others, in January, or February. Viegill accounts it for a Prognotitatour of the plentifolnelle of Carne. Anamot mari santolio anti e

When shicke the Nut Tree flowres amidde the wood,

That all the branches laden bend with all :

And that they profeer well and come to good,

That yeare befure, of Corne fluil plenty fall,

The bitter dies (which are the wholefomer) are made floct, if sound about the Eree, fours singers from the roote, you make whittle trench, by which we thall I weat out his bitternede: or elle if you oven the rootes, and power thereon enther Elrine, or Dogs bung: og if at the rote of the Ere, you thout in a fat webge of Witch Tree. By this meanes (as Balill fayth) they will loofe their bitterneffe : but no Tree groweth foner out of kinde , and therefore you muft often remone it, or graffe whenit is great.

Malnuts, calles in Latine loglance, in Italian Nocy, in Spis Walnuts: wift Nozes in French Noix, in Dutch Groule nulz : thep are let in the ground (as Plinic fauth) the feame bolunetoard, about the beginning of March: fome thinke that they will grow as the file bert both, either of the flippe, or the roote ritigroweth freedly, and liketh a brie and cold place better then a bot. The But that pon meane to let will grow the better if you fuffer it to lye foure or fine paper before in the mater of a boy, and will profper the moze if it be often remoned: those Buts (asit is thought) profe per beff that are let fall by Crowes, and other biros, 3f you precee the Tree through with an Augur, and fill by the place agains with a pin of Cline, the Eretball lote his knottie baconelle, nes ther will be lote his fruit, if you hang by either Mallet, of a piece of Skarlet from a bunghilland to notice as a supply and had obliged

THE ALL William is the reason you plant pour Williams tres round about on the outfide of your Dechard and not among your other Ereset will fire reflete marrier ent rathe colled amad der

B

1

nt

MARAIVE ABecanie his thaboth is great, and bisoboles some, befibe the burt he both with his azopping. We fucketh out a great beale of god inyee from the ground : for as you fee, they are very mightie and high Erees , foras lome of them are two op the fabome about they occupie a great beale of rome with their franbing. 28 ... 99 2

Mafell Nurs.

Filberts.

flanding, and bequile the other Tries of their lestenance : We fibes, there are certaine Eres they agree not will totthall, and therefore have I fet them on the patfide of my Duchardan fran Darbs to befend their fellowes from tempelt & weather a Briana Buts, is alfo to be recounted the Bafrit Quis, a kinde whereof is the filbert, called in Latine Auchbriz in Italian Nocuole, in Spanish Auellamas, in Franch Novience in Dutch Hafelnuzes : they are planted after the manier of the Almond: It belighteth in rlay and watriff grounds, and buon loils, being well abie to abide the colde. They locue fir & brought into Alia, and Greece from

Pontus; and therefore called Pontitie and Heracliotica. Scc. Among Cheftnuts the Auttes alfo chalengeth the Cheffmit his place, though he be rather to be rechange among Dalle, whierby be is called the But or Balle of lupiter, in Latine Caltanes, in Italian Caffagne : in Spanish Caltanain French Caltagnes, in Dutrb Kalteyit loneth well to grow on Bountaines, and in colbe Countries : it batetb waters, and befireth a cleane and a good mould : if untilineth not amoult gravell ground, and foreth in a babolufe and Botherly banche , it batetha fiffe anna ced dap ground at is planted both of the Aut, and is let : It is better planting Wass of them, of the But, then of the let, otherwife the fafer low there the fet. tohich in the Prieses beareth fruit. It is planted tohen the Sonna tain the Equinoctiall, both of the frience, the fet, the branch, and the rate; as the Dline is. The Cheftruts that ponneane to faire, must be very faire and ring, the netwer they he the better they grow, You and not fet them after that fact that pout frt Almonds, or filberto, but faith the tharpe one tylinarb, and I fuit a funder : the furrand made be B Chaftman Decpe. Don were bet ter (as 3 fart) tomake your Orone of the faut, thereof the fets. which will be mote to be felled for flages in feanen piere. Columeile, waiteth, that the Chefinit, miet for the Jupporting of Times, if he be foined in thell bigged ground, both outhly firing. and being felled after fine peres,it profpereth like the weillowit and being extractin flaves it indethtill the stert felling, as thall be thetwee hereafter, when we freake of Woos. The will alfo hane the Chellant to be graffee on the Walnut, the Both, and the Dake : it hath beene fine , that lobere they growtho and two together, they mafper the better. Denist in

The

The Wine in Latine Pinus , in Italian and Spanish Pino , in french Pin, in Dutch Harrzbaum, is planted not much bnitke to the Almond, the Bernels of the keite-clockes being fet as the Almond is : they are gathered in July , before the Capiculer windes, and ere the Quts, the bulse being broken, fall out. The belt time of fowing them, Palladius rechoneth to be Daober. and Aguember : this Trie is thought to be a nourither of all that is folven binder it. The Ditch tre is called in Latine Picca, in Italian Pezzo, in Spanish Pino negro, in Dutch Rordannenbaum : but I come now to the Cherte. The Cher tree, The Chein Italian, the Tre Cerafo, the fruit Cerafe, and Ciregic, in Spar nish Cerezo, and Cereza, in French Cerifier, and Cerifesin Dutch Kirsbaum, Kerlen: the Tre is ealie to be planted, if the ftones be but caft abroad, they will grow with great encrease : fuch is their forwardnesse in growing, that the Capes or supporters of Mines, being made of Cherrie tree, are commonly fone to grow to be Eres. They are graffed byon the Blome Erec byon his owne focke, byon the Blane Tree, and on the Bramble, but belt buon the wilde Cherie it ioveth in being graffed, and bear reth better fruit : if you graffe them bpon the Wine, pour Tres thall beare in the Spring : the time of graffing, is epther when there is no Gumme bpon them , og toben the Cumme bath left running. They removue the wilde plant, either in Drober oz Bouember, that the first of January of February, when it hath taken roote, it may be graffed boon. Martiall would have you graffe it in the focke: but indeed it profpereth better being graffed betwirt the barke and the wood. It delighteth to be fet in Diepe trenches, to have roome enough, and to be often bigged a bout. At loneth to bane the withered bow continually cutaway: it groweth beft in colde places, and to hateth dung as if it be lapd about them, they grow to bee wilde: it is also planted of the flips, and will beare his fruit without stones : if in the fetting of the let you turne the opper end downeward. Others will that the tree being yong and two foothigh, be flit botone to the most. and the pith taken out of both fides, and topned together, the feamos close bound about and couered with boung : which with in a piereafter, when it is well growen, the pong graffes (which bitherto have borne no fruit) if you graffe them, will beare Cherics.

Cheries without ftones, as Martiall fayth. There are fun-Day kindes of Theries (as Plinic reporteth, or Apronianus) that are redder then the reft. Actianus, as blacke as a cole: which kind in Germanie vet at this pay they call Acklische kirfen, Celicians, that are round. Plinic in freaking of the funder forts, preferreth the Duracins, which in Campania they were wonted to call Plinians: and a little after he faith, bpon the bankes of the Ahine, there grow also Kersis, of colour betweet blacke, red, and greene, like the Juniper beries, when they be almost ripe : in which the coms mon fort of bokes have Tertius for Kerlis amonast the Ber. mancs : for Plinie, whereas in many places hee blurpeth the Dutch mozds, as in the 9. 10, 17, and 18, booke, and in divers other places, which being not bnoerftob jof the Latines, came altogether corrupted to the potteritie. There are also Bay Che, rics, graffed at the first in the Bay, and have a prety pleasant bitternelle : at this day, the finall Cheries are belt efterned, growing boon a low buft with thost stalkes, round fruit, and bery red, much meat, foft, and full of licour. It is faid they will beare very timely, if you lay Lime about them : it is good to gas ther them often, that they which you leave may ware the greater: for fetting and planting of Cheries, you may reade a great fort of rules in the gatherings of Conftantine. There are alfo found a kinde of Therries growing wilde in the Woods, and Dedge. rowes, with little beries, fome rebbe, fome altogether blacke, which the Farmers in the Countrey Doe ble for to fatte their Hogs withall. The Plome tre in Creke nonny undoc, the fruit κοκκυμηλα, in Latine Prunes and Pruna, in Italian Prune and Succion, in Spanish Ciruclo, and Cirucla, in French Prune, in Dutch Proumen, it is planted from the middle of Winter, till the Aben of February: but if you fet the Rongs at the fail of the leafe, let it be bone in ponember, in a god and mellow ground two handfuls beepe : they may be like wife fet in february, but then they must be freeped in live thee baves, that they may fonce fpring : they are also planted of the young fets that grow from the bedy of the tree epther in January, or in the beginning of fce bauary, the rotes being wel concred with dung: they profper bett in a rich and a mort ground, and in a colde Countrep : thep are graffed teluard the end of Parch, and better in the clonen Rocke, tben

Plome trees.

then in the barke, oz elfe in January, befoze the Summe begin to bean out : it is Graffed boon his owne flocke, the Ibeach and the Almond. There are fundap forts of Plomes, whereof the Damfon is the principall, toping in a day ground, & in a hot couns trev. and is graffed as the other Plomes are. There are divers coloured Blomes, white blacke, purple, and red: Wheat Blomes. and Horfe Blomes, where with they ble to fat Hoas. The fincer Plomes are moft commended, being of length, amans finger, which are brought unto be from Bohemia and Hungarie, and lulians and Noberdians, being blew in colour, but later. The Dame fons are dried in the Sunne boon Lattiles, Leads,or in an Duen. fome poe pip them before, either in fea water, or in Brine, and after baie them. The Beach tre , cailed in Latine Perlica, in The Atalian Perfeo, in Spanish Durafuo, they are also called Rhodo- Peach cina, and Dorocina, oz Duracina, whereof there are foure kinbes: Tree. but the chiefest are the Duracins, and the Abricots : in Boueme ber in hot Countries, and in others in January, the frones are to be fet two fot afunder in well breffed ground , that when the young trees are forong by, they may be removed : but in the fet ting you mult let the tharpe end downeivard, and let them fand two or three fingers in the ground : whereforer they grow they rejoyce most in watry grounds, which ground if you want, lake that you water them abundantly, to thall you have great floze of fruit. Some would have them let in hot countries, and fanov ground: inhereby they fay their fruit will longer endure: the beta ter will also the fruit be, if as some as you have eaten them, you let the ftone, with some part of the fruit cleaning to it : it is graffed either on himfelfe, the Almond , oz the Blemetre. The Apples of Armenia, az Abricot, both farre ercell the Weach, bled The Abrias a great daintie among poblemen, and much delired of the cois. ficke: they are best graffed in the Plome, as the Beach in the Almond trie: the fairest graffes that grow next the body of the trie are to bee chosen and graffed in January, or Februarie, in cold countries, and in Bouember in hot: for if you take those that grow in the top, they will epther not grow, or if they grow, not long endure. Dou hall inoculate, oz imbudthem in Apzill oz Day, the Cocke being cut aloft, and many young buddes let in: neis ther must you luffer them to stand very farre one from the other, that

that they may the better befond themselues from the heat of the Sunne. The Frenchmen, and our Gardners allo, after the Italians order, doe graffe the Abricot, taking a graft (not full a finger long) or the bub that is well that out, with a little of the rind cut off, and diffing the rind of a pong Blome tra croff wife they fet them in binding them well about with Dempe, or Towe, and that in the end of June, or in July, and August. Some thinks thep will be red, if they be either graffed in the Blane tree , 03 haur Roles let bnderneath them : they will also bec figured, og written in, if feauen bapes after that pou haue fet the Cone, when it beginneth to open, you take out the Bernell and with Wermition . oz any other colour you may counterfeit what you will ,after the frome clofed by about it, and conered with Clay, or Doggis bung, you let it in the ground. Againe, you hall have them with. out flones, if you pierce the Erie thozow, and fill it by with a pinne of Willow , or Cornell tree , the pith being had out : the Rootes of the Ere muft be cut and meffet in the fall of the leafe. and bounged with his owne leaves: you thall also at this time propne them, and riobe them of all rotten and bead before. If the Ereprofper not, power boon the rootes the Las of old Wine mingled with water. Against the beat of the Sunne, heaps by the earth about them, water it in the evening, and that bow them as well as you may. Against the frosts, lay on bung enough , or the Les of Wine medled with water, or water wherein Beanes have beene fobben : if it be burt with wormes. or fach baggage, power on it the Wine of Dren medled with a third part of Winegar.

The Date,

The Date tree, in Italian, in Latine, and in Spanish Palma, in French Arbor de Dates, in Dutch Dactelenbaum: the fruit in Latine Palmulæ, in Italian Datolisin Spanish Dattiles in French Dattes, in Dutch Dactelem, it groweth in a mild gravelly ground, and delighteth in a water loyle: e though it delireste have water all the versiong, yet in a day years it beares the better: therefore some thinks that dung is hurtful but oft. About the River Nilus, e in the Cast parts, it groweth plenteously, where as they ble to make both Unine and Bread of it: this Cre in Europe (for the most part) is barren, thengh it be planted of many for now ity sake.

The Concept Dates are planted in trenches of a cubit indepth

and breadth, the trench filled by againe with any manner of dung. except Goates bung : then in the middeft of the beape fet pour Rones to as the tharper part frant byward : others would have it fand toward the Cax: and after, when first they have fprincks to thereon a little Salt, they couer them with earth, well med. led with dung : and every day while it springeth, they water it : fome remoue it after a pieres growth, other let it grow till it be great. Pozcouer, because it delighteth in falt ground, the rotes must be breffed every piere, and falt throwne byon them : and fo will it quickly grow to be a great Tre. The Sets are not prefently to be put in the ground, but first to be fet in earthen Bots, and lohen they have taken rote, to be removed. Date Tres baue fuch a belight one in the other, that they bend themselves to touch together, and if they grow alone, they ware barraine. They are planted (as Plinic faith) of the branches, two Cubites long, growing from the top of the Tre : also of the flips and flie uers. The fame Plinic affirmeth, that about Babylon, the bery leafe (if it be fet) both grow.

THRA. I remember you told me once, the Spring and Science that groweth out of the rates of some Ares, will very well

be planted.

MARIVS. I told you before that biners of the Tres where of I Chake, might be planted of the branches, and of the Sciens tes, having some part of the Kote plucked by with them: and so I faid the Cherrie might be planted, as also the Basell, the Laurell, the Myztell, and the Medlar : likewife the faireft branches Ripped off, and the ends a little benifed, and theuft into the ground, common'y doe grow to be Eres; as 7 mp felfe haue tried both in the Bulbery, the Bearestrie, and the Application. One thing 3 will abbe befive, that the Tres that beare fruit oner haltily, doe either neuer come to their inft bignelle, or the fruit that they beare , both neuer long endure : whereof I thinke fpzang fir & that law of Moiles, that fruit Tres thould for thee veres be corne ted bacircumcifed, and their fore-fainnes with their fruit, fould be dremmeifed: that is, the burgens and bloffomes thould beplucked off, leaft he fould beare befoze his time, oz when he hath bozne, lose his fruit: but I kiepe you to long in the describing of my Dichard.

THR A.

THEA. Dno, I rather (whileft I heare you) imagine my felfe to be amongst them, planting and vielding of their fruits; but now remaineth that in sead of a conclusion to your talke, you beclare the order of preferuing them, to that end specially, that those things that are appointed for remedy (being not duely, or in

time administred : benot rather a hurt) then a helpe.

MARIVS. Bour motion is and : First therefore, and denes rally, bunging and watring is needfull for fruit Eres, a bery few excepted : and herein heede muft be taken, that you doe it not in the heate of the Sunne, and that it be neither to new, noz to old: neither muft it be laive close to the fote of the Era, but a little Distance of , that the fatnesse of the dung map be dunke in of the rote. Digeons bung, and Bogges bung, boe alfo beale the burts or wounds of Tres. The water wherewith we water them. mul not be Fountaine water , or Well water , if other may be had , but damme from fome muddie Lake , og franding Bole. Dozeouer, pou muft take bede, as 3 allo told pou befoze) feben the began to talke of planting of an Dichard) that your Eres frand a good diffance a funder , that when they are growne by, they may have rome enough to fpread, and that the small and tens Der, be not burt of the greater, neither by haddow, noz daopping. Some would have Bomegranate Tres, and Myztels, and Baies, fet as thicke together as map be, not palling nine fote a funder : and likewife Cherry trees, Blumb tres . Duinces. Apple tres , and Weare tres , thirtie fote and maze a funder: every fort muft fand by themfelues, that (as 3 faid) the weaker be not hurt of the greater. The nature of the Sople, is herein most to be regarded: for the Bill requireth to have them stand never together, in windy places you mult fet them the thicker. The Dline (as Cato faith) would have five a twenty for diffance at the leaft. Bou must fet your plants in such feet as the tops be not burt, or bruifed, nor the barke, or rinde flawed off: for the barke being taken away round about, killeth any kinde of Ere. Don must also have a regard of the Cabbow, what trees belveth, and what tres it burteth. The Walnut tre, the Dine tre, the Dotch tree, and the firre tree, whatfocuer they haddow, they poplon. The haddow of the Walnut tree, and the Dake is burtfull to Corne: the Walnut tre with his Chapdow alfo, is burtfull to mens heads,

Shadow of Trees.

beads, and to all things that is planted neere it. The Dine tree with his hadow likewife beffroveth young Wlants, but they both refift the winde, and therefore god to enclose Wineyards. The Conzelle, his thatowis bery fmall, and foreabeth not farre. The thatoiv of the Figge tree is gentle, though it spread farre, and therefore it may lafely enough grow amongst Wines. The Clime træ, his thadow is also milde, nourithing whatfoever it covereth. The Plane tow though it be thicke and groffe, is pleafant. The Poplar bath none, by the reason of the wanering of his leaves. The Alber tre bath a thicke shadole, but nourishing to his neighbours. The Umes is lufficient for himfelfe, and the mouing of his leafe, and often thaking, tempereth the heate of the Sunne, and in great raine well conereth it felfe. The hadow of all those, Dropping is commonly miloe and gentle that have long falkes: the dropping of Trees. of all Eres is nought, but worft of all those, whose branches grow fo as the water cannot readily palle through: for the brops of the Bine the Dake, and the Batholme, are most hurtfull, in whole company you may also take the Walnut : the Cypreffe (as Plinic faith) hurteth not. Pozeouer, propring and cutting, is bery Proyring. god and necessary for trees, whereby the bead & withered boughes are cut away, and the unviolitable branches taken off: but to proine them every pare is naught, though the Mine requireth cutting enery yeare: and enery other perethe Byztill, the Bomes granate, and the Dline, whereby they will the foner beare fruit : the others muft be the feldomer propned. Dlive tras muft be proposed in the fall of the leafe, after the fetting of the feauen flarres: and first, they must be well bunged, as a helpe against their hurts. Don must cut away all the old rotten beauches that grow in the middelf and fuch as grow thicke, and are tangled to: gether, and all the water boughes, and buprofitable branches as bout them: the olde ones are to be cut close to the flocke, from whence the new fprings will arife. Scarifying alfo or launcing is Scarifying. bery luholfome for the tras, when they are fercined with their leanes, & dainelle of their barkes : at which time we the to launce the barke with a tharpe knife, cutting it ftraight bowne in many places: which, what god it both, appeareth by the opening and gaping of the rinde, which is traight wates filled by with the bo. by binderneath. Bou must also trim and dreffe the rates of your Træs.

tion.

Ablaquea- Trees after this fort : You muft open the ground round about them that they may be comforted with the warmth of the Somme. and the raine, cutting away all the rotes that runne byware. The trees that you remoue, must be marked which way they and at the firft : for fo teacheth Virgill :

Remos ming.

And in the barke they fet a figne. To know which way the Tree did grow: Which part did to the South encline. And where the Northerne blaftes did blow.

Alfo you muft confider well the nature of the Sovie, that von remoue out of a bie ground, into a mort, and from a barraine bill, to a moift Blaine, and rather fatte, then otherwife. The young plants being thus remoued, muft in the fecond or third pere be proposo , leaving Itil about thee or foure branches bos touched, fo thall they the better grow : thus must you blually doe enerie other piere. The old tree we remone with the tops cut off. and the rates unperified, which muft be belped with often bungs ing and watering. Applestres that bloffome and beare no fruit. o; if it beare, they fobainly fall away, you fall remedie by flitting of the rote, and thrufting in of a ftone, or a wooden wedge. Alfo if you water your Tres with Wine that is olde, it greatly analy leth (as they fay) both for the fruitfulnelle, and pleafantnelle of the fruit. If the Tre becap by reason of the great heate of the srees beare Sunne, pou must raile the earth about it , and luater the rotes every night , letting by lome befence against the Sunne. To their truit, caufe their fruit to be quickly ripe, you muft wet the little rates a remedie. With Winegar, and Wine that is olde, covering them againe with earth, and oft bigging about them. The Wine of men, if it be kept the og foure moneths, both wonderfull much god to plants. which if you ble about Mines, or Applestres, it both not onely bring you great encrease, but also giveth an excellent taff and far nour both to the fruit and the wine : you may also ble the mother of oyle, fuch as is without falt, to the fame purpole, which both muft fpebily be bled in Winter.

When not, or hold net

THR A. Wile fie that frotts and milts, doe oftentimes great

harme to Eres, baue you any remedy against it ?

MARIVS. Against frosts and mists, pou must lay by round about pour Dechard, little Jaggots made of Calkes, rotten

bowes,

boughes, in Arabic, before behan the fooding a mility mapper painted y the broader inderest anopased the property for map the free transfer pour Albert, follow the free is great, you may let a fixe a the function subgreet disperiety the frost.

HOTE HE MINE Wellet if the Cries belliche, min profes not?

MAR visc Withen they have any active to the farming to point the Mater the Resolution mingles to the Water and to fow Lupines Young about them. The later also take therein Applies have been fab, pointed rains about, is bery gon (as Plinje faith) for Apple trains to a support the second as a support to the second as a

THE A. Tres are oftentimes also burt with wormen the

MARIVS. Hyour Writs be troubled with broemes, there are piners remedies for the intee of Manmelond bettropet the Caterpillers. The leenes of graine, that are thepen in the inpre of Dengræne, og Bonfelæke, meialfo fale frem any mormes : alfo Affect nimigied with the mother of Dyle, at the fiele of an Pre, medied with a third part of Minegaria Pozenner, they lay, that the Trees that are freezhed with Brindbare, as Alme, are fo from burtfull bermine: Galbanom likefuife burnt open the coal which them alway. The blades also of Darliche ; the heads ing off, for buint (as the dinastic may polls through the Markeip) both netroy the Catexpillets: forme mingle from with the links, and furnisher them with water Democrate Souteth; that a me man in her bucteinenelle, bugirt, and her baire hanging about ber Coulders; if the goe bace fote mount about the place, the Car terodiera will restantin fall but uerbans I deschie pou mith this tebions, or long silcourse of Hearbs, Plants, and Tras, and therefore though there he much morato be from af , feath Goald freme to ouer Avegrie pon, I full make an mit-

A THE ALL A Strombie from your hour bone non a Congolar great pleakure, in pectaring into one the right expecting of Parant, are an Ozchard, which not throughly antroded of he offices, penhaue briefely, and perfectly, to our great commodific inferiors. And independent you have largely from of our Kings at house, it comming the pour to fay formething of the disposing of Mischard from my channels to pake yellerhay by a great which of Pakes, and Coppille, planted in very god other, and back by, a William.

.

Wrone

Statte twom the Boe of a bitmer : excellently ivell asbereb, fabere the Fiche lone enclose count about both great Cines, which greatly beautifleth your blocking, and your (3 warrant) no Imall profit of Ttherefore greatly befire to hear glomething of this

part of bulbandaie.

M AR TV 30 E hours it be toft bout in continuet and that you Demaund more then I promifed wet fince you force me . I will not refule it , leaft pou fhould thinke & would faile you in any Of Woods thing. As touching Wans, Ancus Martius fas Petrus Orinitus mitteth) was the first in Kome that ever braif in them : the olde Pather bad alivates a fpeciall regard of Woods a tohereface Virrang are oftentimen also hert with troopering

13011 . Asta IF char of Woods I frame my Song. ati diagora Woods vito Princes doebelang :

To any and Afther of Woods I lift to fing, alin : annic Woods may full well befeene a Ring.

It was ophine by the Romanes; that the Confuls theul haire the charge of the Blows , that there thenling Lomber be manting for building of Boules, and Ships, and other Evinbers worker, both publique, and prinate. The frate of Venice at this bay, obferneth the fame orber , pointing a vrinate Officer for their actions, lubo both in charge as well to fee to the gerely planting of them, as to let that there be wanting no Epmber for their necessario ales. The Wied that you told me you passed by is of Dalles, Beches, and other Baft tres: fome part ferning for Ermber, and other for feivelt. Df theig therefore will This begin to freshe and then of Dline Groves, and Williames, fome of thom be tolle and grow of themletnes, not needing any loking to, but futh, as bally experience theines, are nothing logor, as those that are planted. Whobs, and Forreits, boe chiefely cone fift of Dake, Bach, Fppre tree, Byzche, Wine, Witch trie, chafts bolme, Coine, wilde Dline, Deblar, Crabitre, Juniper, Cou Hell, and Dwirte ! other tomos have other trees, according to the nature of the ground. The great Wind of Bartelwald in Ger manie, as it rumeth through biners Countries, beareth in foma place onely Delle, in others Bech, in others fyzres. The Fore reff of Arberne for the most part beareth Dake: Montificello, Barth, Frire! Comell, and Tamarice. Monte D.S. Gothardo,

great

erent aboundance of Cheffmut trees of thefe believe fort therein they grow of themislues, may pet well boptmen of type bails ete ground of the Acome, and the Morry & marinal them liketh fame one kinde of ground better then mother as first Theonhras flus, and after Plinie bath Declared. In the mountaines beliebteth the Frere tree, the Cebar, the Larth, the Witchtree amount an heare Kofine : as alfo the Bolme, the Erebinth, the Cheffruf the Baltholme, the Dake, the Bech, the Jumper, the Countill and the Dogge tree: though fome of thefe aife profper facilities nonghin the plaine. The frare, the Dake, the Cheffnut, the Prirebech, the Baltholme, and the Comeil, grain as mell in the Malley, as on the Dountaine: boon the Plaines pop Ball have the Tamarir, the Cline, the Boplar, the Willow, the Bafell, the Malnut, the Bomebeame, the Paple, the Albe, and the Bech. Don fhall not lightly for the Dimmb tree, the Apple, the withe De line. not the Walnut, byon the Dountaine, all fuch as grow as well in the Wlaine, as upon the Dountaine, and larger, and lairer to the eye, grotning in the Plaine, but are better for Tumber. and fruit, byon the Bountaine, except the Brare, and the Ape ple, (as Theophrastus saith.) In Marrish ground belighteth the Millow, the Alber, the Poplar, and the Princy. And although the most Wilmoes one spring of their owne nature minracembe wet are they by planting, labour, and olligenes, brought to be a great beale more fapre and fruttulle for as afore A tolb poet how truit trees are nourified and brought by in June Garbens; to are thefe wilde and fruitlette tres fet and planted for Timber and fewell. Dethat is disposed to plant a Willow, must first ace comping to his forle chafe his fets: and if he haus them not from ging of his ownolet him make an June Carben of the feenes en closing well the ground with Debge, Rampire, or Ditch, leaft Shave, Goates, oz ampother Cattell, come in to bite and brouse it : for whatfoeuer they have once bitten (as it inere infected with a beadly poplon) periffeth and therefore those that meane to plant Woodes, epther for Timber, Fewell, or Matte, must carefully prouibe against thefe burtfullenemies. The Countrey lawes have therein well prouided, that lobers fuch Springs are. they thall fiche no Coates, noz fuch Cattell. Aprongft the Paft The Oake Tres, and fuch as ferne for Tymber, the first place of right belongeth.

g

L

100

17

ne

124

0,

10,

eaf

elaugeth in the Dake Callet in Entine Cutres im Hallan Quarcing in the quantity mobile in Manth Challey, in Datel Biehenof ripe Arexino, moreure with, not findity, in any way copeup-ted : their nucle he low in paid ground well tilled, with as great earefuincile as he plants his Dochaeb , um mell enclofe it, that there come no Cattell in it & lotich / when they be formething ground) you mak about Februicle temous to the place hibers you entent to plant your Bliob : if you cut and propne them, it is thought they will profper the better for spatt : but if you roferneithem for Wimber , you muit not touch the tops , that it may auntie Opithe Graighteciant bigher. In remoiting thein pou mail make pour trenches aftote and a balle bept, conering the Kotes well with sarth, taking god hiebe you neither brufe them, not brente them : for better pout were to cut them. The Dake agraith well enough with will manner of ground, but profporeth the better in Sparthes, and toutes places : it growith almost in all grounds, ben tuen in granel and land, opent it be ouer nov : tt liketh inoute the granno another vehilethit the mountaine the bane at this papan Dake in Wollphalia , mot farce from the Cattle of Alteran, inhich is from the fate to the nevert boto, one demonstration for the the eller at thickness ; and ano ther in mother place that being cit out, made a brintee tallame iones: not faces from this place there green unother Dake of tome parou in thickneffe, but not bery high tithe Houers in Ber mante livere went to ble for their Ships hollowed Eres, lubereof Come etre (as Plinie latth) louito caerte thieffe men. The nert mitting the Ball tree is the Birth in Latine Fagus, in Tealism Paggio, in Spinith Haya, in French Fine in Dutch Buehen, plant sevaluroffafter the fame manner that the Dakes be. The Maffe bolme in Latine llex in Italian where it is better knowne Elice, in Somith Boahia, in Frenth Hautlen : it groweth bigh ; if it bour a ground moste for # ! It professeth boun billes , and likes not the Blaine: it beareth Acomes leller then the Acornes of the Dake, a leafe like a 15ap., and is continually greene. The like berh the Coste tree, in Batins Suber, in Spanis Alcornoque, in French Liege, which is counted amount thefe that beare spall, the bathe interest we occupie for the flotes of our fifting Dets.

Beech

and in Bantofels for Winter: all other trees (fauing onely the Cothe, if you Coople them of their barke dos dye. Another Maltbearing Dhe there is , called in Latine Quercus filueftrum . in French Chefne, a kinde whereof fome thinke the Cerre tre to be, called in Latine Cerrus, growing in wilde and barren places. There are fome that doe number the Cheffnut tre amongft the Malt bearers : but of this I have fpoken befoze. The beft Malt, and is the Dhe Baft, the nert the Bech and the Cheffnut, then the his diffewilde Dhe, ec. All bery good and met foz the fatting of Cat, rences: tell, fpecially Bogges. The Dhe Baft, oz Acozne, maketh thicke Bacon, found fielb, and long lafting,if it be well faited and bried: on the other fibe, Cheftnuts and Bech Baft : make fwet and delicate fleft, light of bigettion, but not fo long latting. The nert is the Cerre Tree, that maketh bery found and god fleib : The Pattholine maketh pleafant 15acon, faire and weightie. Plinic faith, that it was opdained by the Law of the twelve Tables, that it thould be lawfuil for any man to gather his owne Ball, falling byon the ground of his neighbour, which the Coid of the chiefe Juffice both thus interprete: that it hall be lawfull for him to doe it thee dayes together, with this propilo, that bee thall onely gather the Acornes, and boe no barme to his neighbour, as Vlpianus witneffeth. Glans Maft (as Caius farth) is taken for the fruit of all tres, as Ango'Ava, fignifieth with the Breeke, though properly Augusteod, be those fcuits that are fhelde, as Buts, and fuch other. Upon thele Baff bearers there groweth also the Wall in French Noix de Galle, in Italian and Dutch, as in Latine, in Spanish Agalla, a little Ball, rugged and breven without, whereof fome be maffie, fome hollow, fome blacke, fome white, fome bigge, fome leffer. It groweth (as Plinic farth) the Somme rifing in Gemini, commonly all out Subbenly in one night: in one day it wareth white, and if the heat of the Sunne then take it it withereth: the blacke continueth the longer, and groweth fometime to the bigneffe of an Apple: thefe ferueth belt to curry withall, and the other to finish the Leather, the worlt is of the Dake : and thus of fuch Trees as beare Walt. Pow will I forme withall the principallest of the other Eres, to make by your Wanders, amongst which are the Cime, and the Willow : the Cime, in Latine Vimus, The Elme.

e,

es de de

Œ,

0.

no

#### The second Booke, entreating in Italian and Spanish Olmo, in French Orme, in Dutch Vlm.

baum, and Yffenholtz: the planting whereof, because it is to

great ble, and eafily growes, we may not let palle : firtt.because it groweth well with the Bine, and minifreth god fobe to Cat tle : fecondin (as it is all heart) it maketh goo tymber. Theophrastus and Plinic doe both affirme the Elme to be barraine. peraducuture because the scape at the first comming of the leafe. femeth to lye bid among the leaucs, and therefore it is thought to be fome of the leafe (as Columella affirmeth.) De that will planta Ozone of Elmes , muft gather the febe calleb Samara . a. bout the beginning of Barch, when it beginneth to ware vellow, and after that it bath bayed in the Chabboth two baies, folic it bery thicke, and caft fine fifted mould byon it, and if there come not god foze of raine, water it well : after a pere pou may remouett to pour Cime Ozoue, fetting them certaine fote a funber, and to the end that they rote not to deepe, but may be taken bp againe, there must be betwirt them certaine little tren. shes, a fote and a halfe biffance : and on the rote you muft knit a knot, or if they be bery long, twill them like a Garland, and being well nointed with Bullockes bung, let them, and tread in the earth round about them. The female Elmes are better to be planted in Autumne, because they have no febe : at this bay in many places, cutting off Sets from the faireft Climes, they fet them in trenches, from whence when they are a little growne. they gather like bets, and by this dealing make a great gaine of them: in the like fort are planted Groucs of Athes. The Athe Afigroves in Italian Fraxino, in Spanifb Freino, in French Fraine, in Dutch Elchen : the Athe belighteth in rich and moift ground, and in plaine Countries, though it grow well enough also in baie grounds, he fpzeabeth out his Kotes bery farre, and therefore is not to be let aboue Corne ground, it maybe felled every third or fourth piere, for to make flaves for Mines. The Albegroweth bery faft, and fuch as are forwards are let in Februarie, with fuch

> young Blants as come of them, in god bandlome ozber franting a-row : others fet fuch Athes as they meane thall make fupper ters for Barben Mines, intrenches of a pare old, about the Car tends of March : and before the thirty firth moneth they touch them not with any knife, for the preferring of the branches : after

enery ofher pere it is propned, and in the firt pere forned with the Mine : if you ble to cut away the branches, they will grow to a bery godly beight, with a round body, fmooth, plaine, & ftrong: Plinie toutteth of experience, that the Serpent both fo abhore the Albe, that if you enclose fire and him with the branches, he will rather runne into the fire then goe through the bowes. Brich, called in Latine Betula, as Theophrastus waiteth in his fourth Booke, is a Tre bery metefoz Woods : it profpercth in colve Countries, froftie, inowie and grauelly, and in any barraine ground, wherefore they ble in barraine grounds, that ferue for no other purpole to plant Bysches : it is called in Italian Bedolla, in Dutch Byrken, in french Beula. Dine Woos, Fpare Moos, Ditch tre, and Lardy, are common in Italy about Erent. The Dine tre in Latine Pinus, in Italian and Spanish Pino, in The Pine. Dutch Hartzbaum, is planted of his kernels , from Daber to Januarie , in hot and bay Comtries : and in cold and wet places, in Februarie oz Parch : the kernels muft be gathered in June, before the clogges doe open, and where you lift to fowe them, elther boon hilles or elle where : pou must first plow the ground and call in your feede, as yet doe in fowing of Come, and coner them gently with a light Barrow oz a Kake, not covering them aboue a band broad : you thall doe well, if you lay the kernels in mater thee baies befoze. The kernels of the Bine are called in Spanith Pinones. The Firre tre in Latine Abies , in Italian Firre trec. Abere, in Spanith Abero, in Dutch Deamen , loueth not to haue any great abor made about it : If you be to curious in planting of it, it will grow (as they fay) the twozie, it growes of his owne hernell in wilde Pountaines, Plaines, or any where. The pitch Ditch træin Latine Picca, in Italian Pezzo, in Spanith El pino tree, de que le baza lapez, in Dutch Rododemem, is a tree of the kinde of Bines, and very like to the Dine Iweating out his Rozen as be both : for there are fire kindes of thefe Kozen tres, the Dine, the Witch tre, the wilde Dine, the Firre, the Larth, and the Tarre tre, the planting of them all is alike. The Alder, a tre The Alder also mete for Walobs, in Latine Alnus, in Italian Auno, in Dutch Elfen, in French Aulne, it groweth in plaine and marrith places nære to Kiners. Theophrastus faith, it pielbeth a fruits full fixbe in the end of Summer: many places are commodioully planteo

g

20

V b

# The fecond Booke, entreating

planted with Boplar, whereof there are two forts, the Wibite, Poplar. white and and the Blacke : the Withite is called with the Italians, Popublacke. lo bianco : with the Spaniards, Alamo blanco : the Blacke, of the Italians, Populo nigro : of the other, Amalo nigrillo : in French, Peuplier : in Dutch, Peppelem : it is planted of the Banches and Settes, and belighteth in watrie places, or any o ther ground, it proueth bery faft : the blacke bath the ruggebber barke, his leaves round while he is young, and cornered in his age, white bnberneath, and græne aboue. The Tymber berce of is god for buildings, specially within dozes : his woo is whitith within, and the rinde blackith, whence be bath his name. Willowes, of Libya, and of the Alpes, it hath a rugged barke, like the

Theophrastus aboeth a third kinde, which some call the Boplar wilde Werrie : a leafe like Juie, and is in colour like a barke greene, tharpe at the one end, and broad at the other. The blacke Boylar groweth in great plentie about the lower parts of the Rhyne : though Homer call the Wattlow a fruitleffe tre, because his fruit turneth into cobinebs before they be rive : vet is the foueraignty given him among a Woods that are blually feld. Cato giveth the third place of husbanday grounds to the Wills low, preferring it either before the Dline Grone Corne ground. or Deddolv, for it is oftner to be cutte, and groweth the thice Ker : nevther is there fo great gaine with fo little charge in any thing. It belighteth in watric grounds, barke and had. Dolvie, and therefore is planted about Rivers and Lakes, hoin, be it it groweth in Champion, and other ground. It is plane ted of poung Settes, a fote and a halfe long, and well coursed with earth: a luct ground requireth a greater biffance betwirt them, wherein you hall boe well to fet them fine fote alumber, in oader like the Sinke bpon a Dye : in the baic ground they may be fette thicker together, pet Columella would have them fine fote biftant, for palling by them. There are two forts of Willowes, one fort enduring for euer, called Pfiar, feruing for making of Baskets, Chaptes, Bampers, and other Toun. trep fruffe: the other kinde growing with great and high beans ches, feruing for frapes to Wines, or for Duickfets, or frakes of Dedges and is called Stake Willow: it is planted both of the twigge and of the stalke, but the stalke is the better, which must

Ofiar.

be let in a mort ground well sigged, two fote and a balfe in the ground before it fpring, and when the twigges are bare, you must take them from the trie, when they be bery bay, otherwife they profer not fo well : thefe fakes or fettes being taken from the voung Rocke, that hath beene once or twice cut, and in thicknelle as much as a mans arme, you must fet in the ground the fote, oz a fote and a halfe beeps, and fire fote afunder, laying god mould about them, fence them well, that there come no cattell to pill off the barke of them. After thee or foure veres von may pull them, whereby they will grow and fpread the better, and fo you may continually cut them enery fifth, or fourth piere, whereof you may make bets for planting of more, for the olde ones are not fo god to be accupied. The time of cutting of them, is from the fall of the leafe butill Appill, the Mone encreasing, and in Welterly, oz Southerly windes : foz if you doe it, the winde being in the Both . We finde by experience they will not grow fo well : you must cut them cleane away , that the olde branches burt not the young Springs : some thinke the young Willow to grow the better the never the ground, and the (mother be is cut. The Ofiar commonly groweth of his owne felfe, and is al Forplanlo planted of his Robbes, in watrie and marity grounds, the ting of earth raifed by, and lave in furromes : it is planted and furings most plentifully, where the earth is beaten by with the race and over-flowings of the water : it ferneth as a fure befence for making of 15 ankes and Walles in Baribes, and that chiefely in Darch, the Done encreating : the Ofiar map be cut every pere, or enery two pare if you will. Loe, here bane you concerning Willobs what nedefulleft are for our Countrymen to plant : for as for Toos of Cedar. Ciprelle, and other trange Tres, it is not for our Dufoands to buffe themfelnes about : wet and rich grounds that are meete for Come, is also god to be planted with Dakes, Bech, Willow, and Boplar, although the Dake and the Bech refule billie, and lighter ground : Sandie, and bartaine grounds, are good for Birch, Bramble, Broome, and Beath, as I have lufficiently faio before. Dow perhaps you would have me proceede with Coppile Woods, that are contimualty to be feld.

THRA. I would: if it were no paine to you.

B 3

MARIVS.

# The fecond Booke, entreating

MARIVS. Coppiffe, ozfale Totob, were firft brought buf as Plime fafeth) by Qu. Martius, This kinde of Willow groweth commonly of his otone accord in forretts , and watrie places : but all Towns are not for this purpole, for fome Tres there are which if you cut and poule often, will fabe and ove, as the Albe. the Juniper, the Cherrie, the firre, the Apple, and the Birrie: and some againe if they be not cut, will perith: the Time requis reth perely cutting, the Dline, the Wirtell, and the Bomegras nate, each other piere. In cutting of them (as they are biners) fo is their order : for the Bake, as he groweth flowly, fo is be not to be cut, befoze be be of feauen, oz eight peres growth : and the neerer the ground you cut him, the better be growes, though he may be polled feauen oz eight fote aboue the ground : The like is of the Boch, fauing that he map foner be cut. The great Willow, and the Boplar, are cut after one fort, as I feived a little befoze : though the Oliar map be cut euery two pere, 02 euery pære. The Cheffnut map be feld euery feauenth pære, both fog felvell, og fog Eline fanes. Eres are cut and pold funbate loapes, for either they are felbe close by the ground, or the body is poloe, when it comes to be of the bigneffe of a mans arme of more, as the Willow is. Coppiffed Woods are commonly fenered into fo many parcels, as may ferue for yearely felling, fome fill growing while others area felling, and because fome of them grow fatter then other fome, every forthath his place, and his feafon appointco. Some are felled cucry fourth pere, fome enery fifth pere, as the Willow, the Boplar, the Alber, and the Bitth: fome, once infeanen piere, as the Chek. nut, and fome in moze, as the Dake. It remaineth, that I now thew you the manner of felling of timber, and what timber is metef for every worke.

THRA. I have a great befire to heare what time is matell for felling of timber, which much analeth (as they lay) to the long enduring of it: after, I would know what timber is mate to.

zuerp purpofe ..

MARIVS. The featon of felling, no vonbt is to great purpose, whether it be for timber or fewell: for first as as are feld either in the Spring, or in Summer, though they feme dry without, are notwith kanding full of morture, and wetness in thin.

within, which in burning, will never make god fire t and there. fore Coppille and fire-wood, your beft felling is in Winter : and for building, it is belt cutting of your trees in December, and Tanuarie, the Mone being in the wane, from the twentie, to the thirty day. Wet are there fome that fay, they have found by erne rience, that Tres being cut in Januarie, are full of San : and therefore thinke it better either to cut them before, or after, Cato faith , the beft time is about the twelfth of December , for the Timber Tre that beareth fruit, is belt in leafon iphen his febe is rive, and that which bath no feede, when it villes it is time to cut. Such as are flawed , ferning foz Willers of Churches or o. ther round workes , muft be cut when they fyzing : Shingles. and fuch as the Watchet muft flaive, are to be cut betipirt midde Winter, and the beginning,in the Waelterne Wines. Plinic at firmeth the bett feafon for felling of timber, to be lubile the Mone is in conjunction with the Sunne. Vieruvius an ercellent fellow in building, both will pou to fell your timber from the beginning of Augumne, till the time that the Welterne windes begin to blote, the which windes begin to blow (as Plinic faith) about the firt Toes of Tebruarie: for in the buring , all Tres are as it were with childe, and bend all their force to the putting out of their leafe, and their fruit. Since then they be Sapple, and not found, by the neceditie of the leafon, they are made by the reafor of their locenelle feeble, and of no force : even as the bodies of momen, after they have conceived, from their conception, till the time of their beliverance, are not judged to be found, or perfit. In like fort the Eres in Aurumne, when the fruit and leaves bes gin to fall, the Kotes brawing from the earth their lufficient fue Benance, are restored againe to their olde estate : belibe, the force of the aire in Whinter both fatten and make found the Tres.and therefore it is then thought the best time to fell your timber. The manner of cutting of it is this, first to cut it till you come to the middle of the pithe, and to to let it Cand, that the Sap that is in it, may befrend and bop out : fo fall not the mothere within putrifie, noz corrupt the timber, but palle clearely away. Wahen you have cutte it , and pou le it bate that it hath left bopping. you may cut it boine, and fo thall you be fure it that beft ferue pour turne. There are some Balters in building , that thinks it £ 4 belt

13

18

P

33

# The fecond Booke, entreating

best after you have sature out your timber in bazoes, to lay them in water so, thee or source vaies, or if they be of Beech, for a longer time, eight or nine vaies: and being ordered in this wise they shall neither (they say) be rotten, or worme eaten.

THRA. Pow let be beare what trees are beft for timber.

MARIVS. There are biners and fundzie bles of timber: fuch as are barraine, are better then the fruitfuil, excepting thole forts where the male beareth, as the Cipacife, and the Cornell : in all tres the parts that grow toward the Boath , are harder. and founder, which are almost covered with mose, as with a cloake against the colpe : the inoust are those that grow in shabolvie and watriff places, the maffier and better during, are thep that grow against the Sunne : and therefore Theophrastus beut beth all Timber into thee forts, into clouen, fquared, and round, of which the clouch doe never rent noz coame : for the pith being bared, brieth by and bieth: they alfoenbure long, because they have little moisture. The fquared, and the round, or the lobole timber , both coame and gape, specially the round, because it is fuller of pith, and therefore renteth and coameth in enery place. And fuch bigh Trees as they ble for pillers and maine poffes, they first rub over with Bullockes bung to feafon them, and to fucke out the lappe : for the moisture both alwaies coame fooner then the day, and day better to be fatone then the grane, ercept the Dake, and the Bore, that doe moze fill the teth of the Date. and relift it. Some againe refule to be glued either with them. felues, or any other, as the Dake, which cleaueth as foone to a frome, as any wood, neither boe they well cleave, but to fach as are of like nature : to be bosed, the grane is worler then the bay: the light and the bay, are harber to be cutte : for 15 andes and Withes, the Willow, the Broome, the Byzeb, the Eime, the Boplar, the Wine, the clouen Reede, and the 152amble are belt : the Bafell will alfo ferve, but the first is the Willow : they have alfo a certaine baronelle and fairenelle, mete to be bled in graven workes. Among those that ferue for Timber, are moft in ble the Firre, the Dake, the Dine, the Larth, the Efcle, the Elme, Will low, Cedar, Coppelle, the Bore, Byzch, Plane tra, Albar, Afbe. wilde Dake, Date tre, Bech, wilde Dline, Batholme, Walnut. Maple, and Bolly, and biners others, bled according to their nature,

nature, and the manner of the Countrie where they grow. The firre tre , whereof 3 baue fpoken before, queth out Rogen, The Firre. and his timber is meet for biners workes, and greatly effermed for his height and bigneffe, whereof are mabe the Ship Paffs, and Billers for houses: For it is very frong, and able to abide great force. It is bled allo in building , for great Bates , and Doze veftes : in fine, goo for any building within , but not fo well enduring without dozes, and bery fone fet afire. They be fed (as Theophrastus faith) in the olde time to make their Wallies and long Boates of Firre, for the lightneffe fake, and their Ships for burben , of Bine tro , and Dake, Df Dake, I baue Spoken a little before, the timber whereof is beft, both for inward buildings, and for the weather, and also well enduring in the mater : Heliodus would have pokes made of Die. The withe Dhe ferneth alfo well in water workes, fo it bee not nære the bea : for there it endureth not , by reafon of the faltnelle : it will not be pierced with any Angur, ercept it be wet befoze : neither fo will it fuffer (as Plinie faith) any Baile Dais uen in ft, to be plucked out againe.

The Maltholme, in Briete weirog, a Tre well knotone The Maft. in Italie, the Whood whereof is tough and frong, and of colour holme. like a barke red , meete (as Heliodus faith) to ferne for plow hares : it may also bee made in Wannescot, and Batle boide. The Larth Tree, in Italian Larice, in Dutch Lerchenbaura, was The Larth in the olde time greatly estimmed about the Kiner Poc, and the Gulfe of Veniz, not onelp for the bitterneffe of the Sappe, whereby (as Vicruoius latth ) it is free from corruption and mormes, but also for that it will take no fire, which Mathiolus fiemeth with his arguments to confute. It is good to fullaine great burbens, and firong to refift any biolence of weather, howbeit they fap, it will rotte with falt water. The Eicle is a hinde of Dke ; called in Latine Elclus, is fone burt with any moisture : the Cime, the Willow, and the Boplar, whereof 3 have fpoken before, will bery fone rotte and corrupt : they will ferue well enough within Done, and for making of Debges. The Clime continueth very hard, and firong, and therefore is mate for the Chekes and Boftes of Bates, and for Bates, for it will not boine, not warpe : but you must so dispose it, that the top may

ftant.

# The fecond Booke, entreating

frant bolunewarp: It is met (as Heliodus farth) to make Blain bandles of. The Albe (as Theophraftus fapth) is of two fests. the one tall frong , white , and without knots, the other more full of Sap, ruggebber and harder. The Bay leafe (as Plinie fauth is a porton to all kinne of Cattell : but berein be is becel ued, as it should appeare by the likelinete of the name, whoc, omage, is the voung Eric, whole leaves, (as is certainely tried) hilleth all fuch beaffs as chaw not the cub. Albe belides his mante fold ble other maves maketh the beft e faireft horfemens flaves. inherent was made the staffe of Achillis, which Homer to greatly commendeth : it is also cut out in thinne bordes. The Besch. tohereof 4 have froken befoze, although it be brittle and tender. and may be fo cut in thin bozdes, and bent, as he feemeth to ferue onely for Calkets bores and Coffers: bis colour being bery faire. vet is be fure and truffie in bearing of weight, as in Areltres. for Carts or Waines. The barke of the Bech, was bled in olde time for bellels, to gather Graves in and other fruit and allo for Truets, and beffels to bee facrifice withall: and therefore Curius finare, that he brought nothing away of all the fpoile of his ence mies, but one poze Bechen Cruet, wherein hee might facrifice to bis Gods. The Alber is a Trawith Areight bodie, a foft and reddiff wod, growing commonly in the watrie places, it is chiefly efferned for foundations, and in water worken, because it never rotteth lying in the water : and therefore it is greatly accounted of among the Menetians, for the foundations of their places, and houses: for being briven thicke in piles, it endureth for ever, and fultaineth a wonderfull weight. The rinde is pulled aff in the Spring and ferueth the Diar in his occupation: it hath like knots to the Cedar to be cut and bosonghtin. The Blane tre is but a franger, and a new come to Italie, brought thither onely for the commoditie of the Chabow, keeping off the Sunne in Sommer and letting-it in in Winter. There are fome in Athens (as Plinic faith) tohole branches are 36. cubits in beeth: in Licya there is one for greatneffe like a house, the thatow place bnderneath containing 8 r. fote in bigneffe : the timber with his foftneffe hath his ble but in water, as the Alber, but baier then the Cline, the Albe, the Butbery, and the Chery. The Linder, in Greeke Oikhveia, and foin Italian, in Spanish Latera, in Dutch Lynden: this tree Theophrastus

Theophraftus counteth belt for the workeman, by reafon of his faftneffe : it brebeth no wormes, and bath betwirt the Barke and the Wand, funday little rindes, whereaf they were wont in Plinics time to make Kopes & Withes. The Byzch is bery bear full and faire : the inner rinte of the Tree, called in Latine Liber. was bled in the olde time in fred of Baper to write buon, and mas bound by in bolumnes, whereof bokes bab first the name of Libri: the twigs and bowes be fmall, and bending, bled to be carried before the Bagiltrate among the Komanes, at this bay terrible to poze boyes in Scholes. The Cloer tres, called of Dioscorides ARTH, in Latine Sambucus, in Italian Sembuco, ir Spanifi Sauco, in French Sulcau, in Dutch Hollenter, both of all other trees fonest and casiliest growas erperience besides Theophrastus both teach be, and though it be berp full of pitch, pet the ipod is frong and god: it is hollowed to divers bles and bery light Cauca are made of it. It is Grong and tough when it is bive and being lato in water, the rinde commeth off as fone as he is bape. The Cloer woods bery hard and ffrong, and chiefely bled for Boare Speares, the rate (as Plinic lapth) map be made in thin borbes. The figge tree is a tree bery well knowen and fcuitfull, not bery bigh; but fomewhat thicke (as Theophraftus farth) a cubite in compate, the tymber is frong, and bled for many purpoles, and fith it is foft; and holdeth faft inhatfocuer fiches in it, it is greatly bled in targets. Boretre, in Italian Boxo, in Spanish Box, in French Bouys , in Dutch Bullbaum. an ercellent Tre, and for his long latting, to be preferred before others. The Bore that turned is, (faith Virgill) Junfper called both of Theophrafius and Diofcor ide Aguils, because it bat ueth away bermine: for with his fanour, Toades and Snailes, Juniper. and fuch like, are briven away, in Latine it is called Juniperus, in Ataltan Ginipro in Spanish Euchro, in French Geneura. in Dutch Wachoiter: it is bery like to Cedar, but that it is not fo large, not fo high, though in many places it groweth to a great height: the timber whereof well endoreth a hundzeth veres. And theres fore Hannibal commanded that the Temple end of Diana thould be built with rafters and beames of Juniper, to the end it might continue. It alfo keepeth fire a long time, info much asit is faib. the coales of Juniper kindled , baue kept fire a pere together:

É

# The fecond Booke, entreating

The Ce- the Gumme whereof our Painters ble. The Ceder Tre , in der. Latine Cedrus, and almost like in other tongues : the baronesse of this Timber is onely praifed, and that it will never rotte, nor be twozme eaten, but continue ever. Salomon built that noble Temple of Bob, at Dierufalem, of Cebar : It is bery met for the building of Pallaces and Cattles : the Cebar, the Cben, and the Dlive tre, Doe never chinke noz coame. Amages of Bons and Saints were allvages made of Cedar, becaufe it ener pele beth a moisture, as though it sweat. Theophrastus waiteth of Tebars in Syria, of foure elles and moze in compatte. The Rosen and Witch of the Cedar tree, is called in Greeke nedleia. The Cypreffe, and the Pine, Doe endure a long time without enther The Cyworme or rotting. Plinie commenbeth Gates of foure bundzeb preffe. The Pine, peres olde. The Pine (laith Theophraftus) is of a great firenath. and bery meet for the ftraightneffe and handlommeffe, to be eme ploved in building. The Walnut tre is a great tree, and com-The Walnut tree. monly knowne, whole Eimber is much bled in feilings, and ta bles. Theophrastus writeth, that the Walnut tre before it fale leth, maketh a certaine kinde of noyle, which it once happened in Antandre, the people being greatly afrayo, fleb fobainely out of The wild the Bathes. The wilve Dlive, in Latine Olcalter, in Italian Oline. Olive Saluatico, in Spanish Azenuche, in French Olive Savuage. in Dutch Wilder Olyboum, of his Wied is made the haftes and The Holly handels of wimbles and Augurs. Holme, or Holly , is a Tre inhole leaves are full of prickles, round about the leafe, and the barke, being both continually græne, the berries like the Cepar: of the rinde and rotes they make Birdlime : the Wood is bery hard, the branches will well winde and bowe, and therefore ferueth ercellent well for quickfet bedges: the Dutchmen call it The Ma. Hulfen, The Maple, called by Theophraltus sperdauvos, in Dutch Maffelterbaum , for the beautie of the two is nert to the Cepar. ple. having a very fayze and pleasant grame, of the resemblance called Deacockes taile : with this wood Tables are covered moft gozgerous to the eyes , and other fine workes made, frecially of the knobs or wens that grow out of it, called Bruscou and Molluscou : of which the knobs bath the fairer and the more courled graine. Mollufcou is a moze open graine, and if fo be it were of Sufficient breadth for Tables, it were to be preferred before the

Cedar :

Cedar : now it is but feldome feene, and that in witting tables, of about beds. There is also a knob, of a wen, growing spon the Alder, but a great deale woole then that of the Paple. The Date The Date Era, inhereof wee haue fpoken befoge , bath a bery foft wob. tree. The Corke, his timber is tough : but now for a farewell, I will The thew you what workes enery timber is meet for. The Firre, the Corke. Dine, and the Codar, ferue for Ships, for Ballies; and Lighters when (as Theophrastus faith) are made of firre, for the lightnelle each timlake : Ships of burden, are made of Dine. Apon the French berferues, and Germanic leas, they chiefly ble Dke about their Ships: the For Ships, felle fame timber alfo ferneth well for building of boufes, fpccisally the Cedar, and the Coppelle. The Firre, the Poplar, the For houses Ath, and the Elme, are meet for the inner parts of the house, For waterbut they ferue not fo well in the weather, as the Die both. For courfes. conneciances of water, the Alber, the Dine, and the Ditch tree, are best made in Bives : being well courred in the earth, they last a wonderfull while, but if they lie bucouered, they foner perift: The Dke alfo, the Bech, and the Walnut, endure bery well in the water. The Timber that longeff endureth,is the Dline, the Dhe, the wilde Dke, and the Paftholme: Foz as Plinic witnes feth, the Dlive hath beene fene to frand two bundred perces, the like the Cedar , and the Eppzelle, as bath beene faid befoze : foz Kafters and Portiffe perces, the Clime, and the Alhe, by reason of their length fernes beft. The belt to beare weight, is the fir, For bear and the Larth, which howfeever you lap them, will neither bend, ring of noz breake, and neuer faile till wormes confume them. Contras weight, riwife, the Dime tra, and the Dke, will gine and bend, and fo will the Boplar, the Willow, the Elme, and the Bysch. The Date (a worthie Tree) bendeth by against his burben. The Woplaron the other five giveth at every light thing. The Cline, and the Athe, though flowly, are easely bent. These also are easely wound and bent: the Willow, the 15 pach, the 1320me, the Dke, and the Dken bordes. Shingles, to couer houses withall, are bell For Shin. made of Dae, Bech, and fuch others as beare Maft : and alfo of gles. fuch as vielo Kosen, as the Dine, and the Ditch tre: the Ditch tre, and the Die, ferne belt for Tups , Tankards, and fuch like. Those that are cut for Mainscot and thin bordes, the Cerre trees. the Ecrebinth, the Paple, the Bore, the Date, the Patholme,

the

# The fecond Booke, entreating

the rate of the Ciber, and the Boplar. For the beautifping of For tables Tables, ferueth chiefely the Maple, the Ath, the Walnut , and fometimes the Cherie, and the Weare : but the pretioufel are the Cypzelle, and the Cedar Mables. For Areltres, Cabeles, and For Axel-Spoakes, ferueth the Dhe, the Maple, and the Bech. Virgill doth trees. also appoint the Cedar, and the Coppelle to this bie. Bereof they make the Spoakes of Whieles, and hereof Carts and Waines. The felfe fame Timber alfo ferueth (as Heliodus faith ) for Yokes and Blowes, Bokes , and Bagons : but that hee abbeth hereunto the Albert the Cerre tree and as the Albe for his foftneffe le the plowes. Maftholme for his hardnes. For Bullies, Wimbles, Sheathes, and Mallets, the meteff are the wilde Dlive, the Bore, the Mall. holme, the Deblar, the Elme, the Athe, the Baple, and the 182am ble: but the greater fort of Mallets.or Botles.and the Wabeles. and Bullies for Wils, and Wiels, are made of Bine, and Walnut tre. Cato would have the Waines and Carts made of Holly. For Hafts Bay, and Cline. Hyginus toould have the bandles , or feeles of and Han. Bulbanbmens twies, mabe of Dogge tre woo, Bolme, Cerre dles. tree, and (which we have commonly in vie) Bore. Margets (as For Tar- Theophrastus fapth) made of Willow, and Time, for being vierced gets. they close the barber together : but the Willow is the lightest and therefoze the better. The Figge tra alfo, and the Lindze. the Byzch, the Boplar, and the Cloer, ferne as well for Margets. For cha-The beft woo for Dorfemens fraues is the Albe, and (as Virgill fing staues faith) for valiant flaues, the Mirtill: the @we tre ferueth (as the fame Virgill witneffeth) for Bowes : The Ewe Treefor the Perlian Bow they bend.

For Gates, they the Elme: for Pampers, or Balkets, all such as easily bend. For Cupplings and Katters of houses, the Elme: and the Ashe for thin bord: the best to cleane, the Firre, the Poplar, and the Beeth: for long during, and abiding the weather, and standing in water, the Obe is commended, for which the other serve not, save for the water, the Beech, and the Alder: for sire, and light, are bled the Firre, the Pitch tree, and the Pine. The

For water and light, are vied the Firre, the Pitch tree, and the Pine. The works. belt coales are made of the fallelf wood, a the Dke, and the wilds Dke: but the finers rather delire the coales that are made of Pins tree, because they better abide the blowing, and die not so fall as the other. The Cerre tree, though the tymber be of no great vie.

ret

vet ferneth it well to make Coale of for the Braffe Hornes, be For Coacaufe as fone as the Bellomes leane, the fire ceafeth and there is ling. little walt in it : but for building , the timber thereof is altoge ther bappofitable, because it both easily breake, a moulder amay : but being in poltes bubewed , it ferueth well enough within Doze. The aptell to take fire, is the Figge tree, and the Dline tre. The figge tre becaufeit is foft and open : the Dlive tre. for the fallnelle and the fatnelle. The Laribtre (as Vieruvios faith) relifteth the fire , though Mathiolus (as I faid befoze) go. eth about to disponeit. In all the bodies of trees, as of lively creatures, there is fkinne, finewcs, blod, fleth, beines, bones, and marcolo : their fain is their barke, of great ble among Country people : the beffels that they gather their Mines, and other fruits in they make of the barke of Linde tree, Firre, Willow, 15 ech, and Alber. The Corke bath the thickeft barke, which though be Thebarke lofe, be cicth not, for to beneficiall bath nature bene to him, that because he is commonly spoiled of his barke. The bath given him tipo barkes. Di his barke, are made Bantofles, and Slippers and Floates for fiching Dets,and Angles : if the barke be pulled off. the wood linkes: but the barke alwaics fwimmeth. The nert to the rinde in most trees, is the fat, the loftest and the impatr part of the tree, and most subied to propines : thereforeit is commonly ent away. The fappe of the tree is the bloo, which is not alike in all tres , for in the figge treit is milkte, which ferueth as a Remoctfor Cheele. In Cherie tres.it is gummie: in Climes, faltifb : in Apple tres, clammie and fat : in Mines, and Beare fries matrift : they commonly fring the bett, whole same is clammieft. The tuyce of the Bulberie, is fought for (as Plinic faith) of the Philitians. Bert to the fat, is the felb, and nert to that the bone, the best part of the timber: all trees have not any great quantitie of this fat and deth, for the Borethe Cornell, and the Dline, bane neither fat, noz fleth, noz marrow , and bery little blod : as neither the Sernife, and Alber , have any bone, but both of them full of marrow. Medes for the most part have no fethat all : in fleth of tres, there are both beines and arteries, the beines are broader, and fairer : the arteries are onely in fuch tres as will cleave, by meanes of which arteries it commeth to palle, that the one end of a long beame lated to your eare,

t

2,

he

30

116

as

Ce,

et

# The fecond Booke, entreating

if you do but fillip with your finger byon the other end, the form is brought forthwith to pour care, whereby it is knowne, when ther the pecce be fraight and enen or not. In fome tres there are knots on the outline, as the wenne, or the kernell in the flesh of man, in the which there is neither beine, noz arterie, a hard knon of flelh being clong, and rolled by in it felfe : thefe are moft of price in the Ceder, and the Maple. In fome, the fieth is quite without beines having onely certaine (mall frings, and fuch are thought to cleave beft: others, that have not their frings, or are teries, will rather breake then cleave: as the Mine, and the Dline. will rather breake then cleane. The whole body of the fig is flethie : as the boop of the Pattholme, the Comell, the wilve Die, the Bulbery, and fuch others as have no pith, is all bony, The graine that runneth overthwart in the Bech, was taken (as Plinic fapth) in the olde time for his arterics.

THRA. There are other commodities beffoe the timber to

be authored of thele tres.

MARIVS. Hery true: (for as I faio before) of the 20cd lar, the Dke, the Cheffnut, the Dine, and the Bech, thefe tres that growin the Mass, belides their timber, bearefruit alfo. god and mete to be eaten. So of the firres, the Ditch tres, and the Dines, we gather Kosen and Ditch, to our great commo Ditie and gaine: as of the Dhe the Bech the Cheffaut the sock lar and the Dine, we have fruit both met for man, and alfo god for feebing of Bogs, and other Cattell. In time of bearth, both our forefathers, and toe, have tried the good feruice that Acornes in bread hath done, veg, as Plinic and others have written, they were wont to be ferued in amongt fruit at mens tables. Reither is it buknowen what great gaines fome countries get by Acoznes. Hosen and Witch : The Gall also groweth byon these Acoznebearing Trees, whereof I have fpoken before. Amongst all the tres out of which runneth Rosen, the Tarretre, a kind of Dine, is fulleft of lap, and lofter then the Witch, both meet for fire, and light, whole bozdes we ble to burne in ftee of candels. The Te Dar Iweateth out Rozen and Ditch, called Cedria. Mozeoner, Birdlime. of Trees, is Birolime made, the best of the Terre tree, the Patholme, and the Chefinut, specially in the Woodes about Sone, and nere the Sea fide, where they are carefully planted in

great plentie , by the Bicolime-makers : For they gather the berries from the trees, and boyle them till they breake, and after they have framped them, they walh them in water, till all the flelb fall away. Plinic affirmeth, that it groweth onely byon Dhes. Mattholme, Skaddes , Wine trees, and Firre. Birdime is alfo made of the rotes of certaine Trees, specially of the Bolly whole rotes and barkes withall they gather, and lay them bu in fren thes, covered with leaves in a very mort ground (fome doe it in boung ) and there they let them lie till they rot, then take they them out, and beat them, till they ware clammie, and after wall them in warme water, and make them by in balles with their bands:it is bled (belide other purpoles) for the taking of Birds. Belives all this, there (weateth out of Trees a certaine Comme knowen to all men, as of the Chery tre, the Plome tre, the Juni per, the Dline, the Blackthozne, the Infe. and Almond. Dut of the Juniper, commeth bernith: out of the Dirrhe, Stozar: out of Vernichi ine white Boplar, Amber. Plinic watteth, that Amber commeth Amber. aut of sertaine Dine tres in the fat, as a Gumme both from the the Cherie trie. And thus thefe things that I have here at vour request beclared, tonishing the order of Planting and folding. befech you take in good worth : you heare my wife calleth be to Supper, and pou le the thabow is ten fate long, therefore it is high time we goe.

THRA. I give you most barty thankes that you have thus friendly entertained mee in this your fapte Dechard, with the finet description of these pleasant Bearbes and Tres.

IVLIA. Sir, pour Supper is ready, I pray you make an end of your talke, and let the Gentleman come in heere into this Arhonr.

MARIVS. Comelet be goe.

mines the ground not planting of trees.

5

er 6,

2he ie,

nd

180 er, the

out

m

cat

Soli Deo laus & gloria, per Chriftum Lefum.

The end of the fecond Booke.

The



# The third Booke:

Of Feeding, Breeding, and Curing of Cattell.

HIPOCONYS. EVPHORBYS. HEDIO. EVMEYS.



Hat the breeding and feeding of Cattellis a part of Hal banday, and neere somed in kindaed to the tilture of the ground, not onely appeareth by Virgill, the Paince of Hoets, who hath in his Georgickes throughly set forth the order thereof, but also by the witnesse of the more auncient philosophers, Xenophon, and Aristoele.

The like both our common experience at home baily teach bs: for albeit the trade of Willage and keeping of Cattell is divers, and the manner of occupying many times contrary the one to the other : as where the Oralier and Breder, requireth a ground full of Graffe and Baffure, the Bufbandman on the other fine. a ground without Graffe, and well tilled: yet in thefe their diners belires, there appeareth a certaine fellowilip & mutuall commo bitte rebounding in their occupping of one the other, which Fundavius in Varro, both feeme by an apt compartion to proue: as in a couple of Shalmes, or Recorders, faith be, the one differethin found from the other, though the muficke & forig be all one (the one founding the Treble, the other the Bale) in like manner may we terme the Grafiers trade the treble, e the tillers occupation the bale, following Diczarchus, who reporteth, that at the beginning, men itued only by backbing a feeding of Cattell, not hauing as yet the failt of plotning and tilling the ground, not planting of tres. After

Afterwards in the lower beare, was found out the manner of tilling of the ground, and therefore beareth the bale to the feeber, in that it is lower ; as in a couple of Kecozbers, the bale to the treble. So this bling to beepe cattell for plowing, cartage, bunging of our ground & other commodities: and on the other fibe, to till the ground for fæding & maintenance of our cattell, it comes to paffe, that though the manner of occupying in tillage, and keping of cattell be biuers, pet one of them fo ferueth the turne of the other, that as it fameth, they cannot well be afunder : for withe out the feruice of Bogle and Dren, we can neither plow not bung our ground. Chaffe, ftrain, and other offall of come is mes ter to be frent byon the ground, then to be fold, both for the Farmers behofe, and the Lozds, and better bestowed bpon the housbold cattell, then boon the forreiners. Belides, the bung of the cattell enricheth the ground, and bringeth great encreafe: and Thereas there is no place (as Columella faith) but in the tillage of the ground, they have as much neede of cattel, as men : the cattell ferne not onely for the tilling of the around, but also to bring in come, to beare burdens, carry bung for the ground, and allo for baco, and increase of the Stocke : inhereby they have their name Iumenta, of helping, because they helpe and further be, cither in our labours, by plowing or bearing. Beither is it onely lufficient to nourify and bying by this kinde of great cattell called lumenta, but also the other leffer fort of Beaftes, as Shepe, Swine, Beates: and of fowles, Gele, Beacocks, Duckes, Biogions, Hennes, Chickins, and other Boultrie, and things belonging to Busbander, where with the god Busband, belibe his ofone lufter nance maketh great gapne: and if the ground be for it, and Bales favourable, there arifeth oftentimes as great profit, as in foto ing of Come, and that with fmaller charges. For a profe that fee bing is gainefull, the tootos Pecunia, money, and Peculium, fub. france, or riches, being both berined from the Latine name of cats tels may very wel ferue: for in the old time they bled their cattell inftead of money, and their common penalties and fines, taken in cattell, the greatest was thirtie Dren and two Sheepe, euery Dre balued at b. s. bi. d. and enery Shepe at bi. b. The fmal left was a shape: the very like is pet observed with the noblest and warlikeft people, whose substance lyeth altogether in cattell. Cato

t

#### The third Booke, Cato being once asked by what part of busbandaya man might

foneft be made richt made anfwere 189 Grafing ; and being ale

thineffe and antiquitie of Cattell

hed againe, which way be might get fufficient livelyhood + be an-The wor-fwered, By meane Grafing. Dozeouer, that the worthyneffe and firft oziginall of keping of Cattell is of greatelt antiquitie, and that the trade thereof bath alwayes, from the time of the Batris keeping of arks bitherto,beene counted molt honeft, as well the Scriptures, as prophane Differies doe witnes, which kinde of life, boin acceptable it hath alwaies bene to Bod, by thole that lived in the firft inozlo, both plainely appeare. The Scripture feweth how gras cloudly the Lord accepted the facrifice of Abel, a keeper and feber of then, belives, Seth, Noc, Abraham, Lot, Jacob, Job, Amos, Holy and bleffed men are commended for keeping and feding of Cat. tell, whereby attayning to great wealth, they luftayned them, felues, their Wines, their Children, and their buge Families. The Sonnes of lacob, when as they were demaunded by the Bing of Egypt what manner of life they ledde & made anfivere. That they were febers and keepers of Cattell. From which trade, Lot, Moles, Saul, and Dauid, were by the will of God advanced to the Crowne, as among the Bentiles the moft and cient, and famous Brinces were, some of them brought bu by Shepheards, and fome Shepheards themfelues. Romulus and Cirus,being mightie Emperours, were brought by among Shep. heards, Befides, Valerius Maximus, Constantine, Probus, and Aurelianus, came all from the Dre-ftall, to the Imperial Seate. Homer commendeth Vlilles his Swineherd, for his great balls ance and nobleneffe. That the valiant and nobleft people haus profested this trade, the Italians, Germanes, and the Switzers can teffifie, whose countries being now grown to moze belicacie then they were wont to be, were wont alwayes, when their bo. ings were most famous, to glozie and baunt themselves of this life, as at this day the godlieft and wifelt doe. And therefore the ancient writers, as well Brekes, as Latines, doe count the chies feft wealth to be in the number of Shiepe, Cattell and Fruit : for which estimation the Lattell were supposed to be cladde in Colben Coates : whence fprang firft the fable of the Bolben Fleefe of Colcos, which lafon and his companions attempted to fetch, and of the Golden Apples, kept by the baughters of Atlas. Belines

Befides , the fignes of Beauen , the Beas , Bountaines , and Countries, doe beare their name of Beafts : among the Stars, the Kamme, the Bull: the Bountaine, Taurus : and the Sea, Bolphorus. Italie tooke his name of Calues. Mozeoner the her ping of Cattell is the waythier, in that it bath fome refemblance of the Rate of a Wouernour; and therefore the Drophets in their Dracles , and Boets in their berles , Doe oftentimes call lainas and Brinces by the names of Shepheards and feeders of the prople. Deathe Lord of the whole world both call himfelfe a Shen beard. Since it appeareth by thefe gramples of what worthineffe hæping of Cattell is, and how nere it is linked with tillage, I baue bere thought and, after the entreating of Millage, Barbes ming, and Dzchards, to beferibe as bziefely as 3 can, the ozber and manner of keping of Cattell: which faill though Varro Deuideth onely into thee parts , I have beuided into foure. In the firft part I put the great Cattell for burben, as Borfes, Affes, Bules, and Camels: in the fecond part, the leffe fort, as Sheepe, Boates. and Divine : in the third, fuch things as are belonging to the keping and lafegard of Cattell, not for the profit thep pe'b of themfelues, but for their necestary ble, as Shepheards Dogs, and Cats: of thefe thee parts in this third Booke, I entreat off: the fourth I referre to the fourth Boke. Bauing thus beclared the contention betwirt kewing of Cattell, and Tillage, with the worthinese and antiquitie thereof, I meane now to profecute fuch things as are belonging to the fame. I have brought in the the Baffers and kepers of enery kinde of Cattell, and refting themselnes byon the holy pay in the græne graffe, and the Some mers habolo, enery one beclaring his faill and knowled te accou bing to his profesion. The parties are, Euphorbius the Beatbeard : Hippocomus the Bolle-harper : Hedio the Shepheard. and Eumeus the Swine-heard.

EVPHOR. Dow firra Hippocomus, whither wander you?
Doe pou not know that it is holy day, a day to dance in, and make

merry at the Ale boufe ?

HIPPO. Query day is holy day with layy and flouthfull marchants: it lieth me opon to loke to my profit, to lie whether my borles fiede well, and that they take no harme. The partures are to burnt with the heat of Summer, that Jam afraid for want

#### The third Booke,

of meate, they will feeke to breake into other grounts, and to burt themselves.

EVPHOR. Cathy being you not them into this field, where there is both a good grotten, and pretty flore of graffe among the headgrouss.

HIPPO. Dou persivade me not to the worft.

E V P H O R. Come on then, bid Mastrix your boy bring hither your horses, and you your selfe, sit you downe wider this Pasell, that will you be both shadow and Puts, and we will send so Eumeus, and Hedio, if you thinke god, and wee will passe away the time with such talke as we shall sinde.

HIPPO. Agreed : Goe Maltrix , fetch bither the Dogles,

with the Totis and the Alles.

Of Hor-

EVPHOR. And you Eumeus, and Hedio, bying your heards together, and come hither, every man thall lay downe his that, as they ble in the Tanetnes, but without money of any charges, beclaring at large what belongeth to the Cattell he keepeth. Down Boiles Hippocomus are yet in good plight. I law the hories of our neighbour Agrius of late, which are leaner and barer a great way.

HIPPO. Peraduenture they have not so god loking buto, though they neither want pasture, no are much laboured, but mine on the other side, are continually laboured, and are not so well see, but better loked but then my neighbours.

EVPHOA. Well, fince both time and place requirethit, 3 pray you, let be heare what you can fay touching the charge and

loking to of Bogles.

Mippo. Surely, I have not so much money to tell, but I may well be at leysure, and therefore since you are so earnest with me, I will not denie your request: although that of this matter, an honest and learned Gentleman of England, Paster Thomas Blundwile hath so throughly written to his commendation, and be nest of his Countrie, as there cannot be more said: I reser you therefore wholy to him: notwithstanding briefely I will them you my fancie. Among all other creatures that we be in our labour, the Posse may worthicst chalenge the chiefest place, as the nobest, the godicest, the necessariest, and the trusticst beauthat we be in our services, and since her sexueth to so many bees, I should

month here bellow fome time in his praife, and in declaring his feruice, but for this, another time Chall better ferue.

EVPHOR. THE onely here belire to know the fignes of a god, and an excellent Bosle, and the right manner of ochering

bim.

HIPPO. First, you hall know that Borles ferue for fun-Dep purpofes. Some, for the Plow, the Cart, and the Backfapole. others, for light Borfes, Courfers, and Borfes of feruice others againe, for Stallions, and breders : and therefore they mult be chofen according to their feruice. Souldiers, and men of Warre, beffre a fierce Horle, couragious, fwift, and well coloured. The Buloanoman would have his Borle gentle large bodied and meet for travell and burden. Dotwithstanding the breeding and brings ing by of them, is almost one : for in their breeding, wee hope to bring them all to the sacole.

EVPHOR. What things are most to be considered in their

bzædina ?

HIPPO. De that hath a fancie to breepe Dorle, mult firft provide himfelfe of a god Race, and then of god ground, and plens tie of Bafture, which in other Cattell ought not to be fo greate ly obserned, but in Bogles there muft be speciall care thereof. And therefore, you muft firft fe that your Stallion be of a good race, well proportioned, and framed in enery point and in like fort. the Barc. Some reckon their gooneffe by their Countries. wherein they take for chiefe, the Benet of Spaine, the Courfer of Baples, the Darmacian Borle, the Peloponelian, the Turkey, and the Theilalian, but thefe ferue chiefely for running, and fivifts neffe. For largeneffe of body, enduring of labour, and fitneffe for breede, the best are to be had out of Freeseland, Holland, and Arroys. The thape and proportion of the Borle, ought hedily to be confidered, for the bery loke and countenance oftentimes Declareth the gooneffe of his nature. Therefore pou muft bille gentip confider his making, from the heale to the head, and firt you must chiefely regard his feet: for as in viewing of a house it is in baine to regard the beautie of the boper Komes if the foundas tion be ruinous: fo the Bosfe that is not found of his feet, will neis ther ferue the Souldioz, the Buloandman.noz the Trauailer. In The your laking byon bim therfore you mult first consider his hores, Hoofes,

# The third Booke, that they be not tender and foft, but hard and found, round, and

bollow, that the bollownelle map kope his fot from the ground. and founding like a Cimball (as Xenophon fayth ) may occlare the foundnesse of the fote, for the boofe that is full and flesby. is not to be liked, and the Borfes that have fuch hoofes doc cafilp halt wherefore divers commend a Horle like the hofe of an Alle. the patternes nert to the hofe, not to long, as the Coat bath, for thaking off his riber, and beading of winogall, not to thost, for being burt in frong ground. The legs and the three, fith they are the ftanderds of the body, they ought to be euen, ftraight, and found, not gouty , with much fleth and beines, for fuch as bane their legges clad with much field and beines, they with great tourneyes grow full of windgals, and fwellings, which will The legs, caufethem to balt , which legges at the firt foling, are as long as ever they will bee, by reason whereof you may gelle what The knees beight the Bogle will be of , being pet a Colt. The knees muft be round, flerible, and fmall, and not bolving inward, noz fiffe, The thies. the three large and well brawned, his breatt great and broad his The breft, necke foft and broad , not banging like a Goates , but bpzight The neck, like a Tockes, and well reining, his Mane thicke, falling on the The mape right fibe, fome like it better on the left, bis head fmall and leane. The head, for a great and heavie head is a figne of a bull Jace, his mousell thoat, his mouth wine, with large wainekles, Will playing with the Mit, and foming : as Virgill :

> There stamping stands the steed, and foomy Bridell fierce he champs.

The Posse that bath a dry mouth is naught: his chickebones wouth. Would be cuen and small, for if they kand to farre asunder, he will be sill to be brioled, and the bneuennesse of the chickes will make him headstrong, and never to rayne well, but to thrust out his head ill sanouredly, his eyes great, bloddy, and kerry, and The eyes. Canding out of his head, which is a signe of quickenesse, and knewlinesse: holiow elittle eyes are naught, and blacke, or pale stars in the eyes are to be dispassed: these faults are best spied in the night by candle light. Columella commendeth blacke eyes. A wall eye is very goo, such as they say. Alexanders Bucephalus had. The eares The eares must be short, standing byright, estirring, sor the eares.

be the tohens of a Borles Romacke, which if they be great and banging, are fignes of a Jave. The Botthills muft be wive the The better to receive apze, lobich allo beclareth a lively courage; nofthrill. his Coulders large and freaight, the fides turning inward : the The floulder ridge-bone ouer the foulders being fomething high, gives the The chine Dogleman a better feate, and the founders, and the reft of the body is Aronger knit together, if it be bomble: his fibes beeve, well anit behinde, and femething bowing by which both is bet, The fides. ter for the horfeman, and a figne of agreat frength : his lovnes, The loines the broader they be, the better he lifteth his forefete, and follows eth with the hinder, and his paunch thall the lette appeare, which both difgraceth bim, and burbeneth bim: his belly muft be gaunt, The belly. his buttocks large, and full of fleth, answerable to his breffs, The butand his fibes : for if he be broad hanched, and well fpred behinde, tocks. and couth wide, his pace will be the furer, which we may perceine in our felnes, if we affaile to take by a thing from the ground fryding, and not with your legges together, we take it by with more cafe and frength. Dis taple would be long, brifflie, The tayle and curled, the length whereof is not onely a beautie, but alfo a great commoditie to him to beate away flyes: yet fome belight to have them curtavled frecially if they be broad buttockt. In fine. the whole body would be fo framed, as it belarge, high, linely fpzighted, and well truffed. Some Boglemen would haue theit Basle to be timined after the proportion of biuers beafts, as to have the head and legges of a Stagge, the eares and taple of a Fore, the necke of a Swanne, the breft of a Lion, the buttocks of a Wiloman, and the fate of an Affe. Virgill in his Georgickes both bery Clarkely beleribe the tokens of a good Dosle.

With head advanced high at first, the kingly Cole doth pace;
His tender lims aloft he lists, as well before his race. (way,
And foremost still he goeth, & through the streme he makes his
And ventures first the bridge, no suddain found doth him afray.
High crested is his necke, and eke his head is framed small,
His belly gaunt, his backe is broad, and brested big withall.
The bay is alwaics counted good, so likewise is the gray,
The white and yellow worst of all, besides, if farre away
There happen a noise, he stamps, and quiet cannot rest.

Bueza

# The third Booke,

that they be not tender and foft, but hardand found, round, and bollow, that the bollownede map keepe his fot from the ground. and founding like a Cimbail (as Xenophon fapth ) may occlare the foundnesse of the forte, for the hoofe that is full and fleshy. is not to beliked, and the Borfes that have fuch hoofes ooc caffip halt wherefore divers commend a Horle like the hofe of an Alle, the vallernes nert to the bole, not to long, as the Coat bath, for thaking off his riber, and beceding of winogall, no; to thost, for being burt in fromy ground. The leas and the three, fith they are the fanderds of the body, they ought to be euch, fraight, and found, not gouty, with much fleth and beines, for fuch as hane their legges clad with much field and beines, they with great fourners grow full of windgals, and Avellings, which will The legs caufethem to balt , which legges at the firt foling, are as long as ever they will bee, by reason whereof you may geffe what The knees height the Bogle will be of , being pet a Colt. The knees muft be round, flerible, and fmall, and not bolving inward, noz friffe, The thies. the thres large and well brawned his breatt great and broad his The breft, necke foft and broad, not banging like a Goates, but boright The neck, like a Cockes, and well reining, his Mane thicke, falling on the The mape right libe, fome like it better on the left, his head fmall and leane. The head, for a great and heavie head is a figne of a bull Jace, his mousell hozt, his mouth wive, with large winckles, Mill playing with the Bit, and foming : as Virgill :

> There stamping stands the steed, and foomy Bridell fierce he champs.

The Poris that bath a dry mouth is naught: his chickebones wouth. Would be cuen and small, for if they kand to farre asunder, he will be ill to be bridled, and the bneuennesse of the chickes will make him headstrong, and never to rayne well, but to thrust out his head ill sanouredly, his eyes great, bluddy, and kerry, and the eyes. Standing out of his head, which is a signe of quickenesse, and huer linesse: hollow elittle eyes are naught, and blacke, or pale stars in the eyes are to be dispassed: these faults are best spied in the night by candle light. Columella commendeth blacke eyes. A walleye is very god, such as they say Alexanders Bucephalus had. The cares. The cares must be short, standing byright, stirring, so, the cares.

be the tokens of a Borles Romacke, which if they be great and banging, are Cones of a Tabe. The Aufthrils muft be inine the The better to receive ayze, which also beclareth a lively courage; nofthrill. bis shoulders large and fraight, the sides turning inward : the The shoulder. ridge-bone ouer the fhoulders being fomething high, gives the The chine Dorfeman a better feate, and the footbers, and the reft of the body is Aronger knit together, ifit be bomble : his fibes beepe, well anit behinde, and something bowing by, which both is bet, The fides. ter for the horfeman, anda figne of agreat frength : his lopnes, The loines the broader they be, the better he lifteth his forefete, and follows eth with the hinder, and his paunch thall the leffe appeare, which both difgraceth bim, and burbeneth bim: his belly muft be gaunt, The belly. his buttocks large, and full of fleth, answerable to his breffs, The butand his fibes: for if he be broad hanched, and well fpred behinde, tocks. and gooth wide, his pace will be the furer, which he may perteine in our felnes, if we affaile to take by a thing from the ground firvbing, and not with your legges together, we take it by with moze cafe and frength. Dis taple would be long, brifflie, The tayle and curied, the length whereof is not onely a beautie, but also a great commoditie to him to beate away fives : yet fome belight to have them curtayled. (vecially if they be broad buttockt. In fine. the whole body mould be fo framed, as it belarge, high, linely fpzighted, and well truffed. Some Bogfemen would haue theit Baste to be timmed after the proportion of biuers beatts, as to have the head and legges of a Stagge, the eares and tayle of a Fore, the necke of a Swanne, the breft of a Lion, the buttocks of a Woman, and the feete of an Affe. Virgill in his Georgickes both bery Clarkely beferibe the tokens of a god Dosfe.

With head advanced high at first, the kingly Cole doth pace;
His tender lims aloft he lists, as well before his race. (way;
And foremost still he goeth, & through the streme he makes his
And ventures first the bridge, no suddain found doth him afray.
High crested is his necke, and eke his head is framed small,
His belly gaunt, his backe is broad, and brested big withall.
The bay is alwaies counted good, so likewise is the gray,
The white and yellow worst of all, besides, if farre away
There happen a noise, he stamps, and quiet cannot self-

#### Thethird Booke,

But praunceth here and there, as if some spirit were in his brest. His cares he sets vpright, and from his nose the serie slame. Doth seeme to come, while as he souffes, & snorteth at the same. Thicke is his mane, & on the right side down doth hanging sall, And double chinde, vpon his loynes a gutter runnes withall. He scraping stands, & making deep a hole, he pawes the ground, Whiles as a loud his horned hoose, all hallowed seemes to sound.

Fou see in how sew verses the Poet hath expected the properties of a god Horse: other conditions there be so, which they be liked, when they be pleasant, and liucly, gentie, and tradable: Forsach, as Columella saith, will both better be taught, and better away with trauell. Xenophon accounteth it a signe of a god Horse, it after the wearinesse of his tourney he same to labour lustely: againe, we sinde by experience, the better the Horse is, the deeper he thanks his head into the water when he drinketh, and that (being a Tolt) striueth to out runne his sellowes in the pasture, and as Virgill saith, leave first into the water, and passeth bridges, not tarrying so any other, nor searing the Me.

EVPH. What colour in Dogles count you the best ? The Boet semeth to missise the white, which others againe, as I have sunder times heard commend, specially in England, where they

are well accounted of, and most effeemed.

HIP. Mouching the colours, there are biners opinions, and of all colours. lightly you thall finde both gob and bad : fo that the colour is not fo greatly to be regarded, if he have other tokens of a god horfe, pet for beautie, and many times for godnes, we make chople of colour. The best colours as divers suppose, are these. The roane, the white liard, the bay, the fozell, the dunne, the daple grap, the alby white, the fleabitten, the milke white, the black, and the fron grap: the bay is most of price as far as I fe at this bay, and preferred by the Boet about the reft. The Frenchmen call the bap hogle, Le bayari loyal, truftp Bapard : they are the better that have a farre in the forehead, and the fote spotted a little with white: aforetime the Daple grap, the flebitten, the moufeoun, and the grifell were most effemed, and fuch as came neerest to them, as the Fron grap, the bright forell, the browne bay. Dnely Plato commendeth the milke white, that Virgill disprayleth. Dthers

Differs commend the blacke, specially if he have either subject starts in his sozehead, or strake dosone his sace, or hath any white boom his sote, the coale blacks without any white, is altogether missisco, the seabitten Horse pronect alwaies god and notable in travell: the pellowisd and the skned, or pied horses are discommended almost of all men, notwithstanding either of them (if they be well marked) prove oftentimes well enough, specially the yellowish, if he have a blacke list downe his backe from the necks to the taile. The Stallion therefore would be of one colour, The Stalstrong bodied, well timmed, according to the proportion assection. The Marcs would likewise have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would likewise have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would likewise have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would likewise have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would likewise have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would likewise have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would like wife have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would like wife have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would like wife have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would like wife have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would like wife have the said proportion of the Stalstrong horses would like wife have because the said and buttockes.

Ev P. Wahat Age count pou best for breede ?

HIP. The Stallion may goe with the Wares when his toynts and limbs be well knit and come to their growth, for if they be to young, they get but weake and wearish Colts : some ble to let them goe together at two pieres olde, but thee pieres olde is the better: the Stallion will ferue you from that time till twentie pere, it hath beene feene that they baus gotten Tolts till fortie, being belped a little in their bufineffe, foz it is not peres but fkill that abateth luft as Aristorleafoze Blinic wrote. Det some thinke them not meste for breede before the fourth or fifth pere, in which space they feede them luftely, to make them more conragious, for the luftier they be, the better Colts they being neither would they have bnoer firteene Bares, noz abone twenty, foz one Stallion. Herodorus writeth, that one Borfe will well fuffice twentie mares, but the number ought not alwaies to be observed, but fometimes moze, fometimes leffe, according to the fate of the Porfe, that he may the longer endure : a young Botte foonlo not bane about fifteene of firteene Darcs with him : the hogics muft be fometime fenered for danger and hurting of themselves, has wing in the means time god regard to the fate of his body, for forme be weaker and fainter then others.

EvPH. What ago boe you thinks belt for the spareto goe -

to the Dagle ...:

take it the better not to luffer them till they be the years olde,

Age.

1, 10

t

2

ê

D

, II

T

le

#### The third Booke,

and likewife I thinke them not make for Colts after tenne, for an olde Pare will alwaies bring a dull and beause beaded Jabe: they goe with Foale an eleanen moneths, and Foale in the twelfth.

EVPH. How can you know their age when you be doubte

HIP. That may you know biners waves, but specially by the teth, and those teth that Declare the age, the Ocecians call yragiores, which teth when be loleth, be loleth both eftimation and fale. Ariftotle affirmeth, that a Bogle bath fogtie teth, of which be cafteth the thirtieth moneth after his foaling foure, two abone, and two beneath : againe in the beginning of his fourth pere he caffeth like wife foure, two above, and two beneath, being full foure, and going boon bis fifth, be caffeth the reft, both about and beneath : fuch teth as come by againe be hollow : when be beginneth to be fire vere olde, the bollownesse of his first teeth is fild by : in the feauenth peere all his teeth are filled by, and no bollownelle any longer to be feine : after which time , no tubger ment of his age, by his teth, is any moze to be had : there are fome that take buon them to tell his age by the townts of his taile. after the marke is out of his mouth. Palladius thewes, that a Parle when he begins to be olde, his temples ware hollow, bis eie-bries gray, and his teth long. Ariftotle faith, that the age of all foure foted beafts may be knowne by the fkinne of their Hames : for if it be pulbe by and prefently let fall againe, if it fall fmoth, it beclares a poung beaft, if it lie in wainkles, it theweth be is olde. A Borfe lineth commonly twenty pieres, fome thir tie, or fortie, and alfo to Eftie, as Arithode faith, if he be of a got bifpofition, and well bieted : it is fait there baue bene Bosfes that have lined 75. pieres, the Bare lineth not fo long as the Borle, noz the Stallion, fo long as the Borle that is fuffered to runne amongt Bares : the Bare lequeth growing at fine pere plo, and the Bosle at Gre, og femen.

E v P.H. What time thinke you belt for conering of Pares ? HIP. In the Spring, after the twelfth of Parch, I take to be the best, after the Spring in the rest of the viere they are to be kept from the Borle, for hurting of the Borle: for the Pare after the bath conceined, suffers the Borle no more, but beates, U

B. to

b

CO

m

and frikes him with her heles , pet in most places , they fuffer their Stallions to runne with their Pares all the Summer long. and take it to be the belt way for answering the Bares belire. for many times the Pare will not abive the Bogle till Summer time, of August, and the August Colt proues commonly bery faire, although the Colts that are foaled in the Spring, are not to be defired, because they runne all the peers with their panimes in goo Baffure, and therefore it is belt at that time to put the mare to the Boyle, for thele creatures frecially, if you refraine them, are most enraged with last, whereof came at the first the name of that beadly poplon Hippomanes, because it firreth by a felbly affection, according to the burning defire of beafts, which groweth in the forehead of the Tolt, of the quantitie of a Figge. and blacke, which the bamme both ftraight, as fone as the bath fealed, bite of : and if the be prevented, the neither loves the Colt, noz luffers bim to lucke, neither is it to be boubted, but that the Pares in Come Countries fo burne with luft, as though they have not the Boale, with their ofone fernent befire, they conceine and bring forth after the manner of Byzbes, as the Boet nateth.

In furious lust the Mare exceedes all other beasts that be.

It hath beene faid, that in Spaine Pares have conceaned with the winde, and brought by their Colts, but the Colts have not lined above three percs. Aristotle writeth, that a Pares defice is quenched by Chearing of her mane.

EVPH. Wihat if the Pare will not take the Dogle, is there

no meanes to make ber ?

8

.

18

.

.

?

to

te

TE

S.

E B

HIPPO. There are that rub her taile with Dea Onions, Aettels, or Padder, and so proude her to luft, sometime a scurvic Jade is put to her, who when he hath gotten her god will, is straight removed, and a better Horse put in place. If the Horse be to slowfull, his courage is stirred by by wiping her taile with a Spunge, and rubbing it about his Rose. If we would have a Horse Tolt, we knit the lest stone of the Horse with a code: and so, a Pare the right. The like is to be observed als most in all other beasts.

EVPHOR. Holv often muff the be Dogledafter the take

HIP. They take not a like, some are sped at once, some twile, fomo

#### The third Booke,

fome moze. It is faid a Mare will not fuffer aboue fiftiene times in the vere: being oftentimes fatiffed with fewer. They mut be put to the Hogle at times, twife a day, in the morning, and at might : when they are fped, it appeareth by refuling, and firthing at the Borle. They fay : that there is amongs thele bealts a great regard of kindsed, and that you can hardly force the Colt to Hogle the Damme : for profe whereof they report, that where as a certaine Bosle-kæper did make bis Bosle, by couering his cics, to couer bis Damme, the cloath being pulb away, when he fain what he had bone, be ranne bpon his Beper, and few bim : as Come as the is courred, the Mare mutt out of hand be beaten, and forced to runne , leaft the lofe that the bath received. Surely a Mare of all other beatts, after ber couering , both runne either Douthward, oz Bozthward, accopbing as the bath conceined ei ther Borfe Colt, or Mare Colt: ber colour also both change and become brighter, twhich when they perceine, they offer her the Hogle no moze. Some after a felo dayes if they boubt ber, offer the Borle againe, and if the refule and frike (as 3 faid before) they junge the bath conceined.

EVPHOR. Puft they be concred enery pere?

HIPP o. Such is our constoulnelle, as we lette to have them beare every yere: but if you will have god Colts, let your Mares goe to Pople but every other peere, so thall they well and twee your defire, howbeit the common vie is every peere.

monly, and thereof is engendzed the Poile, and foaled in the rismoneth, as shall be said hereafter. Some say it is best to cut the mane of the Pare that shall be concred of the Asse, though others hold opinion that it shall be concred of the Asse, though others hold opinion that it shall abate her lust. The Pares that be with foale, must be well loked buto, and put in god passure. And it through the colde Whinter, passure be wanting, they must be kept in the house, and neither laboured not instead up and down, not suffered to take any cold, not to be kept to many in a straight rome, so casting their Foales, for all these inconveniences will harard their Foales, yet to travel them moderately, will do them rather god then harme, so to long rest will cause them to be restiffe, and to tyer some. Aristotle writeth, that the Scychians did ble to travell their epares great with soale, after the time they

began

.

11

n

ai

X

began to firre, Supposing their fealing should be the eaffer, but and here mut be taken, that their bellies benot burt with any thing while they are with foale : but if to be the Bare be in band ger, either in calling her foale,op in foaling, the remedy is, Po. lipody Camped, mingled with warme water, and given with a borne : it is faid that the fmell of a Canbell fnuffe, caufeth them to cast their foales : you must every piere over-fie pour Mares. and fuch as be bnpzofitable, oz barrame, muft be put away, foz from their first foaling they are not to be kept about ten veres at which time they are lufty enough, and may be well fold, but fo wil they not be after : The young Foales are not to be handled with the hand, for they are burt with the lightest touch that may be. It muft be feene boto, that if the spare be houled, there be rome enough for her and her Foale, and that the place be warme es nough, that neither the colo barme it, noz the Damme ouer-lie it. and therefore the place must be well cholen, that is, neither to bot, noz to colde, and afterwards by little, you must bring by the Colt: when it groweth to be something frong, it muft be put to paffure with the spare, leaft the sparereceine burt by the ab. fence of it : for chiefely this Beatt of all others , most effemeth ber pound, and if the be kept from it, taketh harme. The Foale that lackes his Damme, is often brought bp, of other Bares, that have Tolts : the Pare muft goe in bery god paffure, that the Colt may have fore of milke. Being fine moneths olbe, when you bring them into house, you must feede them with barly flowes and branne : at a twelve moneth olde, you must either but them into good palture, or food them with Branne, Chaffe, and Day. Varro will not have you to weans them, till they be two peres albe : and though I like not torfone weaning, pet we ble commonly to weane them at fine or fire moneths old, and to let them mme in god patture, which cultome proueth net amille. Boies mer, as long as they runne with the Damme, you hati voe well to handle them now anothen, leaft, when they be put from the Damme, they ware wilde: they muft be taught to be gentle, and not onely to abide a man, but to couet his companie, and not to be afrainat every frange fight, noz at every noife, but to come to it. Xenophon faith, ive mult (as men) prouide Schwiemafters for our: Chilozen fo likewife teachers foz our Bogles, & appoint how we: mil.

10

bs.

TS

th

off

n£

ne,

aht

vill

Itts

a be

bey

gat

#### The third Booke,

inill have them broken: for as their fernice is diners, fo muft be their breaking. But bereof ine Chall fpeake moze bereafter. inhen we entreate of Horfemanthin, and breaking of Horfes: onely now we will deale with those that sucke, and serve for the Dlow. To make them gentler, the bridles, and other Borfe bar. neffes muft be hanged by them, that they may the better be acquainted with them, both with the fight, and the gingling. Row when they be well tamed, and will fuffer to be handled, Varro mould have you lay a Bor groneling byon them twife, or thrile, and after to beffribe them, and this he would have bone, when they be the peere olde, for then they grow most, and begin to be great brawnes. There he that thinke a Borfe may begin to be handled at a peere and a halfe old, and Varro, at thee peere old, when their pronender is given them: but we bie commonly after two peres to labour them gently, first in harrowing of new plowed land, which is god both for their fote, and their pace, and also with plowing & fuch like erercife: whereby we ble to ace quaint them with colde and beate, in braming together. It mult be feene to , that they be even matched , leaft the fronger fpoile the weaker, while he dreabeth the rating and whipping. Horles take leffe harme with brawing then with bearing. Thus muft they be bled to reasonable travell, by reason whereof, they will be the barder, and not fo lightly take barme : but berein muft be great discretion.

EVP H. What lay you to Weldings : for in thele parts we

ble Belbings moft.

HIPPO. They ferue for some purpose: but he that will have a god Gelving, must gelv (as they say) a god Horse, they are cut at a piece old and elder: I my selfe have cut them at sive piece old, and sive piece old: in cutting they lose their stomacke: you must loke that they be in god plight when you cut them; for as they are at their cutting, they commonly continue. The Pares also be to be spayed, but not often, and with great banger.

EVPH. That manner of Stable would pou have for 3 have formetimes heard, that the Stable is of great importance?

HIPPO. Pour Stable must be built in a daye place, for wetting the Horles hose, which you thall aucide it you planke it with god Dken planks, or (which Xenophon would rather have you

Stables.

bos) with round paning frome, keeping it allvates cleane from bung, and Eraw, and after laying fresh litter. so as they Rand bard. and lie foft. Xenophon would have the stable fo placed, as it may alwayes be in the Mafters eie, and to be lightforne, leaft the Hogle being bled to the barke , his eie bagell at the light. Some thinke they will be the gentler, if they be bled to the light, & the fairer, if they have the Sun at the rifing in Summer time : let as much aire come to them both day e night as you can. In Winter pour Stable Could rather be warme, then hot, and therefoze pour fable muft fand toward the South, but fo as the windowes may open toward the Porth, which being kept thut in Winter, may be iparme and opened in Summer you may let in the cole aire.

EVPH. The like we ble in our Dre Stalls.

ŧ

ŝ

t

ğ

o

2

to

b

n

HIPPO. Belides, whereas the bodies of cattell, have neede of rubbing, as well as mens bodies, for many times it both the Dogle as much good to be froked downe the back with your band, as to feed him. The Borfe is to be continually curried, in the moze ning at night, and after his labour. In currying of them we must Currying. begin at the bead, and the necke : for it is a baine thing to make sleane the lower parts, and leane the other fonle. It is god alfo to observe due times for his feeding, his watering, and his travell. Thus much of his exercise. Bow followeth to speake of his diet : Dyet. and because we have spoken befoze of his pasture, we must also fay fomewhat of his other feeding. The better a man would have his Borfe to proue, the better muft he loke to his meate for that god feeding (the Country people lay)is a great helpe to the godnelle of the Bogle. If the Bogle be young (as I faid befoze of Colts) he muft be fed with graffe, chaffe, and hay : if he be elder and meet to tranaile, his food muft be the brier, as Chaffe, Barley, Dates, and Day. Thate both not fo well nourith, by reason of the drinede, but it keepes the body in good plight : and because hard meate is bardelt of digettion , it is therefore to be given to thole that labour. The flock of flud, muft be paftured in large paffures and marthes, as also byon mountaines, and hilly ground, but ever well watred not by, rather champion then wody, and rather foft finet graffe, then high and flaggy : if the pasture be to theat, they foner meare their foze teth, and are tothleffe befoze their full age. And where as every kinde of creature is naturally moilt, a bosfe

ought

## The third Booke, ought chiefly (whether be be young, ozold) to be feb with mois

valure, for the better confernation of his natural temperature.

Some would have you in no wilesto gine your Bogle graffe in the Spring time, but in June, or the fall of the leafe : they would have you give them graffe with the oche byon it, and in the night Icalon, Datis, Barin, and Bap. Dowbeit, in the colber Countries,in Germany, Fraunce, England, where the paffure is berp god , they boubt not to fcoluze their Borfes with græne graffe Scowring, and tweeds of the meddowes : and in the botter Countries, they Doe the like with greene blades of Witheat, or Barly, Some ble to gine them Apples fhared in pieces, to fcotize them withall, and thus much of feowing of Bosics. Generally, who focuer will hauc his Borfe healthy, and able to endure travell, let him feed his Horfe with Dates, mingled with chaffe or frain, fo fhall be be temperately and well feb, andiffo he labour much, give him the moze Dates. Dis meat mult be ginen him as fome thinke beff,in a low Banger let fo low as they are forced to sate their meat with fome difficulty or travell, which they fay is to make them bend their necks : by which exercise both the head and the necke grow. eth bigger, and they will be the caffer to be baibled : befibes, they will be the fronger by reason of the bard fetting of the fore feete. Dowbeit,in fome places, they ble high franding Mangers : after what fort focuer they be, they must alwaics be kept cleane, and Prouender well fwept befoze you caft in their meate. I heir Brouender though diners Borle-courfers that line by fale of Borle, Doe feebe them with fodden Kie,02 15 can meale fod, pampering them bp. that they may be the fairer to the cie : yet is it not goo foo to la bour with. The best Wzoucnder that is, is Dates, and for Default of them, Barly : you muft beware pou gine them neither Waheat, Kie,02 any bay pulle: their Paouenber mult be giuen them rather often, and little, then once or twifea bay in great portions, leaft you glut them therewith : they are bled to be fed commonly fine times a day, when they fand in the Stable , keping an equall number of hours betweene the times: when they trauell you may give them meate feldomer, but in greater quantity, e if their four nies be long, they must have Brouender belides in the night, ale waies remembring (as I faio) that you glut them not. The better a Boglefebeth, the better will be labour. Dou muft alfo beware that

that you give him no prouender, neither Dates noz Barly after any great labour, till be be thozow colo:notwithfanding you may gine bim a little hap to cole his mouth. The hap muft be fweet and ipell made, & thosowly Chaken, befoze it be caft into the racke : and frecially fene to that there be no feathers of any fowle amongt it. If the horle be berr hot after his labour let him be mell coue. red, and foftly walked till he be colo, before you fet him by : inhen be is let bp, litter him well, leaft the colones of the ground frike into him: in any wife wall him not when he is hot but toben be is through cold water him, and wath him, wiping him day toben you bring him in. Afthe Borfe forfake his meat, fome ble to fampe Barlick & Bepper, to give it him, rubbing his teth well, till his Bomack come to bim: fame would baue a clout wet in falt water. tred boon a flick a thruft into bis lawes. In watering you muft loke well buto him, foz (as Ariftotle faith) beafts do feto, g are nous rithed the better, if they be wel watred. Bosles & Camels, bo lous belt to brinke a thick water, in fo much as if the water be cleare, they will trouble it with their fate : for the most part Bullocks againe beffre a faire cleare water, running. The fame Ariftorle alfo affirmeth, that a bosle map fuffer thirt foure baves without brink. Varro wils you to water pour horles twile a bay, which or ber we observe, that is once in the morning, gagaine in the after none: but in Winter,ifther brinke but once a day,it lufficeth : before you water him, be mult be well rubbed, and then led into the mater by to the knees fpecially if he be leane, if he be fat, he may go the Deeper. Botwithstanding there are some that bold opinion. they ought not to go lo beepe, as their ftones touch the water fue stally if the boste be yong. After Warch, the fyzing, it is very god to ride them by a bowne in fome River, which will exercise their legs, for the water prieth the legs, & reftraineth the bumors from falling bowne, and kepeth them from windgals : as fone as they come from the water, you muft with a little frais wipe them cleane, for the damp of the stable causeth instamation in the horses legs that be wet. The water (according to Vegetius his minde) would be cleare, & fpzinging, other like it a little running & troub. led in a clap ground: for this water, by reason of the thicknes & fatnes, both better nourif and feede the horfe, then the fwift running Aceame: pet those horses that are bled to the fwilt & cleare rivers,

are commonly the firongest, and best travellers: and there soze it would be well considered how the hopse hath beine accustomed: the colder the waters are, the less they noursely, the deeper a hopse drinkes, the fatter he proves: and therefore some Hopse-coursers vic to wash their hopses mouthes, first with water, and after to rub them with salt, to give them an appetite to their meate and their drinke.

EVPHOR. I pray you let be heare some remedies for horses biseases, for (as Aristoric saith) a horse hath as many diseases a man.

HIP. As touching vileales in a Dorle, it is better to preuent them by and bode taking and (as V egetius faith ) to be more care full in heeping a boste healthy then when he is licke to cure him: which health you that continue with eafe, if you will observe those things touching his ovet, his fable, and his labour, that 3 have told you of before. Wilholoeuer will have a god horle, and haps him in am) eftate, muft oftentimes fe him, come to him, bandle him and ftroke him : for that both makes him gentle, and gives him a favze coat : and be ftill mindfull of the old proverbe, The Maifters eye maketha fatte horfe : and to be thoat, to have him fo fill in his fight, as he rather want his owne meat, than his horse thould : for he that negledeth his horfe,negledeth himfelfe. Eo let him have moderate exercise, and to ride him now and them(if the meather be faire) into the field, will boe him great gob : the morning is better to labour him in then the evening neither mult pou in Winter oz in Summer ouer labour him : foz being in a (meat, and after taking colb, be falleth into bangerous difeafes, And therefore remember what I faid that wherforuer you have laboured him oz ribben him, be fure pou couer him with fome cloth, and walke him foftly, that he may be cold before be either be fuffered to eate or brinke: when he is cold, he map be led to the water and walked : fo as when you bring him into the Cable, pour litter him well, and throughly rub him, and fo give him meat. If he be overtravelled, the onely remedie is rell, and after his finea ting, to walbhis mouth in Summer with water and bineger, in Tolinter with brine : for the neglecting of thefe things, bath bene the bettruction of many a good bosfe. Alfo, to poloze into his mouth Wine and Dple, in Summer, cold, in Winter, warme, (as

100

(as Vegerius teacheth ) and as we finde by experience, is bery gob : fogit is commonly fene, that a tyzed Bosle (if necilitie forceth a further journey) with powring in a quart of good wine. will travell luftilie. Dou muft not luffer your borfe to brinke af ter his tourney, till he be cold : howbett, if he (weate not to ertreamely, and be rioden fone after, it is not fo bangerous : it is farre better to let him thirlf, then to give him cold water if he be hot. If a horse have long refted, he is not to be traugiled byon the Subben, either in gallopping, or long fourney, but to be laboured faire and loftly at the first. A horse that is wearie or tyred, will be wonderfully refreshed, so as it would feeme be had never beene travailed if be may wallow himfelfe either in the fable, oz other base place out of the winde and raine: and therefore Xenophon would have nere buto every fable a place met for their wallow. ing toberein after their journies, they may tumble themselves: for in fo boing, they their they are in health, trefreth themfelucs. Dou mult loke diligently that they be well loked to at night, and that after their fineat, they be well rubbed and curryed, and that they be not disquicted when they thould reft. In winter they wonld be clothed with wollen, for taking of colo, and in Summer with Canuas, to kepethem from ayes. Don muft beware that you tourney them not long without staling, but after you have tranatled an houre, or fuch a thing , pronoke them to fale (by the bing them out of the may ) into some place where Shepe have Dunged, oz into fome high graffe, ferne oz ftubble, which ozber was continually observed by the beft byeter of bosles, that cuer I knew in England, one Henry King, who having charge of that moft worthy Gentlemans borfes, Sir Thomas Chalenour, carried a faire company of Weldings from London to the Court of Spaine. who not with flanding their long tourney through France, e the painefull pallage of the Piremies, by the Isilfull Diligence of their keper, came thither in as god plight as they came out of Eng. land. And if fo be pour fee he cannot fale, or faleth with paine, pour muft bathe him with bath appointed for cold, that is, Dole ming. led with Wine powerd byon his lopnes : allo à Loufe put ins to his yard, or lope put into his fundament, hath beene feene to belpe him. If this bo not belpe, you mult fquirt in honey boyled thin, with falt into his pard, Some would have the licour of the 10 3 lime

8

Ê

8

É

ê

tt

If

V

n

b

15

٤,

15

lime Birumen fautrted in : Eliomus watteth, that the Boafe that cannot fale, is prefently remedied, if fo be a Spaid frike bim boon the face with her girdell, the feete (which is the chiefest matter in a Bosle) pou spall alwaics hepe found : if as 3 tolbe pou afore. your Stable be well paned with round fone,og well planked and kept cleane : which done, peu muft ftop bis hofes with Coine bung, og for want thereof with horfe bung watred, and his leages muft be often rubbed with a Arawne fulpe. To caufe the hofe to grow, or to repaire the broken hofe, take of Garlicke heads feauen ounces, of Bearbe-grace the handfuls, of Allome beaten and fifted , feauen ounces , of Barrowes greafe bery olde tivo pounts, mingle all thefe with a bandfull of Affes bung . boile them, and annoint the hofes therewith. After their tourney, fix you fearth their feete well , fuffering no granell , noz filth torce maine therein, you hall well refrell their hofes with the oint ment afeze faid. The iopnts, or the patternes, would be well batheo after their travel with warme wine, or an egge or two would be thruft into their hofes, the legges themselucs would be wather with warme Bere, og fome like bath. If the Bogle thauft out one of his feete, and frand not even, it is a figne of fome fault in the hofe : the Bosle baiteth, either by reason of the spoiling of his hofe in fourney or by ill Coing, or by wholfome hamors falling bowne.by low franding in the Stable, oz by windgals. If the fault be in the thoing, frike byon the head of enery naile with the Dammer, and when you perceive him to Chrinke, plucke out that maile, or power bpon the hofe colde water, and that naile that is first bep. pluck it out: if it matter, lquefeit out, and poloze in Ditch well fobden with old Swines greafe : you must also specify oven his hofe below, that the matter (if it be full of corruption) may bescend, least it breake out aboue the hofe, and so cause a longer time of healing. The fignes of it be, if he hold by his fort, which tf you do pare him to the quicke, and where you perceive it to loke blacke, open it, and let out the matter : if he be burt inward, and frandeth but on his toe, it theweth the fault to be in his hofe : but if he tread equally with his fote it beclares the griefe to be fome other where, then in his hofe : if in his haulting he bowe not his tounts, it is a figne the fore is in the founts. For all halting gene rally injude Bemp with the white of an egge, and from the fote withall.

withall, and after clap on the thoe: if it be a wound, put therein the poluder of Defferibels, and Merdegreafe to dap it bp, or the white of an egge, with Sote and Minegar. The Cratches (as they commonly call them) is a malaby that bappeneth betwirt the Walternes and the Dole, in the manner of a leab, and is ingens bred of the damps of the Stable, lobile he fandeth wet legged : the remedy whereof, is all one with the paines, which is like wife a lozance bacoling about the loynts, breaking the fkinne, and mattring : taking away the haire, walh the loze with warme Bere, or with the broath wherein is fooden Pallowes, Brimffone, and Shepes fuet, which muft be bound about the foze place morning and evening, oz elle Shapes fuet, Coatcs fuet Sivines greafe, Merdegreale, and quicke Bzimftone, Bolearmoniack, and Sope, boiled and made in cintment, where with you thall anoint the fore twile a day, walhing it first with warme Wine, and after it is bried amoint it, in the meane time keepe him out of the water: the Les of wine is also sometime bled in the curing of the crats thes. Windgals, which are fwellings, and rifings in the legs, are cured with cutting, and burning: fome thinke they may be reftrais ned and cured, by riding the Dosfe oftentimes by and downein fome colde and fwift freame, allo by walking his legges with balt, Ainegar, Swincs-greafe, and Dyle, wapping them by certaine bayes, oz by launcing, oz fcarifying they are cured : the outs ward fozes are healed by burning. If the backe be waung with the Saddell. oz otherwise hurt that it swell, Vegetius would have you to feth Onions in water, & when they be fo hot as the Horfe map luffer, to lay them boon the loze, and binde them faft, which will affwage the fwelling in one night. Icem, Salt beaten and medled with Minegar, putting to it the polke of an egge, layed by on the fwelling, will heale it : belides, Arfimart framped and laid to, both prefently affwage the fwelling. If the backe be galled, wath it with Bere and Butter, or caft bpon it the powder of a Lome wall. There is a difeafe that is common in Dorfes, called the Wives, which if he have, turne downe his sare, and launce the fore at the rote of the eare, and take out the matter : but take god hade you cut not the beine that lieth a little abone. If a Bosle have beene fet by hot after his fourney, and in his heate hath beene watred , oz taken colde, which the Germanes call Verfaugen,

h

Ê

D

ıt

É

8

20

te

13

in English Foundzed.oz in some places Fraide: the remedie is the fain of a Wicezell cut in fmall pieces, freth butter, a rotten egge and vinegar mingled together, and powzed into the hogle with a borne : after which let him frand couered with a wet cloth till be ware bot. A prefent, and affured cure for this bifeale, 3 learned not long agone, of that honeft, wife, and baliant Gentles mad, Captaine Nicholas Malbec, in whom there wanteth nes thing belonging to a worthie Souldice: his medicine was this, Carter cach legge immediately one handfull aboue the kne with a lift, good and hard, and then walke him to chafe him, and put him in a heat, and being somewhat warmed, let him bloud in both the back baines a and in the baines of the hinder legges, be. tivene the hofe and the pafforne, referring the bloud to make a charge withall, in this manner : Take of that bloud two quartes, and of wheat meale, as it commeth from the Atll, halfe a pecke, and fire egges, theis and all of Bolearmoniacke halfe a pound of Sanguis Draconis halfe a quarterne, and a quart of ftrong bineger: mingle them all together, and charge all his thoulders, breft, backe, lovnes, and forelegs therewith, and walke him byon fome hard ground : thie bourcs after, lead him into the Rable, and let him frand tyed two houres to the racke, without meat or dainke, and walke him then two or thee houres more, and then give him a little warme water, with ground Paltin it, and after a little bay and prouender, then walke him againe bpen the hardelt ground poucan get: pou fail ride him the nert day a mile of two foftly, e fo from pay to pay butill he be well, which will be within thee or foure baics. Remember to let him fand the firft bay after his first walking two bourcs in water by to the belip : this medicine. is infallible. The collicke, or paine in the belly is thought will be eafed in a horse or Dule, onely with the light of a Ducke, or any mater femle. To keepe pour horfe from fipes, it is good to wath him ouer with the tupce of the leaues of the Courd, in the mitt. of Summer. Pany times horses are troubled with wormes, or bots, which you thall perceive, if they caft their loke byon their belly, if they wallow oftentimes and fribe their belly with their fote : the remedie is Barts-hozne , Sauine beaten, and giuen him with a little Minegar in a horne. Columella would have you rake the horse with your hand, and after that you have plucked out:

out the bung, to walh bis fundament with Sea water,og Brine. Brafanolus in his Commentary byon Hippocrates, declareth how be cured the Duke of Ferars horfes, being in great banger with waimes, by giving them Duickfilver, and Scordium, oz Water-Germander, tohen no other medicines would helpe. The Rhewme , oz billilation , maketh a Bogle flothfull, bull , and faint, pet will be be led, and rioden , and moderate labour is not amille for him, let bim brinke warme water with Waheat bran: the moze fith he boydes at the mouth, the better will it bee for him. There are fundap bifeales thought bncureable, which if the Horfe had , and was fold , by the olde Laines he was to be turned backe againe, ercept the bargaine were otherwise : of which number, are the broken winded, the lunaticke, and the mangines, called the Farcine, which difeafeif it come once to the Cones, is thought bucurable. To this they adde the through Splent : fome thinke the broken winded is not to be cured, be. eaule it is like to the confumption of the lungs in a man, pet fome hope of recovery there is, if it be taken in time : for lete ting of blod in day difeates, is against reason. But you may an nount the whole body with Wine and Dyle, mingled together and warmed, and curry him against the hapze till he fweat, and give him this drinke inward from the first day : the juvce of Difan , Swines greafe clarified , and Amylum , in nelv fwet wine, which being boyled together, you may give it him with a borne to open his pipes , and fet him fo as hee fand warme. The lunatike eyes are cured by letting him blood in the temple beines, bathing the eyes on the outlide with fome warme bathe, and putting into them fome frong water certaine dapes, till they be whole: For the mangineffe, take the wormes called Cantharides, beating them, and mingle with them a little Merbes greafe, and so annount him with it, warming the body of the Horse with a fire panne. Others ble to walh him with warme water twile a day, and after to rubbe him with Salt fooden in mater, till the matter come out. Aboue all other, they fay it erecelleth in the beginning to annount him with the fat of a Seale: if it have rume long, you muft ble ftronger medicines, as Lime, Brimftone, Tarre, old Swines greafe, of each a like quantitie, boyled together, and with a little Dyle made in an oyntment, thep

they ble to rub it also with the Sote of a Calbzon. Againft mas ny difeates both of Borles, and Bullocks, they ble the rote of the Wearbe called Black Clieboze of fome Bearefote oz others Setterwort, which they thruft in the breft of a beaft, betwirt the fleth and the Chin, making a bole before with a 18 ochin, Against all pileales of Boyles, Vegetius commendeth this Specicine as the chiefelt. Centozie, Wiozmewod, Dogge Fenell, Willbe Mine, Sagapen, Betonie, Darifrage, Aristolochia rotunda, take of each a like, beate them fmall, and fift them, and if the Boofe have an ache, give it him with water, if he be ferme, with god frong The old Dusbands would not fuffer their Dorfes to be let bloud, but buon great neccatitie, leaft being bled to it, if it Chould at any time be omitted, it Chould breede fome difeafe : and therefore in very young Borles, and fuch as be healthy, it is belt not to let them bloud, but in the role of the mouth: for thole that be come to their full age, you may let them bloud before you put them to paffure, but beware you beare a feedy hand, and Arthe them not to bepe. Deloings you hall not need to let bloud. The Borles of Barbary (as they fap ) never nebe any medicine.

EVPHOR. Dou have fpoken enough of Dogles, it is time

pou fap fornething of Alles.

HIP. It is greatly out of order, but fince you will needs bane me fo to boe. I will not Wicke with you to fay what I can therein. that each of you may boe the like in his charge. Alles are come monly kept, pet not to be little let by, because of their funday come mobities, and the hardnelle of their feeding : for this pore beat contents himfelfe with what meat to ever you give him. Thitles. Bipers, Stalkes, Chaffe, (whereof every Countrey bath fore) is god meat with him: belides he may best abide the ill loking to of a negligent keper, and able to fultaine blowes, labour bune ger and thirt, being feldome or never ficke : and therefore of all other Cattell longel endureth: foz being a bealt nothing charges oble, he ferueth for a number of necessarie bles : in carrying of burdens he is comparable to the Borle, be draweth the Cart (fo the load be not bureasonable) for grinding in the Will be pasteth all others : therefore in the Country the alle is mott netfull for carrying of things to the Warket, and Come to the Will. In Agypt and Barbary (where the ground is bery light) they have alfo

Affer.

also their ble in plowing : and the fine Ladics of the Countrep boe ribe buon Ades richly furnifico : pea, they be bery autto be taught, fo as at this bay in Alcayre, pou thall have them baunce bery mannerly, and hope measure with their Dufitian. Varro maketh mention of two forts: one wilde, whereof in Phrygia and Lycaonia there are great flore : the wilde Affes that are tamed, are paffing god, specially for brede, & they are eafilie bro. hen : the other is tame, of which I meane to fpeake. The beft are brought out of Arcadis, (although Varro femes to commend the breede of Italy for gooneffe. ) De that will have a breede of Affes, muft have the Male and female both of reasonable age. large bodyed, found, and of a god kinde : the Pale mutt be at the least thee vere olde : for from thee, till they be tonne, they be fit for breeding : they bring forth their Colts fometimes at ting veres and a halfe, but thee peres is the belt age : the female goeth as long with her burben as the Bare, and bischargeth in all refrects as the both: but the will not bery well retaine, ercept the be forced immediately after the horfing to run about : the feldome baingeth forth two. Withen the foaleth, the gets her into fome barke place, and keepes her felfe from being feene They will beare all their life time, which (as Ariftotle faith) is thirtie peres: they are put to the horse a little before the tenth of Tune, and beare euery other pere : they bring forth their Foale at the tivelue moneth. While they be with Foale, they muft not be greatly laboured, for hazarding their Foale: the Wale muft neuer be tole, for beis asletcherous as the Diucil, and by reft will ware naught. The Colt is luffered to run with the Dam the fird pere, and the next is gently tyed by with her, onely in the night times: the third pere they are broken according to their ble. The Damboth wonderfully lone her young, fo much, as the will not dicke to come thosow the fire to it : but the water the pare in no toile come nere, no, not touch it with her fote, neither will the brinks in any frange water, but where theis bled to be watred, and fo as the may goe and fand by fote. They be. light to be longed in wideroomes, and are troubled with feare. full dreames in their acepes, whereat they to pawe withtheir leages, that if they lye nære any hard thing, they hurt their fate: in dainking, the fearfely touch the water with their lippes.

(as it is thought) for feare of wetting their godly eares, whose that work in their drinking: no beaft can work away with colo then this. If your Ales halt at any time, you hall thus remedie them, would all the foote with warme water, and afterward make them cleane with a tharpe knife, which when you have done, take old chamber lye, as hot as may be, and melt there in Goates suet: or if you have not that, Dre tallow, and anoint all the feet till they be whole.

EVPHOR. They lay, that betwirt an Alle, and a Mare, is gotten the Boile, as a third hinde, of two funday kindes, neither

resembling the father, not the mother.

Moiles.

HIPPO. It is bery true : as of the the Affe, and the Bosfe is engendeed the the Poile, but altogether, Rubborne, and bnread fonable bull. Alfo of the spare, and the wilde Affe, being broken are bred Doiles that cun valling (wiftly, and are wonderfull bard boofed, but rugged of their body, and mischienous ffomached, pet eafie to be handled : the Wares for bret, mut not be bider foure veres : noz aboue ten; they are foaled in the twelfth mo neth, as Horfes and Affes are, as Ariftotle faith : but Columella farth, their foaling time is not befoze the thirteenth moneth. The Female conceaueth (as erverience teacheth) affuredly after the feauenth bay : the Bale both neuer better hogie, then when he is most tyach. She that conceaueth not before thee bath cast her colts teth, is taken to be barren, as the likewife that takes not at the first horfing. Those that are gotten betwirt a Borfe and an Affe in olde time, were called Acpards, and fuch as were brought forth betwirt an Alle and a Mare, they called Moiles. The Moiles themselves (they say) doe never ingender : and if at any time they bid, it was taken for monttrous, accounting the cause of their barremelle, the contrarictie of their kindes: which matter a long time troubled both Arifforle, and the reft of the Philosophers. Though Aristotle hath other where waitten, that Moiles doe both ingender, and bring forth: and with him agreeth Theophrastus, affirming, that in Capadocia they Doe commonly bring forth, and ingender of themselves. The like both Varro. and before him Dionifyus, and Mago affirme, that the breeding of Bolles in the countries of Affricke, is neither montrous, noz geason, but as common as our bace of Bogfes: but the Boile

te both fayzer, and better flomached, that is begotten of an Affe and a Mare. The Stallion that you meane to have for your race of Moiles, must be as fagze as you can get, bauing onely this regard , that he be large of body, bigge necked, broad, and frong ribbed, large, and braine breffed, his thighes full of fynoines. and the leages well knit, of colour blacke and fpotted : for Affes (though they be commonly bunne) yet that colour agreeth not well with a Doile : fome fay, that what colour you mould have your Morle to be, with that coloured cloake you must couer your Affe. The Affe fo proportioned (as I have declared) that pour meane to appoint for your Stallion, von muft fraight waves take from his damme, and put him to fome Bare that hath a Colt fucking of her : you thall cafily deceive the Dare, by letting her in a barke place, remouting her ofone Colt from her, and putting to her in feet thereof the Affes Colt, which the will nurse as her ofone. Afterwards, when the Bare bath beine bled to it a tenne baves, thee will continually after that time give it fuche. The Affe being in this ozder brought by , will better acquaint him. felfe with the Pare: Cometimes though he be lucked onely with his olone bamme, being brought bp when he is poung amongt Bares, will well enough keepe company with them (as Columella faith: ) but our Affes are of themselves bestrous enough of the Dares, that they neede not to be trained to the matter : for it is a monderfull coltiff beaft, & bureafonably weaponed. De muft not be leffe then there peres old when he conereth your Bares which muft be in the Spring time, when you may well feebe bim with graffe, and goo ftoze of Dates, and Barly: neither muft you put him to a voung Bare, for if the have not beene horfed before, the will fo beat her woer, that the will make him like the worfe as long as he liveth: for remedy whereof, you must at the first put to the Bare a wilber Ale, that may wo her befoze, but not fuffred to horse her, and when you perceive that the is horsing, away with the rafkall and put to your Stallion. A place fit for this purpole, the Countrie people (as Columella faith) were wont to have. which they called a frame, or a Brake, with two railes on both fibes, and a little billance betweene, that the Bare cannot friue, nor turne from the Borle, the lower part enclosed, and the Bare flanding loin. To the Affe map the better leave her , haufing the buper

opper ground for his helpe, which when the hath conceaned, and at the twelve monoths end brought forth, the piere after the must be suffered to run emptie, that the may the better bring by her colt. The the Poile (being a twelve monethold) must be taken from the Damme, and let run by pon Pountaines, or wilde places, for the hardening of his holes, and the better enduring of labour, for the male is the better for burden, and the female the quicker and livelier: both the kindes doe travell well, and till the ground, if the plowman be not bureasonable, or the ground so stiffe, as it requireth a draught of Dren, or Porse. They will leave striking and kicking, if you be to give them Wine, (as Plinic reporteth,) who likewise writeth, that a Poile will live foure scape pieces.

E V P H O R. Since you have begun with travelling beafts,

Suhat can you fay of the Camell ?

HIPPO. The Camell is chiefely bled in the Call parts. which some suppose to be the serviceablest cattell for man that is, and as it were thereunto onely framed, for he is bumbaft bpon the backe for bearing of burbens. Alfo, be bath foure knows, whereas the Bogle , the Alle , and fuch others , haue but two : for his binder legges bow forward as a mans kne doth, wherewith hee knæleth to receive his burben. There are two kindes of them, the Bactrian, and the Arabian : the Bactrian have two bunches boot their backes, and the Arabian but one, and the other on their breft to leane boon, both fortes of them lacke their teth aboue as the bullocke both : they all ferue in those Countries for burden, and to carry men in the warres: they are as fwift as horfes, but fome a great beale moze then others : neither will they breake their pace, noz carry moze burdens then they are bled to: they beare a maturall hatred to the horse: and can forbeare brinke for fours Dapes : be dainkes when he map, both for that is past, and to come, troubling the water before with his fot, otherwise bee belighteth not in it : bee is febbe befide his Baffure , and fuch things as hee gets in the Wiod, with Dates of Barly, and Salt: he engendzeth backelvard as the Clephants, Tygars, Ly ons, Connies, and fuch other, whose instruments grow backet ward : when they meane to goe to rut , they feke the fecretell and beferteft places that may be: neither may a man at any time come

come neere them, without great danger. They goe with young a twelne moneth, and are mete for breeze at three yeres old and after a piere they conceaue againe, they beare but one at once, as Clephants and other great beaffes Doe : they give mike till they be great. Againe, (as Ariftotle fapth ) Dydimus in his bothes of Bufbander writeth, that the Camell hath a regard to his blod. as the Borle hath, and lieth neither with mother, nor fifter. And the female Camell of Bactria, febing bpon the Bountaines a. monaft the wilde Boares, is oftentimes breamed of the Boare. and conceaucth. Df the Boare and the fpe Camell, is engendeed the Camell with two lumpes byon the backe, as the Poile is of the Affe, and the Pare, and in divers things refembleth his fire. as in briffied heares, Arength, and not fainting in the myze but going luftily through, and in carrying bouble fo much as other. Camels, as the fame authour fayth. The females of them are fpaide, to ferue the better for the warres : they line (as Arifotle farth ) fiftie veres: others far a bundzed veres, and are fubied to madnelle, (as Plinic fayth) there are a kinds of them called Camelleopards, that have the refemblance of two bivers beaffs ... the hofes and hinder legges like an Dre , his forelegs and his bead like the Camell, the necke like a Bogle, being flecked white and red. Strabo fapth, he is conered like a fallow Deare, fraight necked, and hie like an Ditrioge his head Come thing higher then a Cameis.

EVPHOR. I remember I have fone the like beaff for all the world in a piece of Capeftry with blacke Popes, with their Wives, and baggage boon their backes, save that they had their little hornes boon their heads, like as some Shepe have. I thinke Heliodorus in his Athiopian Corte, did first describe this beaff, but these outlands beaffs we meddle not much with.

HIPPO. Goe to Euphorbus, let be now let you discharge your part, according to your promise, and tell be some part of your conning in keeping your Cattell: some next to the Porse in worthings commeth the Ore.

EVPHOR. Since it is so appointed, I am contented to Bullockes. betw you what I can say touching my pope skill: and first, I may we suffer the Bosse to challenge the chiefe place, when the olds writers.

Mariters and auncient people did alwaies give the garland and thiefe maile to the Dre, as to a god Dlomanan, and a faithfull fernant : foz Heliodus, a most auncient Waziter, and the gravest Authour of our profellion affirmeth, that the family both confit of the Bulband, the Waife, and the Dre. The felfe fame by his authoritie both Ariltotle fæme to alleadge in his Bolitiches, and in his Economickes, which beaft was alwaies of that honour and effimation, that he was condemned in a great penalty, who foeuer Dio kill bim, being a fellow, and a chiefe belper in our bul bander. 15v the worthinelle of this beaft, many great things receined their names of them : for of the number, beauty, and fertilitie of Baifers, bid Italy (asthey fay) firft take bis name, because Hercules pursued the noble Bull, called Italus. This is the chiefecompanion of man in his labours, and the trufty feruant of the Godbelle Ceres: in many great things, for the roialty of the Dre, they berived their names from the Dre, as in calling allo the Ozape Bumammam : in fine, lupiter himfelfe thought god to connert into this thave his finet barling Europa. Mozeouer, of a rotten Stere are ingendzed the fwete 15 es, the mothers of Boney, wherefore they were called of the Wiekes (as Varro faith) Bulovac. The fame Varro makes foure beares in their age: the firft of Calues the fecond of Dereings, the third Sterrs. the fourth Dren. The Seres : in the first, the Bull-calle, and the Cowe-calfe : the fecond, the Deyfar, and the Stere : in the third and fourth, the Bull, and the Cowe : the barraine Cowe he calleth Tauram, the melch Come Hordum, from inhence came the featts called Hordica felta, because the melch-kine were then fa crificed. The godnelle of this beaft is biners, according to the die uerfitie of the Country: the best were counted in the olde time to be of the breede of Albania, Campania, and Tofcam: at this day twe take the belt kinde to be in Bungary, Burgundy, Frilland, Denmarke, and in England. Df Bullocks, fome are for the braught, forme for the staule, and forme for the vaile : to what pur vole foener they ferue, whether it be fog labour, fog milking, of for footing, it is belt alwaies to chole fuch as are young, of lufte age, rather then those that are olde and barraine, the words of covenant in the olde time (as Varro faith) in felling of Bullocks, were thefe : doe pon warrant thefe Bullocks, oz Steres, that

that you fell to be found, of a found Beard, and without fault? The Butchers that buy for flaughter, and fuch as buy for facris fices, ble no word of warrantile : and though fome Bullocks are chosen by their Arength, some by the greatnesse of their body, pet the belt commonly have thefe properties : large, well knit, and found limbs, a long, a large, and a peepe fibed boby, blacke hoze ned, though in the colour there be no great matter, vet fome millike the white for their tendernesse, which also Varro consenteth, who would have them broad foreheaded, great eyed and blacke, his cares rough and hairy, his falves to be large and wide, his lippes blackith, his necke well braunco and thicke, his bewlappe large, hanging bowne from his necke to his knees, his shoulders broad, his hide not hard or Aubborne in fæling, his belly depe, his legges well fette, full of finewes, and ftraight, rather thoat then long, the better to fullaine the waight of his bos die, his knows fraight and great, his feete one farre from the of ther, not broad, nor turning in, but easily spreading, the hapre of all his body thicke and thoat, his taplelong, and big haveed, Palladius thinketh the best time for buying of braught Dren, to be in Warch, when being bare, they cannot cafily hide their faults, by the fraude of the Seller, noz by reason of their weathrele be to Stubborne to be handled. It is best to buy them of your neigh. bour, left the change of agre and loyle hurt them : for the Bullocke that is brought by neare home, is better then the Aranger, because he is neither troubled with change of ayze, water, noz pas fure: if you cannot have them nere you, buy them from fome like Countrey, og rather from a harder: and be well affured that you buy them ever matched, left in their labour the ffronger fpovic the weaker. Loke belides that they be gentle, Skilfull in their labour, fearefull of the goade, and the driver, not breading and water or bridge : great feders, but foftly, and not ouer-haltilie, foz luch doe best digest their meate. In choling of Bulles of Bine, the very like fignes are to be required, that the Bull differeth from the Dre, in that he hath a moze frowning and fierce lake, Chorter hornes greater, and thicker necke, fo big. as it fixmes the greatest part of his body, his belty fomething gaunter, and meeter for Bulling of Kine. The Bull, before he be fuffered to goe with the Bine, muft be well fed with graffe, chaffe.

Ô

rD

de

he

(a)

dia

to

ap

nd,

the

urs

1, 01

atte

s of

Bul-

eres,

that

chaffe, oz hay, and kept scuerally by himselfe, neither must be goe to the Cowe, till the tenth of June, Varro would not fuffer him before the rifing of the Lira : but Ariftorle would have him all the reddzing time, to got in paffure with the hine. The Coive likewife would be high of fature, and long botice, having great boders, broade forchead, faire bornes, and froth, and all other te. hens almost that is required in the Bull, forcially to be young: for when they vaffe twelve væres old, they are not good for brad, but they live many times farre longer if their paffere be and, and they kept from difeates. The olde Towe giucth moze milke then the young, according to the Country peoples prouctbe olde Bine more milke, poung Dennes more egges, Againe, bider thee veres old, you may not fuffer them to goe to Bull : if they chaunce to be with Calfe befoze, pou muft put the Calfe from them, and milke them for thee Daies after, leaft their boders be fore afterwards forbeare milking. Plinie writeth, that at a pere old they be fruitfull, but the brede will be little, as it happeneth in all to timely ingendzings. You muft every pare in thefe beafts (as in all other) fort your focke, that the old that be barraine, or binmete for breeding, may be put away, fold, or remoued to the Dlow: for when they be barraine (as Columella faith) they will labour as well as Dren, by reason they are based by, but we bie commonly to fat them : their age is knowne by the knots and cir tles of their hornes, which Plinie marketh likewife in Coates. The time for going to 15ull, fome take to be beff in the mitft of the foring : Palladius would have it in July , for fo in the minth moneth the thall calue, for fo long the goeth with Calfe (as the common people fay) a Cowe and a Queane hath both one time. In many places they belire to have their Tolves goe to Bull a thirty or forty baies after the tenth of June, that they may calve in Barch, or Aprill: that they thouls have much milke, fo or ber the matter, as their kine goe to Buil from the Spring, to Minter, whereby they alwaies milke fome: at once bulling the conceiveth, if the chaunce to faile, the goeth to Bull againe within twenty dayes after : forme fay, if fo be the Bull come botune on the left fide of the Cowe, it will bea Comcalfe, if on the right fibe, a Bull calfe. The Brokes affirme, that if you will hauea 15 ull-calfe, you must knit the right stone of the Bull. for a Colo calfe.

talfe, the left : Varro faith, that if you put the Cow to the Bull immediately after gelding, the conceineth. Columella affirmeth fifteene kine to be enough for one Bull. I thinke he will well enough ferue twenty Bine , if he be fuch a Bull as I Defcribed : if you have god fore of patture, you may let them goe to Bull every være, but you must beware your kine be not to fat, that will hinder their being with Calfe. The Cowe touls when the is reoding, have but thost patture, and the Wall his belig full: to thall neither the betw fat, no; he bnlufty. If the Come will not take the Bull, you must tampe fea Dnions in water, and rub ber bnber the taile with it : if the Bull be not lufty enough about his bufineffe, take the pærell of a Stagge, burneit, and make it in powder, and with a little wine and the powder, bath his stones, and his perell withall, which will ferue for the like purpole in all other beaftes (as Quintilian faith) his courage is alfo ffirred by by the like obours that you fpeake of for your Borfe. A Bull ought not to leave the Coive aboue thise in a day as some thinke, but we finde by experience, that he may oftner. In some places they have common Bulles, and come mon Boares to enery Towne: A Bull will ware furious at the fight of any red thing, as the Clephant, and the Lyon, which can in no wife abide the fight of any white thing. A Cowe will give fucke to a ftrange Calfe, but let not the Calnes lye with them in the night, for feare of ouer-laying them. Some weane them at the first and suckleth them with Bilke, or Wabap. bauing a little Branne in it, or Flowre, wherewith they bring them by, till they be able to feede. Withether you meane to reare them for brede, labour, or febing, you muft let them want no ftoze of god pasture : for though they be of neuer fo great a bzebe, pet if their pafture be fcantie, they will neuer come to their full growth : for patture makes the beaft (as the Countrey people fay.) Mago, and the olde Busbands, would have you to gelde them while they be very young, which oze ber we likewife obferue in cutting of them : and in the Spring. or at the fall of the leafe, when they be three moneths olde, or there about, we ble to gelbe the Bull Calnes, and fpay the Colve Calues, folwing by the wound, and annointing it with fret Butter. Columella mould not have them cutte, but their Hones

U

Kones broken by little and little with an incrument, which kinde of geloing he belt liketh, because in the little young ones, it is bone without bleding : for when they be fomething growne bp. it is better to cutte them at two percole, then at a pere olde, which mult be bone in the Spring, og at the fall of the leafe, the Mone being in the wane : you muft tye by the Calfe to a frame, and before you cut him, you must fasten about the sinches, where by the froncs hang, a couple of fmall flicks like a paire of tongs, and taking hold therewith, cut away the ftones, fo as a little of the bpper parts of them may remaine with the forcaid fynewes: for by this meanes you thall not has ard the beatt by cuermuch bles bing, neither is his tomacke quite taken away, but hath fome. thing of the father remaining, and pet lofeth his abilitie of ingens Ding. Dotwithfanding, if you fuffer him immediately byon his new cutting to goe to the Cow, it is certaine he may get a Calfe, but let him not lo doc, for feare of bleding to death. The wound must be annointed with the Albes of Lines, and Lytharge, and he must not be suffered the first day to drinke, but nourished with a little meate: thee dayes after he must be bretes, according to his febleneffe, with greene bowes and fwete graffe cut for him, and loked to, that he brinke not to much: and if you will, you may annount the fore for three dates with Tarre, and a little Athes, and Dyle, to heale him the foner, and to keepe the place from flyes. Don muft blethem while they be yet poung to luf. fer to be handled, and froked, and tred by to the Manger, that when they shall come to be broken, they may be handled with moze eafe, and leffe banger : but Columella forbibs you to med. ble with the breaking, or labouring of them, before thee vere olo, and after fine : for the one is to fone, and the other to late. Those that you have taken up wilde, and be well framed, and proportioned, according to my patterne, you shall handle and breake in this fort : First of all, fe that you have a large rome, where the breaker may cally goe by and bolune, and out at his pleas fure, without any danger. Befoze the Stable von muft haue a faire field, that the Steeres may hane libertie enough, and not be feard, oz haltred with tres oz bulhes. In the Stable, pou mul haue certaine ftalles og bogdes, poke-wife fet bp, a feanen fote from the ground, to which the Steres may be tred : this bone,

bone, those you a sayze day so, the purpose, and taking them by bring them into the stable: and if they be vinceasonable, wilde, and curst, let them stand tyed a day and a night without any meate, to tame them withall: afterwards let him that keepes them, offer them a little meat, not soewayes, or behinde, but before, coing them all the while, and speaking gently to them, stroking their backes, and their mosels, and sprinkling them with a little sweet wine, taking god hed, that they strike him neither with head, nor with heale: for if he once get that tricke, he will never leave it. Thus being a little acquainted with him, you shall rubbe his mouth with Dalt, and let downe into his throat certaine lumpes of salt tallow, and powring after a quart of good Wine, which will make him in three dayes as good a fellow as you would with him to be. Some vie to poake them together, and let them draw some light thing, or plow in a light plowed

ground, that their labour burt not their neckes.

The readier way of breaking them, is to poke them with an olde Dre, that may easily instruct them: if he happen to lve downe in the furrow one neither beat him, noz feare him, but binde his fet together, and let him lye, that hee may neither fturre, noz fiede: which being well punified with hunger, and thirft, will teach him to leave that fullen tricke. The feeding of this kind of Cattell is diners, according to the dinertitie of Countries : if there be floze of god Bafture in the Countrie, there is no fode to that : in Countries where wanteth Bafture, and specially in Winter, be muft be kept in the Stall, and fed with fuch fodder as the Countrey velos. Wihere there are Tares to be had , it is the best feeding for them : and Day is bery god, Chaffe, and Colettalkes with Thatte and Bay, and chopt traw foode toges ther in water, is very god feeding for Wainter. In fome places, they fiede altogether with new threshed strawe: in many plas ces they give them Lupines flæped in water, or Chiches, or Befon, mingled with Chaffe : befides, the branches and leanes of Uines, the griene branches of Elme, Albe, Poplar, and Bolme: in winter, when other græne bowes faile, the figge Træ will ferue, 02 the broufing of Dhes, & Holly. Dren are fone fat in good Pafture, and with Witheat, Kapes, Apples, and Radiff: Dren, or laine, will be paffing fat, where there wanteth Palture,

by gluing them meale mirt with Wheat, Chaffe, and Rapes, 02 Graines. They will ware the foner fat, in walhing them with warme water, or (as Plinie faith) by cutting their fkinnes, and blowing in winde to their bellies with a Rede. Socion teacheth that they will be fat, if when they are taken from palture, you give them the first day Celweits chopt and freped in Marve Minegar, and afterwarts Chaffe, being well cleanled and ming led with Witheat branne, for the fpace of fine or fire daics, feeding them after with god floze of fodder : in Winter you must fixde them at the first Cock-crowing, and againe when the day begins to breake : in Summer firft at the breaking of the bay then at none, and at night: in Summer you must water them twife a day, thee houres afore none, and the boures after : in Winter, once a day with warme water, which is also thought to be god for fruitfulnelle : and therefore the Lakes that are filled with raine water, are good for them. This kinde of Cattell defireth no cleane, or faire water, but foule and publed : pet it were better to give them faire water. Alfo, you must proute them of warme paftures for the Winter, and in Summer bery cole: chiefly Mountaines where they may browle byon the bulbes, and picke by a god living among the Wods: but in lowe grounds and niere the Kiner, Dren are foner fatted, and kine gine a grea ter quantity of Wilke. In Summer , they lye abroade all the nights in many places : yea, in England you thall have them foddzed abroad all the Winter. Though they be able to abide colde, pet mult pou promide them of large Stalles, for the fuccous ring of fuchas be great with Calfe. Pour Stables o; Dreftals, must stand dap; and be well flored, either with stone, gravell, or fand : the stone will suffer no water to above byon it, the other will fone brinke it by, and bay it : both forts muft be laved flope, that the water may runne away for rotting the groundfels, and marring their houses. Let them open toward the South, so shall they be the daier, and the warmer: notwithstanding, let pour windowes open porth and Caft, which being thut in Winter, and open in Summer : map giue a healthfull apze. In fine, as necre as can be let the houses be neither to bot, not to coloe, and as day as may be: Columella would have two Dreshoules, one for the Winter, the other for the Summer, both bucquered, but

but well and high walled, for keeping out of wilde beaffs. The Stals would be eight fote wide, that they may have rome & nough to live in , that the Mine great with Calle burt not one the other, not the Aronger Dre woong the weaker : and that there may be rome for their Bevers to come about them, and for poaking them. Vicrouius would have the Dreshouse open towards the Caft, and to be neere the fire: for fire is naturally beneficiall to Cattell, both for the daving by of the infective bamps, and the keping of the Cattell warme. Befides, by fees ing of the fire, they are made gentler, and by the heate thereof, what coide they have taken in the Waltures is ervelled, and ofners inward difeales cured. The houses mult be feuered with Divers romes, enclosed and racked, the Kacke must have fuch vertitions, as one beaft beguile not the other, whereto they must be well haltred and tred, for burting one the other : Caro would have the pertitions lettifed. Pozeover, it is to no purpofe to fabe them well, except you also looke to the keeping of them in health, and found, and therefore whether they be in house, oz abzoad, you must alwaies haue a speciail regard buto them, and to ouer-looke them in the night, fpecially, if there be any Mine amonaft them with Calfe. And though it be nevefull at all times to over-for them, both morning and evening, vet most nedefull is it of all other times, to le to them in the Spring, luben pou firft put them to palture : for at that time, by reafon of their change of biet, both Dren, Bine, and Bayfars, are moft in panger of fickneffe: in Whinter againe to looke to them, that they be not, for sparing of charges, kept so poore, as they be btterly fpoiled. And therefoze you muft fpare no litter, fpecially when they come from labour, to rubbe them, and bay them, Broking them with your hands, and railing the hide from the aed, which will doe them great good. In comming from worke, or out of the pasture, you must wash their feete well with water, before you bring them into the house, that the burt and filth cleaning to them , breede no difeales , noz foften their hofes. Beware of to much cold, or heate, for too much of cither, filleth them with difeales. Don muft take hebe they be not chaff, noz chafed up and bowne, specially in hot weather, for that bringeth them in a Feauer, or causeth them to have a flire. Take

Take hede also that there come neither Swine no? Poultrie neire their ftalles, for both of them with their dunging poyloneth the beaft. The dunging of a sche Swine both diede the Petillencs, or Purraine amongst Cattell. You must away with all manner of Carrions, and burying them well for instang your Cattell. If so be the Purraine chance to come amongst them, you must presently change the ayre, and sever your Cattell farre as sunder in divers pastures, beging the sound from the sicke, that they be not insected, nor suffering them either to seede together, or drinke together.

he Murraine and his diuers kindes.

The Weltilence or Murraine, is a common name : but there are divers kindes of it : in fome Qurraines, the cattell brivell, and runne both at the note and mouth: in others againe they be by, and fall away more and more : fometimes it comes in the toynts, and cauleth them to halt before or behinde : fomctime in their kiones, and appeareth by the weaknes of their hinder parts, wherein they feeme to have great paine in their lovnes. Another kinde there is, that rifeth like a Farcine, with pimples oner all the body, now appearing, and prefently banifbing, and comming out in a new place. Another fort, betwirt the hive and the fleth, wherein the humour (weateth out in bivers parts of the body. Sometime it is like a lepzofie, when all the fkinne is full of little pimples, and fometime a kinde of madnette, wherein they neyther heare, not foe fo well as they were wont, though they loke favze and fat, and luftie enough. Query one of thefe kindes, are contagis ons and infedine: and therefore as fone as you perceive them infected, you must prefently put them afunder, for infecting the whole flocke, left pou impute that to the weath of God (as many foles doe) which happeneth through your owne beaftlynelle, and nealigence. The common remedy (as Columella faith) is the rots of Angellica, and Sea Thille mingled with Feneil feete, and with new boyled Wine, Wheat flower, and hot water to be fuzinchled byon them. The common people, when they perceive either their Bosle oz Bullocke fick, oz any other cattell elfe, they ble to take the rote of blacke Cleboz, called of some Confiligo, of others Bearefote : and for a Bullocke, to thruft it in the Deto lap; for a Borfe, in the breft; for Swine or Shepe, through the eare, making a hole with a Bookin, e thautting the rote vaclently through:

Setter-

through, which the new wound holdeth fast that it can not fall out, whereunto all the whole force of the popfon both ftraight. wates gather, and runneth out in filthy water. Berfumes in this cale (as Vegerius teacheth ) bomuch goodas 182 inftone, buffecked Lime, Barlick, wilbe Parforum, and Coziander feede, laid bpon the coales, and the Dren fo held, as they may receive the fmoke by their mouth & note, that it may fill the braine, and their whole body with a healthfull arze. It is god also thus to perfume the whole body, both for the health of the ficke, and preferring of the whole. Befoze I proceed any farther, I will fet you downe what kinde of Spices, and what quantitie you ought alwaies to have in a readinelle for your cattel. Don muft have one pound of fenis crike, halfe a pound of Liquereffe, one pound of Czaines, Turme, ricke, halfe a pound, or a quarterne of Bay berics, one pound of Long Depper, halfe a pound of Triacle of Bean, a pound of Anil feede, halfe a pound of Comin, halfe a pound of Badber, Datment, halfe a pound. The hearbe whose rote pou may ble (as I said be. fore) groweth in many places in the Wiods: it was once brought buto me by channce from Darndall in Suffex, by one Richard Androwes, a good painefull learcher out of fuch things. Foz belide bis prefent remedying of Cattell, be ferueth against bivers bifea. fes in a man, fpecially for the Quartane, as the learned Mathic. For Crulus hath in his Description of Wlants mentioned.

To returne to my Tattell : if they want their bigelfion, 03 chaine not cubbe, which difeales is perceined by often belching, and nople in the belly, with forbearing of their meate, bulneffe of their eyes, and not licking of themselves. Take a handfull of Bellitozie of Spaine, as much of Bearbegrace, as much of Fetherfew, Sage, Bozebound, and Bay Salt, the pintes of very frong new brinke : feethe them all together three or foure walloppes, and gins it him bloud-warme in the morning, not luffering him to dainke till the afternoone: if you neglect? this difease, so that he be payned in the belly, and full of griefe, be will grone, and never fand ftill in one place. For remedie whereof, you thall binde his taple close by the Kumpe, as araite as may be, and give him a quart of Wine, with a pinte of the purest Dple : and after beine hinr apace for the space of amile and a halfe; annoint your hand with greafe, and rake him : after wards,

afterwards, make him runne againe : fome ble to let him blood

in the faile, within a handfull of the rumpe.

The Taile There is a difease which they call the Molfe, others the Taile, which is perceived by the loosenes, or softnesse betwirt the ioints: take the Taile and seele betwirt every soont, and where the soont seemeth to be a sunder, or is soft and not close as the other soonts, there take and lit him the longest way buder the Taile, about two inches long, and lay in the wound Salt, Soote, and Barlicke, and binde it fast with a clout about it. The Cholicke, or paine in the belly, is put away in the beholving of Desc in the water, specially Duckes, (as you sayd before of Horles:) for the light of the Ducke, as Vegetius and Columella say, is a present remedy to this beast.

The Flixe

for the Flire, or the Laske, which in some places they call the Kay, take Sloes and dry them in powder, and give it them to drinke: if it be the bloody Flire, the olde followes were wont to care it in this sort: They suffered not the beast to drinke in thee dayes, and kept him faking the first day, and give him the stones of Keazins, or Grapes, dryed and made in powder two pounds, with a quart of charpe tart Wine, and suffered them to drinke no other drinke, and made them eate the browsing of wilde Dlive trees, and Pastrire trees: and if they mended not with this, they burnt them in the sorehead to the very braine pan, and cut off his eares. The wounds, till they were whole they washed with Dre pisse: but the cut parts were to bee healed with Dyle and Pitch.

Laske in Calues.

If your Calues have the Ray of Laske, take sweet milke, and put therein the Rennet of a Calfe, make it no thicker but as the

Calfe may well brinke it, and give it him luke-warme.

The Cough.

If pour Bullocke have the Cough, and if it bee but beginding, give him a pinte of Barley meale with the yolke of an Egge, Reazins boyled in tweet Whine and Arained a pinte: mingle them together, a give it him falting. Also Braines beaten and mingled with Flower, fried Beanes, and meale of Lentis, all Airred together, a given him in a math. Columella would have you give them Brasse chopt, and mingled with Beanes that are but a little broken in the Will, and Lentis small ground, and mingled with water. The old Cough they cured with two pound

of hylope, theped in thee pintes of water, and mingled with Figuer, which they made him to fivallowe, and afterwards powied into him the water wherein Opfope had beine fooden, alfo Deafon, with Barly water and fooden Bony, when they had the Cough, and Confumption of the Lungs. To keepe them a line, they bled to burne the rote of a Balell, and to thruft it through their cares, gluing them to brinke a pint of the fuice of Le's with the like measure of Dyle and Wine. For the Cough of the Lungs 3 ble to give them long- Depver, Graines, fene, gryke, Bayes, Annificoe, Detment balles, Turmericke, and Badder, beating them all together, and feething them in and Ale grounds. If your Calnes have the Cough, take Sentozy, and beat it to powder, and give it them.

If they have the Feaver, or Ague, you thall perceive it by the The Feawatring of their eies, the heautneffe of their head, the prine, tier. ling at the mouth, beating the beines, and heate of the whole body : let them fatt one bay, the nert day let them blod a little betimes in the morning in thetaile, after an houre give them a thirty little Ralkes of Collowats fod in Dyle, Water, and Salt, which must be powerd falling in them, fine daves together. Belide , you may give them the tops of Dlive tros, Lentils. or any tender brutings, or branches of Wines, and wipe their mouthes with a Spunge, giving them coloe water thife a bay.

The blood falling botone into the legs, causeth them (as Vegefius faith) to halt, which as fone as you perceius, you must fraight, Halting, maics looke boon the hoofes, the heate whereof will declare his griefe, belide, he will fearfe luffer you to touch it. But if fo be the blood be vet about the hoofe in the legs, you thail diffolue it frith good rubbing, or if not with that, with fearifying, or pouncing the flinne. If it be in the foote, open it a little with a knife betwene the two clawes, and lay to the fore, cloutes bipped in Mis negar and Salt, making him a Chose of 13200ine, and be feell ware be come not into any water, but fand dav. This blood, ifit be not let out will beced to matter, which will be long ere it heale: if it be opened at the first with a knife and made cleane, and after clowte dipped in Sater, Salt, and Dyle laid to it, and at the laft annointed with olde Swines greafe, and Goates fuet boyled together, it will quickely be whole. This difeafe, as 3 take it,

Ď

tO

30

H

an

::

ca

cm

olo

hat

one

md

Óľ

the countrep people call the Fowle , or the Wife, which they fometime cure with brawing arope of frain, or barre through the Cleefe, till it bleebe, oz by fearing of it with a hot yzon. If the bloo be in the lower part of the Boofe, the bttermoft part of the Cle is pared to the quicke, and fo the blod let out, and after the fot weapped with clowtes, and those with Brome, you must oven the Boofe in the middelt, ercept the matter be rive. If he halt by reason of the Crampe, or paine of the finewes, you shall rubbe his knies, thighes and legs, with balt and Dple, till he be whole. If his knes, or topnts be (wolen, they muft be bathed with warme Mineger, and Linfebe, oz Apriet beaten and lavo to it. with Water and Domp. Also Spunges wet in hot water, and Daved againe, and announted with Dony are very god to be laid to the knee : if bnder the fwelling there beany humour, Leauen, or Barly meale foode in water and Bony, or fivet Wine, muft be lapd to it : and when it is ripe, it must be opened with a knife, and healed as before.

All griefes generally, if they be not broken, muft be biffoluch whilest they are new, with bathes, and fomentations: and if they be old, they must be burned, and the burning annointed with Butter, oz Boates fuet. If he haue burt his bele, oz his bofe, Rone Witch, Brimftone, and greafe Woll, muft be burnt boon the foare with a hot pron. The like must bee bone when it is hurt with a Stubbe,a Thorne,or a palle, being firft plucked out, or if it bee bery beepe, it must bee opened wide with a knife, and fo handled : for kibed heles, take and caft him, and binde his legges faft together, then take pour knife, and cut it out as nie as you can, and let him bled well: then take a peny-worth of Merbegreale, and the poalke of an Egge, and temper them well together, and binde them close to the place, and he thall heale. If the Adder of pour kine boe fwell, you thall bathe them with Jup, fooden in fale Bere, oz Ale, and fmoke them with Bonp coames , and Camomell. If the Bullockes fete be nere worne, and furbated, walh them in Dre piffe mare med, and kindling a few twigges, or furaves, when the flame is bone, cause him to fand boon the bot imbers, and annount his hornes with Tarre, and Dole, or Wogges greafe. They will neuer lightly halt, if after they baue beene laboured, their forte be washed well with cold water, and afterwards their pasterns. and the places betweene the Clas be rubbed with olde Sivines

greale.

t

d

D 11

e

B

19

is

is

al

te be

The fcabbes, or mangeneffe, is gotten away with rubbing Scabbes. them with framped Garlicke, which also cureth the biting of a madde Dogge : befides, Peneriall, and Brimffone, beaten and boyled with Dole, Mineger, and Water, and after whileft it is warme, alittle Alom madein powder, and caft into it, both cure the fcabbe, being annointed in Sunfhine. Dthers ble to annoint them with Butter, and Bullocks pille : and fome againg take

Kosen, Marre, and Wine, and ble it as a Bulteffe.

Dide-bound, is when the Chinne fo flickes to his backe, that Hide. you cannot take it by from the ribbes, which happeneth by fuffe, bound. ring him to take cold after his flucat, or if after his labour be be met with raine, or brought low with fickeneffe: which, because it is perpoangerous, you must loke that when they come from their labour, and are hot, you fprinckle them with Wine, and give them some pecces of fat, og fuet. But if they be already bide-bound, it is good you feethe fome Bay leanes, and with the marine becotion thereof, to bathe his backe, and to rubbe him all over with Wine and Dyle mingled together, and to lift and plucke by the fain round about, and that abroad while the funne thingth. If his blooming french not after the cutting of the baine. the remedy is, to lay his owne boung to the place. A common medicine for all difeates (as Vegetius reporteth) is this: the rote of a Sea Dnion, the rote of a Boplar, and the common Salt, of each a sufficient quantitie, lay them in water, and gine it pour Cattell to brinke till they be whole : which also being given in the beginning of the Spring , for the space of fouretiene papes, meserueth them from all lickenelle. Dow that you have heard in inhat fort the old bulbands oid remedie the difeates in their Cattell, I thall briefelp declare buto pou the remedies that are observed in sunday diseases at this day, whereof I have chopt in fome amongst the medicines before.

Firth.for the Purraine: it beginneth at the firt in the throat, For the and finelicth in the head, and rotleth with much novie in the Murraine. throat, whereby it is perceiued : take a quart of neive wilke, halfe a penp-worth of Butter, a penp-worth of Barlicke, two

neny-worth of English Saffron, two peny-worth of Cinamon. ting peny-worth of Turmericke, a quantity of Bearbegrace, a quantitie of Bittony, mingle them all together, and give it him inarme: then take an aule, and thauft the toppe of his note by warp, take but the bery toppe to thauft through , and not to the beadward, then let him blod in the necke almost a pottell, if hee be able : faue the blod, and let it fand, if it change, be mar live, if not, be Dieth. Another foz the fame. Wihere be fwelleth about the laives, and by to the cares, open him bnoer the lawes to the rote of the tongue, and get in your finger, and open it a god widenelle, then take a god poce of rulty Bacon, and a handfoll of Haggewort, Campe them well together, and fill the hole full with it: then let him blod at the nole, and the tongue. A drinke for the fame. Take Tanfie, Bearbegrace, Lunginmet, Bofove. Time, of each a like quantitie, halfe an handfull, frampe them, and take a quart of god Ale grounds, and feth them a mallov, or tipe : take and ftraine it , and put the licour into a beffell , put thereunto a peny-worth of Graines, a peny-worth of long Dev per a peny-worth of Datment, and an peny-worth of Feneareke. fo give it the beaft luke-warme.

Forthe Lungs.

The fickenelle of the Lungs is perceined, if the Dewlan be hard closes together bery farre by : also in hard feeling the hide byon the backe, it cracketh, or mappethmuch : also a short but hing, and thaufting out the tongue withall: it it be much perithed on the left five, he is bucurable, which you thall verceine by the Dine, which will fick faft on that five, and likewife the Delplay: if he be farre gone , he will groane much. The remedy for this difeafe, is to take long Depper a peny-worth, round Depper as much, of Braines two peny-worth, of Turmericke two peny. worth of Fenegreke two veny-worth of Bace as much Cloves a peny-worth, of Anificos a peny-worth, of Madder tipo penyworth, of Triacle of Wean, the btter rinde of Walnuts Daved. and made in powder, Juniper berries powdzed, Dre Lungivort. Fetherfelve, Bearbgrace, Manlie, Hogle Mintes, Bay berries voludied, a peny worth of Carlicke, a quart of Chamberlie, a winte of Salt, a quantitie of Butter. Setter him befoze.oz im mediatip after this medicine giuen.

Settring of Cattel.

The order of Settring a Bullocke is this take Settermort,

otherwife

9

otherwife called Bearefote, and Garlicke, like quantitie, vels and frampe the Barlicke, and pare the Setterwort cleane, and wappe them well in Butter, then cut the Dewlap two inches behinde the Aicking place, to the breativard, and cut it along thise about two or thee inches, and will the Dewlap with the finger. or with a flicke, round about, one five from the other, as much as pou can poffiblie : Then put the Setterwort, Barlicke, and Butter, as much as thou canft well put in, and thus doe on both fides the Dewlay, then rowle him fo that the fring may goe through both holes on both fives the Dewlap, alwaves remembring to cut the Dewlap a hand broad, or about the bottome, and in any wife to rent him to the bottome, before you put in the medicine. The third day after the Settring, loke to the over ning the wound, and let out the corruption (if it be come downe) if not, put in moze of the medicine, and turne the rowle: and if it be much Apollen, and hard, and will not rot, take a hot from and take by part of the foare, the fkinne, and the fleth, in fuch place as thou feelt most convenient, fo as it come not to the bone, and thruft the from through on the one fide, and on the other, or once right bnder, if the fivelling be right beneath, and Tarre him well if the flies be buffe. Which flies, if they chaunce to get into the foare, take a cloth, or towell, and lappe it about a fticke, and put it into fkalding hot Tarre, and fo among the Pagots, fearthing enery corner well. After you have pearced him with the hot iron, remember to take a little flicke, and Towe, and dipping it in Sallet Dple, og woll Dple, to rubbe the hole where the pron paffed.

The fickeness of the Ball, is knowen by the running eyes, The Gall, of if he have much yellow eare-ware: it is alsolosserned by the or Vibbotome yellowes under the upper lippe: the Ture is this: Make lowes. Chamberlie, good Ale-grounds, of Beere-grounds, hard Sote in powder, Balliwort, beasts Lungtwart, Planten leaves, Hearbegrace, Hempsido, of Hempe toppes, Barlicke stamped, a peny worth of Aqua virx; for a great Bullocke, take almost a quart of this medicine, for a small Bullocke, less : when hee hath drunke, take Salt, Loame of the wall, and leavened bread, and rubbe well his tongue, and all the rose of his mouth: then wash his backe, and chase it well with Chamberlie, luke warme:

.

ã

9

gather .

gather all thefe Bearbes in Summer, and kepe them, and make

Forthe Liuer.

The

Blaine.

them in powder. This Dedicine ferueth likewife for the Lungs. If a Bullocke be difealed in the Liver, he complaineth firft in the legges, which will so grieve him, that he thall not be well able to fand, though he be in god liking: the remedie is this: Take a quart of god Ale (if it may be gotten) if not, take Bere, put therein Liveriport a god handfull, Wormelpod as much, a peny-mouth of Barlicke, halfe a peny-wouth of Dadder, a penymosth of round Bepper, as much long Bepper, a peny-worth of Cloues and Bace, a veny-worth of Triacle, mingle them toge, ther, the Dearbs being powdzed, and give the Beaff a dzinke luke warme. The fignes of the Blaine are thefe, Swelling a bout the face and the eve, and fomewhat in the body: if it be in the body, it fiveleth much there : the onely remedie is : Take and fearch him in the mouth, if you perceius blifters onder the rotes of the tongue, or other place there-abouts, then cut them to the bottome, and let them out and rubbe the place with Salt : fearth him also in the bodie at the fundament, by the arme or hand of fome young fripling: and when his arme is in as farre as he can, let him turne his arme boward, and fiele for the Blaines, or Bliffers, and breake them with his naples, pulling them quite out : fee that he annoint his hand well with Greafe or Sope. There is a difeafe called the Sprenges, wherein her will fmite Sprenges. his head backward to his belly, and fampe with his leages : you must put pour hand into his fundament, as far as you can, a pull out the bung, then thall you finde bloud, pull the bloud quite out, and take a good handfull of Bay Salt, and put it in at tipife, as far as you can: if he have this difeate, he will fwell in the bodie, and couet much to bung. If he have the Staggers, he will loke bery red about the eyes, and caft his head backward : take the fourth part of an ounce of Depper, bzuileit, and take halfe a pinte of tharpe Wineger, warmed bloud warme, and powize it into his

The

The Staggers.

Posthails, & hold his head well beward, and let him bloud at the The Dafie Pole. If pour Bullocke turne round, and have the Dafie, pou thall take him by the head, and fiele boon his forehead, and you shall feele it with your thumbe : cut the shinne croffe wife right in

the place, and wipe away the bloud as it both encrease with a clout, and binde a cloth ouer his head, and hope it warme. If

pour

t t t t a a a

Pi ch Ca

PE OF C

th

pour Dren Bille bloud, heepe them foure and twenty houres from Pilling of mater, and then give to every one a little billfull of rennet curds bloud. in a quart of milke, let them not brinke in foure boures after. There fometime runneth a bloud boon the backe of a Bullocke. which will make him braw his legges after him, and goe as if he were (waide in the Chine : cut off a toynt or two of his tayle, and let him blede : if he blede to much, knit his taple, or feare it. If he have the Panties, he will pant much, and thake in the Panties. Flanke, and fometime thake bowne: gine him a little rennet, with Sote and Chamberlye. If he fwell of the Maint, or Stings Taint, worme, gine him brine, falt, and tryacle to brinke. If be be 19ides Hidebound, ftampe the leanes of Flozebelile, ftraine them, and gine bound. the beaft to brinke: if he chaunce to have a ftroke in the eve, take the tupce of Smalledge, Fenell, and the white of an Cage. The Barquie is a fwelling befide the eye byon the boane, like a botch, Gargyfe. or a byle : if your Bullocks have it, cut off round about it pieces of fainne as broade : then cut also round about those peeces one narrow lappe of the Chinne, which will keepe the difeafe from his lippes, for if it come to his lippes, it is bucurable : Then take Chamberlye and Salt, and lethe them together, and wash the places tohere the fainne is cut off, and walh it therewith evening and morning, till the Iwelling be gone, fcraping off the fcabbes, and other filth at every dreffing to the quicke, till the fwelling be gone, not fparing it fo long as it watreth and runneth : when the Civelling is cleane gone, take Parnoile and Boney, boyled together blond marme, and amount all the faid places, which will both heale it, and cause the hanze to come againe. The haue For all sertaine medicines belides, that we ble generally for all dileales; dileales. as this, jubich is very foneraigne: Take a handfull of beafts Lungwort, a handfull of other Lungwort that feructh for the pot, a handfull of inward rinde of Cloer, a handfull of Reive. thoppe them fmall, and put them into a pottle of god Ale, let them fathe till they be loft, then firre them, and put in the liquour a penp-worth of long pepper, a peny-worth of graines, a veny-worth f Liquerife, a peny-worth of Anificede, a halfe-peny-worth of Comena peny-worth of Turmericke, all well beaten, and put into the liques, with a quarter of a pound of Paoder: and while all thele do leth, take a great bole with, and put therein a handfull of

S

36

u

nu

in

) a

3f

ur

Bay falt balfe a banofull of Barlick foure new land Cages theis and all, two balls of Detment arinde all thefe things with a Wes Ale, in the bowle: then take the liquour aforefaid from the fire, till it be halfe colo and put the warme liqueur into the bowle, with the Barlicke, Salt, Coges, and Detment, bew it well together, and give the Beaft to brinke bloud-warme,oz alittle moze. Ance ther of the same fort is this: Two peny-worth of Comen, a penp-worth of Wrains, tipo penp-worth of Anisteds, a veny-worth of Bay-berrics, a peny-worth of Fencerik, a peny-worth of Eur mericke, one ball of Datment, a peny worth of Triacle, or ras ther for the Lungs, thee or foure fponefuls of Batber, beat them all together, and put them in thee quarts of bainke, fet them on the fire, till they be bloud-warme, give the beaft no brunke in the morning before, nor till none after, in the Summer, and in the Winter till night: oz if vou will, you may give them this medi cine following : Take flint fote, that is bard beved byon a poft or rofe, and beat it into powder with falt, then take running was ter, and feetheit, rank Juie, with the fote and falt, and when the Bute is foft, take and wing out the funce, and frame all together through a linnen cloth, and give it your cattell to drinke bloudwarme, in the Spring, and at the fall of the leafe. Bubale, called of the common people Buffes, of Plinie Bisonte, are common in Italy, beyond the Apenin : a wilde and fauage Beaft, that for their fierceneffe, are handled with rings of Iron in their noles: of colour blacke, their botics large and mighty, their legges well fet, and knit bery frong : and in refug d of their bodie, thoat, their hornes large crained, and blacke, their hapre small and Chort, their taples little: they are in those parts bled for carriage, drawaht, and like bles, as the Dre. Df the milke of this beaft are made Thefes, that about Rome and other places are greatly effemed. Columella counts them to be frong meate, and heavy of bigeffi 12. Loe here is all that for my there I have to fay touching my cattell: now Hedio, hold pon the cantle another while.

The Buffes.

Sherpe.

HEDIO. Pert unto the greater lost of cattell, the chlefck place is to be alligned to Sheepe: yea, if you consider the great commoditie and profit, they are to be preferred before them: for as Dren ferne for the tilling of ground, and necellarie ble of men, fo is to this page bealt alcribed the language of the body for

the Sheeve both both with his flece apparrell bs, and with his milke and wholefome fleth nouriff be (as the Boet witneffeth.)

Poore beaff, that for desence of man, at first created wall, And in thy swelling vdder bear'st, the juyce of daintie tast: (faile, That with thy fleece keepft off the cold, that flould our limbs af-And rather with thy life, then with thy death, doest vs availe,

De Sheepe there are fundap breedes. The rich and a champion countrey bie beth a large and a great thepe : the barren and the cliffie, a reasonable fature: the wilde and the mountaine ground. a small and a werith there. The old busbands did greatly commeno the breede of Milet, Appulia, and Calabria, and most of all, the brede of Taranto nert of Parma, and Modena, At this day, for the finenelle of their flece are molt in vice the there of Engs land, of Bermany, about the Khine, and of France. Varro couns Telleth all fuch as would buy Ewes, to have their chiefe confide. ration of their age, that they be neither to olo,noz to young: the one of them not yet come to it, the other already patt profit: but better is that age, whereof there is some hope, then where there followeth nothing but a bead carkaffe. Pour beft is therefore Thechoise to buy them at two veres old, and not to meddle with fuch as of Ewes. are past thee: their age is to be knowne by their teth : for the teth of the olde ones are worne away : nert must you loke, that pour Cive haue a large bodie, bope wolled, and thicke ouer all the body, specially about the necke and the head, and god store bon the belly: for fuch as were bare necked and bellyed, the old husbands alwaies refused. The necke muft be long, the bel h large, the legges thoat, though the thepe of England be long legged, the taple in some countrey thoat, in others bery long: for in Arabia some haue tayles a cubite leng, but wonderfull broad : others, (as both Herodorus, and Elianus affirme) theie cubits long, fo that the Shepheards are forced to the them by, for being burt with trapling boon the ground. In Agypt a Kams taile hath beene found to weigh rr. pound and moze. The Kam Rammes: must have his homes great, winding inward, and bending to the face, though in some places they have no homes at all, and get no better Kammes : the hornes muft rather crokle inward then H 2

r

n

12

11

ír

ít

t,

30

D.

g

Œ

at

02

of

02

he

then grow Araight bp. In some Countries that are wette and Rozmic, Coates & Kammes are to be chofen that baue the greas teft and largest homes, whereby they may befend their heads from frome and tempelt: and therefore in cold and fromie countries, the homed Rams are belt : in milde and gentle clymates, the pold. 18 effoc, there is this inconvenience, when he knows him. felfe to be armed, he will alwaics be fighting, and buruly among his Ewes, and though he be not able to ferue the turne himfelfe, vet will be luffer no other Kamme in the Flocke, till be be cuen cloped, and lamed with letcherp. The Bollard on the other fibe, finding himfelfe bnarmed is milder and quieter by much: where fore the Shepheards, to refraine the rage of the unruly, boe ble to hang before his hornes a little bord with tharve vricks inward. lubich keepes him from his mannes, while he perceiveth himfelfe to be burt with his owne bloud : others fap, that if you pierce his homes with a wimble, next to the eares, where they winde in ward, he will leave his brawling. In some places also the Ewes are homed: but to the Kamme. Dis eves muft be browne, bis earcs mult be great, his breft, thoulders, and buttocks broad, his fonce great, bis tayle broad, and long : pou muft loke belide, that his tongue be not blacke, noz peckled, for commonly fuch will get blacke and pyed Lambes, as Virgill noteth :

And though the Ramme in fight be white as fnow, If blacke within his lawes his tongue be wrought, Refuse him quite, lest if he leape thy Ewe, He doe infect thy Fold with colour nought.

Buy not your Shepe but walhed and bulhozne, that the colour may plaincleer appeare: the white colour, as it is the beautifullest. When to so is it the profitables. In Parch is your best buying of Shepe: buy sheepe for Shephcards like such as have well worne out the winter. Whosocourt will be a the pmaister, must regard the abilitie of his ground: for it is not enough to have pasture in Summer, but they must be well provided for in Whiter: in any wife you must have store of pasture: and better it is, and more profitable to the Spainfer, to keepe a few sheepe well, then a great number with scarsific of pasture. Florentinus is of that sancy, that he would your number should

hould rather be odde then even, thinking that number moze for tunate, for the healthineffe, and long continuance of the cattell: but thefe are superfittious topes , as are a great number o ther, imagined by the faithleffe. Be fure enery pere once, to make pour mufter, and fupply the places of fuch as are bead, og ficke, with a new and a found number, fo that the Matter beno! Deceined with an old bnprofitable flocke. The hardneffe and crus eltie of the cold Winter, both oftentimes bequile the thepheard. and bettroveth many of his flocke : whereof ( pacluming of their Brength in the end of the Summer ) he had made no fupply, and therefore Columella is of opinion, that the age for breed ought not to be lette then thee yeeres, noz aboue eight, both because that neyther of the ages is meete to be kept : and also that whatfoeuer commeth of an old Bocke, hath lightly a fmacke of his old parents imperfection, and proueth cither to be barraine or weake. The felfe fame Columella would have the @wcs to be put to the Kamme after they had paffed two verce old, and the Kamme to be of fine perce old, for after feauen they becap. In many plas ces at this day, they fuffer both the kindes to bred from two pere old, till nine : but befoze two yercs , It is not god to put eyther the Kammeroz the Cive to bred , although in most places they fuffer the Cive at a piece old. The Hamme is put by his purpole, by the Wickers, of Bulrifbes, tyed to the @wes taple, but moze commodioully, by going in fenerall pattures : howbeit, they are not commonly feuered, but fuffered to go together. The Kammes that you would have to ferue your @wes, muft afoze the bloffo ming, bekept in god pasture, for two moneths, whereby they map be the better able to doe their bufineffe; but in our country, we commonly luffer them to febe together. To increase their lufts, you thall give them in their patture the blades of Dnions, or Enot-Graffe: They rather couet the old Ewes then the pong, because they be eastier to be entreated, and the Kainmes theme Clues in age be the better. By knitting of the right Cone, you hall have Cive Lambes, and of the left, Kamme Lambes: alfo their bloffoming in the A outh-winde, getteth Kamme Lambes, and in a South winde, Cive Lambes, one Kamme (as Didymus affirmeth ) fufficeth for fifte Ewes : when they have all conceived, the Rammes mutt againe be banifed , for dangering H 3

and harming the Ewes. During the time of their blottoming. they are to be watred in one place ( as both Varro and Plinic af. firme ) because the change of water both discoloureth the woll. and dangereth the Lambe. The policie of lacob the Batriarh. in procuring of partie coloured Lambes, is well enough knowen. The bell time for bloffoming, is from the fetting of the Baers ward, to the fetting of the Egle : (as Varro and Columella have logitten ) whichis (as Plinie interpretsit ) from the third Toes of Day, till the thirtene Balends of August: others thinke it goo all the pere long , many preferre the Wainter Lambe before those that fall in the Spring, as a creature that of all others beft broketh his Winter brith. The thunder, if the Ewes goe alone malics them caft their Lambes, and therefore it is goo to let them one with company for anothing that perill: they goe with Lambe one hundzeth and fiftic baies, oz fiue moneths: fuch as are afterward lambed, are fable and weake, and fuch were of the old writers called Cordi : for the most part they bring but one Lambe a piece, pet oftentimes tivo, and if they be well fed, fire at a time. It hath beene feine in Belberland, that fine Gwes hane had in one pero fine and twentie Lambes : it may feme perad. wenture to many incredible, and pet no great maruaile, fince they have thife a peere most times two, and fometime fire at a time. The Shepheard muft be as carefull as a Wiewife in the yearing time, foz this poze creature ( though the be but a Shape ) is as much tozmented in her delivery, as a factor, and is oftentimes the more dangeroully bered and pained in her labour, in that theis als together without reason : and therefore it behoueth the Shew heard to be failfull in medicining of his cattell, and fo cunning a Ditfuife withall, agif net require he map belpe his @we, what Danger foeuer happen. The Lambe as fone as beis fallen, mult be let on fote, and put to the dammes boder, and oftentimes his mouth held open, the milke must be milked in, that he map learns to fucke, but before pou doe this, you muft be fare to milke out the first milke called Cololira, whereof 3 will speake hereafter: for this, ercept fome quantitie be brawne out, both burt the Lambe: if the damme Die, you muft fuchle it with a bome: if the Lambe will not of himfelfe lucke, be muft be put to it, and his lips annointed with fivet Butter, and Swines greale, and fealoned a. little

little with fweet wilke. As some as they are lambed, they must be that by together with their bammes, wherby both the bamme may cherift them, and they learne to know their bammes. Afters ward . when they beginne to ware wanton, they must be feuered with Barbelles: 02 (as Varro waiteth ) after ten baies they muft be tied to little fakes with fome gentle ftap, for hurting of their fornts, and waring leane with to much play. The weaker mult be feuered from the Aronger, for hurting of them. And in the Morning betimes, before the flocke goe to paffure, and in the Cuenting ibhen they be ful, the Lambs muft be put to their Dams: and when they ware frong, they must be fed in the house, with Clouer, and fwete graffe, og elfe with Branne, and flowe. And when they bane getten greater frength, they muft be let out with their dammes about none, into fome funny and warme Close nereadiopning. In the meane time, you must not beale with the milking of @wes, fo shall you bauethem to beare the more woll, and bring the more Lambes. When the Lambes are taken from their bammes, god ber malt be had, that they pine not away: and therefore they must be well cherified in their iveaning time with god paffure, and well kept, both from cold, and ertreame heat. Bow after that they have forgotten the boder, that they care not for their dammes, then thall you let them feed with the flocke : howbeit in most places the Lambes are fuffered to feed in the flocke together with their bammes, and to Inche till harueft time, till the bammes themfelues bos weane them. Varro Coould have you not to geld your Lambes binber fine monethes old, and that in a feafon neither to hot, not to cold: but erperis ence teacheth be, that the best gelding is bnder the bamme when they be poungeft : for in the elver ( as in all other beafts) it is bangerous. Those that you will hope for Kammes . you muft take from fuch Cives as ble to have two at one time. The beft valture for there, is the Braffe that is turned by with the Blow, and groweth byon fallowes: the nert is that, that groweth in ozy Deboowes : the marify ground is to be refused, and that which groweth nere buto Lakes and Fennes : the plaine and the champion fields and Downes are belt for the delicateft and fis neft molled Shape. To be thoat, the foater and finer the Graffe is, the meeter it is for Sheepe ; and yet is there no pasture fo K 4 don

amb.oz fo fine, but with continuali ble your Shepe will be weary of it , ercept the Shepheard remedie this fault with giuing them Salt , which (as a lauce to their fobe ) be mußt fct reable in Summer when thep come from pafture, inlittle troughs of woo. by licking whereof they get them an appetite both to their meate and their brinke. For tobere as Sheepe wareth fonelt fat with watering (Aristotle affirmeth) pou must in Summer euery fift Day let them have Salt, a pecke to every hundged : fo fhall your There be alwaies healthy, ware fat, and veil vou plenty of milke, Dozeouer, against the Winter rotte, oz hunger rotte, you must provide to feebe them at home in Tratches. They are beft fed in the warmer countries, with the leaves and broutings of Clime and Ath, and the Baie that is made after Baruelt in the end of Summer becaufe it is fofteff, and therfore Sweter than the other. With what heede and carefulneffe this cattell is to be fed, Virgil declares, who wils a regard to be had of the time, both of their watring, and feeding.

When Summer faire with Westerne windes doth call, Your Justie flockes to woods and pasture send. Betimes, when day doth spring and ouer all The gladsome grasse the hoarie dew doth bend. From thence when as the fourth houre of the day With Jostie Sunne doth make them drie to bee, To wels or waters deepe go take thy way, And make them drinke in troughes of Oken tree.

But in the name time, and the heat of the day, you must drive them to the ballies, and shades, (as he saith) a little after.

Wherefocuer of Ioue the ancient Oken tree, His broad and mightie branches spreads, or where In sacred Groues of Holmes the shadowes bee.

After when the heat is past, you must drive them agains to the water, and so bring them agains to field.

When Sunne is let, and Evening Aarre appeares,
Then cooles the ayre, and dewie Moone shee cheeres.
Varro affirmeth, that they bivided their pasturing times in Puglia after this manner. First they put them out to pasture betimes in the Mouning, when as the dewie grass both farre eried in pleasantnesse, and sweetnesse, the Grasse that being burnt with

the

ttb

the heat of the Sounne, is ouer bay. About none againe, till it ware coler, thep are to be bainen boder forme colo, or watrie rocks, and broad thadowed trees, and toward the evening be fuffered to febe till bunne fet, alwayes hauing regard, that in their baining, ther heads be from the Sunne : for no teaft is fo tender headed. Mithin a little after the fetting of the Somne, they mult be bais uen to mater, and after fuffered to fæde againe, till it be barke : for then is the Bafture fweteft. This ogber is to be obferued from the rifing of the leaven Starres, and the leffer Dogge, till the later Aquinoctiall. The like both Columella and Plinicteach. that after the rifing of the Dogge, the flocke muft afoze none be brinen Weltward, and feebe with their face toward the Welf. and afternone they mult be brought againe Callward. The fields whence the Torne is newly had off, is good to paffine them for two causes; both for that they are well febbe with the leas mings of the heaves, and that with the trampling of the frame. and bunging, they make the ground richer against the next foly. ing : but our Countrey men doe not well like, that Shave foolb fiebe bpon the earcs of Wheate. The Baffuring of them in the other fealons, as Winter, and the Spaing, Differs in this point: that they put them not abzoad till the Sunne have brainne by the beto, and hurtfull bayours of the ground, and fo feebe them all the bay long, thinking it infficient to let them brinke at none : but our husbands ble not to luffer their fheve to febe abroad in the Summer time, neither befoze the Sunne rifing. noz after the fetting, by reason of the bein, being moze hurtfull in Summer, then in Winter. In Winter, and the Spring time, they heepe them in a Folo, till futh time as the Sunne hath braine by the Rimes, and hoare Froffs from the fields : for the froftie graffe, at this time of pere, flops their beads with Rhume, and fils their beilies full of water : and therefore in the cold and wet featons of the pere,it is enough to let them brinke once a bay. Pozeouer the Shepheard, as alfo the keper of all cats tell.muft beale gently and louingly with their flecke, and comfor ting, and theering them with finging, and whiftling : for the Arabians (as Alianus waiteth) bo finde, that this kinde of cattel taketh great belight in Buficke, and that it both them as much god as their Baffure. Belibe, they mut be well ware in the brining of them:

them, and ruling of them, that they quide them with their boice.

and thaking of their faffe, not burting, not burling any thing at them, not that they be at any time far off from them, and that they neither lye noz fit : foz if they goe not fozward, they muft Stand : for it is the Shepheards office to Stand alwayes as bish as be can, that he may playnely and easily differne, that neither the Downoz the great beliped in lambing time. noz the quick noz the lively, while they roame, be fevered from their felloines : and leaft fome thiefe, oz wilde beaft bequile the negligent Shene beard of bis cattell. Df their Balturing, 3 thinke 3 haue fpoken Sufficiently: and therfore I meane now to thew you of their Doug fes. oz Shepcoats, whereof there ought to be a (pecial) regard. that they be conveniently placed, not lubicat to ivindes, not frozmes and that they rather fand toward the Caft, then toward the South. Columella wonlo have them built low, and rather long then broad, that they may be warme in the Wainter, and that the fraightneffe of the rome burt not the young. And befide he inould have them frant toinard the bouth : for this heaft (though his garments be warme) cannot away with cold iveather, neither pet with the great heat of the Summer. I have feene fome Sheeve-houses fo framed, as they have had their gates toward the South and toward the Caft, that they might anfinere to the feafons of the pere. Columella would have the Boufe fet tomard the South, and on the backe-fibe a close Waltures, where they may fafely take the ayre. You must loke besides, that where they fand, the ground be made fayze and even, fomething banging, that it may be cleane kept, and that the brine may be well bopbed away: for the wetneffe hereof both not onely burt, and corrupt their feete, but also spopleth their coates, and maketh them ruffe and ill fauoured. Let there be no moriture therefore. but alwaies well framed with brie ferne, or frame, that the Cives that be with young may lye the fofter and cleaner. Let their beds be very cleane; for the cleaner they lye, the better they feebe : let them in any wife be well feb, for a small number (as 3 faid before ) well fed, pelo more profit to their Maifter, then a great flocke barely kept. Dou muft allo have fenerall partitions to keive the weaker and the ficke, from the Grong and burnly. And thus much of housed there, that are enery day brought home:

a

Ín

6

th

Sheepe coats,

home: but in some places they are kept abread, sarre from either towns or home, in Forrests, and open wilde fields and downes: in these places the Shepheard carryeth with him his Pardles, and his Pets, and other necessaries to fold his slocke withall. In the desart fields, when as the Wainter pastures, and the Sommer pastures are distant certains miles asunder (as Varro saith) her would have the slocks that have wintred in Apulia, to be kept in Summer byon the Hountaines of Kicte: and Virgill thus writeth of the Shepheards of Lybia:

What should I here of Lybian Shepheards tell, Or of their Pastures write, and dwellings poore, That night and day on Downes, and Defarts dwell, Where wanders still the Flocke without the doore: And on the ground doth lye the Shepheard heare, While he remoues with him continually His house, and all his household goods doth beare, His staffe, his dogge, and all his armory?

The like have I my felfe fæne in Stopfzerland, and other plases of Germany, where the Shepheard, lying fill abzoad with his flocke, folds his Gepe in the night with Harales, tying their bogges about them for watchnen: the Shepheard himfelfe in a little house byon whieles, sleepes hard by his charge. The shepe of Greece, Alia, and Toranto, and those which they call, Covered shepe, are commonly bled to be kept in houses, rather then as broad, for the excellence and finenesse of their woll.

EVPHOR. Withat times doe you appoint for the Chearing of

pour Shape ?

,

t

y

ă

16

ht e: Hedio. The times of chearing, are not in all places one, Shearing but varie, according to the disposition of the agre, the cattell, and of Sheepe. the countrey: the best way is to have god regard to the weather, as the choice be not hurt by chearing in the cold, nor harmed by softening in the heate. In some places they have two seasons in the piere so chearing of their there: the sirst season so their chearing, is either with the beginning of Apay, or else with the ending of Aprill: the second season of their chearing, is about the beginning of September. Such as doe ble to sheare their

Deeps -

there but once in the vere Do commonly appoint for their feafor the tenth of the Moneth of June : about which time also fuch as one theare thile a viere doe theare their Lambs. This paies before you theare them, you must wash them well and when they be full brie, you may theare them : they boe not in all places theare their there, but in fome places (as Plinie faith) pull them. The old Husbands of account for the best Woll, the Woll of Puglia, and that which in Italy was called the Breke flece : the nert in gooncale they toke to be the Woll of Italy : in the third place they effemed the Milefian Flece: the woll of Puglia is but Thort, and meete to be worne onely in riding Cloakes. The woll about Toranto, and Canas, is thought to be palling god : but the beff at this pay is the woll of England. The finer pour Baffure is, the finer (as it is thought) you thall have your woll. The woll of fuch they as are flaine by the Wolfe, and the garments mabe thereof, (as Ariftotle faith ) are apteft to breede Lice. If pour happen in the Chearing to clippe the Ckinne, you molt fouthwith annoint it with Tarre: when you have horne them, fome thinks it and you anount them with the jupce of fooden Lupines, Las of old Wine, and the bregges of Dyle made in an opntment: after thie baies to walk them (ifit be nere you) in the Sea, or if the Bea be farre of, with rame water, fobden with Salt. And being thus ordered, pon thall not have them to lofe their woil all the piere, but to be healthie, and to carry a beve and a fine fiece: and therefore Virgill bibbes pou,

to

0

81

th

ft

(e

tít

te

bes

gle

in i

oft

wil

tick

**b**vat

liqu

Goe plunge them oft in healthy streames.

There be some againe, that would have you to annoint them there dayes in the piece, the dayes being some after you have walhed them with Dyle, e Wine mingled together. Againk Serpents, that many times lie hid bnder their cribs, you must burne Cedar, Galbanum, or womans Hapre, or Harts horne: in the end of summer is your time for drawing and severing of them (as 3 told you before) when you must sell your thepe, that through six blenesse, they sayle not in the winter. Besde, killing one or two of them, you must lake well byon their Livers, and if the Liver be not sound (sor thereby is sor six e the danger) then either sell them, or satte them, and will them: for deep hard it is to save them their Livers being perished. Insected Shiepe are more subsect

subject to scabbes and manginesse then any other cattell, which commeth (as the Poet witnesseth:)

When coldeit stormes doe wer them neare,

And hoavy frosts on ground appeare.

Drif you wash not off the sweat of the Summer with salt waster: or otherwise, if when they be shorne, you suffer them to be hurt with hrambles, or thornes; or if you put them into houses, where either Horses, Bules, or Ases have stode; but specially lacke of god scoing, whereof proceedeth poweresse, and of poreness scabbes and manginesse. The shape that is insected is thus knowne, Is he eyther scratch, stampe with his some, or beate him selfc with his horne, or rub himselfe against a tree: which perceiving him so to doe, you shall take him, and opening his woll, you shall since the skinner russe, and as it were itchie. Divers men have divers remedies for this maladie, but such as are not at hand to be had: Virgill thinks there is no presenter remedie

Then at the first to clippe away the sore;
For being hidde, it festreth the more.

Constantine out of Dydimus affirmeth, that the scabbes of Shape are healed by walking them with brine, and after annoins ting them with Brinftone and Dple. The common Shepherds, when they perceive a thepe to fall a rubbing, they fraightwaics take him, and Gedding the hayre, doe feare the place with Tarre: others doe teach other remedies, more hard to come by, which are not for enery Shepheard, nor every Countrey to ble. And if the whole flocke be infected, it both many times fo continue, as tribill be neofull to change honfes, and (which in all other bifea, fes behoueth) both Countrey and apre. This one alonely meditine have alwaies proned for the keping in health of this cattell, to be mott prefent and foueraigne : Make theberries of Juniper beate them fmall, and fpzinckle them with Dates and Salt, min. gle them all together, and gine it your Sheve thee or foure times in the piere : for though they refuse to eate the Juniper berries of themsclues, pet for the defire of the Salt and the Dates, thep will easily take them all together. If they be lowie, or full of tickles, they ble to beate the rotes of Maple, and feething them in water, and opening the woll with their fingers, they power the iquour, fo as from the rioge of the backe, it runne ouer the body. Dthers:

Dthers ble the rate of Band;ake, being well ware that they ful fer them not to tal it. If they have the fever you mult let them blod in the bele, betwirt the two Clas, which the Boet teacheth. Caping:

It eafeth straight the flaming feauers paine, If in the foot you ftrike the spinning veine,

Some let them blod bnoer the eies, f fome bebind the earcs. The fowle, a difeafe betwirt the Classis taken away with Warre, Ale lom, Bimftone, and Tleneger, mingled together : oz petoder of Merdigreafe put boon it. The fwelling betwirt the two Class. must be cut with great warmine de least you bap to cut the worms that lieth in it, for if you one, there commeth frem ber a burtfull matter, that poploneth the wound, and makethit bneureable. Ba fter Firzherbert, a Gentleman of Porthamtonfbire, who was the Firtherbert firft that attempted to logite of Bulbandep in England, appoint

Mafter

for curing teththis cure : his words betbele. There be fome Sheepe that of Sheepe. baue a wozme in his fot, that maketh bim to halt, take that there, and loke betwirt his Clas, there you hall finde a little bole as much as a great pins bead , wherein groweth fine oz fire blacke haires,like an inch long. oz moze : take a tharpe pointed knife, and flit the (kin a quarter of an inch long about the hole and as much beneath, and put thy one hand in the hollow of the fat, bnder the hinder Clee, and fet the thumbe aboue, almost at the flit, a thrust the finger binderneath forward and with your other band, take the blacke haires by the end, or with thy knines point, and pulling the baires a little and a little, thank after thy other hand, with thy finger & thy thumbe, and there will come out a wozme, like a perce of fleth,nere as big as a little finger: when it is out, put a little Tar in the hole, sit will though mend. If they happen by the crtreame heat of the Sunne to fall Downe, and to forfake their meat, give them the inice of the wilde 15 ete, and cause them befibe to eate the Bets. If they hardly brain their breath, flit their eares and let them bleb. If they be troubled with the Cough, Almonts beaten with Waine, and polozed a pzettie quantitie into their nothalls , remedieth them. A Shape, oz Swine, that bath the

The Mur- Murraine of the Lungs, you thall belpe by thauffing through raine of their eare, the rote of Setter wort : this lickneffe both commonly the Lungs. fring of want and fcarfitie of water, and therefore (in Summer

time

1

t

D

r

Í

pi

fo 88

99

is.

ffr

time (vecially) you must suffer no kinde of Cattell to want was ter. Their legges, if they happen to be broken, are to be cured in like fort as mens be being wappen firft in woll bipped in Dple. and Wine, and afterinard fplented. The young Lambes, and Lambes, other Shape, allo while they goe abroad are troubled with fcabs and mangineffe about their lippes, which they get by feeding bpon bewie graffe: the remedie is Dylove and Salt, of each a like quan titie beaten together, and their mouthes, their pallats, and their lippes rubbed withall : the bleerous places muft be annointed with Mineger, Marre, and Swines greafe. If they chaunce to Eating fwell with eating of any Moume, or bencinous graffe, you fall wormes let them bloud in the beines about the lippes, and binder the mous taile, and after power into them Chamberipe. If they happen graffe. to fwallow a Borfeleach, poince into them Brong and tart Wis neger warme, or Dple. Against the Burrion, or the Rot, 3 have fixne given them, certaine fponefuls of 13zine, and after a little Tarre : this medicine was bled by Baifter Iohn Franklin of Maifter Chartin Bent, who was in his life time a fhilfull husband, and a lin. god houlekeper. In like fort bane 3 feene this medicine : Take for enery fore, one peny-tooth of Triacle, and like wife one little handfull of Demplæde, ground Juic, Cloer leaues, and Fether. fele, as much as a Tenisball of Loame, and as much Bay falt, put thereto Thamberlie, & a little Sote, make it allluke-warme, and give to enery one there formefuls and, and after enery one a little Tarre, brfoze they goe out of hand. In fome places they ble to take the diped flologes of Mozmewod, and mingling them with Salt, they give them to their thepe, as a generall mes bicine against all discases. This medicine is commended by Hieronimus Tragus, both for allwaging of any paine, and driving as way any hurtfuli bifeafes from Cattell.

Even on. Coo Hedio forget not to fpeake fomething of vour Coates.

Hedio. Coates have many things common with Shepe: Goates, for they goe to Bucke at one time, and goe as long with young, as Shepe doe: they pield commoditie with their fleth, their Hich, their Shinnes, and their Bayre: the Paire is profitable to make Ropes of, and Packes, and divers like in truments, belonging to Sea-men, by reason that it neyther rots with

with moffture, not is easily burnt with fire. Varro maketh men tion of two fortes of them, a heary fort, and a fmoth. Such as have Wiennes . oz Wartes, bnocr their chinnes, are taken to be moft fruitfull: their Moders would be great their Bilke thicke. and the quantitie much. The he Boate would be fofter havred, and longer, his Becke thoat, his Thaoat boll bever, his Legges Aelby, his Cares great and hanging : it is thought better to buy the whole Bocke together, then to buy them fenerally. At the Chinne of enery one of them hangeth a long beard, which Plinie calleth. Aruncum, by which, if any man braw one of them out of the flocke, the whole flocke (as amaged) frand gaging bpon him. The be Goate, because of his beard, and as (Alianus farth) by a certaine inftinct of Bature, preferring the male before the female, goeth alwates befoze his woman. The bargaining for this Cattell is not after the manner of bargaining for Sheepe: for no wife man will promife that they be fre from fickeneffe. being as they be, neuer without the Ague : but he affures them that they be well to bay, and can brinke. Dne thing is to bee frondred at in this Beaft, that he draweth not his winde as all other bealts doe at his Pole, but at his Cares. The belt kindes of them, are those that bring forth twife a pere, and such you must fete for pour brede. The Boate is able to engender at feauen moneths olde, being even as lecherous as may be : for while he ts pet fucking, he will be boon the backe of his bamme: and there. fore he wareth feeble, and bnable, before he be fire peres olde. being now foked and confumed with his overtimely luftineffe of his vouth : and therefore after he come to be fine peers olde he is no longer to ferue your turne for bree. The time when you shall fuffer them to go to rutte, is in Autumne, a little befoze December, that at the comming of the Spring, and bloffoming of the tres, the young may be brought forth. The Boate goeth with poung (as I faid) fine moneths, as the Shape both : the brings forth commonly two, and Cometime are (as Plinic witneseth.) Such as beare twife, you must keepe for your stocke, for the renuing thereof, and the encrease. As touching their backding, you must in the end of Autumne feuer pour be Coates. The vound Boates of a vere old, and two veres, bring forth kibbes: but (as Columella faith) they are not to be luffered to being them by. ercept

t

h

n

tu

th

th

to

gr

gr

en

except they be the piece old : and therefore you must away with the pound that the Bosten of the first peere may breed and fulfer the Biode of a two peere bamme, to fucke no longer then it is meete to be fold. Withen the Biobes are brought forth, they mult be brought by in like fort as I told you of the Lambes : faning that the wantonnelle of the Bibbe is moze to be refrate neb and heplier to be kept in, and muft be fed befide their milke, with young bowes. Plinic affirmeth, that they be fearce good for breede at three peres old, but if they patte foure, they be Carke nought, and that they begin at feauen moneths, even inhile they be buber the mothers break. The first ribing prof pereth not the fecono is fomelobat to the purpole, the third forebeth. the brings forth, till the be eight vers olb, and therefore the the Boats, when they be aboue eight pers, is not to be kept : for the then becommeth barraine. Those which want hornes. (as in the male kinnes ) of all others be the belt : for the boxmed, by reason of their weapons are hartfull and baruly Befibes, the female of fuch as lacke bornes, doe gine alwaies greater plene tie of milke : but Columella ( as he commendeth the Bollardes in a temperate and milbe countrey) fo in a boyfterous and a fto; mie Kegion he would baue them bornet, Duch as baue bornes, the their age by the circles of their homes : it is thought, that they fe as well by night, as by one, and that they alwaies ley their faces turned one from the other, and in that order alfo feebe. Cold (as it is faid ) is bery burtful to this kinds of cattell fpecially to those that be with young as like wife the extreame beate. The mit of this beatt Nutianus reporteth the once bab experience of. behoreas a couple of them chances to meets mon a bery long and narrow Brioge, and the fraightneffe would not fuffer them to turne, and to go backward blindfold in fuch a ftraight, confidering the finistnelle of the fiteame bnder them, was more bnpoffible, the one of them lying volume the other paffed oner his body. Varto both commend fundrie little flockes kept fenerall, rather then great flocks together, bling for erample one Gaberijus, becaufe'a great flocke is foner fubice to the morraine thinking fiftie to be mough for one flocke. Columella alfo affirmeth, that there ought not to goe aboue one hundred of them together , whereas of Shope he alloweth a thoulant in one flocke. The biting of bout-Ana

.)

2-

Ħ

g

15

p,

pt

fing of them, is poplon to all kinde of Tres, and therefore were they in old time facrificed to Bacchus, because they were so burts full to Uines. Their Stables Columella would haue to stand bye on a ftonie ground, or elle to be paued for this beaft needeth nos thing bnoer him but a few boughes : when he lieth abroad, the Shepheard muft often fweeve and make cleane their houles not fuffering any bung, or moitture to remaine in them, that mapbe burtfull to the flocke : for as & faib befoze, they are feldeme without feauers, and much fubica to the vellilence. And where as other cattell when they have the Qurraine among them , as fone as they be infected, begin to languith, and pine away : once ly thefe Goates as fone as they be taken, though they be never fo luffic to loke byon, fuedenly fail bowne together, and bie as thicke as Baile : which difeafe both chiefely bappen, by to much rankenelle of patture. And therefore as fone as you perceine one or two of them fall bowne, let the whole flocke blood with as much fped as you may, and fuffer them not to feed all the bay. but that them by the foure middle houres of the bay. If they be biscaled with any other lichneffe , pou muft aine them the Rotes of Redes, and of the great white Ehiffle, famping them with your pelles, and frainch with raine water let them brinke it : and if fo be this medicine heale, them not . your beft will be to fell them . or to bill them, and polober them : and When you buy new, bring them not home too ballily till the bifper fition of the agre be altered. If they fall leuerally ficke, cure them in fuch fortas pou doc pour Shepe. Florentinus faith, if pour Stamp with water the guilard of the Stork, and give them to beink à spenefuil a pecce pacferueth both Shiepe and Goats from all murraine and petilence. If their belifes be finelled with was ter which the Gredenscall ύδωρπα, the Doppley, if the Ikinne be lanced a little binger the foulder, it lets out the burtfull mate ter, and you may heale the fore with Warre. but med the and sel

EVPHOR. Don have for your part very well fatified to, touching the god ordering of pour cattell a there remaines yet ene thing for you, tohich you all forgate to speake of, and that is the ordering of Milke, our chiefest some and sufference.

HED 10. Socing that of this cattell whereof I have entreated, the profit of the Wilke is not small, it is no great reason we

Milke.

b

L

2

D

te

m

Se

ble

th

COL

arı

pel

fich

mil

Bould overpalle the program of the fame : for Mike ( as Varro faith ) of all liquid things where with me fiebe . is the greates nourither. Bilke Differeth in goonelle according to the nature of the bodies that give it : as the Wilke of Momen of kine. Chepe, Cates, Alles, Barcs , and Cammels : the greateff nourither is Wannans Wilke, the next Goates Wilke, inhereby the Boets faine, that their God lupiter bimfelfe mas nurfed with Goates Wilke : the fweteft nert Womans Wilke, is the Cammels Milke : the wholefomeft is Affes Milke, the Affe as fone as the is with Colt, giveth milke : the Cow , never till the bath calged : molt comfortable to the ftomacke is Boates milke, because he rather feeth on Buts and Bowes, than boon Braffe. Com Dilke is molt medicinable, and molt of all lofeth the bellie. Shepes Wilke is (weter, and nourifbeth moze, but is not fo good for the fromacke, by reason it is fatter and groffer. All Wilke that is milked in Spring time, is watrifber then the milke of Summer, as likelvile is the milke of poung cattell: it is Wholefomer being fonden, specially with the Wzebbles of the Sea. The Shape about Pones, nere to the river Altace, boe giue (as Blacke Plinic faith) blacke milke. All milke generally ( as Diofcorides milke. writeth is of god nourifoment, but filleth the fromacke and the Error in belly with winde : that which is milked in the Spring is thinnes the vnderbut lafeth the belly mot. The difference of milke, is taken ( as of Disference of milke, is taken ( Varro faith) of the pattures, the nature of the cattell, and the mile rides king. Dithe pafture, when the cattell is fed with Barly fram. and all other hard and by meats, and this greatly nouritheth. For purging of the belly, the graffe pattures, (pecially where the cate tell feed of purging hearbes, as Cardanus in his boke de Plantis teacheth, that if you will purge Belancholy, you muft feed your milch Boate, oz Affe, with Polipodi, and foz all other bumours Sene, for the Dropfie with Spurge, or Agaricke: for cleufing of the bloud, with fumitozp, oz Hoppes: and if you will but one vlofe the belly, with Mercury, 02 Ballomes : fo farre Cardanus, Dur countermen doe chiefely commend for milke, the pattures where groweth Spery, and Clauer-graffe, and that is all bebeckt with pellow flowers. For the cattell, the difference is between the ficke and the healthie, the poung, and the old : and for the milking, that is belt that is not long kept after the milking, noz that

u.

ti

1 Ø:

et is

di

aus

ila

that is milked immediately from the Calning, a groffe untubate, fome kinge of Ditke. To trie whether Withe be mingled ornot, you thall take a foarpe Kufb, and putting it into the Bilke, let it been from thence byon pour Datle and if the beop runne abroad. it is affirme there is water in it : if it kope together, it thewes it to be pure and good. Df Wilke is made Butter, whole ble (though it be chiefely at this pay among the flemings ) is pet a god and profitable fobe in other Countries , and much b. feb of our old Fathers, pen enen of the bery Patriarches (as the Scriptures witneffeth. The commoditie thereof, belides ma ny other, is the affwaging of hunger, and the preferring of Arength : it is mabe in this fast. The Bilke, as fone as it is milhed, is put out of the Baile into Bowles, oz Bannes, the belt are earthen Bannes, and those rather broad then despe : this Done, the fccond, or the third dap, the creame that fwimmes aloft is fleeteb off , and put into a beffell rather depethen big , round and Cilinder fathion : although in fome places they have other kinde of Charmes, low and flat, wherein with often beating and mouing by and poline, they fo thake the Wilks, as they feuer the thamest part off from the thicke, which at the first gathers tours ther in little crombles, and after with the continuance of the bio. lent moning, commeth to a whole wedge, or cake : thus it is taken out, and eyther eaten frefb, oz barrelled with Salt. The Buttermilke that remaineth of the Butter is evther keut for the family. or given to Calues and Bogges, as a bainty foo. Chefe is alfo made of the Wilke of cattell, the Wilke being powied into a Wiel fell of earth, putting into it a little rennet, the quantity of a Walnut, in a great beffell of Bilke , whereby it runneth inte Curb. Varro both better like the Mennet of the Leuret, or the Bio, then the Lambes : howbeit, we commonly ble the Calues Kennet: others ble fundaie other meanes, onely with heate, warming it in Tinne bellels, and after dipping thole Welles in cold water. which is the sweetest and cleanliest manner : others put in the fcede of wilde Saffron, and being fo turned, the Tabey both greatly purge fleame : others againe ble the Bilke of the flage tree, and then both the Waber purge both choler and fleamet fome purge it with Drimell , oz fyzrope of Wineger , which. is of all other wates the wholefomett : fome befides, ble the little **(kinne** 

th

th

th

gr

Cheefe.

Butter.

fainte of Bires Builards, and others, the flotures of wilde Thilles. 02 Bartichokes. The neiver and better the Mile is, the better will be the Chele : for mane of two forts of Athe,or Wilke that is too nore fleted, it foone fowgeth, and wareth hard and nought, and is not to endure any while. Againe, being made of fat and new Bilke, it will bery long endure, and long contimueth in his fatuelle and foftmelle : about a tipo or three houres after you have put in your Mennet, the Wilke commeth to a Curb , which is fraight water put into Formes , or Checles fats, and preffed : or if they be but fmall, they are oneig preffed with the band. If they be of any quantitie, they have great waight boon them : It is bery needfull you preffe out the Wilhay with as much fped as you can, and to fener it from the Curb, and not to let it lie flowly drawning of it felfe. Those that make great Cheles, have moulds for the purpole, and Taights and Breffes answerable. After this, they take them out of the Breffe, and lap them byon Berbels, og faire fmooth Tables , in a fhadoluie and a cold place, and close from all windes, fprinckling them all oner with Salt that they may (weat out all their fowgeneffe, laying them fo. as they touch not one the other. When they be now well hardned and thickned, they are taken by, and preffed agains, with great weights, and rubbed oner with parched Salt, and at ter laid in preffe againe, whereby it is thought they will neve ther have eves. not be ouer bile : which faults hapneth to come Johen thep be enther not well preffed, or too much faiteb. Some ble to put into the bottome of their Bailes , the greene bernels of the Dine Apple, and milking into them, Doe canle it fo to turne. Dou may also cause your Cheese to relith of whatsoever you will. as Bepper of any other Spice : but Columella counts that for the beft Cheele, that hath leaft mirture in it. The ftrongett Cheele, and hardett of digettion, are thole that are made of 15 uffes mike : the next are fuch as are mabe of the milbe of @wes, but the mildeff, and lighteft of digeftion, are those that are made of Coates milke : the Cheele that is made of Marcs milke, is of the fame qualitie that the Buffes Chefe is. There is Chefe allo made of Cammels milke, and of Affes milke : the Chales that are made of Buffes milke, are at Kome, of all other cattell in greateft effimation. Such as are touched both abone and beneath, 50.3 and

3

b

te

and have moze then some Pappes, you can make no Chase of their milks, so it will never curd. In our vaies, the best Chases are counted the Parmasines, made about the Kiver of Po, e stained so, their greatnesse, and daintinesse, of which you shall have brought into other countries that weigh about theasterp pound. Pert are commended the Polland Chase, the Chase of Pormandie, and the English Chase. In England the best Chase is the Chessister, and the Shropshire, then the Banbury Chase, next the Sussolike, and the Eller Chase, and the very worst the Kentish Chase. The places where the best Chase is made, appeareth by this old English Distichon, better sensed, then some

Banbury, Langtony, Suffolke god Cheele, Effer goe thou by, Shaopihire: ..... Theffhire, Bertfold may wel with the best pare.

Of the discommoditie of Offer Cheele, our English Bartfall

John Haywood, thus merrily inziteth:

I neuer law Banbury Cheese thicke enough, But I have seene Essex Cheese quicke enough.

Theefe they fay will best endure, and is longest preferned, if you keeps them in beaucs of Bulle. of Wilheat, and if you frene your Rennet in the topce of Bysch, you shall be fure to have nevther Dite noz Troper in pour Cheefe. The Checfe that is foft and new, both moze nourill then the bate, and be moze comfortable to the flomacke, not long in bigelling : the old is contrarie, accorbing to the prouctbe. Do Cheele good but thenew. Die Cheele Will become new in tatte, if you lay them in Time, Wineger, oz in Wine : if through age it be bard and bitter , let it be rubbed ouer with Beale of bnozied Barley, and then bip it in water. and after the outer rinde fcraped off, We have oft times proned, that hard Cheele waapped in Clouts wet in Mineger, oz Wine. and offentimes fprinchled with Wine, and fo lato bp, returne to a Coffnelle, and a bery pleafant tafte. Some lap it in Leauen . co. pering it close therewith, and thereby make it foft: It is repoze ted, that Zoroaftes lived twentie perce in wilderneffe with Cheele fo ozbered, as it neuer wared olb.

Eyphor. Of the Wiley that commeth from the Cheele Welcards, being foo with a foft fire, till the fatnelle of the Cheele limme

aloft, are mate Welcurds.

1 1

E w m FWS you were wont to lone them well.

HEQ10. 3 Doe inbiebe, Specially if there be goo flage of new Wilke put to the taken. The old writers doe teach the mis king of a kinde of white meate, not much bulike to Welcurds, which they called Melcan, and made it in this fort. They put into Melcan. a new earthen beffell Mineger , and fuffered it to bople foftig buon the five, till the beffell had brunke bothe Mineger, and into that beffell they polyged in Bilke, and let it where it might frand feofat, whereby they had within a while their befire. But me thinketh I have for my part done enough, it commeth now to pour turne EVMEVS to goe forward with the ret.

EV MEV S. That the keeping of Swine belongeth to Dul Swine. bandie, both euidently appeare by the laying of the ancient bul bands, counting him a flethfull and an buthaffife bufband, that bath his Bacon rather from the Butcher, then from his owne Moofe : for there arifeth as great wrofit many times to be of our ninne Swire, as both to you that be keepers of greateft cattell of your flockes : for if Bacon be away, the chiefet fure porter of the Bulbandmans kitchin is wanting. And whereas Smines fielb fæmeth abhominable to thefolith Temes. The liene bertly they neuer taftes the Camonos of France, fo bigh. ly commended by Varro, Strabo, Atheneus, and other learned maiters : which I suppose were none other but the flitches of Weffphaly, fo greatly eftemed at this day, not onely in Bermanie, but in Kome, and that they were called by the names of Celticke Gamonds, because the old waiters, especially the Greeks called all Countries on this Abe the Alpes, both French and Dutch by the name of Celticke. Surely there is no beaft befides. that makes more baintie bilbes, there is in him neere fiftie biffer rent taltes, where enery other beaft bath but one, and bereof came at the first the tharpe Lain of the Centors, forbidding it to he bled at luppers, the Moders, the Stones, the Tripes, and the forevart of the beads of Swine, (as Plinic Witneffeth.) And most apparant it is, that not onely the French, and the Dutch in thole daies but allo the Italians and the Greeks, neurithen great heards of Swine. Among the Orickes, Homer maketh mention of one of my name, that has twelve Hogityes , enery Stys contaming fifte Borklings, and Polybius writeth, of more

ſe

18

0.

then

then a thouland to be readie at a time among the ancient Mali ans, Tufkans, and french. Varro accounteth a bunbeeb but a fmall heard. Who fo will nourift Hogges, must bave regard both to the fairencile, and the age. Varro abbeth belibe the nature. the kinde and the countrep. And because the young boe commonly refemble their parents, he would have you chose fuch as are faire, and large bodies, and which makes moft to the matter. as fruitfull as mapbe : which Varro, both chiefely commend those that be of one colour, their briffles would be thicke, and blacke, if it be iff a cold countrey: if in a temperate, you may nourish the fmoth. Their proportion would be long, large-abed, and bels led, wide buttocked, thoat legged, and forted, bigge necked, and well brawned, thort groined, a turning boward, his taile wrinch led. The kinde is moff commended, that bringeth many Digs. the countrey that breadeth large and great : the best age for the Boare, is a vere old, though at halfe a vere old they are able to ferne a Sow : one Boare is enough for teme Somes, and mere. The Sow is lufficient to bring Bigges at a piere ole, and fo for feauen piere after, the fruitfuller the is, the foner the warethold: at the first farrolving, you shall easily for tohat number the will being forth : the will not much biffer in the other. The beft kinde of Sowes have twelve pappes, the common fort tenne. or not fo many. Query Digge doth know his ofwne Dappe that that he was borne too, and fucketh onely that, and none other : if you take away the Digge, the Bappe brieth, as both Plinic, and experience theweth. They were wont to be bought and bare gained for in this fort. Doe you warrant that thefe Swine are found, that 4 shall well enjoy them, that you will answere the faults, and that they be of a bealthy breede ? A twet moorth ground is meetelf for this cattell, for he belighteth not in water. but in burt and myze, fo much ( as Varro watteth, ) that the Wolfe, as foone as he bath caught a Sow, beaggeth her to the water because his teeth are not able to abide the heat of her fleth. And although this beaft will away with any ground, (for he frebeth both in mountaines champion and marify, ) yet his chiefe delight is in the wood that is full of quagmires, where there groweth ftoze of Dhe, Cothe, Bech, Batholme, infloe Dlines. wilde Dates . Bafeinuts , Crabbe tres , Blome tres ; and Cherie

te

C

he

ru

Bai

for

So !

lm

fo I

Pol

15 f

ther

Dit

mot

Alia

Tul

erri

no i

Cherie tres : for these beare fruit at divers times and fire the Beards almost all the whole pere. Where there wanteth woos. they must be fed from the ground, whereof a Marrith is to be preferred before a bay ground, that they may monfell in the march, bigge by Wiozmes, wallow in the mize, and tumble in the pubbles of water, which in Summer is mot neofuil. They alfo bunt after rotes, fpecially ferne rotes, and the rotes of Bulruthes, Kuthes, and Sedges, befide and Braffe mell febeth a Swine, and Dachards of Cheries , Blums, Apples, and Quist and notwithstanding all this, the Barne, for you must feede them often by hand, when meate faples abroad: and therefore you muft preferue ftore of Acornes, in Celtornes in the water, or Depeb bpon fmokie floges, alfo Beanes, Deafe, and Wares muft be given them, and not fo much as Barley fpared : for this kinde affering both make them faire, anonot onely fats them, but at neth the fleft a pleafant take. Withen they are pet pound, and ficke, both they, and their Dammes muft be well fed, they muft he put to feebe early in the morning, afore the heat of the Sunne, and after kept in thabomy places, where there is good froze of ina. ter. Afore they goe to palture, they muft be medycined, left the Graffe fcarre them to much, by which they will be greatly meaks ned. In Winter they mult not be put algoad, till the froft be off the ground, and the He thawed. And though the Divine will runne at the knowne boyce of the Swineheard, vet Vario Intil have them brought both to palture, and homeward, with the found of a Poone: their meate mult be given them fcattered thin. to thall both leffe fuffice, and the greater thail not harme the imaller : as fone as they beare the Borne, though they be never to farre off in the THOOS, they come running with all halte. Polybius telleth, that the Italians ble notto follow their heards, is the Grakes and others doe, but going a pretite foar before them, they blow their homes, their Beards being acquainted with the blaff, see follow them in great order. They boe fo weil moto, and obay the call of the Swineheard (If we may believe A work Alianus, that when certaine Rouers, landing bpon the Coaft of derfull Tulkan, and taking great numbers of them out of their Sties, knowarcied them about, the thieues having weighed up their Anker, Swine. nd being buder laple, the Swine bron the hearing of their

kepers bopce, fuddenly ran to the one five of the Sbippe, and or nerturned her, whereby (the Birates Droloned,) the Swine came fafe to land to their Maifters. As 3 haue bere told you of the conditions of the Boare and the Solve, and of their keping, fo will I now thew you the manner of their breeding : The Mies ming time is reckoned to be from Winter, till the twelfth of Barch, fo fhall pou hane them to farrow in Summer : for the Solve going foure Moneths with pigge, farrolveth in the fift. She is with pigge at the first breming, but they ble to let them goe often to Boare, because they come miscarrie : and if you will have two farrowes in one piere, pon mult put pour Dowe to Boare in Februarie, or Zanuarie, that the may farroin in Amill or Way, when as there is god paffure abroad and Wilke is in his thiefe frenath: and when they be weaned, they may well feede boon Braw, e grottens : and after, the Sow may farrely againg in the end of Autumne: for Varro laith, her farrowing times are to bluibed to; the nonce, as the map farrow twile a piere, while the bath foure Boneths to beare them, and two to feebe them. As fone as they be with pigge, you must kepe the Boare from them : for with his burulineffe, he maketh them to caft. Boung Swine for breche, mult not be leffe then a pare olde, as Varro mould have it: howbeit they begin at eight moneths, and conti mue feauen væres. The Boare beginneth at eight moneths, or fire, and continueth well foure peres, and after, at thee or fours peres olde, you may geld them, and fat them. Some would not have you keepe by about eight, others not about fire : not that the Sow is able to heepe no moze, but that the that keepeth moze, Some fayleth. Varro reporteth, that the Son of Aneas Lauinus. farrowed at one time thirtie white pigges: butit is monftrous inhen the farrometh more then the bath paps. Query Soin mul baue her Stie by ber felfe when the bath farrowed, and not fuffe red to goe with the whole Beard, as other cattellare, but little Coates to be made for them, wherein they may be kept eyther farrowing, or with farrow: for whine, if they lye together in any number, being commonly ill mannered, boe lue one buon another, whereby they burt fuch as are with pigge. And therfore pou mut have feuerall Sties where they may facrolo, and mate high, that the sow cannot get out ; for conered they muft not be

San Park

ft

th

51

ab

fel

ful

to

Est

roi

roi

tha

for

Ban

mai

bu

if h

Dat

ber

Eb:

mtti

by any meanes, that the Divineheard may loke that the Solo a nerlay none of them, and to fee what they want, that he may make them cleane, and as oft as be cleanfethit, he must trato fand, oz luch like, to date by the moisture : for though the be but a fwinith treature, vet loneth the to have her chamber cleane. Wahen the bath farrowed, the requireth greater quantitie of meate, whereby the may give the more Bilke, fpectalip Barley freped in water, or ground, and tempered with water. And if pou baue not god flore of meate, your beft is to fell the Digges : fo thail the Danine, being beliuered of her burben, be foner with farrow againe. Such as are farrowed in Minter, are commonly poze and wretcheb, both breaufe of the colo, and that their Dammes boe not like them for wanting of milke, and biting their Dapps. If the Dowe eats her Bigges, it is I wonder: for Swine of all other beatts, can worlt away with hunger, which when it pronoketh, they eate not onely their owne, but young chilozen, which not long fince bappened in Suffer, to the pittifull difcom. A Childe fort of the Barent. They fuffer not the Sow to goe abroad in caten by a tenne dapes after ber farcolping, ercept it be to brinke : after, they luffer her to goe about the house, that the may the better gine milke. Withen the Wigges ware great, they befire to goo abroad with their Dams, at which time they are fedde by them. felues apart, to the end they may the foner forget their mother, which they will boe in tenne baies. It behoueth the Swineheard to be carefu'l & biligent about his charge, that he have in memozy enery one of them, both old and poung, that be confider enery fare row, and that by those that be great with pig, that they may farrow in their frie. De muft haue fpecial regard of enery young pig, that enery one of them be brought bu bnoer his owne bamme : for if they get out of the flie, they fraightwaies mingle one company with another, whereby the pore Solo is forced to give milke many times to more ligs then ber owne : and therefore the Swineheard medt thut by enery Dam with her owne Digs. And this meman ferue not to know them all, let him pitch every Sow and her Digs with a fenerall marke : for in a great num. ber it that! behoue hun to to boe, for confounding his memorie. The olde Buf bands obferued alwaies two times in the piere for tatting of them, the Spring, and the fall of the leafe, whereby they auothed

apopted the banger both of the heate and cold. The Boare vies they cut when they were fire Donethe old, and againe at foure pere old, to make them fatte, making the wounds, and taking out the ftone of enery fide : 02 elfe when you have taken out one Stone, you must thrust your knife againe into the wound, and cutting alunder the Chinne betwirt both the ftones, braw out with pour fingers theother. fo thall you make but one fcarre: but this kind ofcutting is fometobat moze bangerous. The Solves are fuaide by burning the Watrir with an Iron, and the fcarre beat led by, whereby they will both have no moze vigges, and be the fatter. Ariftorle, and following bim Pline, would haue the Som after two dayes falling, hanged by by the fore legges, and fo cut, Inhereby the will be the foner fat : but I inde it better to cutte them when they be young, at two Moneths old, og younger. for fo are thep in leaft leoparble. After thep be cut, you muft kape them from brinke, and gine them but little meate : the wound muft be announted with fresh Butter, and lowed by. As the wriftling and turning by of the taile is a figne of a found Bogge. to be there certaine and affured fignes of their fichnelle : for if you plucke off the briffles from the backe, and finde that their rates baue bloud in them, it thewes the Swine is not well. Be Of difeafes fines, if vour Dogges be ficke, oz taken with a feuer, they hand in Swine, their heads at one five, and fuodenly as they runne abread, they

b

t

b

k fr

di

10

pt

PC

CE

m

th

m

m

far tri

ani

bni

fee

is t

bar

to n

ger

ther

but

and

and the cure.

flav. and being taken with a turning gibbineffe, they fall boime: and therefore you must marke well on which five they bang their heads, that you may cut the care of the contrarie fibe to let them bloud : and biber the tayle belibe, two inches from the rumpe. pon thall trike the baine, tohich there is eafily to be feene, by the bigneffe of it : pou muft firft beate it with a little flicke, and after it fwelleth with the beating, open it with pour knife, and bauing bled fufficiently, binde it by with the rinde of Willow a Clime : after this, keepe them bp in the houle a bay og two, and gine them warme water, with a god quantitie of Barly flower. If the Quinfey of Vuula, (to which bifeale this beaft is wonde rous fubied) chaunce to take them, Dydimus would have you let them bloud behinde aboue the houlders, others baber their tongue : fome againe cure them with fettering. If the kernels

finell in the throat, you must let them bloud boder the tongue,

The Quinfey.

mb when they have bled, embbether mouthes within with fale. anoly beaten, and inheats doinge : Demodrius would have you sine to enery botte, three pound waight of the besten rote of Daffabill. If they bomit, and loath their meate, it is good to give them before they goe abroad, the thaufnes of Indie, fryco with falt, and ground Beanes, Swine while thepfiede abrond, by rene fon of their areat benouring (for it to an brilattable beatt ) bo worte beroully labour with the abundance of the botene : for remedie whereof, you thall give them water as oft as they thirlt, in Ecounties made of Samarice, the tupce of which wood is very holeforme for them. Democritus teatheth to mue birto Boos that have the Spleene, the water wherein the Coules of Brath hath bene quenched. Ehisbeaft bath foinetime a fifthrette inberein he wines away, and forfaketh his meate : ambif pon bring him to the fiels, he fuebenly falleth balme, and ipeth as it were in a bead flepe : which as fone as pon perceine, pon thall that by the whole Beard in Come bonle, and make them to fatt one bay, both from Water and meate : the next pap, the rate of the toffe Cur aumber flamped and frained with water, is ginen them to brink: which as fone as they have taken, they fall a bomitting, and fo purge themfelues. Withen they bane thus erpellet their choier. von thail gine them hato Beanes, ftrameb with Bune. In ercellent medicine againft all Beftilence of Stoine, both Hieronimus Tragus teach, which is; when you fe them inferten, to give them the Rotes of Polipodi, oz Dhe Ferne boylet in Winc. Whereby they thall purge whatfoeuer is eufli from them, and moft of all choler, wherewith Swine are moft froubled. The fame Hieronimus (as 3 remember) teatheth for à Borfe (though the without my committion to medale with them: ) The be fich, and fundenly fall botwne of a bifcafe that you intoto thot, to put binder bis tonque a pace of a ferne tote, Wherenvon pouthall for himimmediately boyde byward and bothie ward thhatforuck is in his body, and parfently smend : this he laith land truely & bare belæue him) that he proued with a Dogle of his otine. But to my Swine: whereas thirf in Summer is bortfull and bane it serous to all kinde of cattell, to this beatt it is most burtfull : and therefore you muft not water them as you boe Shepe & Coates. e, but twife, or thrife a day : but if you can, you must keepe them bp ·

et

Is

nd

by the water five, that they may goe thereto at pleasures for the Swine is not content with brinking, buthe muft often cole and plunge his filthy panch in the water, nettyer belighteth be in any thing to much, as to wallow in the burt. And if you have no fuch place nere, you must braw some water from the Walell and give it them in Troughs abundantly : for except they brinke their fill, they will fall ficke of the Lungs : which bifeale is cured (as Columcila writeth) by thrufting the Mote of Setters most through their eares : Plinic affirmeth the Tobe to be a velent remedie for the Eckneffe of Divine. Some lav. that if a Some lole one of her eves, the byeth lane after, other wife the lineth Aftene peres. There is a kinde of difeafe amengit Swine (though otherwise they be healthis and fatte) wherein their feth is all infected with little graines, as bigge as Beafon : the Brekes call them Galazos, and we at this day Deagled Swine which you thall some verceine by the light of the tongue, and the boarteneste of their boyce : this difeate thep fap, is naturall bip to them, from which you thall preferue them, if you nayle certaine plates of Lead in the bottome of their Trough. Douthall alle keepe them from this bifeafe, if you give them to brinke the Mote of Baiony : the generall and common remedy is Allome. Brimftone, and Bay-berries, of each alike : abbe thereunto a banofull of Sote, beate them all together, and put them in a Bagge, which Bagge you thall caft into their water when they Dinke, and renewit twife in the piere.

EVPHOR. I pray you Eumeus doe not distemble, but fell be truely how you doe to have your Hogges so satte, I believe you are in the Barne sometime when you should not be?

EVMENS. What means so ever I ble in spering my slocke, is not to my Spaisters loste, no moze then is your viligence, where by you bring your cattell to be so faire. I told you befoze, that he was an bothzistie Husband, that had his Bacon from the Shambles, a not of his owne provision: and befoze, my Spaisters Philitians give great commendations to Hogges slesh, in that it hath such a nevenesse and agreement with our bodies, neither is there (as I said befoze) a beast that makes moze dishes. And there soze it is greatly soz prosit, to have the Husband-mans kitchin well stored with Bacon, where with he may sustaine his houshold

Meazled Swine.

5

a

.

p

P

B

fe

DI

bi

3

Ří

m

m

De

B

be

RO

all the tuhole pare. You thall entily (though woods be twenting) finde Birnes | Parthes and Come-fields to fode them in. They will be fat (as Plinic fuppoleth) in threefcore babes, fpecially if they be kept from meat the bayes before you feede them: they are fatted with Barley , Dates , or other Corne, or Bulle, sither ginen whole, or ground, but of all others, belt with Baft : and that fleth is better, and of more fubitance that is fed with Acomes, then that which is fatted with epther Bech mall, or Chelinut. This beaft will in time be fo fat, as he will be abte net ther to goe, not dang. Dea Varro tells that there was fiene in Arcadia a Solvefo fat, that the was not onely brable to rife, but Auffeed a Moule to make a neft in her boop, a to lay her young there. The lame Varro reporteth, that there was lent to Volumius a Sc natoz in Rome, a piece of Bozke of two ribs that weighed thie & twenty pound: the thickenede of which Some from the fainne to the ribbe, was one foote and theeinches. Bour beltis to put to fatting your Dwine of two or three pieres old : for if they be ponger, their growing will binder their feeding. To keepe your Bacon any long time, you must ble great biligence in the falting and daying of it, whereby you thall have it both the wholefomer, and fiveter, and belives to continue divers pieres to ferue the turne, if fearlitie happen. Dour Donge beingen this fost fatted, pon mult that by , and not lafter him to brinke the day before you kill him, whereby the fieth will be the ozier. Withen you haus thus after his thirft killed him, you shall epther skald him with water, of with a flame made with frawc, of flickes, fondge him: tof the manner of flich as flap bim. Itike not. After that, hange ing him by by the heeles, you thail plucke out his bowels, and put them to dreffing : his fielh being colde and hard, you thall lay bpon a table, and cutting out the Bead, the Cammon ; and the Fletches, pouder them with Balt, thrulling great floze thereof At enery place, specially where the bones be: that done, put it into pour pour tubbe, Aroking falt enough binderit : fome would have you fait it in the wane of the Done. Wefoze you pouber it, you must prese and by out all the bloud, and the water. Some before they fait it, doe plucke out the bones, thinking it the belt way for preferring it, and to kepe it longelt fweet. Others againe doe not fraight waves put it into the poudzing tubbe; but

.

g

1

D

but boe leane it boon a Table for ten baies after, and then have it bu in a pure aves, to bep in the larbe. And when it bath beine Daved in the winde certaine bayes, by little and little, they let the Imoke come to it, and afterwards more abunbantly. The Bacon will be the freter, if befice the fmoke, the winde may come to it : if you hang it in great finohe at the first, it will be ruftie. Dv. dimus faith, that the Bacon will long continue Smete, if after the dreffing, coling, and drying, it be banged by in fhadeluy and moist places, rather toward the Boyth, then toward the South, and that it will be flueter, if it be coursed with fnow and chaffe: the Hubbes that you poliber in, muft be fuch as have hab Dple in, rather then those that have bab Wineger. Although I have before Cooken of the morthynese and antiquitie of Shepheards. and Deardimen, pet muft I bere lav, that it is in baine to med ble with the ordering and keeping of cattell, except you bave band, fome and [kilfull men that may take the charge : for the know ledge of keeping of cattell bath a discipline, tobersin a man must from his bery Chilbe-how be brought by : and furely it is mete. that the husband, or 15 apliffe, baue beine brought bp. or trayned in all thefe Trabes, and to come by begrees to bis Maifters prize : As from a Smineheard to a Shepheard, from a Shopheard to a Beatheard, gc. And mot true it proneth in this that commeth to palle in all other gouernments, that fuch are beft able to take charge of government, that palling by begrees and offices, baue from being buder gonerument, come to gonerne themfelnes : for though (where the flocke is but fmall, and feeding not farre off, is brought home every ban) children and nonng folks are able to ferue the turne, pet where the flocks be great, and mult be kept night and bay in Forretts, and wilde fields (as I faibe before of the flocks that wintred in Appulia, and fummered in the Mountaines of Kiere) here 3 lay the Shepheards muß both bor men of luftic age, firength, and biligence, as allo failfull in that belongeth to their office : for neither olde men, nor chilozen, are able to endure the baroneffe of cluming the billes noz the tharps melle of the cold Pountaines, which they must alwayes oce that follow their flocke frecially they that keepe Bullocks and Goats. that belight to feebe boon Bochs, and Cleues, Dou fail feron the Mountaines of Swytzerland, great and godly fellowes, fornilbed

Of Shepheards.

furnilhed in tearrelike manner to follow their Beards and Flockes, and to lodge in the wilde befarts, farre from the company of men, and there allo to make both Butter and Checle : inherefore fuch as are meet to take charge in thefe places, muft be light, fwift, and well limmed, and not onely well able to fol low their flockes, but if neede be to befend them from wilde and ravening beafts, to lift great burbens, to follow the chafe, and to be mod archers : in fine, fuch a one as Homer both make his Eumeus to be. And therefore the olde Bufbandmen in biring of a feebeard, did alwayes covenant among others, that hee thould be found of body and limme, and free from filching and theft. In Sclauony, the Beardefmen doe ble to baue their Wines abroad with them, as companions of their tournip to dreffe their meate, and fuch things as they neede : fuch things as are for the health of his beatts, the thepheard muft baue alwayes in a reas bineffe. Varro would have him both for this purpole, and for the better orber of his reckonings with his Baffer , to write and reade. Di the number of the Beardimen , boto many euery flocke ought to have, is to be mealured by the Countrie, and kind of the Cattel. The fame Varro alloweth for every fourefcore Boates one thepheard, which Acticus alloweth to an hundren, to every fitte Mares two men : in our Countrep one thepheard (uf. ficeth for an hundred, or two hundred there: pea, many times for thie bundled, and aboue, frecially where they bee enery pay brought home. One Swineheard will herpe twenty, or thirtie Bogges, or more, if the ground be thereafter, the like for 180% lockes, and Mine. Foz Bogles we felbome haue Bearofmen,but euery man keepeth them at home, either in Stables og Baltures, not commonly erceding the number of tiventy. In what or ber vou fhall feede your Cattell , either in Summer oz in Win, ter, and when towards the South, and when to the weet. 3 haue told you before.

The Dogge (though the Lawyer alloweth him not in the Dogges, number of Cattell) and though he yelds of himselfe no profit, yet is he as the shepheard, for his trustinesse, and watching of the slocke) to be estimated and set by: for they have bone some to sight in the desence and quarrell of their Paster. Pearituers of them have bone knowne after their Pasters death, open great

t

a

**犯**。

affection

affection and love, to family themfelnes, whereupon the palce of god Dogges grew to be bery great. It is witten, that Alcibiades gaue for one Dogge eightfcoze poundes. There is not a more necessary creature then the Dogge about Bulbandry : for befice his fingular faithfulneffe and watching in the night time, he is allo a quarter mafter in keeping of Cattell, and bery needs full for the defence of them focdally Shape and Goates, which would be fore deftroped by Wolfes, Fores, Erayes, and other bermine,if Dogges were not fet to be their kepers. Swine fee ding in heards, if the wilde beaftes invade them, making as it were a larum with their grunting, and crying, allemble them. feiucs,in their owne befence. The greater Cattell befend them, Telucs fome with their hetes, fome with their Boznes, onely the pore Shepe hath no Souldier but the Dogge. Df Doggesthat ferue for profit, there are but three forts : for the fourth (which are but for pleasure) 3 make no account. One of the forts is fuch, as by frent, or fwiftneffe, ferue for the chafe, and killing of wilde beafts : thefe, what manner of ones they fould be, and boto they thould be ordered, Xenophon and Oppianus, in their Cynigetickes have taught, and I in my laft booke, where I fhall speake of hunting, will occlare. But now 4 will onely weake of Dogges for the hulbanes,

and kevers both of the house and the Cattell : and first of the Ballie that keepeth the houle : for this purpole you mult preuide you fuch a one, as hath a large and a mighty body, a great The Ban- and a fiell boyce, that both with his barking bee may discouer, dogge for and with his fight difmay the Thefe, yea, being not fæne, with the house. the horror of his boice put him to flight. Wis Cature much neither be long not Most, but well fet, his head great, his eves tharpe, and flery, either browne or gray, his lippes blackilb, neither ture ning by , not hanging to much downe , his mouth blacke and wide, his neather falve fat, and comming out of it of either five a fang, appearing more outward then his other feeth, his upper toth even with his neather, not hanging to much over, harpe, and hidden with his lippes, his countenance like a Lion, his breft great, and haghaped, his thoulders beoad, his legges bigge, his tatle thoat, his fet bery great, bis difpolition muft neither be to gentle,noz to curit, that he neither fawne bom a thefe, noz fice

n

b

bpon

II a

boon his friends, very waking, no gabber abroad, nor lanify of his mouth , barking without cause, neither maketh it any matter though he be not fwift: for he is but to fight at home and to give

warning of the enemie.

The Dogge that is for the folde, mut neither be fo gaunt, The not fo fwift as the Grayhound, not fo fatte not heavy as the Mally. Mafty of the boule, but bery frong, and able to fight and follow the chafe, that hee may be able to beat away the Millolfe as other beafts, and to follow the thefe and recover the prevand therefore his body would rather be long then thort and thicke: in all other points he must agree with the Bandog. Mouching the kinde the Dogge is thought better then the Bitch because of the trouble the bringeth when the is fawte: howbeit, the Coard Bits thes doe bite foreft, are more waking. For their age, they muft neither be tuhelpes, noz to olde: for the whelpe can neither defend himfelfe noz the flocke, whereas pet the old hath fome ble about a house. If you have a whelpe (which age is better to be trained. either for the house or the fold) pou thall perceive by the for tohes ther he will be great or no. Wis head mut be great, fmothand full of baines, his eares great, and hanging, his toynts long, his forelegs (horter then his hinder, but very Braight and great, his clawes wide, his nailes hard, his bele neither flethy nor to hard. the ridge of his backenot to much appearing noz croken bis ribs round and well knit, his thoulder pointes well biffant, his but tockes fat, a broad, and in all other parts (as I fapo) of the Ban Dogge befoze. For his colour it maketh no great matter though Varro would have him white, and to would Columella the Dog for the field, as he would have the Boule dog to be black : but the pyed colour is judged naught in them both. The white they come mend because he may be discerned from the Waolfe in the night. whereby they Wall not Arike the Dogge in Cean of the Walfe. The blacke againe, for the boule is best commended, because of his terrour to the thefe in the day, and the hurt that he may bo by night, by reason of his not being sæne: the bunne, the branded. e the red do not milite me, fo they be well marked befice. Thus mult pou fudging him as a Lyon, by the claw, eyther buy one, 02 bring bp one for your purpole. Dow much teaching or bringing by prenaileth, appeareth by Lycurgus his grample in Xenophon.

To make them fierce & curft, you must placke them by the earcs. fet them together with pour handes, and keepe them from being hurt, fo thall you have them the bolder and the fiercer, and fuch as inill neuer gineit ouer. Dou muß ble him firft to the chaine by tring him to a clogge, letting him drawe it a while by his necke, and when you have a little space bled him in this fort, then may pou epther lead him or tie him: it is best to keepe them tred in the bay time, to make them the curfter, and to let them lole in the night time: to wall they in the night time watch, and in the Day fleepe. To arme them against the Wolfe, or other wilde beaffes, you may put broade collors about their Beckes full of Dafles, and fron Auddes, lining it with foft leather within. Don muft loke that your Dogges be of a good kinde, and (if pou can) all of one kinde, to thall they Micke the better together : choose them that have the curfteft Dammes, and fuch as have their Bappes cuen. They begin to litter at a pere old, and continue

nine pieres, after tenne they be worth nothing.

The Dogge (as Columella faith) gettes Whelpes luftily,till he be tenne peres olde : the whelpes of the olde Curres are flow and naught. Homer fæmeth to make the life of a Dogge about twenty veres where he freaketh of the comming home of Villes. and the knowledge of his Dogge : And I my felle baue fone Dogs that were fait to be fo much, but altogether bnpzofitable. Their age may be knowen by their teth, the young having (as Aristotle faith) white teth and fharpe: the olde, blacke and blunt. In the Spring they begin to be lawte, and goe with Whelpe (as Aristotle and Xenophon saith) theescore bapes, or at the most thiefcoze and thie. Varro witteth, that they goe thie moneths with young: the Dogs of Lacedemon ingender at eight moneths olde, and all other Dogges also at halfe a pere: thep are with whelpe at once limping: they litter about June: when they be littered, they are blinde, and the moze mithe they have, the longer it is before they fee, but never longer then one and twenty bayes. no; foner then feauen bapes. Some holde opinion, that if there bee but one at a litter it will fix the ninth day, if two the tenth bay, and fo a bay added for as many as be, and that those that be of the first litter, Doe somest fer: the best of the litter is that which last feeth or which the Bitch first carriety to ber it ennell.

th

th

be

fa

p2

m

As some as they be whelped, call away fuch as you mill the : of featien, kepe thie of foure : of thie, two : while they be young, at the firt they must be fuffred to play with the bamme, that they map grow the better, afterward, let them be taught, and tied (as I tolde you ) tring them in the day, and letting them lofe in the night, and fuch as you know to be of a good kinde, and would have them proue well, fuffer them not to fucke a firange bamme: for the milke and bloud of the mother is of great force to the good, neffe and growth of the Wibelpe. And if to be the Bitch lacke milke, fuckle them with the milke of a Coate, till they be foure moneths olde. Lay buberneath them in their Bennels Straw and Chaffe, that they may lye warme: for they cannot well away with cold. Dou muft cut the tailes of the Wilhelpes when they be are wekes olo, in this maner, there is a fine we that runnes from the ringe of the backe, to the tip of the taile, which being held faft with a pincer, & a little drawne out, you fall cut afunder where by neither the taile thall grow to any foule length, noz the Dog thall at any time after (as they fay) be mad. They are thought to lift by the legge when they piffe, at fire moneths olde, which is a figne of the perfeaneffe of their ftrength. The feeding of both kindes is all one, they may be fed with bones, porredge, and fuch like: in any wife let them want no meat, for if they boe, they will for hunger rauen abroad, and forfake both the house and the flocke. Xenophon would have you give them mitte all the pere long, and fuch fod as they thall fiede with all that life time, and no other thing : if you feed them to full, it will breed (as he faith) bileales in their legs, and rot them within. Bread is their common meat , but Varro would have it given eyther with wilke oz Exbap, by ble whereof, they will never forlake their Cattell. Dou may give them beffe, bread, with the broth of fooden bones. and the bones themfelues broofed, which will make their teth the founder, and their monthes and fatives wider, and they will be the keener, by reason of the Sweetnelle of the Barrowe. Dou must beware they eate no bead Shepe, left by reafon of the tatt, they fall to the live ones. Wibile the Bitch hath Welpes, pon mult feo ber rather with Barley bread then wheaten bread : for they profper better with it, and makes them give more wilke. mult feede them thatfe a bay, in the morning when you tre them T 3 bp.

of Dogs.

by, at none, and againe at night, when you let them lofe. Their names that you give them, mult be thoat, that they may Ione beare when thep be called. The Czekes, and the Latines, gaue them names of two fillables, the Bermaines lightly but one fillable, as Ball, Slut, Batch, Grim, ec. Although Columella would not have their names under two fillables, Welving for example the names of Dogges among the Greekes, and the Latines, as οκύλαξ, coun, αλιι, λάκονς, and Lupa, Tigris, Cerua. Xenophon reckoneth by thousands, all for the mest part of two fillables. The difeales and grieuances of Dogges, are the biting of flics, Tickes, and Pangineffe. Against this you must wall them when they be Wahelpes with bitter Almonds, Camped and Brained with water, wathing them both about their Cares, and betwirt their Clawes, that neither flies Micke to them and blie Her them, not Tickes, of Lice moleft them : and if they be al ready mangie, you mult annoint them with Tarre, and Boggele greafe: the Tickes allo, if you touch them with this medicine, will presently fall off, for you must not plucke them off by force. If your Dogge befull of fleas, the remedy is Cummin beaten, with a like quantitie of neiling powder, and mingled with was ter, rub him ouer with it, oz the olde dzegs of Dyle rubbed ouer all his bodie. If he be fcabby, take Cythifus, and Cefamum, beate them together, and mingling them with Tarre, annoint the fore: this medicine will alfo remedie a Chriffian creature. Ebey fap alfo, that if you thank the fain through with arriven, it will heale the manginelle, oz if you fmeare them ouer with Cunner pouder, of call them into a Tanners fatte.

Arillotle writeth, that Dogges are chiefely troubled with this vileales, Paintley, And the Bout, and whatlocuer he byteth in his madnetle, becommethallo mad, and vieth thereof: the madnetle is most extreame in the Dogge dayes: whatloeuer is bitten by them, falleth traightwayes into a loathing, and feare of Mater. To preserve them from it, you must mingle with their meate so; thirtie dayes together, or if they be already insected, give them nating powder to cate. Plinic writeth, that there is in the tongue of Dogges a little worme, called of the Brekes Lyrra, which if it be taken out while they be whelpes, they will neither be madde, nor greedy, nor rauchous. If the

Dogge

P

Dogge be mabbe , be refufeth both meate and bifite . and bifu. Madde leth ill fanoured fomte matter, both from his nofe, and mouth, Dogges. bee loketh with a loathfome countenance, his body is leane, and more clong together then it was wont to be, he beareth bis taile betwirt his legges, and biteth without any barking whatfoeuer be metes, falling as well boon men, as beafts, making no differ rence betwirt his friendes, and ftrangers. As the Dogge is a watchman and keper of the boule and the flocke, lo the Cat is a household feruant to be cherifhed.

The Egyptians for their profitableneffe, bid worfhip for their Cattes. Boda golden Cat , foz whereas Kats and Dife, as well in Ch ties, as in Granges, are greatly burtfull, we hope by Cattes for the anopoing of the milithiefe, neither is there a specier remedy. The Catte is a beaft of nature enemie to the Boule, watching in the night, and fleping in the day, ficaling lubbenly and floifily buon the Boule : The feeth better by might then by bay (as Alexder Aphrodifcus wettetb) ber eves fine and glifter in the barke. They goe a Catterwalling about February, or other times in the vere (for they often ingender) and bring forth their young ones blime, as the Bitch both. Herodotus faith, that after the Catte bath kitned, thee commeth no moze at the Bucke, which luben bee perceiveth, and cannot have his purpole, be killeth the young, whereof when the leth her felfe bereft, for bery beftre of young (whereof this kinde is most destrous) thee commeth Braight to the Bucke. For my part, I would rather counfell you to beftrop your Rats and Bile with Traps, Banes of Wies fels : for befides the fluttiffmelle and loathfommelle of the Catte (you know what the layer in the Balt heave) the is most bange rous and pernitious among children, as 3 mp felfe have hab goo erperience.

Soli Deo boner & gloria.

The end of the third Booke.



# The fourth Booke.

Entreating of Poulrie, Fowle, Fish, and Bees.

PVLLARIVS. MELLISSEVS. CHENOBOSCVS. PISCINARIVS.

#### P. V L. L A.



S keeping and beeding of Cattell, both veeld no fmall commoditie and gaines to the husbandman, fo the nourithing and maintenance of Boultrie, Foivle, Bes, and fift (if the Countrie be fozit) both commonly arife to his great abunntage. whereby both the reuenue is greatly en, creased, and the table baily with baintie.

and no chargeable diffes furnified. Cages, and houses for 18 iras. wherein were kept all manner and forts of fowle, were first be uifen by Mafter Lelius Strabo at Brundifium, from which time it mas first put in ble , to pen by fuch creatures, as naturally mers aconfromed to flie at their libertie in the agre. At which time alfo began to be brought in ftrange and outlandiff fowles, the keping and breding whereof, pelbeth to the husbaneman both pleasure and profit. The have here brought in Pullarius, Chenobolcus, Melliffcus, and Pifcinarius, enery one of them fenerally ene treating of fuch things as belongeth to his charge.

MELLISSEVS. 3 fe pon haue here (Pullarius ) great fore of Fowle, and Ponitrie, and I beliene bertly, the profit and commoditie of them will not quite halfe the charges they put you to.

PVLLARIVS. Des berfly, they quite our coft, whether

ti ai

h

to

m

re

in

wee fell them , o; keepe them for the Bitchin. It is fago, that Auidius Lurco made perely of his Boultrie, and Fowle, fine bunbred pound.

MELLISSEVS. But 3 doe a great Deale better like the common Poultrie, that we keepe about our boufcs.

PV L L A R I V s. Wife have also of the same here at home with bs.

ME L. Then let me bnberftand ( pap)in what ogber pou

kepe them, for berein pou fæme to be moft (kilfull.

PVLLAR. It is met that enery one be failfull in that trabe that he profesteth. If you will, I will not refuse to thew you that little cunning that I baue: fo pou on the other fibe bouchfafe to them me the ordering of your 15 ces.

MELLISSEVS. I will not tricke with you for that, to tell

you the best & can.

PVLL ARIVS. Well then, with a goo will I beclare buto you my knowledge, beginning firth with those kinnes that are moft in ble: for amongst all other bonlebold Boultrie, the chiefe place is one to the Cocke and the Benne, that are belibe fo common, as the poselt window in the Countrie isable to keepe them. In this Bird there are thee points of naturall affection chiefly to be wondered at. The first, the great carefulnelle that thep have buring the time of their litting, wherein for the belier of hatching their young, they feeme to be careleffe of either meate or brinke. Decombly, that they beare fuch love to them, that they fiche not to bazaro their owne lives in the befence of them. And thirdly, that in the forme great colde, or fickenelle, thep preferue and nourily them under their winges, not making for the lubile any account of their owne lelues. There is hereof a l'wet comparison in the Golpell, wherein our Saufour Chaift compareth himselfe to the Benne that gathereth ber Thickens boder ber winges. And therefore, fince thefe are common for every man to baue, and that they alwayes feede about the houfe, 3 thinke it bett to begin with them, and to tell you which are belt to be liked, which to be brought bp, and which to be fatted.

First, the best to be bought for bambe, are the bunne, the The repor, the pellow, and the blacke, the white are not to be medled Hennes mith, because they are commonly tender, and prosper not neither for brood.

are they beside fruitfull, and are alwayes the faired marke in a Hawke, of a Bustards eye. Let therefore your Henne be of a god colour, having a large body, and bress, a great head, with a straight, redde, and dubble combe, white eares and great, her tablons even. The best kinde (as Columella saith) are such as have sine claives, so that they be free from spurres; so, such as weare those Cockish weapons are not good for brode, and viscaine the company of the Cocke, and lay but soldome, and when they sit, with their vurily spurres they breake their Egges. The little Pullets, or Hennes, though the olde age, both for their vustus fulnesse, and other causes visablewed them, yet in many places they prove to be god, and lay many Egges. In England, at this day, they are vied as a daintie dish at mens tables.

The choise of Cockes.

In the choyle of your Cockes, you must provide fuch as will treade luftily, of colours, as 3 told you for the Bennes, and the like number of tallons, and like in many other points, but of fature they must be bigher, carrying their heades straight by, their Combes ment be rubby and high, not hanging, noz falling bomne, their eyes blacke and tharpe, their Bils thout and croked, their eares great and white, their wattels ofpent, having bover them as it were, a hinde of gravish beard, the Beake feathers of colours biners, either a pale, golden, oza gliftering greene, which must bang rufling from his Recke to his thoulders, their 15 zeasts muft be large, and well bratoned, their Wings well feathered and large, their Tailes bubbled and flagging, their rumpes and thighs full of feathers, their legs frong, well armed with tharpe and beadly Spurres : Their Difposition (for you thall not need to have them great fighters) would be gentle,quicke,and lively, and frecially god wakers, and crowers : for it is a Bord that well aporcioneth both the night and the bay, and (as Prudentius wits nelleth) erhozteth to repentance. Deither mult you on the other five, have him a Craddon, for he muft fometime fand in the be tence of his wife, and his children, and have fromacke to kill or heat away a Snake, or any fuch hurtfull bermine : but if he be quare rellous, you thall have no rule with him for fighting and beating his fellowes, not fuffering them to treade, though he have more then bis bands full bimfelfe. This milchiefe pon mapeafily pres uent with thackling him with a there fole; for although fuch lufty

fighters

ti

11

fi

th

fi

pr

b<sub>2</sub>

18

tir

m

Eô

fee

fahters are bredde by and cherifhed for the game, yet are they not to ferue the Bulbandmans turne at home. A Cocke framed and proportioned after this fort . Chall baue fine or fire Dennes going with him.

MELLISSEVS. 3 pray you let me bnoerstand lobat time of the yeare is beft for bringing forth of Chickens 4.

PVLLARIVS. In fome places, specially the bettelt Countries, the Bennes beginne to lay in January in colber Countries, epther in february, or at the latter end of January : you mult allo further their laping , by giving them meates for the pur pole, as Barley balle foone, which maketh both the Egges the fagier, and caufeth them to lay the oftner. Some fhinke it god to mingle therewith the leanes, or the febes of Citylus, which both are thought to be greatly of force in making them fruitfull. If this be not to be had, you may supply the want with Spery, 02 (us Cardanus faith) with Dempelede, which will caufe them tolanalt the Winter.

Takhen they lay, you muft fe that their nefts be cleane, and kept flid with freth cleane fram: for otherwife they will be full of fleas, and other bermine, which will not fuffer the Denne to be quiet , whereby the Egges bee not hatch even together, or many times ware abble and retten. The Cas that you fet bober them, muft be new lapb, bowbeit, fo they be not abone tenne haves olde, it maketh no great matter : if you lake not to them. they will fraight wapes fit after their first laping, which you muft not fuffer for the voung Bullets are better for laving then fitting : the belice of fitting is reftrained by thrufting a feather through their nofe. The old Dennes muft rathet be fuffered to fit then the pounger , because of their erperience. Derein mult. you have a speciali regard to know which be best to sit, for some be better to bring by Chickins then to fit. Dthers againe, will breake or eate by both their owne Egges, and their felloluss Egges : fuch pou muft put alion , and if their Pailes and Billes be harpe, rather imploy them in bambing then in tits ting. Democricus telleth, that Chickens may be brought foorth without fetting buder the Benne, if so be the boung of Bennes fifted bery fine, bee put in little bagges, balted about with foft feathers, boot which the Cages muft be laid Araight buright with

with the harpe end byward : bpon thele againe muft the like quantitie of Bennes boung be laib, fo that they be of cuery fibe closely conered. This done, you must fuffer them to lie for the two or thee first baies, and after, every bay turne them, taking god heb, that you knocke them not one against the other in the turning. After twenty Dayes, pon thail finde the Egges broken: and therefore the tiventieth day, plucking away the theis, and taking out the Chickin, you may commit them to the Denne. It is logitten , that Chickens bane bene hatched by the continuall warmth of a womans bolome: belide, it bath beene læne that Cares being lafo in an Duen, oz a twarme place . conered well with ftrawe and chaffe, having a little fire belibe, and one to turns them continually, have bifclofe and broken at their accustomed time. Ariffotle writeth, that Egges put in warme beffels, or co nered with bonng, will hatch of themfelues. The number of the Egges that pour Denne Call at boon, fome would baucto be odde, and not alivates althe, but in Januarie, and February fit terre, and no moze, in March mineteene, and no leffe: tobich num ber you Chall continue all the Summer , till Deptember, 02 Detor ber, after which time it is to no purpole to breebe any longer : fer the Chickins, by reason of the colde weather, and offcales, never profper. Den, fome be of opinion, that after the tenth, or twelfth of June, you thall never have faire brode, and that the best feafon for fetting, beginneth at the tenth of Parch. And herein pou must alwayes be fure to have the Done encreasing, from that the be tenne bayes olo, till fiftene: for that is the beft time to fet in. And fo must you againe dispose the time, as the hatching may fail out in the encrease of the Mone : for the full time of hatching, there are funday opinions: Arifforle waiteth, that they are batches in ninetiene bapes, Varro (for Chickins) one and twentie bairs, or twentie dayes: for Beacockes , and Dale, feauen and tiventie bayes, and fometimes more: Duckes, in the like frace to the Denne, specially if they fit night and day, allowing them onely the Bozning, and the Cueming to febe : which times they muft of neceflitie hane. If fo be you will fet biber pour Benne Dem cockes Egges with her owne , pou muft let her byon the Bear coches Egges ten baies befoze the hane her owne Egges where by they thall be batched all at once , neither must you fet abone

fine

D

ti

tt

lý

th

th 1

lic

m

m

cia

to

the

in

fet

tha

tho

net

POL

be 1

ber

POL

mit

tûn

fort

and

ther

fine Beacockes, or Bole Egges bier a Benne. If you would To have have all Cocke Chickins, you muft chofe fuch Egges as be lon. Cocke geft and tharpelt, as againe (for Dennes) the roundelt, (as both Chickins, Plinic and Columella write ) though Aritotle fæme not of that or Hennespinion. To binderstand which be god Egges, which not, pou Chickins. muft (as Varro teacheta) put them in water, and fuch as be nought will fwim aloft, and the goo goe ftraight to the bottome. Dthers poe holo them by against a Canole, and if they fee through them. they ludge them light and nought. Dou muft in no wife thake them, or Chagge them, least you breake the ftrings of life, that are but newly begun : it hath beene feene, that by fhaking of the Cas. the Chickins haue beene hatched lame. Wie may belide perceine whether the Egges will proue well or no, if foure baies after the Benne haue fitten, pou hold them by in the Sunne, or other light, and if you fee that they be cleare, cast them away, and put of ther in their places. Against thunber, that many times marreth the Egges, some doe let about them the Leanes, or Branches of Bapes, 02 15 entes, 02 Graffe, others (agains) the heads of Bar. licke, and Railes of you. In the great heat of the Summer, you hurt of must now and then fpzinckle the Egges a little with water , and thunder. wet them leaft by the ertreame heat they ware baie and able, fper cially the Egs of Eurkies and Bennes. Whenfoener you meane to make cleane their nells, you mult take by the Cages, and lay them tenderly in forme little Bafket, & fo lay them fpebily agains in the cleane neft:neere to the place where the Ben'fits, you mult fet water, & meat, that they may the better kepe their nefts, and that by their long absence the Egges ware not cold. And al though the Denne both alwaies turne her Egges, pet it behor neth pou when the is from the neft, to turne them foftly with your hands, that by receiving a like warmth, they may the foner be readie. And if the have happened to burftany of them with ber feete, you muft presently remove them. At the nineteenth bap, you must loke biligently whether the Chickins oo iobbe the Chell with their billes, and hearken whether they peepe : fo; many times by reason of the haronesse of the thell they cannot come forth, and therefore you must belpe them out with your hands, and put them to the Benne, and this you must doe no longer then the bates : for the Egges that after one and twentie

Daics

dates make a noile, have nothing in them, and therefore you muft caft them away, that the Benne lole not ber labour. Toon the twenticth day, if you firre the Ogges, you hall heare the Chic kin, from that time begin the Feathers, the Chickin lying fo. as the head refleth byon the right fote, and the right wing lieth by on the head, the polke banifbing by little and little. Dou muft not take the Chickins alway as they be batcht, but fuffer them to remaine one whole day with the Benne in the Acft without meate of brinke, till fuch time as they be all hatched. It is wonperfull, & pet the experience fæne, that before they be fustered to eate, they take no barme, though they fall from a great beight. The nert day when all the flocke is come forth, Columella would have you to put them bider a Sine, and to perfume them with the Imoke of Deneriall, or to hang them in a Balaet in the Imoke. which preferreth them ( as it is thought ) from the vippe, which many times bedropeth the page Chickin : then mutt pou put them into a Cope with the Benne, and febe them at the firft with Barley-meale, fooden in water, and fpzinckled with a little Wine. Afterwards, when they goe abroad, you must feele eur rie one of them whether there remaine any of the meate they re ceived the day before : for if their croppes be not emptie, it be tokeneth want of digettion, and therefore you must keepe them falting till all be digelted. Dou muft not luffer them to go farre from the Denne, but to keepe them about the Cope, and to fee them til they ware Grong with bouled Barly, and Barly meale: you muft alfo take goo hebe, that they be not becathed byon. by eyther Toad, Snake, oz Enet, for the Avze of fuch is fo ne filent, as it by & by defroyeth them all : which mischiefe is anot Ded by burning of Barts hozne, Galbanum, oz Womans haire, the fmoke of all which preventeth this pettilence. Don muft fee befide that they lie warme: for they neither can fuffer colo, nor to much beat : the feathers about their tailes muft be pulled away, leaff with the hardning of their bung, the passage be Kopped, which if it be, you muft open foftly with a little quill : pou muft heepe them with the Denne foz a moneths fpace, and after fuffer them to go at liberty. Both the old and young, are of all other difeales thepippe, most troubled with the pippe, specially about Baruct time which isalittle white fuin, covering the tippe of their tongue, which is to 24

助助

ÍN

the

th

th

3

th

C

do

lat

ter

bei

b21

the

làn

E:

Li

rat

ter

hil

m

in t

gier

fto

the

affi

ffre

of t

Against

be plucked away with the nailes, and the place to be poudged with Thes, 02 Barifie poudsed & fpzinchled bpon it. From this plague you to ill preferue them, by feeding them in cleane bellels, and gir ning them alwaics the purelt, & cleannet inater, and keeping their boufes alwaics cleane, and finoked, oz by fmoking them, as they fit with the fmoke chiefly of Baves, and Sauin. The wines of the countrie bo commonly cure them , by thaufting a feather through their note, and tirring it every day : their diet mut be Bearbgrace waapt in Butter og Garlike, mingled with Beale og Water.oz Clones of Garlike wet in warme Ballet-ople, and put into their monthes. Some (faith Columella ) boe ble to wall their mouthes with piffe and hieve their bils fo long clofe as the Dalt and bitter taft force them to caft at their Bole the fpring of the difeale. Dthers againe do cut Gartick in gobbets and putting them in Chalding Dyle, after it is cold . Doe wall their mouthes. If they happen to eate Lupines, they will freaight fivell bnder the eyes, which if you doe not gently oven , and take out the Coze,it prefently billeth them. And if fo be the Dippe baue now doled by their eyes, and that they forlake their meate, you must launch their Thekes with a harpe knife, and thank out the water that lieth binder the eies, and put into the wound Salt finely beaten : this happeneth chiefely when in the Summer time they brinke foule water, and also when they want meat, or takecold. If their eies be fore, you may heale them with the fuice of Durce. lane, and Womans milke, annointing on the outfide, or with Cammin, Bonv, and Salt Armoniacke. Dou thall rid them of Lice, with parched Cummin, and Stauelacre, a like quantitie of each beaten together, and power on with Taline : also the was ter wherein wilde Lupines hane bene fobben. If your Benne fill to eating ofher Egges, taking out the white, you must powie in Plaifter, of fome liquid thing, that may come to a hardnelle in the thell. To keepe them from cating of Graves, you shall gine them the Berrie of the wood called the wilde-Time gathered from the heage before it be ripe, and fooden with Wheat flower, the euill tale whereof will cause them to loath Grapes. Plinic Mirmeth, that if you give them the flowers of the Time with their meat, they will not touch the Grave. As in all other cattell : of the countrie, to in thete kindes the best are to be kept, and the ipmift.

Chavic of world either to be fold, or to be killed in the boule. And therefore every pereabout the fall of the leafe, when they ceale to bande Poultrie. pou thall leffen their number, and put away the old ones. South as are about thee veres, and fuch as are either bufruitfull, or not god bringers by of Chickins, but (pecially those that eate by either their owne Cages, or their fellowes, or fuch as after the Cockith manner either crow or tread : to which number you that alfo abbe fuch as mere hatched after the tenth of June, which never prome to be fapre: but the Cocke, as long as he is able to tread, you may keepe : for you thall felbome mete with a goo Cocke. For fatting, the best, thole that hauethe lkinnes of their

Poultrie.

Fatting of necks thicke and fattilh. The place where you meane to fat them must be bery warme, a of little light because, as both Varro, and our olune experience theweth, the light, and their often firring, kepeth them from being fatte : thus mut they be kept for fine and twentie bayes, wherein they will be fatte. Let them hang every one in his Basket, or Cage by himfelfe, which must have in it two holes, one to thauft out his necke at, the other to cafe out his bung, that he may bischarge himselfe, and let them be Arabed either with Araw, oz courle bay : foz the harder thep lie, the foner they fatte. Bull alway belides, their feathers from their beads, their wings, and their taples, the one for anopoing of Lice, the other for binding their bodies. The meate that you give them, muft be Barley meale, which mingled with water, must be made in little pellets, where with they will be fat (as fome thinke) in fouretiene bayes : but fix that you give it them but moderately at the ark, till they well digeft it, after give it them in quantitie.according as they digeft it: and in any wife give them no new, till you perceine, by fæling of their Croppes, that the olde be enbeined. Dthers boe fprinckle their Beate with Boney fodden in water, putting to the parts of water, one of Boney, and one of Wine, and wetting berein wheaten bread, they there withall poe cramme them. Dthers fav, that if you put hereunto a little Bilke, they will be wonderfull fatte. The Cockreis are

Making of gelded (as Ariffotle faith) in the hinder part, which when they tread, falleth out : this part, if you burne two or thee times, Capons, they will be Capons. And if they be right Capons, their Combs becommeth pale neither crowing noz treading any moze.

Dur

2

Í

t

p

p

n

fi

ti

·A

ar

er

fo

EU

Dur Wines of the Countrey, cutting them betwirt the legges, take out their frones, and folding by the wound, annoint it with Butter; which done, they thut them by in a Cope, not luffering them to brinke in a day or tino. From the beginning of Barneft. and all Winter long, the offall of the Coanc, and the Barnes Doze both feede them fufficiently : where they plant Tlines, foaring other more colly fodes, they feede them with the kernels of the Braves : and where there is neither the offall of Come, noz Braves, they muft be fedde with Dates, Sperp, oz fuch like. To caule them to lay in Wainter, you must gine them (as 3 tolo

vou ) Dempelabe.

0 ٥

٤.

ır

If you would have great Egges, Leoncus teatheth to beate OfEgges. into nomber Bricke. or Flaunders Tile, and mingling it with Chefil and Wine, to make it in Dow, and give it to your Denne. in to met a Saucerfull of the powder of the Bricke, to a Ballon of Branne, and to fiebe them with it. The Egges of Digeons, Bele, Beacocks, and Turkies, be all white : the Cages of Was ter Folvle be greenith, and pale : the Ginnie Bennes Egges be like the Wehennes in all things, fauing that they be fpeckled as the Turkie Dens. The Phealants, and the Balfrils Egges, are reddift. The Egges of all Fowles (as Plinic faith) are of two colours, wherein the Water Fowles Egges, having a great beale moze volke then white, and that moze blacke then others. The Egges of Filhes, are all of one colour, baning no white in them. The Egges of Birds are by realon of their beate, bait. tle : and Servents Cages, by reason of their colonelle, touch : Filbes, by meanes of their moutture, foft in laying, the round part of the Egge commeth firft out, the Shell being loft, and presently after bard: what forme some they have, the long are moft commended, as witneffeth the Boet. The Egge in falhion framed long, and of them (as I faid befoze) is brought forth the Cocke Chicken, as of the round ones the Benne, though Ariftorle be againft it. Some Dens doe lav berv great @gges. and those most times with two polkes, having the shell deutded as it were with a circle, which both Aristocle writeth, and our erperience approueth. Some Dos lay Double, and batch Double : fome are fo fruitfull, as they lay great numbers at once, fome cuery day, fome twife a day : fome are fo fruitfull as they kill them

themsclues with laying. In the mindest of all Egges, there lycth as it were, a broppe of bloub, which is supposed to be the heart of the Bitd, which is the first in all the body framed: the body it felfe is wrought of the white: the fuftenance is the polke: the head, while it is in the thell, is bigger then all the body, the eyes thut by moze then the bead. Wibile the Chickin increafeth, the white goeth to the mioft, and the polke compaffeth round as bont. The twentieth day (as 3 faid befoze ) if you ftirre the Egge, you shall heare the Chickin, from which time the feathers come forth, lying fo, as the head refteth byon the right fote, and the right wing courreth the head. The able Egges are thought to come of the baine luft and treading of the Bennes together: fome suppose them to be bredde of the winde, and therefore call them Winde Egges, as Ariftorle befoze Plinie bath witten. Egges are preferued in Winter, if you hape them in Chaffe, Strawe, or Leanes : and in Summer, if you couer them with Braune, or Wheate. Some Doe couer them before in fine beas ten balt, for the space of fire houres, and after wash them and lay them in Chaffe, Straine or Branne. Dthers againe couer them in Beanes, and fome in Beane flowze, and fome in heapes of Balt : but Salt, as it foffcreth not the Cages to corrupt, fo it greatly diminitheth the lubffance of them. Dour Den Boules must be made in that part of the Boule, as lycth in the Winter toward the rifing of the Sunne, and forning as nere as may be to fome Bill, Duen, or Chimney, or to the Bitchin, fo as the Smoke may come amonast them : for smoke is bery who fome for this kinde of Fowle. And that was (3 thinke) the cause that the old people made chople in their quitrents of fmoke Dennes, as of the belt, as it appeareth by old Kentalles. Let the front of your Benne house frand alwayes towards the Caft, and to that Coeff let the tore open. Let the inner romes be well furnifice with Lofts, and Ladders, and finall Windolves ovening Caff. loard, at which your Poultrie may fig out in the morning, and come into the Roll at night. Loke that you make them close at night, and let the Windowers be well letterfed for feare of Were mine. Let your nells and longings, both for laying and broding, be orderly caft : and against curry nest and rolling place, place Acpres and bogtes to come by by, making them as rough as mag

may be, that the Bennes may take god hold when they fly by to them, and not by their ouer (motheneffe, bee forced to flutter. and burt their Egges. It hall not be amiffe, if you parget the boule both within and without with god Blaitter, whereby neis ther Mesell, noz other burtfull Germine may enter in. 1502 bed flores are not for fowle to rot buon, which almoft all kinde of Birds refule, because of the burt that they receive by their bung, which if it cleave to their fete, bziebeth the Bout. And therefore to rolle boon, you must make them Bearches. which Columella would, thould be made foure-fquare : but it is better to have them round, fo that they be not to fmothe for them to take hold by. Let the Bearches reach from one fide of the wall to the other, fo as they Rand from the Flore a fote in beight, and two fote in diffance one from the other : and thus have you the fathion of your Benne Boufe. The Court where they goe, must be cleane from bung and burtinesse, not has uing water in it, lauing in one place, and that must be berie fapze and cleane : for if it be publle, or burtie, it breebeth (as A favo befoze) the Bippe. To keepe their mater cleane, von may baue fayze Carthen oz Stone Wellels, oz Troughs of wob. couered on the toppe, in the which, there must be fenerall holes, lo bigge, as the bear of the Fowle may eafilie enter: for if you thould not keepe them thus covered, the Boultrie would in their Drinking befile and poplon it with their bung. Their meate must be given them betimes in the morning for straying abroad, and a little before night, that they may come the timelier to their reft. Those that be in the Cope, muft (as Columella faith) be fende theile in the day: the others must be bled to an acquainted borce, that they may come at the calling. The number muft bee well marken : for they fone Deceive their keeper. Beffoe, pon must have round about by the mailes, god plentie of out, where, in they may bathe and propne themselues : for as the Swine De. lighteth to wallow in burt, fo both this kinde to bathe and tume ble in the duft. And this is (3 thinke) almost all that is to be faid of Bullein.

MELLISSEVS. Dea, but wee must heare something also touching the other sorts of Fowle, that are kept about the house, which perapuenture Chenoboscus can instruct us of.

CHENOBOSCVS. And if you will needes have me, I will not refuse to thew you somewhat also of my feathered cattell.

MELLISSEVS. 3 prap pou doe fo.

Of Geefe.

CHENOBOSCVS. Amongst the fow'e that we kepe a. bout our houses in the Countrer, the second place of right is due to the Owfe and the Ducke, which are of the number of those that they call Amphibia, because they live as well byon the land, as the water. And because the keeping of Bele requires no great labour, it is a thing not bnmæte for the Busbandman, for that (if be have place commodicus for it) it is bone without any charges, and vielecth god advantage both with their baode and feathers : for belide the profit of their Eggs, you may twife in the perc, at the Spring, and the fall of the leafe pull them. Poscouer, they are a very good ofth for the Table : yea, being moze watchfull then the Dogges, they give warning when they flepe. And therefore they were with the Romanes had in great honour, because they with their gaggling bewrayed the enemie, that otherwise in the night time had taken the Towne. Plinicwriteth of a Bole that would never be from the Philosopher Lacydes. Pour chople muft be of thole that be of the faireft kinde: Varro liketh beft the white ones , which colour was most effees med in the olde time, as appeareth by the prefents that were gis uen: the fame Varro accounteth the grap for a wilde kinde. They are kept in Barthes, Fennes, Lakes, and Dozifh Commons : for to Come ground, Meddomes, and Baltures,it is a bern hurt. full Fowle: the biteth whatforuer young Spring the may reach. and what the once bath bitten, both neuer lightly profper againe: belides, the frencheth the ground with her bnyzofitable, oz rather moff hurtfull bunging : wherefore (as 3 faid) it is belt to bere them in Fennes, Lakes, and Warthes. If you have ftoze of fuch ground, you shall doe well to keeve them; for you cannot well kiepe them without god fore of water and pafture. The Bole delighteth in fuch meat as is naturally moilt & cold, and Counneth naturally fuch things as are hurtfull for her, as the leafe of the Bap, and (as Alianus waiteth) the Oleander: the beft and metelt time for them to breede in, is from the Balends of Warch, to the tenth of June. They tread most commonly in the water, while they fluin in the Rivers, or fith-ponds, Columella mould have

1

la

fe

in

Da

th

DE

don keine for enery Banber, theis Biele, thinking by reafon of their bnivelbinette, this number to luffice: within your Court. you muft make them for their better fafetie, feuerall, and ferret vennes, in fumbay parts thereof, where they may fit and bacebe. Some would have the Oofc-rome framed in fuch order, as every Dole may bane a place to her felfe : which, if any man thinke to troublefome, be may make one fufficient wipe rome to ferue them all. The places where they thall lay, muft be bie, andmell frames with fram, or luch loft matter, and well befendes from Mermine. The Oole mult not be luffered to lay out of ber neft, but when you thall perceive they feeke it, you must grope them, and if they be with Egge, which you hall eafilie feele, then that them by in their netts, which you hall not neede to boe a boue once, or twife: for where the bath once lapo, the will alwaies of her felle læke to be. Thep will lap (as fome hold opinion) theile in the yeare, if they be not fuffered to fit, as it is best you poe not: for their Egges are better to be hatches biber a Benne, then of themfelnes, and will better a great Deale profper. The Egges of Cele, and Swammes, were bled (as Alianus witneffeth) as a most baintie bilb at Bankets, among the Bings and Dainces of the Indies. Ariftotle affirmeth, that the Oofe alwates bleth to fit, and never the Banber, contrarie to the order of many other Fowles, continuing alwaies till the have batched. After the lat laving, von thall fuffer them to fit, and marke enery ones Cages with a fenerall marke, that they may be fet bener their ofons Onle fas it is thought they will never batch aftrangers Cages, ivithout the baue ber owne bnber ber. Df Bole Egges, as of Behennes Egges, pou hall (as 3 fate befoge) neuer fet bnber a Denne aboue fine not buder thee : but buber the Gole you hall let at the leaft feanen, and at the most afterne, you must keepe to lav biber vour Egges, the rotes of Bettles, which they lay preferueth them against the Ainging of Bettles, which otherwise many times killeth the Cosling,if they King them. The Cages will not be hatched if the weather be coine, befoze the thirtieth day, if it be warme, in leffer time : howbeit for the most part, the Cosling is batched the thirtieth Day after the fitting. Some Dee ble to let by the nells Barley frepet in water, og Mault, whereby the Gole shall not be forced to be any while ablent from

## The fourth Booke, ber Egges. Wiben pour Goslings are come faith, pon thall for

the first ten baves febe them with the Bole in the nett. After, luards, when the weather is faire, you may fuffer them to goe a. broad, taking god beer that they be not fringed with Rettles, nez that you let them goe an bungred into the pastures : but to give them after they goe abroad the leanenof Endine, or Lettule thopt, to allwage their bunger : for if you put them an bungred into the field, they fraine and breake their owne necks, with pulling at the tough and Aubborne webes, by reason of the subben farting backe agains of the words. The Costings of Divers bades muft not goe together, no; be fbut bp together, for bar. Fatting of ting one another. Wiben they be foure Moneths old - 02 foints what before, is belt time for fatting them : the poungeft are fas neft, and cafelieft fatted. If you give them ground Pault, and Waheate flowze, you neede give them nothing elfe, fo you let them bane brinke enough, and keepe them from going abroad. The Grakes bid ble to put to two parts of ground Bault, fours parts of Bran, tempring it with water, letting them brinke thrife a day, and at midnight. If you would have their Livers foft and tender, you hall mingle byy Figs, well beaten with water, and making vellets thereof, cram them with it for the space of seanen. teene of twentie baies. The Jewes at this bay, being the [ kilfulleft feeberathat be, doe blea frange opder in the fatting of them, Swapping the Owle in a Linnen Appon, they hang ber by in a barke place, Ropping her eares with Bealon, of fome other thing, that by neither hearing, noz fæing of any thing, the be not forced to fruggle, noz cry : after they gine ber vellets of ground Salt. of Bar,lepfteped in water, thatle a dap, fetting by them water and granell, by which manner of feeting they make them fo fatte, as the Liver many times commeth to be five pound in waight. Wilft 3 was at the Councell of Wormes, there was a Liner of a Bole brought me by a Telu, that waighed foure pound. Plinie is allo a witnelle of the greatneffe of the Livers of fat Dele affire ming, that they will grow after they be out of the body s, being fpzinchled with milke. The commen ozder of fatting with our Countrep people, is to Coutte them by in a darke, and a narrots place, and to let befoze them Barley, oz Bech wheate, gining them water, with a little fand, or granell in their Troughes: and.

a

n

in

ÍS

be

fe

fir

cri

Me

mi

gu

Gecle.

And with this order they have them fat in coureteine bayes. After harvell, they will be fat with the Grotten, or Stubble. They are placked (as I faid before) twile in the years; in the Spring, and in the fall of the leafe. Some ble to clippe them, but then their feathers never grow to well: but if you pull them, you thail have them to come verie layer againe: and this is enough for a Cole.

Ducks and Heales are to be ordered in like manner almoft as Ducks. the Gole lauing that they belight moze in waters and Marithes: and therefore you muft force fome Waters, Lakes, or Boies. for them, whereunto they may eafily goe and fwimme, and dine at their plealure. Columella would have you have a Court for the nonce for them, where no Cattell ble, and nore to the house. round about the which you thall build for them little bandiome Homes, the fate fquare, with prettie bazes to every one of them : iphich when they brede, you hall keepe fbutte. Baro by. pou muft haus either fome Bond, oz Kiner, Wherein (as 4 faib) they may finimme: for without the belve of the water they can as cuill line, as without the land. It is goo also to have neere bute them. forme good Balture, or Debboly, or to fet about the Bonds or Miners, fuch Bearbs as they belt like; as Clauer, Fenegreke, Endine. Lettule, and luch other as they moft belight in, and wherewith their young doe well face : befibe, you muft giue them Dtes, Barley, and other Come in water. Thereis nothing that they more love then Acornes, nor that better fatteth them. They belight wonderfully to be amongit Kebes and Debace, wherein they may lye fale from ravenous birds, but fo. as there grow no great Malked webes, that may hinder their Swimming : for they belight greatly to play themselves in the ingter, and to firine who can flumme fatteft, when the weather is fapre and warme : for as they love fuch places where they may bell pap boon the creatures of the water, fo are they much of fended if they be refframed of their libertie in fmimming. In Winter, when the waters be frozen, you muft ply them fomes times with meate. They belight to make their neffs in fome fes cret Couert, but therein you mult preuent them, and make their nefts in their owne longing, or abroad, well concred and closed with Wiebes : to which neft you muft haue fomeltttle fluce. or gutter, by which you may enery day polyze in water and meate. Their

Their fobemuft be (as I laid) Dtes, Barley, Deale, Panicle, Billet, and Sperie, if you bane any ftoze. They lay great floze of Cages, wherewith as with Onfe Cages, you may well febe pour familie. The Cares of Ducks and Cafe, are kept in like fort as I tolb pou of Bennes Egges : and belide, in 182anne. Wibeate, of Albes. They brebe in the lame lealon that Ocife. and other fowle do about Parch & Appill And therefore where you keepe them you must frame tickes and frames for them to make their nefts withatl. Their Egges muft be luffered to be batched by themfelnes, oz elfe remouce and fet onder fome Ben: for the Ducklings that the Deme batcheth, are thought to be gentler and tamer. You muft take goo beebe, that the Egges which they lay, be not eaten and spopled by Crowes and Pyes, while the Damme is ficking abroad for meate. If lo be you have Rivers and Lakes fo; the purpole, it is beft to let the Dammes bring them by : for loben they be hatched, they will line bery well boon the water with their Dams, without any charge at all : onely take got bebe, that they be befended from Busards, Bites. Crowes, and other like Mermine: but le pou ble them. as they will enery night come bome to the boule : for it is not god to let them be abroad in the night for danger of lofing them. and making them wilbe. Det bath it benefene, that fuch as bane batched alegan, bane afterinards come home, and brought with them a great number at their taples. Wilhen 3 was Ambal fabour in England, it was told me by men of god crebite, that there was in Scotland niers to the Sea certaine trees, that viere ly brought fouth a fruit, that falling into the Dea, became a kinde of wilde Ducks, wrather Barnacles, which though it femed frange to me, pet fomb 3 Ariforica intrelle of the like, who writeth, that the Miner fly panus in Scythia, bringeth farth trees, whose leaves being somewhat larger then Banke leaves, where, of commeth a kinde of foure forteb Byzbes.

Peacocks.

But now to Peacocks, which Birds, being more for pleasure then profit, are meter to be kept of Roble-men, then of page Bushands of the Countrey, though Varro writeth, that M. Aufidius Lurco, who first began the satting of this Fowle, made percely of his Peacocks source hundred pound, whose example numbers sollewing, the price of Peacocks grew to be great, so much

tring

much, as their Egges were fold for halfe a crowne a piece, the Beacocks themfelues, at foure Robles a piece. The Belbis bery and and belicate, miete for Roble-mens Cables and will be long kept without corrupting, the Egges alfo be bery pleafant. and and to be eaten. Hortentius they lay, was the first that ener killed Deacocke for the Table in Kome, as a new bith at the Briefts feaft. To this Byzo, is alcribed both bederffanding. and glozy : for being praifeb, he fets by Graight bis taile, and (as Plinic eloquently beferibes it)chiefely against the Summe, where. by the beautie may more be læne. Dis talle falling ouery piere mith the fall of the leafe, be mourneth , and crieveth in corners till bis taile be fprong againe. They gae abroad, as Bennes and Chicking dos inithant a keeper, and get their ofine linings, they be bett kept in little Blands : for thep flie nepther bie , nor farre off. Some thinke it to be a fpitefull and enuious Biro , as the Boofe to be hamefaft , and that he benoureth bis olune bung. because be wonle have no man receine benefit by bim. De lineth (as Ariftoele faith) fine and twentie pieres : he briebeth at thies peeres old, the Cocke having his feathers biners coloured : he batcheth in thirtie baies, as the Coleboth, and laveth thee times ing perc, if the Egges by taken ainay , and fet buter a Benne. Sou muft loue that thole that you fet weer a Denne . be new lain, and that the Benne from the first of the mone, be fet byon nine Egges, fine of the Beacocks, am foure of her owne. The tenth bay after the hath fit, take away the Demes Cress, and put beber the like number of freth Dennes Egges. Thep muft be turnes , and therefore marked boon one fibe. Am le that pou chofe the greatelt Werme , for if the Bome be little , Pou muft take the leffer number of Ogges,as thie Beabens Ogges. and fire Dame Egges. Wiben they be hatchet . von med as vou boe with the Benne , let them alone : the first bay after ingros bring them out, and put them with the Danime into a Den. and fiebs themat the first with Bacisp flower, forinkled with mater, or pappe mate of any other Come, and coleb. A feto bales after give them belive this chopped Lekes and Crubs, 02 freth Cheefe, the Wilhey well wong out : for Wilher is thought to be bery burtfull for the Chickins. After they be a moneth ala, you may let them goe in the field, and follow the Wenne,

tring the Benne with a long line, that the goe not to far abzoon. but that the Chickin may come home in time. After the firt moneth, you may give them Barley and Bread : and after the featienth moneth, you may put them to rouft in the house wich the other, not luffering them to fit bron the ground, but buon Berches for taking of colo. And although when they ware great, they chiefely belight to fit byon the toppes of boules, and be as the Oofe is, which are the beft watchmen, and alfo the beff warning givers in the night time : pet is it beft for you to ble them to fit boon Berches, in boules made purpolely for them. Columella thinkes it not goo to fuffer funday Dennes with their Chicking to feed together, becanfe the Benne after the feth a big. ger then ber olone maketh the lelle account of ber olon Chicking. and many times by that occasion forfaketh them. The Cocke, by the great inft that he bath to treat, breakes a funder the Cages that be binber the Benne, and therefore it is beft to have the Bennes to fit as fecretivas may be: they also ble to beat and chale their owne Chickins, till they fix them creffed byon the bead, taking them till then, to be none of their owne. One Cocke Infliceth for fine Dennes, who by to oft treading, both many times caufe that the Egges neuer come to god. In warme countries they begin to tread in February, when letting by his taile round about him, taking himfelfe for no finall perfon, be beginneth to more and therefore at this time both the Cocke and the Benne are to be cherified with meates for the purpole to increase their luft, as Beanes toften a little by the fire, and ginen them warme enery fine baies in the morning. The quarrellous and traubles fome Cockes, mutt be feuered from thetr fellowes, for burting the weaker, and keping others from treating. The Bennes must be kept fo, as they may lay onely in their houses, and every hav groved for her Egges, and herbely loked to, with foft frain laid buder their Werches : for many times they lay as they fit apon the Berch. The difeales of this Foule, and the remedies. are almost one with the difeates of the boule-Cocke and the Denne (poken of before, that is, the Bippe, and ill Digittion, Their greateff banger is when their Coames come firft ont, for then are they pained as children are in braving of toth.

Discales.

MELLIS

MELLISSEVS. I would faine learne the right opting of Turkie their outlandith Birds, called Ginny-Cocks, and Eurhy-Cocks Cocket

CHENOBOSCVS. This kinde of Woultrie wee have not long has amongst bs : for before the pere of our Lozo 1430.they were not fiene with be,not 3 belieue knowne to the old writers. Some have supposed them to be a kinde of the Birds, called in the old time Melcagrides , because of their bleto th Coames : but thele kindes have no Coames, butonelp wat. tels. Dthers againe reckon them for a binde of Beacockes, because they doe in treading time after the same fort, spread and fet by their tailes, bragging and banting themfelues : bembeit thep nepther refemble thefe in all points. But because this minde of fowle , both for their rareneffe , and allo the greate neffe of their bodie, is at this bay kept in great flockes, it shall not be much amile to fpeake of them : fez in baintineffe and gooneffe of meate, the Bennes may compare with cyther the Onfe, at the Beaben, and the Cocke farre ercell them. Thece. lour of their feathers, is for the mole part white, blacke, or pied iphite and backe, fome bleto and blacke. Their feete are like bnto the Beacockes, their tailefoot , but frzead , and bozne bp. after the Beacockes guile, specially when they tread. The heads and the neckes of them , are naked without feathers , couered with a wrinchled famme, in manner of a Cowle, or a Boode, lobich banging oner their billes, the brain by, or tetfall at their pleafures. The Cocks bath the greater wattels biber bis chinne, and on his breff a taft of haire. The colour of that wrinch led (sinne about his bead ( which bangeth over his bill, and a. bout his necke, all fwelling as it were with little blathers ) he changeth from time to time like the Camalion; total colours of the Kaineboly, fometimes white, fometimes red fometimes blem fometimes vellow, which colours ever altering, the 18tro appeareth as it were a miracle of Bature. The dieting and hees ping of them, is almost all one with the Deacocke, fauing that this Bird can worfe away with coloand wet. It is a Bird wonberfully ginen to bacoing, enery Cocke muft as the Weacocke. have foure or five Dennes with bim : they are more forward in breeding then the Peacocke, beginning epther the first piere, at the farthelt at two years old : they beginne to lay in March.

March, og foner. In hot Countries they lay great numbers of Egges, if they be continually taken from them, and fet buber Demnes, and if lo be you take them not away, they begin to fit at the first : for they be of all others most given to sitting, and fo much, that if you take away all their egs, they will fit boom a ftone, or many times the bare Beft. You mut therefore re Araine them of this beare, either thaufting a feather through their note (as 3 told you before) or by wetting their bellies with cold mater. Don muft fet binder their Cages as (3 taught you be fore) in the Beacocke : for they have both one time of batching. The keeper muft marke the one fibe of the Egges, and alwaies turne them. fuzinchling them now and then gently with faire was ter, and take bed the Cocke come not at them, for he will breake them as well as the Beacocke : for the Cocke of this kinde, is a froward and mischienous Birb. The Chickens being hatched binder a Denne, may be kept with the Dennes Chickens, oz elfe very well alone with the Benne, growing fafter a great beals then the Beachicke. Pouthall feed them in like fort as pou bos the Beacocke, as other Boultrie : for they will cate any thing, and belight in Bralle , Wiebes , Granell, and Sand. And bee canfe they cannot away with cold, not wet, you must keeps them in Winter , in the warmest and wiest places you have. The Bearches whereon they ble to fit, muft not bee bigh, but an epottos tenne foot from the ground, neither be they able to file any great height, and therefore must be bolpen with Lathers, at Reppes. The greatest difeale that they are lubise buto, is the Bippe . and the Squecke, which must be holpen in like fort as the Dennes , and the Egges kept after the fame manner. 34 fome places they ble to make Capons of them when they be roung, which are ferned as a daintie bilb to the Table, as was much bled in the boule of that godly and bertuous Semprome. the Labie Hales of Kent, who was first the wife of Sir Water Mauntill, of Northamptonshire, a leoman in lehom all pertues of Gentle- and bounties in her life time flozifbeb.

Lady Hales, & mirrour yromen.

MELLISSEVS. I well remember that Laby, and have heard ber bighly commended of fuch as in her life time beft knelo her for a number of gracious and godly gifts that were in her as her freciall lone and delight in God, and in his feruice, her helpes

b

I

h

Ú

ti

a

of

m

30

Ĉe

to

in

CDI

fee

fin

5

full hand and comfost to such as were pose, and districted, as well in relicuing them with meate and money, as with healing diseases, and curing a number of loathsome, and almost incurable vicers, and wounds, her milde and sweete disposition, her great humilitie and carelesnesse of the vaine world, and other such vertues, I would to Christ that all other Gentlewomen, that professe Christ outwardly were as well given to follow him in deed, as the was unfainedly.

CHENOBOSCVS. She was a very Phenix and Parragon of all the Gentlewomen that ever I knew, neither am I fure I chall ever see the like: but shee happily resteth with him, whom in her life time she so earnestly served. If you be not weary, I will returne to my Fowle, and shew you the best order so, keeping and maintaining of Pigeons.

PILLARIVS. 3 thinks both MELLESSEVS, and PISCINARIVS would gladly hears you tell be fomething

of this, as I my felfe most willingly also would.

CHENOBOSCYS Though pou PVILARIVS are better able to fpeake hereof then 3 am, pet because of mo profession , 3 will not refuse to take it bpon mee. Wihatspenet he be, that gives himfelfe to the trade of Bufbandep, it behooneth specially to have a care for breeding of Wigeons, as well for Pigeons. the arcat commoditie they yeld to the Bitchin, as for the profit and perely reuencive that they walt ( if there be good flore of Come fields ) in the Parket. Vario writeth, that in his time a pape of Digeons were fold for 1000, H.S. And that Lucius Axius, a lanight of Rome , befoze the civill warres betwirt Cafar and Pompey, fold his Digeons at tenne vound the pavze: fo much was that time given to wantonnesse, and gluttony, vea. at this day in our time , bath beene feene given for a pape of Digeons tenne pound flemith. And therefore the Douchous fes are commonly built with great coft, and beautie, in the toppes of turrets and boules, from whence by narrow grated inindoines they file abroad to their feeding Digeons ( if the countrep be for them ) are fed and maintained with little coft. feeding themselues all the peere long with such meate as they finde abroad, ercept at fuch time as the ground is conered with Snow, when as you must of necessitie belpe them with a little meate.

meat. There is two forts of them, one wilde kinde, that is brought by in Done-houses and of colour, evther blewith, white. freckled, or bunne: howbeit, the white is not god to be kent, becaufe they be fonelt beffroved with bermine. In Italy there are of this fort, as bigge againe as ours, and are now common in Flaunders. Another fort is more familiar and tame, and foince thing moze large of bodie, with rough fixte, and commonly of colour white, and fometime fuckled and vellowith : this kinde is commonly kept in Cities and Townes , where the others cannot be kept, and is fed with meat at home, t because they are ever in danger of bermine, and rauening Birds , they are Will kept within bozes, and alwaies feb at home. This kinde the common people call tame Bigcons, or moneth Bigeons, because they brede enerymoneth, faue in the dead of Wainter. Both thefe forts are inonderous fruitfull, breding commonly eight times a pere (if the kinde be god) pea fometimes tenne, and eleuen times : foz in Cappt (as Ariftotle telleth) ther bache all the Winter long. And though Dennes are moze fruitfull in laying of Egges, pet Bigeons are moje profitable by often bringing forth poung : and therefore you must prouibe you fuch bieders, whose bodies be great and faire, not to old, not to pound, of a good and perfed colour and a fruitfull kinde. It be houeth him that will begin a Doue-houle, not to begin with the young and little ones, but with the brebers, and to buy fo may my Cockes, as be both Dennes, and to keepe them if he care matched together of one Belt: for if they be fo matched, they will brebe a great beale better. They bring forth commonly a Locke and a Benne together (as Ariftotle waiteth) and our er pericuce thewethit. In March they begin to breede, if the wear ther be warme, befoze. There is no Bird fruitfuller then the Digeon, and in fortie baies the conceiveth, layeth, and fitteth, and brings by, and that for the most part all the piere, ercept (as I hanelaid befoze ) in Winter. She layeth two @gges, and when thee hath layed the first, which is a Cocke, the next the layeth, which is a Denne, the third never lightly commeth to goo. Both the kindes boe alwaies lit, the Cocke in the bay the Denne in the night, they hatch in theentie bales, thep lay after fine treadings. In Summer they Cometimes being forth in two moneths

Ĺ

ſ

8

n

t

ti

fi

b

tl

p

Œ

b

a

ct

0

n

th

th

fu

moneths there paire : For byon the nineteenth bay they batch, and prefently conceine againe. And therefore you thall often finde among the pong Wigeons, Cares force readie to hatch, and fome flying : if there be no Cockes, the Dennes will tread one another, but the Egges neuer come to goo , but are winde Egges : Ariftotle and Theodorus calleth them water Egges, whereof there never commeth any thing, and because the young oncs will breede at fine moneths old, we fuffer the firtt flight to flie, to increale the bzede : as being batched in Parch, will bracos againe in July or August. Those that we means to take for the Bitchin, or the Warket, are belt to be bratone at the late ter time of the pere, when they are worft able to befend them. felues from the cold, and from Bussards, and Crowes: the beft for brod among all Folvies, is the Barch brode. They that meane to fat Digeons to fell them the bearer , boe feuer them when they be newly feathered, and feece them with chawed white Bread twile a day in Winter, and thrife in Summer: and fuch as be now hard pend, they leave in the Beff, plucking the feathers of their wings, and breaking their legs, that they remove not from their places, gining the dammes good plenty of meate, that they may better feede themselves, and their young. Some ( as Gellius writeth ) boe foftly the their legs, for if they thould breake them, they thinke the paine would keepe them from fatting : but this tring both little good, for while they Aruggle to get themselves loose, the labour will keepe them from being fat : but their legs being broken, the paine will not remaine as bone two daies, or three at the bttermoft, and will keepe them that they thall never tray from their places. Some bie onely to platon them, but to fal they many times out, and become a prey to Mermine: and therefore it is good to bring them to the Bitchin. before they be full ripe. The bufruitfull and naughtie colonted, and the otherwise faultie, ought chiefely to be fatted, and must be grammed in fuch fort, as you cramme Capons. Doue-boufes, or places for Digrons, to builde in, are made after diners manners : for the tame Pigeons, and fuch as are fed at home, they make in the highest parts of their Boules lying toward the South , certaine hollow Roomes , and Celles for them, fuch as PVLL ARIVS hath described of his Bullein : and if

the place boe not to ferue, brining in certaine Dinnes into the wall, they lay byon them frames of boads, with partitions in them, or earthen pots to breed in, letting certaine Lebacs runne from hole to hole, that they may the better come to their Bells. and walke by and bowne in the Sunne. But the boules for the other toffber kinde, becanfe they containe great numbers, are built after a more hanfomer order, although bnder the Cues of boules, and in freples of Churches , you thall have thoulands bacoing. Varro appoints the Douehoule to be built in this fort: a Towate abiogning to the house, and well lofted and feeled aboue with one little boze in it, and foure windowes, answering the foure quarters of the Beanen, which windowes must be well grated, fo as they may give light enough, and keepe out bermine. All the walles within must be faire white limed, for with this co lour is the Bigeon wonderfully belighted : befites it muft be well pargetted and plaiftred without, specially about the winbolocs, fo as neither Boule, Watell, noz other Mermine may en ter : the windowes must be so placed, as they may let in the Sunne all the Wainter, hauing a hole of fufficient inideneffe o ner against them, well netted and tunnelled, in such sozt as the Bigcons may eafily fie out and in at, and vet not fuffer any bates full Bird to enter : for the Digeon taketh great belight in flying now and then abroad, where after the bath recreated her felfe, the commeth with top to her neft againe: as on the other fide the mourneth, if the bereftraines of her liberty. Kound about the wals within you must have little round beles, from the top to the boti tome, wherein they may bred: Varro would have them three hands fulsin length, and ledged from bole to bole for them to walke boon. Some thinke it beft to make pour holes of Lome, oz Lime and not of Bricke and Stone, as may bo, because of the warmth. There be fome that builde their Douehoufes byon villers in the miot of fome Bond, orgreat water, both because they belight in water, and because they wil have them late from bermine. The meat that they most delight in, is Tares, wilde Fetch, Weale, Wilheat, Willet : where thefe be not, you may gine them Spery, Specially in Winter Rapeled, and Cockle : for by gathering and pecking by thefe little febs, they get themfelues a heat in cold weather. When you give them meat, you must throw it hard by the

t

P

in

m

De

ín

bp

the walles: for that part is commonly cleaned from bung. And though Varro bibs pon to fweepe and make cleans pour Douce houses continually, a that the bung is god and profitable for the Rela pet feeing this kinds of fowle both belight in clares furinks led with their owne tung, you hall not neede to be carefull in elenting of it. Loke wellthat they be not fraid, or offquieted with Bannes, or notic of people, or other like, fpecially when they fit: if you have occation to goe into the houle, fee that you one it as bout none time, tohen they be anzond a feeding, and be fure to knocke wel befoze you come in. Some fap, that it will caufe them to love the house, and allere others to come thither, if you formitle them with Commin before they goe to fæding, or perfume the house with Sage, and frankensence. Some haue another erpe. rience for this purpole, and that is pottheros beaten fmall and fearced, mingled with the hearbe Coaft, and good old Wline, and giuen bito them. Dthers take Barly flotoge, fooden with daie Figs, and a part of Hony. Cardan teacheth this, as the beff for this purpole, of Barly or Milet, of Commin, of Coaft, of Agnus Ca-Aus, of Donn, of old Lome, oz Poster, of god Buf lade boilethem all together, and make a frome of them to be fet in the middeff of a houfe. Tragus teacheth to take the retes of the Ehiftell, and to both them with the pickle of Bearings. Confiantme out of Didymus, writeth of viners other things for this purpofe, which who fo will, may trie. Loke well that they be not beftroped by the Dawise, or Engard : the Baloke is a fpeciall enemie to this Bird, whale taking, Vario teacheth you in this manner : to lay a Dixeon boon the ground, and to fiche, benbing clofely over her, a courte of Line roos. There is a linee of Batohe, that natue rally is terrible to other Bamkes, and prefeeneth the Pigeon: the common people call it Caffreil. Colomella affirmeth, that if pon take the rount Caffrels, and preferne them enery one in ear. then beffeis well conered and plattered all over , and hang them in the corners of the Done honfe,it makes the pigeon haue fich a loue to the house, as they will never forfake it. They have many other aductaries, Crowes, Dalves, and Dives, which all beffron the Direons, specially when they breed. I found of late in mine owne Doue houle,on Dwie fitting folemnip in the Acft byon ber Egges in the middelt of all the Digeons, and hard by the

£

g

0

the house of an old hollow trae, I some pieces of young Digsons, that the Dwles had brought to seve their young with: and though the Dwle seme to be greater then the Digson, by reason of the thicknesse of her seathers, pet will they criepe in at as little a place as the Pigeon will: so small and little is their bodies, though they be bombased with Feathers. Againe, Waseles, Stotes, such like, Palladius would have you hedge the Done-house about with sharpe prickly branches bod of leaurs, as Gorle, Bryers, and such like, as they bare not passe through so, pricking. Dydimus and others, do bid you hang great branches of Ane all about the house, specially at the entrance of the doze, or to put wilde Rue boder their wings, or to sprinckle them with Rue: so, this hearbe (as they say) hath a special spreed against such hurtfull vermine. Some say, that if a Welstes head be hanged in the Done-house, it will brive away all hurtfull vermine.

MELLISSEVS. Whe have heard enough of Higeons, 3 pray you proceed with fuch other 15 iros as you keepe in the coun-

trey. Bope you any felants bere?

Felants.

CHENOBOSCUS. This kinde of Birds (though they be berie feldome kept among the countrey people ) yet of mamy curious and fine fellowes, for their rarenelle and baintineffe, they are brought by and kept. And because they benefit the keeper, and profit the Bulband, ( if the fople and countrey be for them) the old waiters have placed the keping of them, with. in the compatte of bulbandite. Palladius teacheth, that you muft pronide fuch as be poung and luftie, that were of the last peres bringing forth: for the old ones be neuer fruitfull. One Cocks is lufficient for two Dennes : they brebe once a pere, and lay to the number of twentie Egges, beginning in Apzill, and fome where in March, but they are better to be brought by binder a Denne : fo as you let bober one Benne fifteene @gges, obfer. ming the time of the Mone, and the number of the baies, as 3 told you befoze of the Benne. The thirtieth bay they come forth : for the first fiftene baies you must foo them with Barly, floure tenderly foo , and coled , byon which you muft fpzinckle a little Mine. After you thall gine them Wiheate, Grathop. pers and Antes Egges : let them not come nece the Water for catching the Dippe, inhich if they chance to have, you shall rubbe

m

fa;

rnbbe their billes with Garlicke, Kamped together with Aarre. They are fatted in thirtie bayes, with Wheat-floure, or Barly-floure made in Pellets, the Pellets must bee sprinckled a little with ople, and so put into their throates; you must take hede you put it not boder their tongues, for you doe, you bill them: neither must you give them any meate till you perceive the first be directed.

PVLLARIVS. What lay you to Turtle Doues, thefe

are also brought by and kept in some Countries.

CHENEBOS. Columcila affirmeth, that Turtles will nee Turtles.

mer lay, noz bring forth in the home, nor Partridges: and there,
fore they bled to take them wilde when they were ful ripe, and to
fiede and fat them in little darke romes like Pigeons holes: the
olve ones be not so good, as neither the Pigeon is. In Whinter
you thall hardly have them fat, in Sommer they will fat of themselves, so they may have plenty of Wheat and Torne: the water must be very cleare and fresh that you give them. They hold
opinion, that the Turtle after he hath lost his mate, continueth
ever after solitary. But because there is greater store of Thrushes
thes and Blackbirds, we care the lesse so kepting of Turtles.

Though Thrushes and Blackebirds bee kept in divers places: Thrushes
yet as Plinie saith, there is in no place greater companie, then is and Blacktaken in the Winter time in Germany: that they were bled sot birds
great dainties, appeares by Horace:

No daintier dish then is the thrush,

Nor sweeter then the Trype.

They are commonly decled whole, and not dealwne, for their inward partes may well be eaten; to they be new: their Trops are commonly full of Juniper Berries: Pafter Varro writeth, that Thurbes were ween in his time at twelve pence a piece. Where they vic to keepe them, they also put as many as they take wilde among the others that they brought up before, by whole company and fellowhip they passe away the forrow of their prisonment, and fall to their fæding: for you must alwayes have olde fellowes for they purpose, by whose example they may tearne both to eate a drinke. They must have warme houles, as your Pigeons have, crossed through with small Bearches: for after they have slowen about, or have sed, they desire to rest.

The Berches muft be no higher then a mans beight, fo as von may easily reach them standing byon your feete. The meate muft be caft in fuch places of the boule, as lye not bnder the Bear. ches, for filing of it. Columella and Palladius write, that bnripe figges beaten and mingled with Wheate-flowe mul be given them , that they may eate thereof their filics. Aristotle maketh many kindes of them, among which hee ale fo putteth the Colmons , that feebe byon Graves. Dur Thulbes doe feede for the most part bpon Juniper berries. which their Croppes being opened (as 3 faid) doe thew. They ble also in many places to heepe Duailes , which is rather a Bird of the Carth , then of the Apze ( as Plinie faith ) but be caufe they feede byon Cloboz, and benemous feedes, and belide are bered with the falling ficknette, many doe meruaile ( as Athen zus waiteth ) why they be fo greatly chamed. They fay their young muft be febbe with Antes , and Emets Egges, as the Partriege. It is thought , that he flieth ouer into other Countries in the Minter time, as the Crane, and the Stocke both, following for the quite their oldeft Qualle, called the mos ther Quaile.

Pon baue gotten one noble and goodly PVLLARIVS. fowle, that is bled to be brought by in the hulbandmans Bonds,

Lakes, and Rivers, I means the Swanne.

The Swanne.

Quailes.

CHENOBOSCVS. Dou fap true: fcz this Bird is com. monly brought by in the Low-Countries, and kept in great numbers in Lincolne-fhire, a Countrey replenished with Gentlemen of good houses, and good house-keepers. And Athenaus alledging the authoritie of Ariftotle, accounteth this Fowle to be very fruitfull, and of great fromacke, fo much, as it is thought they dare give battaile to the Cagle. They are beed and kept (as you well fap) in Lakes , Kivers , and fifth-ponds, without any charge at all, and one great good in the Rivers by plucking up the weds, and other annopances: for the excellency of his dolune, and daintinelle of his fleth, he is greatly elias med. There is one excellent kinde of them, that taketh bis name of the good watch that hee keepeth, and is alwaies che rifhed and kept in the Ditch of Cities, and fortrelles, for his great faithfulnelle in giuing warning. They be kept almoft in like

ike manner as Céle are, but that they vie to fit longer, fitting a whole moneth of there abouts: they bring forth selbome aboue eight, and so many did my Swannes bring me, and sometime five. They make their Pelis hard by the water, of Sedges, wieds, and like ftuste: their young ones they carry straight into the riners. If the Lakes and Streames be storen in Minter, you must house them. This Bird is counted among such as live longest, fore-shewing her owne beath, as Plato and Martial witnesse, with a sweet and lamentable song. Thus much concerning my prosession I have told, I trust you that be my friends, will take it in good part, and now Piscinal Arivs I resigne my place to you, to whose turne it is come.

Piscinarivs. It falleth out in god order, that from Of Fish-

talking of Winter Fowles we thould come to entreat of fith, ponds. ponds, and fift : although I boe means to entreat largelier both of keeping and taking of Filhes in my Halienticks, but because the hulbands houle, both for watering of cattell, and other bles, cannot be without Bonds, and Lakes, and that every boule is not fo featen, as it bath earable ground about it, it is lawful for the bulband to make his belt aduantage of his Bonds, and Waters. The Poble-men and Centle-men of Rome, were wont to build about their Boules faire fift ponds , and many times la. tilfied herein their pleafure, with erceding coft and erpences, as M. Varro writeth of the lumptuous and coffly filh-ponds of Hortenfius, Hircius, and Lucullus, M. Cato, when he had the wardhip of Lucullus, made foure hundred pound of the fifthin his Dono. The same Varro maketh mention of two forts of Fift-ponds, the one of flocte water, the other of falt, the one amongit the common people, where the Springs fæde them, and of great profit, the other nere to the Sea, where Neptune both vield them both flore of Water and filh : for cramples. may ferue the fith-ponds of Hortenfius, which rather pleafed the eye, then the Burfe. The belt making of Bones , is eye ther by the Sea, as Lucullus, who to let in the Sea into his Bonds, made a pastage through the middest of a great hill, where by he thought himselfe as great a Lozd of fish, as Neptune him felfe : oz elle to have them from fome great ffreame oz Kiver, that may bring in both Water and fith, which by flond or Slufe,

Dlufe, may let in alwaies freth water, not luffering the old to corrupt, but alway refrething it, and bringing more fith. The mert in gooneffe, are thefe that are fed with pipes og fecret pale fages bnoer the ground, and may be let out againe by Slufes, which Slufes muft fo be made, as when you lift, you may let the water into your Deadowes, to make them moze fruitfull, as is to be feene in the Countries of the Switzers, and Heluctians, and in many other places. And therefore the waters ( as 3 faid ) must be well inclosed with god Bayes, Bankes, and Walles, that they may be able to abide the rage of the flods, and the water. The worft and laft kinde, is fuch as are made in Lakes, Canding Doles, or raine waters. Thefe kinde of Donds, though they be the work, by reason of their bucleane finking and corrupt water, yet where there is no better, are to be made account of : for though they be not the wholefomelt for keping of filh , pet they vield fome commoditie , and are moft necessary about the house, eyther for watering of Cattell , kie. ping of Biele and Duckes, and walbing, and other like bles: but if to be you can make them epther by the Sca. 02 niere fome great Kiver, fo as the water may be let in and out at your pleas fure : and whenfoener you open the Slufes, to let out the was ter. Be fure that you have them well grated, that the filb can by no meanes paffe through, and let the paffage, if the place will fuffer it, be made on enery fide of the pond: for the old water will beft boid, whenfoeuer the ftreame bends, if the currant lye a gainft it. Thele Blufes or Baffages, you muft make at the bottome of the Bonds , if the place will fo ferue , that laying your leuell with the bottome of the Bond, you may bifcerne the Sea, or Kiner, to lye feauen fote higher : for this Columella thinkes. will be a fufficient levell for your Pond, and water enough for pour fifh. Bowbeit, there is no boubt, the bieper the water comes from the Sea, the cooler it is, wherein the fiftes moft belight. And if fo be the place where you meane to make pour Dono lye leuell with the baim of the Sea,og the River, you mut Diggeit nine fote bope, and lay your Currant within two fote of the toppe, and fo order it as the water come in abundantly : for the old water lying bnoer the levell of the Sea, will not out againe, except a greater rage come in ; but for the Bond that is fubicet:

fubled to the flond and ebbe , it is enough if it be but tipe fote beve. In the bankes and fees of thele Bonds, you muft have Bulbes and Treche-holes for the fift to hive them in from the heat of the Soume : befides, old hollow trees, and rotes of trees are pleafant and belightfull harbours for fith. And if you can bandlomely conuey them, it is beft to bring from the Sea, little Rockes, with the Wices and all byon them , and to place them in the middelt of your Bonds, and to make a poung bea of them, that the Fithmap Cearfely know of their imprisonment. About Turman in France, and in other places , pou fhall finde in Loughes and Kayne-water, even in the Wilbernelle and Beathes, great abundance of fith. In biners places of the low Countries, where they have their Bonds fed with the Kiner, which they may that out at their pleasure, they so ozder them, as they be eyther environed, or benided with beeper ditches, wherein the fill both live in the Summer time: and the reft of the ground betwirt the ditches, the water being boided and kept out by Sinfes and Bankes, is folied with Summer Come, and after Baruelt, the water let in againe, whereby the ground bes ing wonderoully enriched, both weld great Croppes of Barly and Summer come, and (as the Boet faith) for the land, fo may be fait for the water, Not every ground for every feed but regard muft be bad, what for euerp one is met. The Komanes kepe in their Bonds Lampzies, Dyfters, Luces, Bullets, Lampozns, Burltheodes, and all other filhbelides, that are bled to be kept in frelh waters. Bonds foz Dyfters , were firt beuifed by Sergius Orata, at the Barnes, about the time of L. Craffus the De ratoz, befoze the Battaile of Marlie, not fo much foz belicalie, as for the commoditie and gaine. Cockles, and Buffles , were kept in Bones by Fuluius Hirpenus. Bozeouer , biners Filbes Delight in diners places. The best Wikes and Luces were thought to be in the Miner of Tyber , betwirt the two bringes : the Murbotes, at Rauenna : the Lampapes in Cycill : fo Miners, Lakes, Booles, and Seas, in fome places baue better fifb,then But to returne to my Filh-ponds from whence I came, neyther may all forts of Filhes be kept in enery one, for fome forts are granellers, belighting onely in Granelly, to. ny, and Sandy waters, as Meanowes, Ondgins, Bulheads, Ruffes.

Ruffes, Tronts, Derches, Lampzons, Creniffes, Barbils, and Cheuins. Dthers belight againe in Bubbie places, feking cuer to lie bio in the Dud , as the Tench, the Cile, the Breame. the Carpe, and fuch others. Some againe belight in both, as the Dike, the Luce, the Carpe, the Breame, the Bleake, and the Roach. The Grauelly filbes, Specially the Benowes, are ingendeed of Sheepes bung, laid in fmall Bafkets in the bottome of a Branelly Riner. The Luce, or Wike, groweth ( as like. wife ooth the Carpe ) to be great in a thoat time , as in thee or foure peres, and therefore in fuch Ponts as have neyther the Sea, noz Riner comming to them, we ble enery fourth, oz third perc, to draw the old , and to fore them with young. And in thefe parts we chiefely fore them with Carpe, hauing small Ponds and Stewes for the purpole to kepe them in , fo as you may come by them at your pleasure. Thus much I thought goo to beclare buto you touching my profession, let be now fee what pour (MELLISSEVS) can lay for pour Box, and pour Dony.

Becs.

MELLISSEVS. Because 3 will not have our discourse of bulbander deprived and marmed of fuch a profitable member. tobole ble may in all places, be they never fo befert, or barren. be had, I thinke it god as a conclution to the whole, to thew vou for my part, the manner of keeping and ordering of 15 es: for the good bulband by cherifing of them, vicketh out many times a good peece of his living, pea, the pore foule of the Countrey that bath no ground to occupie, may raile hereof and that without charges a great commoditie. Merula reports, that Varro had perely for the Kent of his Bes, a thousand gallons of Bony: and that in a house in Spaine, having not paffing one Acre of ground to it, bath verely bene made of the Bes, foure froze pounds worth of Ware and Bony. This little porecreas ture the 15 ie, doth not onely with her labour pold buto be her delicate and most healthy Dony, but also with the good ep ample of their painefull biligence and trauaile, encourageth man to labour and take paines according to his calling: in fuch fort. as it femeth the Almightie and moft excellent Baieltic, bath of all other frecially created this little poore creature, for the benefit and commoditie of man : by whom belides the com-

Industrie of Bees.

moditie

th

to

13

w

On

modifie of the Boncy and Ware that they make, we might take both crample to fpend our life in bertuous and commerciable erercifes, and alfo to bonour and reverence the monderfull bountie and awdnesse of the most gracious Lozd theined towards be, in the creation of this Small and profitable Caorne. They are continually buffed in labouring, they thew great cunning and worke, manship in their tranailes : they have alwaics among t them the lively Image of a perfect Common-wealth they peel obedience Bees their to their Brince, not liking the government of funday heads, but Commonloue to be ruled by one : cach one of them laboureth and trauap, weales. leth in his charge, in fo much, as the wifelt Bouernours and Conncellers in Common weales, baue taken the Bes for their Datterne in choling of Princes, diffributing of Offices, remare bing of bertues, and punifping malefactors, Varro bib althaics call them the Birds of the Bufcs : and Virgill with wonderfull The Birds colours both eloquently fet forth the Bes, their Common weale, of the Balaces, Buildings, Citics, Lawes, Manners, Warres, and Mules. Travailes, Supposing them to be partakers of reason, and that they have fome inftind from aboue, in that they fo neere refemble the mindes of men, yea, many times ercell them, touching their obediente to their Brince.

Not Ægypt in his prime, nor Lydia large and wide,
Ne yet the Parthian people great, nor all the Medes beside,
Doe so their King obay, who being safe and well,
Their mindes are all together one, he onely beares the bell.
On him they cast their eyes, and garde him day and night,
And oft they beare him on their backs, in his defence they sight:
But if he chance to dye, then all is dasht and done:
Their Combs asunder downe they teare, and all to ruine runne.

If the Ling be taken, the whole Swarme is had: if he begone, they disperse themselves abroad, sor they cannot live without a Ling, hating as well the headlesse government, as the subjection to many heads. If the King, or (as we traume him) the Paisser Bie die, the whole swarme droupeth, and mournath, they straight waies cease from gathering of Honey, they stirre not abroad, but onely with a heavy and sorrowfull humming, they swarme and cluster

Virgill.

clufter together about his bodie. The nature furely of this pope creature is greatly to be wonded at.

Virgil

They onely of their broode have a common care, And neighbour-like their boufes nearely fland: And ruled are by Lawes that none do spare, Alone they know their home and native land, And mindfull of the stormy Winter neere, In Summer get to live by all the yeere.

Their Princes pallace is samptuously built, in some severall part of their Princes, being mounted about the rest, which if you happen to broose, you destroy the brood. They live all as it were in a Campe, and duely keepe their watch and ward, working together, and oftentimes sending abroad their Colonies, they are warned at their Captaines appointment, as it were with the sound of a Coumpet, by which they know both their times of warres, and truce: they ward all the day time at their gates in warlike manner, and have great silence in the night, till one of them in the morning humming out the discharge of the watch: they get them abroad to their businesse, as the Poet hath elequently expressed.

Virgil.

Together all they quietly doe lie.
Together all they toyle with equall might:
And in the morning forth together flie.
And home as fast they come agains at night.
Where as they lay their weary lims to rest,
And trim their wings, and set their legs in frame:
Till enery one himselfe hath throughly drest,
Then singing at their doores a while they game.
Till one gives warning for to go to bed,
Then downe they lay to rest their sleepie head,

For when the liepie time of the night comes in, they make lette and lette noise, till one of them goeth about with the like sound that he gave in the morning, setting as it were the watch, and gluing them warning to go to rest: at which time they all sudbenly benly hold their peace. In the morning (as I faid) at the discharge of the watch, they roame firaight to the gates, but five not abroad, except they see the weather will be faire: whereof by nature they have perfect understanding.

Nor from the Hiues, if like it be to raine,
They farre doe stray, nor trust will they the skie
If that the South-wind blow, but still remaine
At home, or busied be with waters nie.
Short slights they make, and when such stormes they see,
They beare about the smallest stones they finde:
And as the Boates in floods that balast bee,
So with the same they counterpose the winde.

Bces foreshewing of stormes.

Being loved, they flie with the winde : if any tempeft fundenly arife, they counterpoile themfelnes with little Rones, flying in the winde as neare the ground as may be: their labour, both at home, and abroad, is certainly appointed. They labour at the first within the compatte of thickcore paces about the Dine, and when the flowers there have beene fufficiently wrought , they fend as broad their discouerers to finde out more fore. And when they fall all tegether to their bufinette, fome worke the flowers with their fiete, others carry water with their mouthes, and droppes in their little fices : the young luftie fellowes labour abzoad. the elber at home. Those that goe abroad, bo with their forclegs lade all their Thighes, which nature for the nonce bath made rough : thus being loaded, Legs, Dead, Bache, and all, as much as they may beare, they returne home, where there waiteth come monly thee og foure at the doge to buload them. Withingall this while are fome laying in order , fome building , fome making cleane, and fome making readie their meate : for they feede feuerally, fog feare of beguiling one the other. They frame their boules archivile within the Dines, with two pallages, fo as thepar may enter one way, and goe out another. Their coames that they make are wrought full of holes, which holes (as Varro faith) are their Celles og lodgings, made euery one fire quare, accoze bing to the number of their fet: thefe Celles they bos fil with Donp, filling every one in a day or two. Thefe coames are faffnen

fassined to the opper part of the Hine, and hang little open the sides, not cleaning to the Hine, being now coencred, now round, according to the fashion of the Hine: as both Plinic reporteth, and Adall hereafter shew you, when I speake of the framing of the Combs. The Combs are kept op from falling, with small pillers and proppes below, so built as they may go eround about to repaire them. The three first losts of their Telles beneath, are lest emptic so; feare of the Hine: the oppermost are as full as may be, such as are loytevers and tole vagabonds amongst men, are noted, and punished with death.

Thepunishment of loite-

> Some range for food and plie the fields abroad, Some still at home doe labour busily: And round about with waxe the Hiues doe loade, Which from the gummes they painefully doe trie. The first foundations for the Combes they make, And clammy cleaning Waxe they fasten by : While others of their broode the charge doth take. And fosters up the seede that shall supply. An other fort doth worke the Hony pure, And filles the Celles with licour that you fee: And others are appoynted to the doore, To looke abroad what weather is like to be. Or to vnload fuch as have laboured vvell, Or els to driue the drousie Drone away : Their labour smokes, and all of time doth smell, The Hony sweet that in their Combs they lay.

#### And a little after.

The great doe guide the Hiue,
Make fast the Combes and Pallaces contriue.

CHENO. Of the worthineste, travaile, workemanihip, and god order of this little creature, you have sufficiently spoken, it now remaines that you declare but o be their sundry kindes, their keeping, and their ordering.

MELLISSEVS. Arifotlemaketh many forts and kindes

of

1

¥.

be al

m

lik

ba

tf (

m

of them, lobereof he counteth the fhoat speckled, and well knit to The kinds the belt: and nert to them, the long ones like Wlafpes: the third, of Bees. the kinde that you call the Ehefe, with a very large bodie : the The fourth, the Dzone, being bigger then all the reft, wanting both Theefe. his fting and courage to labour : and therefore they ble to make The at the entrie of their Dines fmall Grates, wherein the Bemay enter, but not the Done. And the fame Arillorle,in the chapter before faith, that there are two kindes of things or Maiffer Bes. the one of a golden colour, which is counted the beft : the other blacke, and moze partie coloured: they be twife as bigge as the other 15 es, the tayles of them as long as one and a halfe of the other, they are called of fome, the Bother of 15 cs, as the chiefe Breeders. bes, because the young of the Doones are bredde without a Bing, but the other Bas neuer. Virgill following herein Ariftotle, both moft comment the little, long, fmothe, and faire Be, The beft and making mention of two forts of kings, he describes the weet lors of fer, whereby he thall doe no harme.

Destroy (saith he) and let the other live,
Whose golden hew doth glister in the eye:
And decked with glittering scales, saire shew doth give,
Of farre more grace, and farre more Maiestie.
With loathsome looke the other doth appeare,
And dragling drawes his tayle with heavie cheare,

The shape of their King.

And as there is two losts of Kings, to is there of the other Biss.

Some Vglie seeme, and some againe doe shine, Bedasht with drop of golden colour fine.

Being mile and gentle: for the Be, the greater he is, the worfe he is, and if he be angrie, and fierce, and round, he is world of all. And because (as I said before) the best are onely to be medled with, sith the god and the bad are a like chargeable, and require like tendance, and speciall hede to be had that you mingle not the bad with the god: for lesse will the encrease of your Honey be, if some of your Swarms be ill matched. You may store your selfe with Best three manner of waies, eyther by buying them, taking

the

What to be confidered in buying of Bces.

the wilde Swarmes, og making them by Arte. Such as you bur. let them be of the kinde and thave that I told you of, and be fore before you buy them, that the Swarmes be whole and great. which you may judge by loking into the Binc, oz if you cannot be fuffered fo to boc, you may quelle it by other tokens : as if fo be you fe great numbers cluftring at the boze of the Dive and if you beare a great bussing and humming within: oz (if they be all at reft) putting your lippes to the mouth of the Dine, and blow, ing therein, you thail easily perceive by their answering found; whether their number be great or no. In buying them, befide, you mult loke whether they be found, oz ficke: the fiancs of their being in health (as hall be heineo loben 3 fpeake of their bilea. fes) is, if their Swarines be great, themfelnes faire, and coloured, and weake luffily. Againe, a token of their not being well : as if they be havrie, loke loathformely, and buffile; except at fuch time as they labour : for then they ware leans and ruffe. with ertreame trauell. Dou muft make your contenure likewift by their age, fuch as are not about a viere olde, loke faire and fmothe, and thine, as if they were Dyled : the old ones are both in fight and feeling ruffe and rugged and by reason of age weinche led: which neverthelette, for cunning in making their Combs, experience, induffrie, and failfulnelle in the weather, boe farrs paffe the others. In any wife fe that you buy them rather from pour nert neighbour, then from a ftrange Countrep, og farre off, for they many times perify by change of ayre, or fhaking in the carriage. And if pon be batuen to carry them farre, take herbe you neyther logge noz tumble them : the best way to carry them is boon a mans thoulders, and that in the night time, fuffering them to reft in the day, and powging in to them fuch frost things as they belight in, and keeping them close. It is better remoning them in the Spring, then in Winter : for they doe not fo well a græ with Winter. If pou carriethem from agod place, to a barraine, they will fraight-wayes bid you farefuell, and forfake their Dincs. Wiben pou have brought them to the place where you meane they hall fand, if it be bey time, yourmust neither or pen them, not place them till it be night, to the end they may af ter the quiet reft of the night, goe cherefully to their worke the nert morning. We fure to marke them well begoes for two os

Transporting of Becs.

The taking of Bets.

thies:

b

A

b

b

f

tı

ti

ft

íf

I

m

Co

T

H

DL

hí

lo

Of

fo

215

this bayes after, whether they goe all out or no : for if they boe, it is a thretobe figne they will away. Sometime, if the place be god, you thall affay to ftoze your felfe with wilde Bes : foz al. though that Bas (as Plinic faith ) cannot be rightly tearmed ei ther wilde, or tame, vet Varro calleth them wilde that breede in wilde places, and tame, fuch as we kepe at home : and affirmeth the manner of keping them to be biners. There is great Moze of the wilde fort in Sarmatia.

PVLLARIVS. They fay, that in Liuonia and Sarmatia, (from whence is brought hither great freze of Ware, and Dony) the Countrey people Boe gather it in great abundance in bollow

tres, and befart places.

MELLISSEVS. The greatest token of Bes and Bones nere, is where they be in great numbers about the waters: fog if you fe the number but fmall, it is a figne it is no god place for Bes. and if fo be you for they come in great numbers, you may fone learne where the focks be : in this fort, as Columella and others have taught: Don thall carry with you in a Saucer, og fuch To finde tike thing, fome redde colour, or painting, and flanding neere to out the fuzings, or maters there abouts, as fast as they come touch them byon the backes while they are a winking, with some little Braw bipped in the colour : and tarry you there till fuch time as you for them returne. If the Boes that you marked doe quicklie returne, it is a token their houles be not farre off, if it be long era they come, it thewes they owell farther off: inherefoze you may inder bythe time. If they be nece, you thall easily findethem. if they be farre off, you thall come to finde them in this fort: Take a piece of a Kebe, or a fer, with his knots and fornts, and making a fmall hole in the five, poince into it epther Bonep, as fome fwete thing, and lay it by the water : and when you fee the Bes hane found it, and entred the bole for the fauour of the Bo ney, floppe you the bole with your thumbe, and let but one goe out at once, whole course you thall follow, as farre as you can fee him, and this hall bring you part of the way: when you can no longer fee him, let out another, and follow him, and fo another, one after another, till you come to the place. Dthers ble to let fome little beffels with hony by the water: which when fome one 13 co or other bath hapned to tafte, the gineth fraight knowledge

to her fellowes, whereby by their flying in number, they come to finde out their dwellings. Tivon finde the Swarme to be in feme fuch ho'e, as you cannot come at them, you fhall baine them out with fmoke, and when they be out, bring them be wire with the ringing of a lattin Balon, to as they may fetile byon fome tre. from whence you that thake them into your Dine. If the fwarme bie in fome hale above in the branches, you may fawe off the branch hand femein, and covering it with a white cloth, place it amongt your Dives. If they be in the body of the træ, then may pou foftip falve off the tre aboue the 15 cs, and afterward, close buberneath them: and being coursed as before, carry them home. Ropring well the chinhs and riftes, if there be any. De that fee, both the Bors, must begin in the morning, that he may have the whole day before him to marke their labeuring. Thus farre of the kindes of 15 ces, and getting of them : now will 3 them you of the placing of them, ordering, and keping of them. The place for your Bes and your Dives muft be fo chefen, as they may frand quietly and feeret, francing specially in fach place, as they may have the Sunne in Winter, and in the Spring time a way at the rifing, and fuch as is nepther to bot, not to cold : for the erceffe of erther both burt them, but rather temperate, that both in Summer and Winter, they may have moderate warmth, and tuholeforne arze, being farre remoued from the company of evther man, oz beaff.

Standing for B.cs.

Where neither winde may come, whose blasts forbids
Them bringing home their loade, nor sheepe, nor wanton Kids,
To spring among the flowres, nor warding best,
Shake off the dew, and trampling spoyle the rest.

what Ver- For they most of all telight in quietnesse: beware beside, that mine and there be no hurtfull creatures neare them, as the Tode, that with poyeth the his breath both both popson the Bee, and allo draweth them to him, the Todopecker, the Swallow, the Sparrow, the Stocke, Spidars, Pornets, Butter-sipes, Servents, and Pothes.

Drive from thy Hives the hurtfull Lyfart greene, Keepe Throftles, Hennes, and other Birds vntrew:

And

And Progne, on whose brest as yet is seene The bloodie marke of hands that Itys slew.

All these destroy thy Bees, and to their nests doe beare

Such as they take in flight, to make their young ones cheare. Df fuch things as hurt your Bas, I will hereafter fpeake more, The valley bobere I fall thew pou of their difeales and harmes in the meane the Bee, time I will goe forward with the placing of them. The place then the where they Gonlo Stand, would rather be in the balley, then bes hill. rie high : but fo as the rebound of no Ecco, doe burt them, which found is berie noylome buto them : lo thall they fle with more eale and spece to the higher places, and come laten bowns a gaine with leffe tranails. If the feate of the boule will fo fuffer, it is good to have your Bes fand neere your house, and to be enclosed with a heage, or a pale; but on such five as they be not and noved with the fent of finke-printe, or dunghill. The best stans ding, is within the fight of the matter, by whole presence they are lafelt kept. For their better lafetie (if you feare them )you may let them a yard of more from the ground, enclosing them with little grates left open against enery Dine, 02 lo lettiled with Rone, as the 18 map each come out and in and escape both Birds and Water : of if you lift, you may make a little boufe by for the Reper, wherein you may lap your Dines for your Swarmes , and other necellaries mete for pour Bes, letting nere to the Dines some Chaoowing Trees for them to Swarme bpon, according to the Poets admile.

And plant the Date tree neere, or pleasant Olive tree, (be: That with their floury branches sweet, thy hives may shadowed That when the Captaines young, lead out their suffic swarmes, The pleasant shade may them allure, to shun the greater harmes.

Not needing for their case, in places farre to roame,

d

When as they may more fafely fit, and better speed at home.

If it may be, let them have some faire Spring neare them, or elle Faire wasome water conveyed in pipe: sor without water they can new ternecesther make Yong, Ware, nor breed up their young: and there fary for sore saith the Poet.

Haue fountaines sweet at hand, or mossie waters greene,

Or pleasant brooke that passing through, the meads is sweetly And straight-wates after. (seene.

If either standing poole be neither to them nie,

Or running streams with hasty course, their dwellings passeth by Cast boughes of Willow crosse, and mightic stones with all.

That may preferue the fainting Bee, that in the floud doth fall. Round about the Be-pard, and nere to the hines, fet bearbes, plants, and flowers, both for their health, and profit : fuerially fuch as are of the fluctoff and belicateff fanour : as Ciehvfus. Mime, Callia, Rolemary, Sauery, Smallage, Wiolets, Sage, Las uender, Myzrbe, wilde Barierum, wilde Epine, Balme, flocte Baricrum, Saffcon, Beanes, Buffardfed, Dopper, Bellilot, and Rofes. And if there lie Oround neere it for the purpole, fow it with Rape feese, and Bechipheat : for they wonderfully delight in the flowers hereof. Plinie writeth, that Bies belight greatly to have Brome flowers neere them : of tres, they moft belight in thefe. The Dine, the Willow, the Fiere tra, the Almond, the Deach, the Deare troe & the Apple, and fuch as the flot as there of be not bitter. Df the wilde forts, the Terebinth, the Lentife. the Lind tre, the Cedar, and the Batholme. The bett hony (as Palladius faith ) is made of Time : the nert of wilde Time : the third, of Kolemary. Dou must remove from your Bes, the Dew tree. Bor and the Cornel: Plinic would also have the Dlive alvay. Banish also all the kinds of Sporge: for with that, as also with the flowers of the Cornell they fall into a Fifre and Die. Befibes you muft fuffer no Wozmelwad , not wide Cucumber to grow nere them, for they both cettroy the Bes and foovle the bonie. And be caufe the flowie, or fruit of Climes both fpecially hurt them, therefore in fuch parts of Italy where plenty of Clines grow, the 15 ces do not long continue. Touching your hines, they are made of divers fathions, according to the manner of the court try. So me are mada round, fome fquare, fome thee fot in height, and one in breadth, made bery narrow toward the top, leaft the Bes Could ouerlabor themfelues in filling of them. Some make their hines of Lanberne hozne, or Blaffe, to the end ( as Plinic faith) that they may bich the manner of their weaking, Varro maketh mention of earthen bines well plaiftered within and without with god Dre-dung, fo as the roughnes and ruggeones cannot displease them : but for all that, the carthen bines be the

worlt that may be , because in Summer they be to bot, and in

Minter

Hearbs that Bees delight in.

Hearbs noylome to Bees.

Of the

Whinter to cold. The belt hines, are those that are made of Cooke wicker. oz rindes of tres, because they keepe out both cold and heat: the next are fuch as are made of Straw and Bents matted toge ther. two fot in breath and fo much or more, according to the num. ber of pour Bas in beight. In fome places thep make them of one peece of 10000, cut and hollowed for the nonce, or of forned hoozbs. fine or fire fot in beight, and thele neither are to hot in Commer, not to colo in Winter. Df thefe wooden bives, the beff are those that are made of the figge tre, Mine, Afhe , and Walnut, of fuch length ( as 3 told you ) and a cubit in breadth. Belides, they would be courred with either Lime, oz Dre bung: for fo (faith Florentine) you that keepe them long without rotting. Dou muft also bose them through flopewife, whereb, the winde gently entring, may date by all cobwebs, or fuch like novances. You must alivates have god flore of hines lying by you, that may he removed, and eafily carried where you lift : for the fired, or Standing hines be discommodious as which you can neither fel noz remoue: though Cellus feeme to commend the Randing bives, because they are neither subject to stealing, noz burning, being made of Brick, or Loame Pour hines (as Columella ont of Celfus both Howvon teach) muft frand boon fome table of frome, a pard from the must place and ground fo much in breadth, fo fmothed and plaiffered, as neis your hines. ther Moad. Quette, og Snake map crope by : and in fuch order thep must be placed as there may be betwirt every one a little mall.oz partition, being open both before & behinde. If von bane no fuch partitions, then place them fo, as they be a prettie way biffant one from the other, that in breffing and loking to any one of them, you hake not, not burt the other : for a little fumbling both foene marre all their houses , and many times spople the Bees. It is enough to have thee rankes of them, one about the other : for the keeper thall have enough to doe , to overloke the oppermoft. The part where the Bee both enter. muft fand a little lower then the hinder part, fo as the raine can not runne in, and the water ( if there be any) may eafily boide. And because cold both moze armoy the Be, then heate, pour muft arme your hines well behinde, againft the burt and bitters neffe of the Roth wince, andlet the Sunne come bountifully to them in the greant. And therefore it is beft for you to make D 2 the

the holes where they come in and out, as small as you may, that they fuffice onely for the bignette of the 18 ic, partly for anopping of cold, and partly to keepe the Quets, Betels, Butterflies, Bats, Bothes, and fach other hurtfull bermine, that would otherwife bestrop the Combes : Soberefoze it is god vou baue two or three fuch finall holes together in every hine, for the commoditie of the Bee, and reffraine the enemie.

PVLLARIVS. Waell, 3 pany poulet he know when the

MELLISSEVS. Because I have acclared bute pou before

Bee beginneth to labour and when he ceafeth.

their toile, their billirence, and order of their tranafle, 4 will now like wife thew you what time they begin to labour. In the Winter time, from the letting of the leaven farres, till the beginning of When the the furing they keepe their houses, and come not abroad, by reason Beerefteth of the cold in the fring, they come fraight abroad, and from that time formard (if the weather let them not ) they never reft bay. and order First of all, they frame their Combs. and War that is they make of his tra- their houses and chambers, whereof they make so many, as they thinke themselves able to fill : then fall they to breding and lat of all to making of hone. Their Ware, they make of the flowers, trees and plants : their bonie , of the gummes and clammineffe of tres that are glewy as Willow, Climes, Mas, Juice, Bumme, and Kozen : Ariftotle faith, they make their Combes of flower, their Ware of Gummes and their Bony of the dew of the Avze. that falleth chiefely at the rifing of the ftarres, and that there is no bonie made before the rifing of the feaven farres , and their combes of flowers, and that the Bas bo not of themfelues make the honie, but onely gather the honied beto that falleth, because the kiepers finde the Celles to be filled in fome one, or two baies: and that the bonic being taken away in the end of Summer, the hiues are not found to be furnithed againe : though there be flowers enough at that time. This, and much more heereof (faith Ariffcele ) whom Plinie following , affirmeth bonte to be made of the Ayze met of all, at the riting of the farres. shiefely the Dogge thining out earely in the morning : therefore you thall finde in the morning betimes, the leaues of the trees bedetred with honie, as you thall likewife baue the Apparrell, Bayze, and Beards, of fuch as have beine carely abroad.

Thebeginning uaile.

In the morning, our Common people call it Manna, or Bonp- Manna beto, cleaning to the leaves before the rifing of the Sunne as it mere Snow, oz rather Candied-Sugar. Whether it be the Impeats or excrement of the Beamens, or a certaine frittle of the Starres, or a invice that the apre purgeth from himfelfe : homfo ener it be. I would to God it were fuch as it firft came from a bour and not corrupted with the bayours and damps of the earth. Belides, being fucked by from the leaves by the Bees, and die melled in their Maines (for they caft it by at their mouthes) and also diffempered with the lent of the flowers, ill seasoned in the Dives, and fo often altred and transformed, loting much of his beauenilb bertue, bath pet a pleafant and speciall celestiall swets nelle in it. The beft Boney is of Time (as 3 haue lapo befoze) The beft and god likewife of Cithifus, of the Figge Tre berp pleafant; Honey of Varro faith, they take not their fuffenance, and their Doney Time. both from one. A great part of their fobe is water, which muft not be far from them, and must be bery cleane, which is greatly to purpole in making of good Doney. And because every featon fuffe. reth them not to be abroad, they mult at fuch times bofed, leaft they thould then be forced to line all boon the Boney, or to leave the Dines emptie. Some gine bnto them Water and Bonep, fot's Bees, their Den together in little bellels, putting into it Burpte woll, through Winterthe which they luckett, for feare of brinking to much, or brow, foode. ming themselues: others, by Figges, either fampen by thems felues, or mingled with water, or the brotte of Ofranes, or Meafins mingled with floete Witne, and tofts made therewith, oz with Boney : yea, 3 have feene fome ble (but in my fancie with out reason) to give them Bay Balt. Bozeover, as the Beste. quire great loking to continually, and their Bines bayly attenbance, fo most of all they crave offigent regard, when they are a bout to Swarme, whereunto if you have not a great god eve. they will bid you fareivell, and fiche a new Maifter. For fuchis the nature of Bes, that with enery Prince, is breb a Common, Going awealth, which as some as they are able to travaile, doe as it were way of dif daine the government and fellowthippe of the old Bie, which Bees, and the tokens molt hameth when the Swarmes be great and lufte, and that thereof. the old Stagers are bispoled to fend abzoad their Colonies : and therefore you hall by two tokens specially know when the new 10 3 102inces

Brinces with their people will abroad. The firt, when as a day or two before they cluffer and bang (foerfally in the eneming) as bout the mouth of the bive, and feeme to them by their comming out, a great defire to be gone and to baue a Lingbome and Countrey by themselves : which, if you prepare them at home, they content themselves bery well with it. And if the Beper prouide not for them, taking themselves to be greatly injured, they bepart, and fæke a new oweiling. To preuent this mifchiefe, Columella willes you to loke tiligently to them in the Spring time about erabt of the clocke, or at none: after lobich houres they commonly goe not away, and to marke well their going out and comming in. The other figne is, that when they are readic to fire, or going, they make a great humming and novic, as Souls Diers readie to remove their Campe. At their fir comming out, they five aloft, playing by and bolone, as it were tarrying for their fellowes till all their company come. Dea, many times the old inhabitants, being mearie of their divellings, doe leans their hives, which is perceived when they come fo out, as none remaine behinde, and presently mount into the apre, then must pou fall to ringing of Pans and Bafons, to feare, or bring bowns the run awayes, who being amased with the great and funbaine nople, bos epther prefently repaire to their olde bine, or elle knit themselves in Marme boon the branch of some tre nere to the place : then muft the Brever out of hand be readic with a new hive prepared for the purpole, and rubbed with fuch hearbs as the Be belights in, og fpzinchled with little brops of honie (3 haue feene in forme places bled Creame) and fo haking them into the hive, and covering them with a theetr-let him leave them till the morning, and then fet them in their place. De mult (as 3 tolo pou befoze) have divers new hines in a readmelle to ferue the new hines turne withall. And if to be you have no trees not buthes grow. ing neere the bines, you must thouse into the ground certains boughes and branches for the purpole, whereupon they may buit and fettle themfelues, and rub over the boughes with Balme, 02 fuch pleasant hearbs, that when they ( as 3 sap) knit and fettle, putting under the bine, and compassing them with some little Imoke, you map caufe them to fall into anem Countrep: for thep will rather goe into a new bine, then into an old: pea, if pou offer

Bees delightin

offer them the bive that they came from, they will forfake it for a new. Some of them will subbenly leane the hine without any tarrying, which the Reper may perceive, if he ble to lay his care Signes of in the night time to the hines : for about three dayes before they fuddaine goe, they make a great nople, like Souldiers ready to raife their and some Campe : which Virgill noteth :

Their mindes are easily knowne; for such as stray. The brafen found commaunds to come away. When through them all a warning voice is fent, That doth the warlike Trumpet represent.

And therefore when fuch nople is heard, they muft be bery well watched, whether they come out to fight, or to fly, the keper muft be at hand : their fights, whether it be among themselnes, or one hive with another, are easily flickled :

A little dust cast vp on high, Doth end the quarrell presently.

Dr Donied water, finete Wine, 1520ath of Reafins, or any pleas fant liquour, wherein they belight, caft and fprinckled amongt them both Araightwates part them. The felfe-fame remedies makes two Brinces of them, being fallen out, to be quickely god friends againe : for when there banneth many times to bee in one hine fundap Kings, by whole diffention the whole number Divers of the Subleds, in the Brinces quarrels, que together by the Kingsin eares, you muft by all meanes feke to remediett, leaft by ciuell one Hine. diffention, the pose people be bestroved. And therefore if you perceine them often to fight, pour best is to hill the heardest of the diffention and to appeale the fury of the fighters, by those means that I told von before. And when the Martial Stwarme isfetled byon fome branch of a tre-lok if they hang all together like a cluffer of Graves, which is a figne, that there is either but one king. at if there be moe, they be acred : and then you thall not trouble them, but take them into the hine : but if lo be they hang in tipa or three clufters, like the Ways or Abbers of a beat, it is a ligne there are biuers Batter Besthat agree not together : foz which you hall fearch where you for the Bes to clufter moft. Theres fore annointing your hands with the tuyce of balme, or Bawort, that they may abide you, thruft in your fingers foftly amongs them, and thedding the Bes, fearth well till you have found the

ofthe King.

ring leader of the diffention, whom you must take away, withat The flape the proportion and thape of the Bing is, 3 hauctold you a little befoze, that is, fomething longer then the other 15 ces, and leffer ininged, of a faire and gliftering colour, finoth, and without ffing. Holybeit Some of them be Chagheard, and ill coloured, which are naught, and to be killed: Let the belt (as he faith) weare the Crowne: who must himselfe also be pensived of his wings, if he be to buffe headed, and will alwates be carrying his people abroad: fo thall you, with the lotte of his laples, kepe him at home fright of his teeth, while he bare not for want of his wings benture out

To keepe the King at home.

of the dozes, and fo thall be keepe his people at home. Dydimus muiteth, that the 18 es will never goe away if you rub the mouth of your Dive with the bung of a new calued Caife. To the lame. and ferueth it, if you frampe the leanes of wilde Dlines, and Barden Dliucs together, and annoint the Diucs in the evening therewithall : or if you wall the Diucs and the walles with Do. nep fooden with water. Withen an old focke is come to a fmall number, and that there be not Bees enough to furnish the Bine. pou muft supply the want with a new Swarme, beftraving the Bing of the first fwarme in the Swing So fall both the Swarms binell together inamitie with the old Barents, as fhalbe theweb pou bereafter, lebere & meane to fpeake of repayzing the ftocke. The Summer being paft, enfucth the time for taking of Bonev. to which harneft the transite of the whole tendeth. The time for

Gelding

The Drone.

Time for taking the Combs.

or driving gathering thereof, Columella teacheth to be then, when the perthe Hines. ceine the Drones to be brinen out, and banifhed by the Bes : for thence they Drivethe droulie Drone away. This Done is an bine timely birth, and an unperfect Be, but bery like buto the Be. faue that he is bigger bobyed, lying alfuaies tole in the bige, not labouring himfelfe, but fating like a lubber on the flueate of his fellowes, pet ferueth he for the weding and bringing by of the poung : which when he bath bone, they thank him out of the hine. Varro appointeth the feafons for the taking out the bonp : the first at the rifing of the feanen Starres : the fecond in Sums mer : the third at the fetting of the feauen Starres : this fiene is when the bines be beaute, and that they be double furnithed. Don may make pour confedure by the Bas, when they make great noise within, and when you for them stand bauncing, and playing:

t

21

playing at their boses, as alfo, if loking into the Dine, von perseine the mouthes of the Combs to be conered with a Boney filme. Dydimus thinketh it to be the beft fime at the firff baruelt. the rifing of the feauen Starres, or the beginning of May : the fecond, the beginning of Autumne : the third, the letting of the feanen Starres, tobich is about Doober : botobeit, thefe times be not alwaies precifely to be obferued, but according to the for mardneffe of the feafon : for if fo be pontake the honey before the Combs be readle, they take itill and prefently leave morking. The time for gelbing, or brining pour Bos is earlie in the more ning : for you must not at none trouble pour bines. For this kinds of gelding of your hines, you must have two inframents for the nonce, a fote and a halfelong and more : the one of them muft be a long knife of a good breath, having at the end a bending croke to fcrape withall : the other muft be plaine, and bery tharpe, that with the one you may cut the Combs, and with the other fcrape them, and brain out inhatfoeuer dregges or filth pou finde in them. And if your bines be not open behinds, you thall make a fmoke with Galbanum, 01 029 Dung, being put into an earthen pan made for the purpole, finall at the one end, from whence the fmoke thall come, and broad at the other, from which you thall bloin by the fmake from the fire in fuch fort, as Columella ficins eth pou. This not you mult fuffer at the first, to fmobe into the hine, and afterward cound about without, and fo thell you brine them. De that medleth inthis cale with the Bes, mutt fpscially Bees hate have himfelfe from leteberie, and brunkennes, and wall himfelfe thecues cleans: for they love to have fuch as come about them to be as and vnpure and cleane as may be. They belight in cleanimeffe fo much, font. as they themselves boe remone from them all filthyneffe, luffe, ring no filth to remain among at their labours, rahing by in heavs together the excrements of their ofane bodies lobich in the rains Daies, when they worke not abroad, they remourand throw out of the bine. If pon fet Garlick by them, they will fring all that come niere them. Their anger is chiefely allwaged by the victence of those that ble to tend them, at whose comming they ware milber, being well acquainted with those that are their hopers. If there be two foarmes in one bine, and agreed together, they baue two forts and manner of Combs: every Charme observing

of the Combes.

bis owne order , but all the Combes to hang by the roses of the hines and fices, as they touch not the ground lobere the Bes ble chiefely to walke, as 3 faid befoze of the building of their Fashioning Combes. The fashion of their Combes, is alwates according to the fathion of their hines, fometimes fquare, fometimes round. fometimes long as the bines are, in which they are falbioned as in a mould. Plinic writeth, that there were Boney-Combes found in Germanie, of eight fote in length : but bowloener they be, you muft not take them all out, but must ble discretion in taking of them. Amongit our people in the firft Be barneft (if I may to tearme it) they ble with their croked knife, to ware alway no more but the emptie Telles, till they come to those that be full. taking bode that they burt them not: and this they boe in the Spring. In the latter haruelt, that is, at the end of Summer. they take the Combes full of Boney in fuch fort, (as I told pou) burning the old Bes, and alway keeping and preferning the young Lingrmes. In the first taking, when the Betbowes are full of flowers, they leave the fift part of the Combes behinde : in the latter harneft loben winter approcheth, they leave a third of their Combes for the fuftenance of the Be. But this quantitie cannot certainely be prefcribed for all Countries; but muft be meafured according to the abundance, or want of flowres. Dydimus Thafous, thinketh and to leave them a tenth of their Combes in the Summer time, if the Dines be berp full, otherwife, according to the proportion: and if they be emptie not to meddle with them. Plinie would not have the Bonep of the Spring-time (which he calleth floinze Donie) to be mebled withall, but to be fparen. De there leave no Bonie at all for them, because of the abundance of flowers that are then foringing, which is the chiefe foundation of their Combes. Such as be Chilfulleft doe leane the Bes a twelfth part of their labour : and this they do about thirty baies after the fwarme, which they make an end of commonly in May. The old and the corrupt Combes, are for the meft part at this time taken away : and the found, and fuch as arefilled with Ho. nie, left. In taking of the Bonie at the later time of the pere, they ble to bestrop the oldest stocks, to faue the charges of fee bing of them. This brining and gelving of Hines is not commonly bled in the Countrey, but they rather, according to their cultome,

1

ľ

t

t

cultome, at the end of the piece burne them, alledging for their authoritie an old English Brouerbe of their owne:

Drive Bees, and loofe Bees: burne Bees, and have Bees,

And in fome places thep browne them. When you have thus fpois led your Dines you thall carry all pour Combes into fome hands fome place, where you meane to make pour Bonep, and ftoppe by all the holes and creutifes of the walles and windowes . as close as you may : for the Bes will be bery buffe to recover the pray. Pour Dines being thus brinen, if there be any ill placed Combes at the entrie, pon fall after them, and place them in god order, to as the toppes frand boluneward, to when you next geld them, you fall eather take out the olde Combes, and leave the new, and the ware shall be the newer : twhich the older it is. the worfe it is. Whenfeeuer pou take pour Combes, loke that pout fraine out the Bonep the Came bay, while they are bot and new. The Donte that you take at the full of the Done (as Plinie faith) perbeth molt, and the faprer the day is, the thicker it is. The Combes being taken out, let them rather be warme, then heated, leaft by oner-heating them, you ftraine out the Ware with the Bonie: afterward, but them into a goo frong bagge, and with a Welle, or other Infrument made for the purpole, or with a Witcher Bashet, preffe out the Bonte; but fe that befoze you preffe it, pon feuer from it fuch Combes, as haue in. them roung Bes, called with fome, Brubbes, or any red or ruftle Droffe : for thefe with their enill inves corrupt the Bonie, anhen the Ponicis thus ftraired out, it is put into earthen beffells, and fuffered to frand uncovered a few daies, till it have wrought, and eaft by aloft all his Dreas which you must often fcumme off with a little fliche : but in many places they are not fo curious, but tumble all together, and fo fell it wroffe as it is. The best Bonie is alwayes in the bottome, as the bel Dple aloft, and the bell Toline in the midit.

CHENOBOSCVS. What Countrics palos the bell Do.

nie, and which count you the best ?

MELE ISSEVS. The best Bome was in the olde time The best thought to be in Athens, and in Oxcill: it is now thought very good Honic. that commeth from Moscouis, and the Posth-east Regions,

The Dony at the beginning is thin as water, and after the frais ning, it worketh tike new Wine, and purgeth: at the twentieth bay, it wareth thicke, and afterwards is covered with a thin rine. or filme, where the froth of the purging is gathered together. The beft Bonp, and leaft infened, the Bes doe gather from the leaves of the Dke, the Lind tree, and the Mico. There is this forts of Bony, the belt kinde is that tobich is called Authim, or flowie-Bonie, made in the Spring time: the nert, is Summer Honny. hony, oz halty-hony, made in thirtie dayes after the tenth of June, tohen the Dogge begins to come in ; the third is Death-hony, a wilde kinde of hone, and not allowed, being gathered after the first thewas of Antumne while the heath is flowed: and therfore like the Sandy hony. The beff hony (as Diophanes faith) is cleare, pellowith, fmoth in touching, & fine, roping, if it be brainen in length, and long ficking together, clammy, and hard to be get a funder: the Bony that is of the work making, is to be boylen. Bacad, if it be Dipped in it, Doth Braight corrupt it, and therefore take bed pour put it not where bread bath beene. The fragments. of the Coame that hath once bene welled being taken out beaten and framed againe, boe make a fecond Dony, which you must put by and here by it felfe, for fpopling of the other. Paughtie, and counterfeit Dony is befremed by the burning, foz ill hony bur, neth not cleare, as the fato Diophanes witnelleth. The broffe that remaineth, after the preffing, after that you have biligently was thed it in finet water, muft be put in a braffe Caldron, and put ting a little water thereto, melted boon the fire, which when you have bone, you must fraine the Ware through a Sine, or fuch like thing made of Straw, or Huthes: and after feth itagaine, and polyzing it into fome beffell with water, from whence you may ealily take it, make it by in cakes, or what fallion you like. Plinic witeth, that the Coames muft firft be walbed well , and after. tourb daged in the barke, for the fpace of the bayes, & the fourth bay fet boon the fire in a new earthen beffell, fo as the Coames be couered with water, and then frained through a Sine: laft of all, boyled agains in the fame bellell, and the fame water, and polyzed into beffels with colde water, having their fibes nointed with Bonp. The Ware will be bery white after it hath frod in in the Sunne, and beine tivile fooden : you hall make it blacke

¢

n

fl

'n

n

b

It

ís

with

Bread corrupteth Hony.

Three

forts of

The making of Waxe.

with the Athes of Paper, and being mingled with Aermillion, it will be red, and to other wife coloured as you lift.

CHENEBOS. If in the making of your Bony your Bes be almost consumed, what mayes have you to repaire them?

M E L. Withen as an olde ftocke is come to be fmall, and that Bees deyou are to furnish out the number, you must bestrop (as 3 lapd) caved. the new king in the Spring time, when there is a new brod in the Dine, that the new people without biscozd, may dwell with The repaitheic olde parents. And if fo be the Coames have not yelbed a ring of new bood, you must take the owellers of two at thee other bines, them. & put them into one, but fo (as you remember befoze) to fprinchle them with fome fwet licour, and to thut them by with food conuenient for them, till they be fully acquainted, leaving but little breathing holes about the Dive. & keepe them thus enclosed three Daves. Dthers doe bie to kill the elder king but that Columcila alloweth not : but if the king be bery old, (the age of Bes Chall thoutly be theined buto you and the people alwaies given to fedition, then thall you chole a king from the Dines, that have most number of kings. I told you before how you thould make them as gree, when you put two fwarms together, left they thould deftroy one another, that is, to take away the kings of the new Iwarmes.

CHENOBOS. What if the whole stocke be decaped by taking the Bony, or by sickenes, and diseases, will they breed againe

or may they be repayred by art ?

Mel. By both, though the breeding, and ingendring of Bes Breeding is very doubtfull with Arifoele, neither dare he after his long dif of Becs. putations, affirme any certaintie thereof: sometime he reciteth the opinions of others, some thinking that they are ingendred by copulation, the Drone being the male, and the Be the semale: other saying, that they bring forth young, but doe not ingender, but that they gather their yong ones, but from whence, they know not. Some say, from the slowres of Marioram: some, from the slowres of the Rede: others from the Pline slowres, because whensoener there is great plenty of Dines, there is also great summes of Bes. There are agains that thinks the Drones to be so gathered, and the Bes to be bred onely of the kings: and a little after, he saith, The young are the best dred, when the hong is made, they labour with their legs the Mare, and with their

mouth they caft out the Bonie into the Cels, and having lato their poung they fit byon them as Biros boe. The little Worme or Brubbe , being thus hatched while be is fmall , lyeth crumpled buin the Coame: afterward, fprawleth abroad by his owne force. and falleth to feeding, cleaning to to the Coame, as he feemeth to be tied. The biod of the Be, and the Done, is white, of which commeth little Wlozmes, that after grow to Bas, and Dzones: thus much, and more, faith Arifforle. In other places he mould feme to gather, that the Bes are ingendeed of the kings, faping. that if this were not, there were no reason for such things as are committed in their government, and that the kings by goo read fon- remaine ftill in the Dine without any transile, as only borne for breding. Befide, they be greater, as though their bodies were purpolely framed for generation, they punith the Drones. It is not bery likely that the children thould punith the Warents. therefore the Bes are not ingendred of Drones. Befides, it is a great argument, that Bes are ingendeed without copulation. that their bembe lieth bery fmall at the first, waapped by in the boles of Celles of their Coames , whereas ail other flies and Mozmes that are beed by copulation , doe longingender , and quickly lay in greatnette, according to the kinde of the Whorme. Plinic following berein Arikotle, affirmeth, that Bes boe fit as Bemes boe boon their Egges : and that which is hatched, is at the first a small white worme, lying crosse the hole, and cleaning in fuch fort, as it femeth to feebe. The king is at the firft, of a vellowith colour, as a chofen flow, framed of the finel fubffance. neither is he beed a Warme, but with winges at the bern fird. The other common fort, when they begin to have fathion, are called Aimphes, as the Doncs, the Sircus, and the Cepheus, whole heads, if any man chance to pull off, they ferue as a belicate for to the breders. After a little time, they power into them foot. and fit boon them (making a great notie, as it is thought, to procure a heat necessary for their hatching) till breaking a furber the filmes that encioseth enery one of them like an Egge, the whois baode commeth forth. Plinic addeth, that this was liene and obe ferned at Rome, in a Dive made of Lanterne hornes; the whole brode is finished in fine and fourtie daics. As some as they are brought out, they are taught to travaile Araightwayes with their danumes.

E

a

q

Ĥ

Ú

tl

f

b

T

Bammes, the young people waiting prefently byon their young king. There are funday kings beed for failing, and when they come to age, by common confent, the fouleff and bntowardeft of them are deftroved. That there is two forts, and what fathion they be of, I told you befoze.

CHENOBOS. Let be now heare fome thing of their age. The age MELLIS. Their age (they fay) may thus be knowen. Such of Becs. as are not about a piece oloe, boe thine, and loke as they were newly opted : the old ones be rough, thaghaped, weinchled, loathe fome s ill fauozed to loke boon howbeit, for making of Coames, thefe are the belt. Ariftorle in his boke befoze mentioned affire meth , that Bes line fire og feauen peeres ; and that if a focke continue nine oz tenne peresithe keeper of them bath good lucke. Plinic writeth, that one focke was never feene to continue aboue ten peres , not though you supply the places of the dead enery vere with new : for commonly in the tenth piere after the first hining, the whole focke bicth. And therefore to anoide the mifchiefe of being btterly bestitute, it is god to encreafe the number of pour Dines with nelve warmes enerp pare. And if fo be pour To revine Bos, through ludden Come, tempel, oz'colo, lie bead byon the Bersthat ground, you muft gather them together into a platter, ora broad be dead. balon, and lay them in your house toward the South Specially if the weather be goo, after, caft amongt them Affes of figge tre woo, being something moze bot, then warme. hake thenr gently by and downe, fo as you touch them not with your hands! and fo fetting them into the Sunne, thep will (as Varro farth) quichen againe. To whom Columella fubfcribing, abbeth, that fuch 15 ces as you finde bead boder your hines; if you lay them by in a bay place all the Winter and baing them out into the Somme in the Spring, when the weather is faire, and fprinciale them with the forefaid Albes, they will recouer within afely houres. They that lift, may prous it. I have not bitherto tried it. Marcus Varro holdeth opinion, that Bies are ingendeed fometime of other Making Bes, and fome times of the body of a rong Bullocke putrified; of Bers. reciting this Opigramme of Archelaus.

Of Steere that Itrangled is are children ffrangely bred. Of Horse ingendred is the Waspe, and Bee, of Bullocke dead.

The Horses breed the Waspes, the Bullockes breed the Bees.

Foza poung Dre, 02 Steere, being ftrangled, corruptes, and caff into fome fuch place, where the putrified bapour can net breath out, and fore of hearbs and flowres, agræing with the nature of the Bes thank into the body, as Time, Caffia, and fuch like. Spheremith the bapour may be tempered, you that hereof quickely have Bes, even as you may of the body of a beste like wife arbes red, have Walpes and Boznets. Virgill hath Deferibed both the manners of ingendring of Bes, and the first lost, in these words.

This vie. you yvonder yvould, doth please the Bee. The Chaines vnchaft of Venus they detelt : To file themselves with filthie lechery They judge vnmeet, nor will be fo increaft, But from the plants and pleasant flowres sweet. They fetch their tender brood, and hence they get: Both King and Court, and whatfocuer's meet To raile their vvalles, and Empyre vp to fet.

The other manners, or repairing of Bees by art, the fame Boet

eloquently thus toucheb.

But if your Bees doe happen all to die, The breeders gone, that should their race renew : His letfon learne, vyhofe skilfull cunning hie, Made Bees, with bloud of Bullockesthat he flew.&c.

Steere.

The manner how Bes are ingenozed of a Bullobke, Virgill Bees made both largely discourse out of Mago, and Demberitus. You must frame a little boule fourefquare, about ten cubits in breath, as much in height, with foure windowes, on every fide one. A pong fat Stere being brought bp hither, bis Dole, his Cares, and all other oven bents Kopped, & filled with linnen, dipped in Witch. must be beaten with numbers of clubbes to beath, fo as both the bones and the fleft, may be broken without any blob; for of the blod commeth the Be. Afterward, the boule being being bere Braived with Time, and the Bullocke laid bpon his backe, the bozes and the windowes must be close that by, and so plattered, as there can no aire enter. The wekes after, the windowes muft be opened on enery fide, fane where the winde bloweth frongeft, and the light and the aire let in: when it hath bene well coled & refreshed. the windows mult be thut by againe, and made as close as before: and being opened the eleventh bay after, you thall finde the boufe full

full of Bes, and nothing left of the Dre, lave the bornes, the have, and the bones : they hold opinion befibes, that the Bings are engendres of the braine, and the other Bes of the boby.

PVLLARIVS. 3 like not fo coffip comming by Bes.

MEL. Of the fame opinion is Columella: I tel pou but the orber of the old fkilfull fellows you may chole tobether you will troit.

CHENOBOS. 3 hab rather you would tell be what fichnel. fes and difeates they are fubica to, and how we may know the

fichnefics, and in what fort to belve them.

MELISSEVS. Twill willingly thew you. The fignes and Signes of tokens of their health, as if they be lively, quicke, and many in ackneffe number : if their workmanibip be neatly and equally wrought : if they goe about their bufineffe cherefully, and if they loke faire and fmothe. The fignes of their not being in health, is, if they loke loathfomely, be rough and hapite, ercept in the time of their labour, when they commonly loke like labourers, or be orowife, or if you fee them carrying out of beat carhaffes, and following the corfes, after the manner of mourners, or that you heare no novie, noz firring amonalt them. Thele fignes when von fe. Columella willeth you to give them meate in little troughes of Riedes, Specially Bonie fobben, and ground with Galles, or Ko. fes. Dou muft alfo to heale them, perfame them with Galbanum. Realins, or old frigges of Grapes. If the King happen to bye, the common people waile and mourne with great heavineffe neither will they make any propition for their owne fuftenance : and therefore if you fabe them not, they will family themselves.

PISSINARIVS. With what difeates are they most bered? MELIS. They are many times infected with the Beltilence, The difeaagaint which you have no other remedie, then to lever the bines les of Beer, farre alunder. Their chiefelt and early ficknes, is in the beginning and the of the fpring, when the Spurge and the Clime Doe both flowe : for as boon new fruits, fo at their first comming abroad, entifed with thefe new flowzes, being almost hunger faruen with the winter valled they feed to greedily as they fall into a filt where of if they be not quickly remedied, they bie. For Spurge both lofe the belies of all other creatures, but the flowers of Elme bringeth onely the flire to the Be. And therefore in fuch Count tries, where there is great plentie of thefe trees, the bees continue

È

b

2

,

:

ſe

II

but a while. Columella teacheth pou againft this bifeafe, to give them Kolemary fooden with water and Bonie: fome againe ble to give them the ftale of men. or Bullocks: as alfo the graines of the Domegranate beaten, and forinchled with Waine or Meafing. with the like quantitie of Danna kneaded together, & given them in tharpe wine, bopled in an earthen bellell, and powzed into little Kebes, Virgill pefcribeth an hearbe, called Aumellus, with a vellow falke, and a purple flower, the furce of whole rote being for pen in old Wine, and frained out, is bery good to be given them. Columella out of Higimus, teacheth to remedy them in this fort: Firft to take out all the rotten and corrupt Combes and to give them frelb meate, after to perfume them with fmoke It is and alfo to put to a decayed hive, a new (warme as I faid before, Das nie times they die of a disease which they call. The great devouring, which hapneth when they have made fo much ware, as they thinke they halbe able to fill, and afterwards, by florme and tems pell, many of them be beltroved, to that the remaine fufficeth not to fill the Combes whereby the emptie parts of the Combes becommeth rotten, and so by little and little infecteth both the honie and the Bes: for which the onely remedie is either to put in a new (warme to fill by the cells or if you have no luch (warms, to cut away part of the Combes before they come to be naught. inhich you must doe with a bery tharpe knife, for feare of difulating the rest of the Combs. A cause befre many times of the death of the Bes, is their to much profperitic, as when there are di uers peres great abundance of flowes, a the Mes fo buffe in their feeting, that they forget their breding, toho over wearving themselves with travaile, they bie not leaving any brobe behinds them. It is called Blapfigonia, when either by ficknette, flothfule nes obbarrennelle, they leave no fruit behinde them. To remedy this: It is good every third dap, to that by the hines close, leaving but very small holes, out of which they cannot crope, so thall they be forced to loke to their brade, when as they cannot other wife range abroad. Wany times befides they are the cause of their chine beaths, when perceiving their Ponie to goe away, they fabe to grapilie. Their owne honie both allo many times bellroy them: for being touched with it on the backe, they are fo limed, as they cannot firre: and Dyle both not onely kill 25 ces, but alfo all other

other like creatures, flyes, and Wasmes. They hate all file thie lauours, and fting luch as fmell of Dyntments : they are of ten belleged with Walpes, Bornets, and great Onattes : the Smallow both oftentimes Spoyle them : the Woodvecker both with his long tongue, thauft into the hine, licke by their honie : and Divers other Birds (as 3 have faid before) annoy them. The Tope bloweth them, and lucketh them by at their owne dozes. inho fuffaines no burt by their flinging. Sheepe are also burtfull and troublesome to Bos, in whose flicces they tangle them felues, as they can hardly get out. In the watte woods of Sarma- To keepe tia. Where they make their Combes in the hollow Firre tres, Beestrom the Beare, for the Defire of the Bonie, climeth by to them, and Beares. robbeth them. Againft thele Beares, the Bee-keepers ble to hang before their hiues great Paules,and Betles, which the more and gerlie the Beare Coueth affoc, with the greater fivar ther come buon his head againe, whereby the Bes are well defended. The favour of Crentiles, if any man boyle them neere to them, both hill the Bes. The Eccois allo agreat enemie to them, that with her refounding, both thake and feare them : and hurtfull to them is also the Bill. The Spider is also their deadly foe, and inhere they can prevaile, make bauocke of the hines, letting their inchs and nets in enery comer, to overthow the page 18 &. The night Butterflie, that figeth about the canole, is hurtfull to them two weics: for they both confume the Combes, and of their ercres ments left behinde them, is ingendeed Dothes: in the bery wood befide, bzedeth a Mozme that confumeth the Mare. Thefe burtfull Mermine, the carefull heeper mut biligenty labour to peffrey and prevent, and loke that he plucke by all fuch buffes and plants as offenbeth them, not inffering any fuch to grow nore them, and to keepe all hurtfull Cattell from them, letting them alivaies have fuch things at hand, as they moft peliaht in. For the Beper hath worke enough to turne him to all the vere long : for after the twelfth of Parch their Dines muft be opened Hines purand loked buto, that all the rubbiff, and filth of the Wainter may ged in the be fivent away, and the Spiders that Spople the Combes plucked Spring. out, and that they may be fmoked with fmoke made of Dre bung. or linnen (as 3 (pake of befoze:) for Imoke is of nature profitable Smoke to the Bes. And though it be troublefome for the time to them, good for

pet it is certainely bery wholloms for them. The Wormes, befiocs Bothes, and Butterflyes, muft be hilled, which cleaning like a petitience to the Combes, one fall away if you mingle with your bung the marrow of the Dream laying it boon the coales, make your Imoke : with this order thall your Iwarmes be kept Still in bealth, and Shall be better able to abide their labour : this kinde of purging them must be often bled, from the Balents of April, till the fall of the leafe. The Beret muft keepe himfelte (as I faio before) cleane from prunkennes, letcherie, and all buckane and frong fauouring fents : for they tous to be purely and faith. fully loked buto (as bath beine often fait.) About an cight and fortie baies after the entring of the Soume into Aries, they begin to Iwarme, and at the fame time do many flocks perify, that have few and bilealed 15 es About the fame time are beed in the outermoft. part of the Combes a brone of a great bignes : which fome count to be the Bings: others call them Brees, because they course and chafe the 15 es, and therfore thinke it good to beftrov them. From the riling of the feauen Starres, that is, from the fift Boes of Bay, till the tenth, or the twelfth of June, they ble to call their fwarming. Aparmes: at inhich fealons they must be carefully loked buto for going away : from that time till the riling of the Dog, or the comming in of the Dog paics, which is aimest thirty baics, (as

Oefti.

In what fort the hives are to be briven and geloch, it is the med before: but at this time, and till the twelfth of September, the hines muft be opened enery tenth bay, e fmoked. The hines being thus fmoked, you must refresh the Bos, with spanishing and case fting into the comptie parts of their bines, bery fresh and cold was ter: and if any thing remains not walked away, you must fivene it out witha Bofe wing. Befibes, the Bothes, if they appeare. muft be frieped away, and the Butterflies billed, which divelling in the hiues, are commonly a bane to the Bes: for they both eate by the Ware, and with their bung doe breede a kinde of Woome

Columella faith) the harueft is both for Bonie and Corne.

To defiroy that they call Dine mothes. Thefe Butterfires, as Columella tra-Butterflies. cheth, pou may when the Mallow flowzeth (at which time there is greatest number of them) bettrop in this fort. Doumust have a beffell of braffe, bery high and fraight, narrow necked and mous thed, in the bottome whereof you must have a light, and let it in

the

the evening neere buto your hives, and you thall foe all the But, terflies Graightwaics fall to the light, and while they play about the flame, they burne themfelues, while they can neither get by. by reason of the fraightnes, not thun the fire by meanes of the brafen walles. Betwirt the rifing of the Dog, and of the Bearce marb, which are almost fiftie bales, you must take goo heed your Bes be not fooyled by Bognets, which at that time lie in maight for them, even at their owne boses. After the rifing of the Brare ward about the twelfth, og fourteenth of September is the fecond harneft of your Bony: from that time, till the letting of the leaven farres, which is about fortie bayes, the Bes bo pronide for their minter Boze , of the flowers of Beath, Tamarifke, and other buthes and thrubs, of which provition you must take nothing, left you biscourage them, & brine them away: from the letting of the feaven frars (which is about the entrance of Rouember) the be Not furainning (if we maybeloue Plinic ) of winter. The Bes live all the ring of winter long bpon fuch Roze of Bony as they have lato bp: at this Bees in . time, the Diues muft be opened & cleanled of whatfoeuer filth is in them, and diligently ozdzed, for during the winter time, your Dines muft neither be opened noz firred, and therefoze in the end of Summer, while the weather is pet milbe and temperate vour Dines being made cleane in fome fump bay, fe that you thruft buder them certaine close couers that may reach to the bery bot tome of the Coames, not leauing any boide fpace, whereby the Dine thall be the warmer. Withen you have this done close bu e. werp rift and open place with Clay, and Bullockes bung mingled together, bawbing it all ouer without, leaning onely a little bole to come in and out at. Dou must arme them allo against the colo tempett. with god conertures of Straw and Boughs. Some ble to put in the Dines fmall Birds being drawen, which with their feathers keepe the Bies warme all the Winter, and therewith. if they happen to lacke foo, they feet themselves sufficiently, Dea. it hath beene feene they have fo feb boon them, as they have left nothing but the bare bones : howbeit, as long as their Bony ful ficeth, they never meddle with the birds. It is bery god and nes ceffary (as I told you befoze) to fet them meat in little Eroughs 02 Kebes, to Defend themfelues againft famine. Wihen Winter is patt, in the frace of forty bayes, they make an end of all their Z 3 Donv.

Honie, ercept their kieper deale the moze liberally with them. It hath often also being fene, that their Combes being emptie, they have continued fasting, till the Joes of Februarie, and cleaning to the Combes, as if they were dead, yet have retayned their life: but least they thould lose it altogether, it is god to powize them in some sweete liquours by little pipes, whereby they may tustaine their lines, till the Swallow with her appearing, promise a welcomer season.

After which time, when the weather will luffer them, they begin to like abroad for themselves: for after the Sunne is in the Equinoctiall, they never rest but travell painefully every bay.

and gather flowers, and necellaries for their breding.

Bifibes, becaufe fem places are fo fruitfull, as to veit fictures both Summer and Wlinter: therefore in fuch places, where after the Spring and Summer (at which times, both Beanes, Haves, Willows, and other plants and hearbs, in enery place do flowie) the flowers doe favle, they are carried of diners (and that in the night, as I told you before) into fuch places, whereas there is and flore of late flomzing hearbs, as Time, Witte Barierum, and Sauerie, wher with they may be fed, and gather fod at their pleasure : and as Columella writeth, that Bes in the olde time. were brought from the fields of Achaia, to the paftures of Athens, and fo transported in pluers other places. So map we with bs carry them from places where the flowers be confumed in the Spring, to the Summer flowacs, as Clouer, and fuch other : and after that, about the end of the Summer, to places furnithed with Death, Tamarilke, and fuch other late bearing flowers. For the anophing of this inconvenience of carrying from place to place, I will thew you in what fort 3 have ordred my 18 e pard at home. And becaufe Batter Hersbach hath fhewed you befoze in bis Car. ben many and hearbes, and vet not whereto they ferue, I will their you a few plants, that I have fet about my 15 es, feruing both for their commoditie and the health of my boufhold : I have chofen of a great number, fuch as be moft necestarie, & of greatest bertue : whele fpeciall bertues, and wonderfull workings ginen onely by the most grations and bountifull framer of the world, and being as it were lucked and drawne out by the carefull tople and biligence of the 18 ce, must needes abbe a greater perfection to their.

their bonie and their ware. I have fire enclosed the Dard where my 18 es frant with a Quicklet-bedge made of 15 lack thorne and Dony-fuckle : the one of them feruing the Be with his flowers at the beginning of the Spring; and the other at the latter end of Summer. The firft, the Black-thorne beareth a pleafant white Blacke. flowie, to much the welcomer to the Bie, as it is the berp fares thorne. well of the winter: for be commonly flowseth not till the winter be paft. Thefe flowers newly gathered & fieped all a night in the bel and frongelt wine, and afterwards biftilled in Balneo Marie, being brunke, belveth any paine in the fibes, as bath beene certains lie proued. Tragus the Bermane confesteth, that with this onely water he hath cured all maner of paines about the Romack, heart, or fibes. Wine made of the Sloe, and preferued butill Julie, or August, when the bloudy flir most raigneth, is a foueraigne me-Dicine against it. The other, the Bong luckle, or the Madbine, Woodbine beginneth to flowe in June, & continueth with a palling flowt fauour, till the very latter end of fummer. The water thereof diftils led and brunk, two or thee dates together at times, all wageth the heate of the Comacke, helpeth the Cough, and Choztnes of breath. Rags of linnen dipped therein, and applyed, doe heale any heate of the Cies. 02 Liver. Bert onto my bineo. I baue planted the (wet bearbe Meliffa oz Apiaftrum, called in Englift, Balme; with a Balme. fquare ftalke, a leafe like a fmoth & ettle, and a vellow flowe, and groweth almost in every hedge, an hearbe well knowne to the old women in the Countrie, and greatly defired of the Be. This Meliffa, oz Balme, fobben in white daine, and brenke two oz their mornings together, purgeth the breft, belps the hort-winded comforteth the heart, driveth away the dumpith heavinette, that procorocth of Belanchofy, helpeth the Falling-fickneffe, and almost all other difeates: being chopped fmall, and theped a night in god white wine, and afterwards bikilled, is greatly commended, not onely in belivering Momen from their pangs and griefes of the Bother, being dzunke to the quantitie of thee oz foure Spone, fulls, but also cureth the vaines or fainting of the heart, called commonly, The passion of the heart. Cardanus greatly commens beth this hearbe, for the comforting and renuing of a decaped me. mozy: and affirmeth that it is a caufer of fwete & vielant liepes. Bert buto this have I growing that (wete and precious hearbe, Angellica,

Angellies.

For want of Treacle, you may take dramme.

Angellica whole leedes I first received from that bertuous and godly Laby, the Laby Golding in Kent, a Gentlewoman that fetteth her whole felicitie in the feare and feruice of the Almiobtie: this Dearbe is in flower led, leafe, talke, and fauour, fo like bns to Louage, as they may hardly be difcemed the one from the o ther the leafe both in a manner refemble the Figge leafe, fauing that it is more lagged and indented round about. If any man be suppenty infected with the veltilence, feuer, 02 immoderate fweat, let him take of the rot of this Angellica in pouder, halfe a dram. and putting to it a bramme of Treacle, mingle them together with thee or foure fromefuls of the water biffiled of the faid rot. and after he bath brunke it let bim lie and flocat, falling for the the whole frace of the houres at the leaft: this boing, by the helpe of God, he thall escape the danger: the rote theped in Winegar and Smelt buto and the fame Winegar fome times brunke falling, both preferue a man from the pettilence: to be thoat, the rot and the mas ter thereof, is fourraigne against all inward difeafes, it fcoluzeth away the collections of a Blurific beginning, belyeth Tilcered and corrupted Lungs, and is good against the Chollicke. Strane qurie, and reftraint of Womens Burgations, and for any inward fivelling, or inflamation, the tupce thruft into a bollow toth, affwageth the paine, the water propped into the eare, both the like : the favo juyce and water put into the eye, quickeneth the fight, and taketh away the thin faimes and rines that coue, reth the eve. Befides, a moft prefent remedy in all deepe and rote ten fores, is the tupce, the water or the powder : for it clenfeth them, and couereth the bone with god fleth. It was called in the old time Panacea, or Healeal. Dert buto this Angellica, bane ? grofping in great plentie, Cardus Benedictos, oz blelled Thiftle. which the Empirickes, or common Proalifers, do comment for fund bay and great bertues, affirming that it was first fent out of India to Fredericke the Emperoz for the great bertue it hab againft the Deabach, or Begrime, being caten or brunken, Likemife, they fay, it helpeth against the basing, of gibbinesse of the head. maketh a god memozie, and reftozeth the hearing. For the profe of his great force against poplon, they bring forth a young mais ben of Pauy, that having bnivares eaten of a poploned Apple, and therewithall fo fwollen , as no Treacle , or medicine could

Cardus Benediaus.

cure her inas at the laft reftored to health, by the diffiled mater of this Thiftle: and like wife that a boy into whole mouth as be flept in the field happened an Adder to creepe was faned by the brink. ing of this water, the Adder craping ont behinde, without any hurt to the childe. In fine they affirme that the leanes invee feed. and water, healeth all kinde of poplons, and that the water hath healed a woman whole breft was eaten with a Canker to the bes ry ribbes. I have also fet into this little pece of ground, great froze of the hearbe called Namularia , oz Wenigraffe , which cree Penigraffe veth close by the ground, having byon a long Aring little round leanes, Canding directly one against the other, and a vellow flowie, like the Croe-fot. It is a foueraigne hearbe for bea. ling of inounds, not onely outward and greene ipounds, but also inward fores and bleers, specially of the Lungs , whereof there bath beine god profe. Tragus affirmeth , that he hath feine dans acrous and defverate wounds cured with this hearbe, being bois led with Bony and Wine and Dunke. At healeth erulcerations of the Breaft and Lungs, and may be well given to those that Cough, and are thost breathed, and to little children difealed with the brie Cough, who by reason of their tenber age may take no ftronger medicine. I have feene god plentie of it growing by the Chapologe Ditches, about great-Beekam in Bent. I bane befibe there growing, Scabious, an hearbe that groweth common, Scabious. ly in Corne, with a lagged leafe, lying round byon the ground, and thatting out in Summer a long falke, with funday branches, the flowie growing in blew knobs, or tuftes, like homy Combes. This hearbe being lobben with Wine, and brunke, both helpe the Blurifie, against which difeales, the women of the countrep. that many times take boon them to be great Doctrelles in Bhis ficke Do Mill the water thereof in May and gine it to be daunken at each time, two or three sponfuls, not onely against the Bluris fie, but against inward imposternes, coughes, and all diseases of the breatt. Against imposternes, biners (as Tragus writeth) boe make this composition, they take a handfull of Scabious, the bearbe bated, of Liqueriffe cut fmall an ounce, twelve figges, Fenell feed an ounce, Anifeed as much, Das halfe an ounce, thefe they lay a night in water : the next pay they boile them, till a third part be confumed, and after making it floct with Suger,

or Ponie of Roles, they give it warme in the Marning and Euconing, where with they lay, the imposterne is ripenco, made loft,

and coughed out.

PVLLARIVS. I remember, that passage by the house of that Honourable Baron, the Lord Cobham (whose house you thall selbome see without great reseat, by reason of his noble disposition, and honourable intertainement that hee giveth to all commers) I chanced to see in his Parkeat Cobham, a certaine

Veronica. hearbe called Veronica, whereof 3 have heard bertues.

MELLISSEVS. That can I also thew you amonatt the hearbes that I have about my Bes: it is called of fome Feucriuum,and Veronica, as it is inppoled of a certaine French Ling. who was thought by the juvce thereof, to be cured of a great Les profie, it is called in English Fluellin : it creeveth low by the ground, as Benigraffe both, and beareth a leafe like the Blackes thorne with a blewifb (peckled flower with a feed inclosed in little so wches, like a thepheards purfe, and groweth commonly buder Dkes, D. Hieron watteth, that the force thereof , is marueilous against the Bestilence, and contagious ayes, and that he hims felfe hath oftentimes proued. The water of the hearbe ffeened in white Wiline and biffilled, there withall he hath cured funday times . bot burning and peffilent feavers , as well in young men, as in old, Hieron Transchweyg, commendedit to be fingue ler god for all difeafes of the Spliene : the thepheards of Berma nie give it with great profit made in powder, and mingled with Salt, to their Cattell Difeafed with the Lough ; being frepen in Wine and biltilled , it is a most prefent remedie in all veltis lent Feauers : being given two ounces thereof with a little Treacle, and after laid fuarme in bed, and well conered, it erpels leththe potion by (west, and beweth it from the heart. The way ter of this hearbe taken certaine baies together, two punces at a time, helpeth the turn ficke gibbineffe of the head, boideth fleame, purgeth bloud, warmeth the fomacke, openeth the flow ping of the Liner , healeth the vileales of the Lungs , and the Spleene, purgeth the Maines, the Matrice, and the Bladder, it briveth out fiveat and benome, helpeth the Aandile, the ffone of the Reines, and other grienous bileales. You hall also have smongst these plants of mine, the god Sweet hearbe Cariphilata,

or of forme Benedicta : of others, Sanamanda, called in @nelith Avens, whole roote whether it be greene, or old, refembleth the Clone in fauour : the leafe is tagged, rough, of a barkith greene, and not much builte to Agrimony : the flower is pellow, and after the falling thereof, leaveth a prickly knoppe like a Debace hogge : the rate the longer it hath growen, the freter it is : the Speciall ble of this rate in some countries is to be put in Wine in the Spring-time : for it maketh the Wine to talke and fauenr bery pleafantly : which Wine, as many holo opinion, both glad the heart, openeth the obstruction of the Liner, and healeth the Romacke that is overburdened with cold and groffs humours : this rate boiled in Wine and ginen warme, both ceafe the griefe of the Romacke, or the belly, proceeding of exther colo, or winde, Bard by this hearbe , have I planted the great water Betony , called of some Ocimastrum, of Mathiolus, Scrophularia Major: it bath a great fquare falke, & bigge leafeinbented round about: the flowie is in colour Burple, and in fathion like the Gell of a Smalle : it flowzeth in June and July, and groweth molt by waters in thatowie places. Tragus teacheth to make a speciall ovntment thereof, ferning against all Scabbes and Sozes, where with he faith, be bath force people fo mangic as they have formed even Levers to be cured : his opntment is this, Take the hearbe, rotes; and all, gathered in Day, washed and well cleanled from all filth, frampe it, and frame out the invre, and kepe it in a narroly mouthed Glaffe well Ropped, wherein you map keepe it a whole vere, and whenfoever you lift to make your opntment. take of the fame inpee, of Ware and Dple, of each a like quantity. and boyle them together byon a Chafindill ofcoles, firring them well, till they be incorporated, and to ble it. Mathiolus teacheth to make a fingular ovntment thereof against Bernels, the Bings enill and the Demerodes: his order is this. You must gather the rotes in the end of Summer, and after that you have made them bery cleane, famy them together with freth Butter, and putting them into an earther belleli close covered, let them by in feme moult and pampith place, fuffering it there to remaine for the space of fifteens daves : afterwards, let the same Butter be melted with a foft fire, and being well trained, lay it by for your ble. There have I also mother excellent hearbe. called

Cardiaca, called in Latine Cardiaca, 3 know no name foz it in Englift, ercent you will call it Bother-wort : and indeed it is the bery true Mother-wort it groweth by high waies, and neere to frome wals. it hath a leafe fomething like a Bettle , but moze indented, the leaves wert to the rote being tagged like the Croe-fote: it grow eth bulbing with many falkes . I have fæne it plentifully in Surry, and fome ftoze of it about Paintone in Bent : it is of great force against any ficknesse of the heart, whereof it taketh his name : it helpeth Crampes, and Ballies, it cleanfeth the breaft from fleame, it killeth Mozmes in the bodie, oveneth cold obe fructions, pronoketh brine, and Waemens courles : being made in powder, and a sponefull of it given in Wline, it wonderfully helpeth the hard labours of Mamen.

Betonic,

CHENOBOSCVS. 3 Meruaile pon haue no ffoze of Betony alle : for I baue feene the Baslabour biligently buon it.

and have beard, that it is of great bertue.

MELLISSEVS. I have great fore indeed of it, but that I forgat to tell pop of it, it is knowen fo commonly, as I nebe not to beferie it buto you: wholoeuer is troubled with breaking of winde, and weakeneffe of Comacke, and those whole Comacks retaine not their meate, or wholoever fæles lower belching from thier fromacks, and is therewith often troubled, let them continue ally ble Betony, eyther the bearbe of flowes boyled in Wine.02 the water biffilled, or the Conferue (as they call it ) of the floinges. And if fo be you lacke the Conferue, oz the water von may he the nais hearbe in powder, epther by it felfe, or mith hony : women that are troubled with the Dother , may ble this hearbe for their remedie. To be hort, the dowre, leafe, and rote of Betony fodden and brunke, or howfoener pon will, in Cleans rie, Conferne, Sirop, Pocion, oz Poinder, as you lift to take it. is fingular god in the dileales of the Stomacke, Liver, Spleene. Midnies, and Bladder, it freth the Patrice from obdruction, and braineth from thence all hurtfull moistures. For consumptions of the Lungs, Coughes, Deoplies, continuall and putrified feuers, proceeding from the Stomacke, boile the leanes and flowers of Becony in honied water, and you thall have prefent helpe. Thus have I thewed you what kinde of hearbes I have planted about my Bees, to the end they hould have fode at hand of

the (water, and the wholefomest : I have thewed pon alfo the bertues of the hearbe, the flowing, and the water, that you may ble it for your ofone commoditie: only this warning I give you, that you doe not offell them. as the bulkilfull doe, in Billes of Lead. Tinne, and Braffe, which poiloneth and fpoileth the water. but in Blatte Stils , fet in fome bellell of water boon the fire. whereby pour water thall be most perfect and wholesome. The difference of these two distillings appeareth plaine: for example, in Warmelwad, lobich if you diffil in your common Stillatozies, the water commeth out fret, having gotten a corrupt qualitie by the nature and corcuption of the spettall : lubereas, if you bor it in Stils made of Glaffe, losing that the Blaffes be well clofeb round about your water thall have the bern tafte favour and propertie of the Dearbe. With thefe Blatte Stils von may to order your fire, as you may brain out of every hearbe, the Water, Spirit, Dyle, and Salt, to the great comfort of ficke and vilealed perfons. I fet befides great plenty of Sauozy, Death, Tamarifte, and without the Beyard, Browne, in whose stowes the 15& much delighteth. I kiepe pou hiere peraduenture to long in fo small a matter.

Small is the thing, yet fmall is not the gaine.
If gratious Gods permit, and Phæbus not distaine.
As the Beathen Boet waiteth: but I will here make an end of my talke, that hath perhaps been thought to long.

FINIS.

Soli Deo gloria.

# <u>፞ጞፚጛቔፚጛቔፚጛቔፚጛቔፚጛቔፚጛቔፚጛ</u>ቔ

# Olde English Rules, for purchasing Land.

Who so will be wise in purchasing, Let him consider these points sollowing.

First, see that the Land be cleare, In title of the seller.

And that it stand in danger
Of no womans Dowrie.

See whether the Tenure be bond or free, And release of every feoffee.

See that the feller be of age,

And that it lie not in morgage,

Whether a taile be thereof found,

And whether it stand in statute bound.

Consider what service longeth thereto,

And what quitrent thereout must goe.

And if it be come of a wedded woman,

Thinke thou then on couert baron,

And if thou may in any wife,

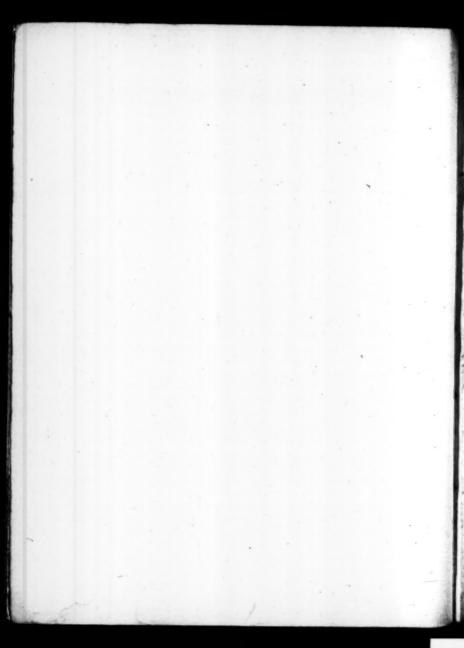
Make thy Charter with warrantise.

To thee, thine heyres, assignes also,

Thus should a wise purchaser doe.

FINIS.

e Iman ne know Is made up ob swo pars a body



# THE WHOLE ART AND TRADE

HVSBANDRYED In foure Bookes.

I. Of Earable-ground, Tillage, and Pasture.

II. Of Gardens, Orchards, and VVoods.
III. Of Feeding, Breeding, and Curing of all manner of Cattell.

IIII. Of Poultrie, Fowle, Fish, and Bees

Enlarged by BARNABY GOOGE, Efquire.

In the fewest of thy face that thou eate thy bread, till thou be turned agains into the ground, for our of it wall shou taken: yea, duft thou are, and to duft that thou returne.

LONDON

Printed by T. S. for Richard More, and are to be fould at his Shop in S. Dunftanes Church-

. .



# TOTHERIGHT

V Vorshipfull, his very good friend, Sir William Firz-Williams, Knight.



F such as base painefully and faithfully of long time served their Prince and Connercy abroad, doe most of all others defenue, beside their candigne remaind, the benefit of a quiet and contented life at haine, I know no man (good Sir William Fix. William

ams) that of right may better challenge it , then your felfe: who for the long time of your painefull fernice, the srufter discharging of the Treasurership of Ireland, and your worshie gonernement, while it pleased her must excellent Maiestie to appoint you for the fayd Realme her highneffe Deputie) bane so behaved your soife, as even your very enemies (whereof I know you had good flore) have beene forced to give you will they nill they, your inst deserved commendation. I leave to remember your fundry and troublesome tranailes, your Gentlemanly minde, alwayes unwearied and unmated with what foener perill or hazard bappened: Ipaffe oner (because I know you delight not in hearing your prayles) that Honorable, and worthy for ener to be Chronisled, charge ginen upon the Oneale, at Monham, in the rescue of your miserably distressed and slaughtered companions, and Countrymen, of which there be fundry get remaining, that will attribute the haning of their lines,

75 3

(next

#### The Preface.

(next unto God) to the prosperous successe of your valianten-terprise: neither bath this your loyall service to your Prince and Countrie at any time beene accompanied without a fernent and zealous affection towards the Almightie, the chiefest and onely beautie of all mans actions. Since thus (as I fayd) you may instly challenge for the good service you have done in your youth, a place and time of rest and quietnesse in your greater yeeres, and that there is, in my fancie, no life fo quiet, fo acceptable to God, and pleasant to an honest minde, as is the life of the Countrie, where a man, withdrawing himselfe from the miseries, vanities, and vexations of this foolish and now too too much doting world, may give himselfe to the sweet contemplation of God, and his workes, and the profit and reliefe of his poore distressed neighbour, to which two things we were ebiefely created, I thought it good to fend you here (as a token and a testimonie of my thankfull mind, for your fundry friendships and curtefies shewed unto me) a rude draught of the order and manner of the faid Countrie life , which you may vie (if it please you) for your recreation. And afterwards (if so you shinke is meet) publish under your protection , to the commoditie and benefit of others. Fare you well: from Kingstone.

John

Your affured louing friend, days as

ener per ill er hanard happeredi Tpesse en del 11000 D TENNABS (3) har h



### The Epistle to the

Reader.

Haue thought it meet (good Reader) for thy further profit and pleasure, to put into English, these sources Bookes of Husbandry, collected and set forth, by Master Conrade Harresbatch, a great and a learned Counceller of the Duke of Clanes: not thinking it reason, though I have altered and increased his

vvorke, with mine owne readings and observations, loyned with the experience of fundry my friends, to take from him (as diners in the like case have done) the honour and glory of his ownerravaile : Neither is it my minde, that this either his doings, or mine. should deface, or any wayes darken the good enterprise, or painfull travailes of fuch our Countrymen of England, as have plentifully written of this matter: but alwayes have, and do give them the reverence and honour due to fo vertuous, and well disposed Gentlemen, namely , Mafter Fiszberbert, and Mafter Tuffer vehole vvorkes may, in my fancie, without any prefumption, compare with any, either Varro, Columella, or Palladius of Rome, You have here let downe before you, not onely the rules and practifes of the olde suncient husbands, as well Greekes as Latines, whole very orders (for the most part) at this day wee observe, and from whom (if we will confeile the truth) wee have borrowed the bell knowledge and skill, that our skilfullest husbands have : but also have joyned heerewithall, the experience and husbandry of our owne husbands of England, as farre as eather mine owne observations, or the experience of fundry my friends would fuffer mee. And although I have delt with many, both Graines, Plants, and Trees, that are yet strangers, and waknowen vato vs , I doe no whit doubt, but that with good diligence and Husbandry, Celhanie, that have in manuer the felte fame britude and

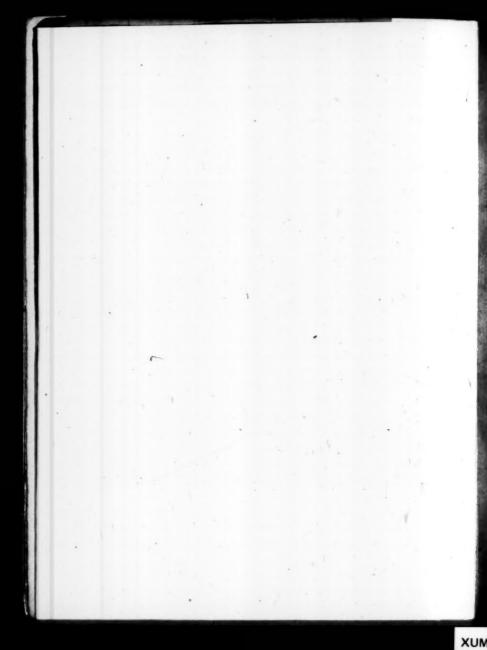
#### To she Reader.

they may in thoresime to be denized and made acquainted with our foyle, as they will profect as well as the old Inhabitants. This not many ages agone, fince both the Peach the Pifface the Pine. the Cyprelle, the Walnut, the Almond, the Chery, the Figge, the Abricock, the Muske Role, and a great fort of others, both Trees and Plants, being some Perlians, some Scythians, some Armenians, fome Italians, fome French, all frangers and aliants, were brought in as nouelties amongst vs, that doe now most of them as yvell. ves, and fome of them better, being planted amongst we in England, then if they were at home. I have also beene carefull about the planting and ordering of the Vine, (though fome of my friends would have had it omitted as altogether impertinent to our counerie i because I am fully perswaded if diligence, and good husbandrie might be vied) wee might have a reasonable good Wine growing in many places of this Realme , as undoubtedly we had immediately after the Conquelt, till partly by flothfulnelle, not fiking any thing long that is painefull, partly by Civill discord long continuing it was left, and fo with time loft, as appeareth by a number of places in this Realme, that keepes still the name of Vineyards and voon many Cliffes and Hilles are yet to be feene the rootes, and olde remaines of Vines. There is belides Natingbam an auncient house called Chilmell, in which house remainerh vet as an auncient monument in a great window of glaffe, the whole order of planting, proyning, stamping, and pressing of Vines. Belides, there is yet also growing an olde Vine that yeelds a Grape sufficient to make a right good Wine, as your lately proned by a Genelewoman in the layd Houle, There hath moreour good experience of lare yeeres beene made, by two Noble and Honourable Barons of this Realme, the Lord Villams of Tame, and the Lord Cobbam, who both had growing about their houfes as good Vines, as are in many places of France, And if they answere not in all points every mans expectation, the faule is rather to be imputed to the malice & diffaine peraduenture of the Frenchmen that kept them then to any ill disposition or fault of the foyle, For where have you in any place better, or pleafanter Wines, then about Backrach Coling Inderwicht and divers other places of Germanie, that have in manner the felfe-fame larieude and difpolition

#### To the Reader.

firion of the Heavens that we have ? Belide, that the nearenesseto the South, is not altogether the causer of good Wines, appeareth in that you have about Orleans, great store of good and excellent Wine: whereas, if you goe to Burger, two dayes lourney farther to the South, you shall finder Wine not worth the drinking. The like is (as I have heard reported by Mafter D. Dale, Emballadour for his Maiestie in thele parts) of Paris, and Barleduke, the Towne being Southward, with noughtic Wines : the other a great waves farther to the North, with as good Wines as may be. But admit England would yeeld none fo ftrong and pleasant Winesas are defired (as I am fully perswaded it would) yet is it worth the trial and travaile to have Wines of our owne, though they be the smaller: and therefore I thought it not meet to leave out of my booke the ordering and trimming of Vines, It remaineth now (good Reader) that thou take in good part my trauaile and good will, which vvere chiefely employed to the pleasuring and benefiting thee, and not to quarrell with mee, as is the manner of the moft fort, for every fault and overlight that hath escaped my hands, nor to looke for any curious, or well measured stile, wherewith I am not able to fatisfie thee, and though I were, yet were it neither for the matter nor method necessary. And therefore I trust thou wile accept it as it is, specially considering, that I neither had leiftire. nor quiernesse at the doing of it, neither after the doing had ever any time to ouer looke it, but was driven to deliver it to the Printer, as I first wrote it : neither was I priny to the printing till fuch time as it was finished. And therefore (though there be faults and great faults in it) I am not to be charged with them, that if time, or opportunitie had served, would not have suffered them.

Farewell.





### A Table of all-fuch principall matters and

fide of the leafe is fignified by a. and the fecond by b.

C.***	Α.		Amber.	105.b
1,200	- Thank 1		Auens, the vertues.	182.b
A Blaque	ation of vines.	78.b		The state of the s
A Affrica	, ber fertilitie.	18,2		1 2150 3350
	ed bappy by of	olto. 7.a	Bafyll.	62.b
	be moderated.	ı,b	Barnacles growing out of tre	es. 157.2
Almond tree		90.2		172,2
Annife.		54.b	Bees loft, their repairing,	175.2
Angelica.		65.b		168.
Angelicast	e vertues.	181.4	Bees best to be bought, and h	ow.167.b
Anthonyth	e Saint, his answ	re. 4.a	Bees clustring, what betoken	etb.171.b
Armaracia.		56.2	Bees bred of a Steere.	176.6
Abrecocks.	Switz Carinia	92.6	Bees how to be carried.	168.4
Aruncus ,who	at.	136.b	Bees what angreth them.	173,6
Affe, ber for	ling.	118.b	Bees wilde.	168,2
Affe, the fta		119.b	Bees expelled by smoke:	168.6
Affe, his rem	edie for halting.	118.6	Bees Muses burds.	165.2
Affe, his vie.	day of the de	118.a	Bees, plants pleasing them.	169.6
Afparagus, th	be berries.	51.b	Bees, plants bursfull to them.	170.2
Afparagus.	and the same of th	51.2	Bees to renine.	176.b
Axeltreesth	e best wood.	103.b	Bees if they breede wor.	178.a
Albes for do	ung.	19.6	Bees wilde, their taking.	168 a
Asbe grove.	and advisoring to	98.2	Bees foresbewers of weather.	#66.E
Asbe tree.	suff same man	101.2		175.6
Apple trees,	how to fet.	83.b	Bees not to be removed in	
Apples, their		83.b	0.000	179.b.
Apple lofts.	of constants	12.2	Bees in hollow trees.	168.b
Apples, thei	rripeneffe.	84.5	Bees how to order.	178.6
P. Meeles	Par anna	2 18/ 5	<b>T</b> 2	Bees,

		the state of the state of the state of the	6. 51
Bees must stand neere the	Master.	Bees harnest double.	174.4
	169.2	Bees diseases, their preserving.	177.b
Bees, faire water.	169.b	Bees, when they begin to labour.	171.2
Bees attendance all the yeere.	178.b	Beesreft.	166,2
Bees bunted by hornets.	178.5	Bee the old master, what to doe	. 176.2
Bees hurt by Eccho.	178.b	Beethe master diners in one hin	e.172b
Bees, smoke good for them.	178.b	Bees, their pallaces.	165.2
Bees, to keepe from Butterflies.	179.2	Bees, their government.	165.a
Bees, what hurts them.	169.2	Bees the Master, his making.	167.b
Bees, what doth them good.	178.b	Bees common wealth.	165.2
Bees, hurt Elme flowres.	177.b	Bee the Master restrained.	172.b
Bees, burt by purge.	177.b	Bees to make.	175.a
Bees, better the Valley than th	e Hill.	Bees their standing.	166,b
	169.2	Bees removed for foode.	180.2
Bees to beale their diseases.	177.b	Boare and Bull common.	122.b
Bees their age.	176.a	Beets.	54.b
Bees clenfing the hines.	178.b	Betony.	183.a
Bees sickene fe, the tokens.	177.b	Betony, the vertues.	183.a.b
Bees idle , their punishment.	166.b		- 101.2
Bees harnest or drining.	173.2	Bizontes.	130.2
Bees to drive, what smoake.	173.b	Borrage.	58.b
Bees meat.	169.b	Bullockes, their fatting.	123.b
Bees senerall labours. 166.b.c	- 167.2		a. & b.
Bees, the Master , where	to feeke.	Bullockes, their shape.	121.2
172.b.c	-173.2	Buffes.	130,2
Bees swarming time.	188.b	Bullockes, their foode.	123.b
Bees batching.	176.b	Bullockes halting remedie.	126,b
Bees their watch.	166.2	Bullockes ill digestion.	125.b
Bees, the taking of the coames.	. 171.b	Bullocks bitten with a mad dog	. 127.2
Bees, the drones,	167.2	Bullockes hidebound. 127.	0,129.2
Bees, roming away, to restraine	. 171.b	Bullockes feuer, the cure.	126.b
Bees, roming away, the signes.	172.2	Bullockes ache in the synewes.	127.2
Bees, their industrie.	165.2	Bullockes mangers.	123.2
Bees, how to finde;	168.b	Bullockes their boones worne.	127,2
Bees their winter food.	171.6	Bullockes, the flix:	126-2
Bees angry, to appeale.	174.2	1 - 1	123.2
Bees, the breeders.	167,2		127.2
-			Bullockes

#### The Tables

Bullockes fores matering.	127		Bores, 120.
Bullockes beele, burt.	127	a Corne fields and Vineyar	d compared
Bullockes hoofe, hurt.	117	4	74.b
Bullockes watring.	124	a Caution in buying of land.	44.1
Bullockes pasturing.	124	a S. Tho. Chalener.	115.6
Bullocke, the taile.	126		milerie 7.3
Bullocke the Cough.	126	a Colworts, the seede for oyl	e. 53.b
Bullocke how to fetter.	123.	b Colworts crompled.	54.2
Bullocke, the murrine.	124.		19.5
Bullockes lung-sicke-	128.	a Candels of trees.	1044
Bullockes, the yellowes.	128		103.2
Bullockes liner sicke.	128.		101.5
Bullockes, the blaine.	129.		
Bullockes the sprenges.	119.	I	1042
Bullockes, the staggers and	the dasie	Carotes.	56,8
died zahadzen	129.	Cheese of huge bignesse.	139.6.
Bullockes pissing blood, th	e panteyes	Cheese parmasin.	139B
taynt, and gargife.	129.2	Cheese not to be made of b	eaftes that
Bullockes, for all diseases.	129.b		s. 139.b
Blackthorne flowres, the vert	wes. 180.b	Chestnuts.	90.6
Balme, the vertues.	180.b		
Buglosse.	58.b		106.5
Beane, the straw, and the of	Fall. 31.b	Catoes Oracle.	146
Beech wheat.	29.b	Cabbedge.	53.b
Beech groue.	96.2	Cytrons.	87.b
Beech.	97.2	Cordum, a kinde of Hay.	43,5
Bull, common.	121.b		54.D
Bull, his making.	121.b	Cornell tree.	88.5
Birdlime, the making.	105.2	Crefinus, bis diligence.	44.2
Baytree.	89.b	Cucumber.	59.b
C C		Cumyn.	54.b
dist	. 4	Cypresse.	102.5
Camuell of Arabie.	120.2	Cyrus King , nurced by She	beards.
Cammell of Battria.	120.2	EX.	107.2
Cammell, her foaling.	120.2	Cytifus.	36,2
Canmelleopard.		Castrill.	161P
Cammels ingender backward	120.2	Cattell, their breaking.	123.2
Flas		93	Canel

Cattell keeping and tyllage, the	eir fellow-	Dogges, their kindes.	146.2
Ship.	106.2	Dogges kind to be regarded	. 146.b
Cattell keeping, the antiquitie	e and wor-	Dogges of wonderfull price.	145.b
thine fe. 100	6.b 107.a	Dog ges diseases, and remedie	r. 148.a
Coltes their handling.	112.b	Dog ges names.	147.b
Corke tree.	103.2	Dog ges , their lytures.	147.2
	96.20 b	Douehouse, building.	161.2
Corne-floore.	12.2	Dones, to keepe from the Ha	mke.
Con barraine.	121.2		161.b
Cow, ber age.	121.2	Dones, their foode.	161.2
Con, her making.	121.2	Dones, their foes.	1.a & b
Cow, ber caluing.	<b>822.2</b>	Dones, their price.	159.b
Cockes, their choife.	150,2	Dones, their kindes.	160,2
Cocke, a mooner to repentan	ce. 150.2	Dones, to allure them to the	boufe.
Calues, their gelding.	122.b		161.2
Capons their making.	153.2	Dones young, their feeding.	160.b
Cardiaca, his vertues.	183.2	Doung, the forts.	18.b
Cardus Benedictus, the vert	nes.181.a	Downg new, best for meadowe.	. 19.2
Chickins batched without t	he Henne.	Downg old, best for Corne gro	
Turkens	151.2	Doung best, the masters foote	. 19.b
Chickins difeases, and remed	ies. 152.a	Downg for Vines.	19.2
Creffes.	55.2	Dounghill.	12.b
		Dwellinghouse.	10.2
D		-	
Date trees.	93.2	E	
Dansons.	92.2	Elme.	97.b
Dyll.	54.b	Elme, his vie.	104.2
Drone Bee. 16	7.2173.2	Eldar.	101,2
Dog ge the Starre, his rifing.		Elecampany.	61.6
Dog ges, toridde them of Tich	kes.148.2	Emperours of Neathards.	107.2
Dag ge for the house.	146,2	Endine.	53.2
Dogge for the fold.	146,2	Egges, their forts.	153.b
Dog ge his age.	147.2	Eg ges, to be hatched.	150.b
Dog ges madde, the tokens.	148,2	Eg es how to choose.	151.b
Dog ges tayle, the cutting.	147.2	Egges kept from thunder.	151.b
Dog ges, their feeding.	147.6	Eye of the Master , fats the	Horfe.
Dog ges colours.	146.b	17 18 hay 30 minus	115.2
	: 3	0.000	Flax.

### The Table:

	A STOR	Graffing, diners forts.	. 601
Flax.	374		
Firre trees, their ofe.	98.b,101.	1	71.
Flowre gentle.	63.	a Gelliflowers.	63.b
Filbert.	89.		60,1
Fruitfulne fe of diners com	mries. 18.		
Figgetree.	102.	Helecampany.	65.5
Fennell.	54.	Husbandman, his good nat	
Fenugreeke.	34.1		7.2
Fodder for Cattell.	35.4		
Fish delighting in mud.	164.2	I dans a many trade	5.b
Fish delighting in gravell.	164.b		r Sciences.
Fishponds their fundry fort	1. 146,2		6.3
Fishponds, where best.	163.b	Husbandry cofin-germane to	Wildowe
Fishponds.	163.4		64
Pry.	164.b	Husbandry, her pobilitie.	6,2
G		Hwhandry, ber antiquitie.	5.b
Garlicke.	57.b	Husbandry pleaseth God.	6.5
Galles.	105.4	Histomary no base trade.	6.5
Garners.	40.b	Holly, the tree.	103.4
Goose pennes, their standing	155.4	Hony coames, what fastion.	1736
Goose liner of great bignesse.	. 156.2	Hony coames.	166.b
Goose, her hatching.	155.b	Happy, who is.	7.5
Goose, their fatting.	156.2	Harnest for Oates.	39.4
Garden hearbes, the sowing	. 50.2	Harnest of Hempe.	394
Garden the standing.	51.b	Harnest of Wheat.	39.8
Garden, what mould best.	49.4	Harnest of Rie.	39.2
Garden, dunging and dig gin	. 49.b	Harnoft of Rapefeed.	38.6
Gardens of great antiquitie.	45.b	Harnest of Winter Barley.	39.2
Garden a shambles.	46.2	Harnest of all other Corne an	d Pulse.
Garden without water.	47.4		39.2
Garden ill, declares an eni	I busnefe.	Hempe.	37.b
how that is the same		Harticbocks.	61.2
Garden, when to water.	47.b	Heavens beir flate for the gro	id.49.b
Graffing.	69.4	Heavens , their state for plant	ing and
Graffing, the season.	70.2	forwing.	51.2
Graffing, anew way.	71.4	Horses age, how to know,	d.ort
the state of the s	( country)	54	Horfe

Horle loneth troubled water.	114b	Horfes clothes.	115.b
Horse his proportion.	114.2	Horse lesse hurt by drawing to	ben bea-
Horse broken winded.	117.6	ring.	113.2
Horseforsaking his meate, the	remedy.	Horses wallowing, hole ome.	115b
11	4.a & b.	Horse bot, not to be watered.	116b
Horse halting, the remedie.	116	Horse cold, to have.	115.2
Horfes their colours.	110.2	Horse bow to chose.	109.2
Horfes, the Cratches.	116,2	Horse suddenly siske, the cure.	143.b
Horses foundring.	116,b		3.2 0 b
Horfes gald.	116,2	Hey cutting.	43.2
Horse described by Virgill.	109.b	Hey, when to cut.	43.8
Horse windgals.	116.2	Husbands bestowing of time.	2.b
Horseto be in health.	115.b	Husbandry commended.	5.2
Horse pronoked to stale.	115.2	Hogge sicke, the signes.	143.2
Horsetyred, the remedie.	115.2	Hog ge mefled.	144.2
Horse having wormes, the fi	gnes and	Hog ge found, their tokens.	143.4
remedie.	117.2	Hogges their breaming and	farrow-
Horse, to keepe from Flies.	117.2	ing.	142.2
Horse, when to be broken.	112.b	Hog ge sicke of the Quinsey,	and the
Horfes feete , the cure.	116.b	Kernels.	143.4
Horse his rhume, the cure.	116.b	Hogges, their gelding.	142.b
Harfe mangie.	117.b	Hogge, the fener.	143.2
Horfe the vines.	116.6	Hogges, their herbes.	141.2
Horse pained in the belly.	117.2	Hogs diseases, & the remedies,	143.4
Horfe, how long he lines.	111.2	Hogges lung-sicke, remedie.	143.4
Horse, holesome to tranaile.	115.2	Hogges sieke of the milt.	143.2
Harfing of Mares, the time.	111.2	Hogges turne-sicke.	143.b
Horfes watring.	114.6	Hogges made to the horne.	141.6
Horses gelding.	113.2	Hedge dead.	48.4
Horses currying.	113.b	Hedge quicke preferd.	48.2
Horse, his ordering after tr	anaile.	Hedge quicke , Sundry wayer	of ma-
110	115.2	king.	48.6
Harfe his prouender.	114.2	Hennes for broode, their choife	. 149.b
Harfe bis skowring.	#13.b	Hennes how long in hatching.	151.2
Horfes generall remedies.	116.2	Hennes house, the standing.	154.2
dore .	+117.b	Hennes, how long in sitting.	150.b
Horfes Stables.	1134		3.2 6-B
	F. C.		Hennes

Hemnes must have dust.  Hemnes, what Egs to set vander, 150.b Hemnes to keepe from sating. 150.b Hemnes to keepe from sating. 150.b Hemnes to heepe from sating. 150.b Hemnes to mumber to a Coeke, 150.a Hearbess for pleasure & beautic.60.b Hearbe what for passure. 42.b Hippomanes. 111.a Hyspomanes. 111.a Hyspomanes. 121.a Hyspomanes. 121.a Hyspomanes. 121.a Hyspomanes. 121.a Hyspope. 62.b Hony of the Heath. 174.b Hony making. 175.b Hony the kindes. 174.b Hony the kindes. 175.a Hony how corrupted. 175.a Hony how corrupted. 175.a Hill how to plow. 20.a Hisses of Bees. 166.b Hisses the entry small. 167.a Maple bordes. 104.a Hisses the entry small. 167.a Maple bordes. 104.a Hisses their monthes. 179.b Mallow. 58.a Himes decayed, their repairing. 175.a Mallow. 58.a Melcan. 140.a Mellones. 59.b Insculation. 11.a Mallow pompeons. 59.b Insplaiss the entry sold the Orchard. 18.a Instruments of Husbandry. 11.a Mallow pompeons. 59.b Insplaiss the entry sold the Orchard. 18.a Insper lack the Orchard. 18.a Mares, whether they sould becovered yeares with Foale, how to vise. 112.b Inniper 102.b Mares time of Foaling. 112.b Inniper their remoning. 173.a Meddows, new to make. 42.b Meddowes, their ordering. 42.a Insper their remoning. 173.a Meddows, their ordering. 42.a Massishe difference. 97.a & Massishe differenc	Hemies how to fatte.	153	A Lawender.	ada Moste
Hennes to keepe from sitting. 150.b Hennes the number to a Cocke. 150.a Hearbess or pleasure & beautic.60.b Hearbess what for pastures. 42.b Hippomames. 111.a Horda, what. 121.a Hyspe. 62.b Hony of the Heath. 174.b Hony making. 175.b Hony the best. 175.a Hond bow corrupted. 175.a Hill how to plow. 20.a Hill how to plow. 20.a Hill how to plow. 166.b Himes fedde with birdes. 179.a Himes fedde with birdes. 179.a Himes their monthes. 179.b Himes their monthes. 179.a Himes decayed, their repairing. 175.a Mellones. 179.b Mellones. 59.b Mellones. 59.b Mellones. 59.b Mellones. 59.b Mellones. 59.b Mares with Foale, how to vse 112.b Mares with Foale, how to vse 112.b Mares their remoning. 102.b Mares their of Foaling. 112.b Mares their remoning. 102.b Meldow, new to make. 42.b Meldows, their ordering. 42.2 Meddowes, their ordering. 42.2 Medfishe difference. 97.2 Medishe difference. 97.2 Medishe difference. 97.2		153.		
Hennes to keepe from sitting. 150.b Hennes the number to a Cocke. 150.a Hearbes for pleasure & beautic.60.b Hearbes what for pastures. 42.b Hippomanes. 111.a Hyspope. 62.b Hony of the Heath. 174.b Hony making. 175.b Hony the kindes. 174.b Hony the kindes. 174.b Hony the best. 175.a Hill how to plow. 20.a Hisses of Bees. 166.b Hisses their monthes. 179.a Hisses decayed, their repairing. 175.a Hisses decayed, their repairing. 175.a Insplaistring. 71.a Inspect their moning. 18.a Inspect their remoning. 175.a Inspect their remoning. 73.a Inspect their remoning. 74.a Inspect their	Hennes, what Egs to fet vu	der, 150.	B Land, neighbourhood to	beregarded
Hennes the number to a Cocke. 150.2 Hearbesfor pleasure & beautic.60.b Hearbewhat for pastures. 42.b Hippomanes. 111.2 Horda, what. 121.2 Hypope. 62.b Hony of the Heath. 174.b Hony making. 175.b Hony the kindes. 174.b Hony the best. 175.2 Hony how corrupted. 175.2 Himes of Bees. 166.b Himes fedde with birdes. 179.2 Himes their monthes. 179.b Himes decayed, their repairing. 175.2 Mallom. 58.2 Himes decayed, their repairing. 175.2 Mallones, 59.b Inflruments of Husbandry. 11.2 Inflruments of Husbandry. 11.2 Italy, why so called. 12.2 Italy, why so called. 12.2 Images their remoning. 173.2 Mellon pompeons. 59.b Imper 102.b Mares with Foale, how to vie. 112.b Imper 102.b Mares with Foale, how to vie. 112.b Imper 102.b Mares with Foale, how to vie. 112.b Imper 102.b Mares with Foale, how to vie. 112.b Imper 102.b Mares conceauing by the winde. 111.b Imper their remoning. 102.b Meddow, new to make. 42.b Meddowes, why so called. 41.b Meddowes, their ordering. 42.2 Mass. 115.b Meddowes, their ordering. 42.2 Mass. 115.b Meddowes, their ordering. 42.2 Mass. 115.b Mass. 101.b Mass. 102.b Mass. 103.a Meddowes, why so called. 41.b Meddowes, why so called. 42.b Mass. 115.b Mass.				
Hearbesfor pleasure & beautic.60.b Hearbe what for pastures. 42.b Hippomanes. 111.a Horda, what. 121.a Horda, what. 121.a Hory of the Heath. 174.b Hony of the Heath. 174.b Hony making. 175.a Hony the kindes. 174.b Hony the best. 175.a Hony how corrupted. 175.a Hill how to plow. 104.a Hill how to plow. 105.a Hill how to plow. 105.a Hilles fedde with birdes. 179.a Hilles their monthes. 179.a Hilles their monthes. 179.a Hilles their monthes. 179.a Hilles their monthes. 175.a Hilles their monthes. 175.a Mallow. 58.a Hilles decayed, their repairing. 175.a Mallon pompeons. 59.b Inoculation. 11.a Mellon pompeons. 59.b Mellones. 59.b Mellones. 102.b Mares with Foalle, how to wse. 112.b Imper 102.b Mares conceauing by the winde. 111.b Imper their remoning. 73.a Mescalin. 31.a Meddowes, why so called. 41.b Meddowes, why so called. 41.b Meddowes, their ordering. 42.a Massin. 31.a Massin. 31.a Meddowes, their ordering. 42.a Massin. 31.a Meddowes, why so called. 41.b Meddowes, why so called. 42.b Meddowes of their ordering. 42.a Massin. 42.b Meddowes of their orderi			a Land the decrees	
Hearbe what for pastures. Hippomanes. Hippomanes. Horda, what. Hyope. Hony of the Heath. Hony making. Hony the kindes. Hony the best. Hony how corrupted. Hill how to plow. Hines of Bees. Hines their monthes. Himes decayed, their repairing. Himes decayed, their repairing. Honglasser Honglasser Honglasser Honglasser Honglasser Hines their monthes. Himes their monthes. Himes decayed, their repairing. Hines decayed, their repairing. Hines their monthes. Hines their monthes. Hines decayed, their repairing. Hines decayed, their repairing. Hines decayed, their repairing. Hines their monthes. Hines decayed, their repairing. Hines decayed, their remoning. Hines decayed, their ordering. Hines decayed, their to the body. Hines decks. Hines the truth the truthes. Hines decayed. Hines the truthes. Hines the tru			b Land good, the tokens.	1 11 - 2
Hippomanes. Horda, what. Hyope. G2.b Hony of the Heath. Hony making. Hony the kindes. Hony the kindes. Hony how corrupted. Hony how corrupted. Hill how to plow. Hill how to plow. Hill so of Bees. Hill so feed with birdes. Himes fedde with birdes. Himes decayed, their repairing. Himes decayed, their repairing. Himes decayed, their repairing. Hill homes of Husbandry. Inftruments of Husbandry. Italy, why fo called. Italy why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Italy why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Italy meddowes, their ordering. Italy, what. Italy defines. Ital			Liquirize.	1 - 112 4 4
Horda, what. Hysope. 62.b Hony of the Heath. Hony making. Hony the kindes. Hony the kindes. Hony the best. Hony how corrupted. Hill how to plow. Hill how to		111.		7.5
Hysope. Hony of the Heath. Hony making. Hony the kindes. Hony the kindes. Hony the best. Hony the best. Hony the best. Hony how corrupted. Hill how to plow. Hoge.		121.		
Hony of the Heath, Hony making. Hony the kindes. Hony the kindes. Hony the best. Hony how corrupted, Hill how to plow. Hill how to plow. Hines of Bees. Hines fedde with birdes. Hines their monthes. Hines decayed, their repairing. Instruments of Husbandry. Instruments of Husbandry. Italy, why so called. Italy, why so called. Italy, why so called. Images their remoning. Italy, why so called. Images their remoning. Italy, why so called. Images their remoning. Italy, why so called. Italy, why so calle	4 1	62.	Lemiles.	14 17 74 4
Hony the kindes. Hony the kindes. Hony the best. Hony how corrupted. Hill how to plow. Hill how to plow. Hines of Bees. Hines the entry small. Hines the entry small. Hines their mouthes. Hines decayed, their repairing. Inoculation. Instruments of Husbandry. Italy, why called the Orchard. Italy, why called the Orchard. Italy, why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Kitchin. Kitc		174.6	Leeker	
Hony the kindes. Hony the best. Hony how corrupted. Hill how to plow. Hill how to plow. Hines of Bees. Hines the entry small. Hines the entry small. Hines their monthes. Hines decayed, their repairing. Insplaistring. Insplaistring. Insplaistring. Instruments of Husbandry. Italy, why called the Orchard. Italy, why called the Orchard. Insper loab. Insper their remoning. Inspect the order in the total body. Insper their total body. Insper the order the total body. Insper their total body. Insper their total body. Insper their total body. Insper their total body. Inspect the order the country. Insper their total body. Inspect the order.				
Hony how corrupted. 175.2 Hony how corrupted. 175.2 Hill how to plow. 20.2 Hill how to plow. 166.b Maft, what. 97.2 Maple. 103.a Maple bordes. 104.a Maple bordes.				ody 1272
Hony how corrupted. Hill how to plow.  Hill how to plow.  Hives of Bees.  Hives the entry mall.  Hives fedde with birdes.  Hives their monthes.  Hives decayed, their repairing.  I Mallow.  I Mellones.  I Mellones.				
Hill how to plow.  Hives of Bees.  Hives the entry mall.  Hives fedde with birdes.  Hives decayed, sheir repairing.  I moculation.  Inftruments of Husbandry.  Italy, why so called.  I mages their remoning.  I mages their remoning.  I mages their remoning.  Kitchin,  Marioram,  Mallomes  Marioram,  Mallomes  Marioram,  Mallom				Successive.
Hives of Bees. Hives the entry mall. Hives fedde with birdes. Hives fedde with birdes. Hives their monthes. Hives decayed, sheir repairing.  179.b Mallow. 179.c Manna. Mellones. 170.a Mares, whether they foould becovered yearely. 170.a Mares with Foale, how to wfe. 170.a Mares time of Foaling. 170.a Mares conceauing by the winde. 170.a Meldow, new to make. 170.a Meddowes, why fo called. 170.a Meddowes, why fo called. 170.a Meddowes, their ordering. 170.a Maft, what. 170.a Mares conceaund deftroy. 170.a Meddowes, their ordering. 170.a Meddowes, their ordering. 170.a Maft, what. 170.a Meddowes. 170.a Mares conceaund deftroy. 170.a Meddowes. 170.a M		20,2		
Hives the entry small. Hives fedde with birdes. Hives fedde with birdes. Hives their mouthes. Hives decayed, their repairing.  I Mallow.  I Mallow.  I Mellones.		166,b	Maple bordes.	
Hives fedde with birdes.  Hives their monthes.  Hives decayed, their repairing. 175.2  Mallow.  Mellones.  Mel		167.2		
Hives their monthes. Hives decayed, their repairing. 175.2 Manna.  I Mellones.  Implaisfring. Instruments of Husbandry. Italy, why so called. Italy, why so called. Insper their remoning. Inspec their remoni		179.2	Moowes for Corne.	
Himes decayed, sheir repairing. 175,2 Manna.  Melcan.  Mellones.  Mellones.  59.b  Implaisfring.  Inftruments of Husbandry.  Italy, why called the Orchard.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why fo called.  Italy and the orchard.  Italy and the orchar		179.b		1
Melcan.  Mellones.  Mellones.  59.b  Implaisfring.  Inoculation.  Instruments of Husbandry.  Italy, why called the Orchard.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why fo called.  Italy.  Italy of the winde.  Italy of the winder.  Italy of the wi		. 175.2	Manna.	1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1
Implaistring. Insplaistring. Inoculation. Instruments of Husbandry. Italy, why called the Orchard. Is a yearely. Italy, why so called. Italy, why so called. Italy, why fo called. Italy, why fo called. Inoper 102.b Mares time of Foaling. Impes their remoning. Images that remoning. Images that fineat. In Meddow, new to make. Kitchin. Italy. Kitchin. Italy.  Meddowes, why so called. Italy. Meddowes, their ordering. Italy. Meddowes, their ordering. Italy. Mass. Meddowes, their ordering. Meddowes. Mass. Meddowes, their ordering. Mass. Mass. Mass. Mass. Meddowes. Mass. Meddowes. Mass. Meddowes. Meddowes. Meddowes. Mass. Meddowes. Meddowes			Melcan.	
Implaisiting.  Inoculation.  Inftruments of Husbandry.  Italy, why called the Orchard.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why fo called.  Italy, why fo called.  Italy, why fo called.  Italy makes time of Foaling.  Italy.  Imper their removing.  Images their removing.  Images that sweat.  K  Kitchin.  Italy.  Meddowes, why so called.  Italy.  Meddowes, why so called.  Italy.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Italy.  Mass.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Mass.  Mass.  Mass.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Mass.  Mass.  Mass.  Mass.  Mass.  Meddowes, why so called.  Mass.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Mass.  Ma	1		Mellones.	
Inoculation.  Inftruments of Husbandry.  Italy, why called the Orchard.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why so called.  Italy, why so called.  Italy may s	Implaistring.	71.2	Mellon pompeons.	
Instruments of Husbandry.  Italy, why called the Orchard.  Italy, why so called.  Italy why so called.		71.2		
Italy, why called the Orchard.  Italy, why so called.  Italy.  Italy, why so called.  Italy.  Italy.  Italy, why so called.  Italy.  Italy.  Italy.  Italy.  Italy, why so called.  Italy.  Italy	Instruments of Husbandry.	11.2	Mares, whether they should !	ecourred
Italy, why so called.		18.2		1. 00
Iuniper Ioab. Ioab. Inper their remoning. Images that sweat.  K Kitchin.  King.  Initial  Mares time of Foaling. IO2.b  Mares conceauing by the winde. II1.b  Meldow, new to make.  Meddowes, why so called.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Mass.  M				6. 112.b
Ioab. Imper their remoning. Images that sweat.  K Kitchin.  King.  Inab.  Ioab.  Adares conceauing by the winde, 111, b  Mescelin.  Meddow, new to make.  Meddowes, why so called.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Mowles to catch and destroy.  Mast, what.		102,6	Mares time of Foaling.	
Impes their remoning.  Images that freat.  Images that freat.  K  Kitchin.  Kitchin.  King.  In Meddowes, why so called.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Mowles to catch and destroy.  Mast, what.	Ioab.	107.2	Mares conceasing by the win	deallh
Imagesthat sweat.  K  Kitchin.  Kitchin.  King.  Indian Meddowes, why so called.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Meddowes, their ordering.  Mowles to catch and destroy.  Mast, what.  Mast, what.  Mast, what.  101b  Mast, the difference.  97.2	Impes their remouing.	73.2	Mescelin.	
Kitchin.  Meddowes, why so called.  41.b  Meddowes, why so called.  42.a  Mowles to catch and destroy.  66.b  Mast, what.  97.a  Mast, what.  97.a  Mast, what.		102.b	Meddow, new to make.	1 1 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2
Kitchin.  11.b Meddowes, their ordering. 42.2  King.  115.b Mowles to catch and destroy. 66.b  Mass, what.  27.2  Larse.  101.b Mass, the difference. 97.2 b	K	. 0	Meddowes, why fo called.	and the second of the second
King.  115.b Monles to catch and destroy. 66.b  Mast, what.  101.b Mast, the difference. 97.2 b	Kitchin,	21.b	Meddowes, their ordering.	The state of the s
Lark. Mast, what. 97.2 b. Mast, what.	King.	115.b	Mowles to catch and deffror.	66.h
Lors. 101.b Maft she difference. 97.20 b	L			The second second
	Larfs.			
	Million .	. 1		

Mastbolme grome.  Milke blacke.  Milke, to trie.  138.b  Milke, to trie.  138.b  Milke, the ordering.  Milke, the difference.  139.a  Milke, the difference.  138.a  Milke, the mbey.  139.a  Milke, the mbey.  139.a  Milke, the mbey.  139.a  Milke to purge Melancholy, and all other humours.  138.b  Milke to purgethe Dropsie.  138.b  Milke to pursite blood.  138.b  Milke to loose the belly.  138.b  Milke to purgethe Dropsie.  138.b  Of Pespions.  159.b  Monne.  169 Hennes.  Of Milke.  138.b  Of Milke.  138.b  Of Milke.  138.b  Of Milke.  139.a  Of Monnes.  Of Monles.  139.a  Of Milke.  139.a  Of Monles.  139.a  Of Mo	Maft, the vie.	97b	Of Horfes.	108.2
Milke, to trie.  138.b  Milke, to trie.  138.b  Milke, the ordering.  139.a  Milke, the difference.  138.a  Milke, the where.  138.a  Milke, the more and all other humours.  Milke to purgethe Dropse.  138.b  Milke to pursethe Dropse.  138.b  Milke to pursethe Dropse.  138.b  Milke to pursethe Dropse.  138.b  Milke to loose the belly.  138.b  Of Pennes.  Of Pet bearbes.  Of For bearbes.  Of Milke.  138.b  Of Milke.  149.b  Mil		96,2	Of Colmortes.	53.4
Milke, to trie.  Milke, the ordering.  Milke, the difference.  Milke, the whery.  Milke to pure Melancholy, and all of Deefe.  Milke to pure the Dropfie.  Milke to pure the belly.  Moone obferned in dounging.  Muller, and all of Cats.  Milke to loofe the belly.  Moone obferned in dounging.  Mynt.  Muller, and all of Cats.  Of Prigions.  Of Cats.  Of Prigions.  Of Cats.  Of Prigions.  Of Cats.  Of Prigions.  Of Cats.  Of Milke to pure the Dropfie.  138.b  Milke to loofe the belly.  Moone obferned in dounging.  Mynt.  Moules of the belly.  Mullery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mullery the wifeft tree.  88.a  Of Pulfe.  Of Hony.  Of Harneft.  Of Moyles.  Of Sheepe.  Iso.a  Mife, to deftroy.  Moff. to deftroy.  Moff. to deftroy.  Moff. to deftroy.  Mostes doe breed.  N  Namens.  N  Neatheards made Emperours.  56.b  Neatheards made Emperours.  56.b  Neatheards made Emperours.  56.b  Noatheards made Emperours.  56.b  Of Dounging.  Of Corne ground.  Of Duckes.  Iso.a  Of Swine.  Of Dounging.  Iso.a  Of Swine.  Of Dounging.  Of Swine.  Seedes, and their forts.  Of Beed.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Tartle-doues.  Of the Baily of Husbandry.  138.b  Of Bullockes.  Of the Time the shadow.  74.a  Of Bullockes.  Of the Time the shadow.  74.a  Of the Time the shadow.  Iso.a  Of the Time the shadow.  Iso.a  Of the Baily of Husbandry.  Iso.a  Of the Time the Drive.  Iso.a  Of the Time the shadow.  Iso.a  Of the	Milke blacke.	138.6	Of Buffes.	130.2
Milke, the ordering.  Milke, the difference.  Milke, the burge Melancholy, and all other humours.  Milke to purge Melancholy, and all other humours.  Milke to purgethe Dropse.  Milke to purgethe blood.  Milke to pursific blood.  Milke to loofe the belly.  Moone observed in soming.  Mone observed in downging.  Mynt.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery the wisest tree.  Mulbery the wisest tree.  Mulles, their colonor.  Mile, to destroy.  Mosses destroy.  Mulfer to destroy.  Mulfer to edetroy.  Mulfer to edetroy.  Mulfer to destroy.  Mulfer to destroy.  Multer tree.  Namens.  Namens.  Namens.  Namens.  Namens.  Namens.  Sob of Cammels.  Of Cheese.  139.2  Of Wax.  Of Peisons.  Of Peisons.  Of Pethearbes.  Of Pethearbes.  Of Pethearbes.  Of Homes.  Of Milke.  Of Milke.  Of Milke.  Of Milke.  Of Milke.  Of Milke.  Of Hory.  Of Harness.  Of Moyles.  Of Hory.  Of Sheepe.  Of Downging.  Erunng of Bacom.  Of Seedes, and their forts.  Of Downging.  18.b.  Of Downging.  Of Swine.  O	Milke, totrie.			138.b
Milke to purge Melancholy, and all orber humours.  138.b Of Cheefe.  Of Wax.  Of Cats.  Milke to pursifie blood.  I38.b Of Gats.  Of Hennes.  Of Hennes.  Of Hennes.  Of Per hearbes.  Of Mone observed in sowing.  Mone observed in downging.  Mynt.  Mynt.  Myllet.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery the wisest tree.  Mulbery the wisest tree.  Moiles, their colonor.  I19.a  Moiles doe breed.  I19.a  Mise, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mustard seede.  Nustard seede.  Northeards made Emperours.  Of Deacockes,  Of Blood letting.  Of Orchards.  Of Downering.  Of Downering.  Of Swine, salting, and presenting of ground.  Of Corne ground.  Of Come ground.  Of Come ground.  Of Gesse.  Of Plowing.  Of Myles.  Of Moyles.  Of Downering.  Of Orchards.  Of Downering.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Downering.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Plowing.  Of Cats.  Of Gats.  Of Hennes.  Of Thrile-dones.  I39.a  Of Myles.  I19.a  Of Corchards.  Of Downering.  Of Swine.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of the Baily of Husbandry.  Table Of the Uine.  Table Of the Uine.	Milke, the ordering.	139.2		120.4
Milke to purge Melancholy, and all orber humours.  138.b Of Cheefe.  Of Wax.  Of Cats.  Milke to pursifie blood.  I38.b Of Gats.  Of Hennes.  Of Hennes.  Of Hennes.  Of Per hearbes.  Of Mone observed in sowing.  Mone observed in downging.  Mynt.  Mynt.  Myllet.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery the wisest tree.  Mulbery the wisest tree.  Moiles, their colonor.  I19.a  Moiles doe breed.  I19.a  Mise, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mustard seede.  Nustard seede.  Northeards made Emperours.  Of Deacockes,  Of Blood letting.  Of Orchards.  Of Downering.  Of Downering.  Of Swine, salting, and presenting of ground.  Of Corne ground.  Of Come ground.  Of Come ground.  Of Gesse.  Of Plowing.  Of Myles.  Of Moyles.  Of Downering.  Of Orchards.  Of Downering.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Downering.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Plowing.  Of Cats.  Of Gats.  Of Hennes.  Of Thrile-dones.  I39.a  Of Myles.  I19.a  Of Corchards.  Of Downering.  Of Swine.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of the Baily of Husbandry.  Table Of the Uine.  Table Of the Uine.	Milke, the difference.	138.2	Of Dogges.	145.b
Milke to purge Melancholy, and all of Cheefe.  Other humours.  138.b  Milke to purgethe Dropsie.  138.b  Milke to pursife blood.  Milke to loofe the belly.  Moone observed in sowing.  Mynt.  Mynt.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery the wisest tree.  Moiles, their colonor.  Mise, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  M	Milke, the whey.	139.2	Of Goates.	136.b
other humours.  Milke to purgethe Dropse.  Milke to purgethe Dropse.  Milke to purgethe blood.  Milke to loofe the belly.  Moone observed in somma.  Moone observed in downging.  Mynt.  Mynt.  Myllet.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery the wifest tree.  Mosles doe breed.  Mile, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mos	Milke to purge Melancholy,	and all	Of Cheefe.	139.4
Milke to pursific blood, 138.b Of Cats. 148.b Milke to loofe the belly. 138.b Of Hennes. 149.b Moone observed in sowing. 51.a Of Pot hearbes. 51.a Moone observed in downging. 43.a Of Gardens. 49.b Mynt. 62.b Of Turkie-cockes, 158.a Myllet. 31.a Of Milke. 138.a Mulbery tree. 88.a Of Pulse. 31.b Mulbery the wisest tree. 88.a Of Hony. 174.a Moiles, their colonor. 119.a Of Harnest. 38.b Moiles doe breed. 119.a Of Moyles. 119.a Mise, to destroy. 66.b Moste to destroy. 66.b Myrtle tree, 63.a Of Shepheards. 144.b Myrtle tree, 63.a Of Peacockes, 157.a Of Blood letting. 66.b Myrtle tree, 63.a Of Peacockes, 157.a Of Corne ground. 8.b. 44.b. Of Downging. 188.b Of Downging of ground. 16.b Of Downging. 188.b Of Plowing. 165.a Of Swine. 165.a Of Pownging. 188.b Of Plowing. 165.a Of Plowing. 17.a Of Bullockes. 156.a Of Turtle-dones. 162.a Of Bullockes. 158.b Of the Ume. 74.a Of the Ume. 74.a	other humours.	138.b	Of Wax.	175.2
Milke to loofe the belly.  Moone observed in sowing.  Moone observed in downging.  Mynt.  Mynt.  Myllet.  Mulbery tree.  Mulbery tree.  Moiles, their colonor.  Mose, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Myntle tree.  Namens.  Namens.  Nomens.  Nomens.	Milke to purgethe Dropsie.	138.b	Of Pigions.	159.b
Moone observed in sowing. 51.2  Moone observed in downging. 43.2  Mynt. 62.b  Myllet. 31.2  Mulbery tree. 88.2  Mulbery the wisest tree. 88.2  Moiles, their colonor. 119.2  Moiles, to destroy. 66.b  Moste to destroy. 42.2  Mustard seede. 55.b  Myrtle tree. 63.2  Namens. N  Namens. 56.b  Nontheards made Emperoners. 107.2  Neighbourhood. 8.b.c. 44.b.  Of Corne ground. 06.b  Of Bees. 156.2  Of Pothering. 128.2  Of Pothering. 51.2  Of Milke. 238.2  Of Mulke. 32.8  Of Hony. 174.3  Of Moyles. 119.2  Of Moyles. 119.2  Of Moyles. 119.2  Of Shepheards. 144.6  Of Shepheards. 144.6  Of Shepheards. 157.2  Of Blood letting. 66.6  Of Orchards. 66.6  Of Orchards. 66.6  Of Downging. 188.6  Of Downging. 188.6  Of Downging. 188.6  Of Downging. 188.6  Of Plowing. 105.2  Of Plowing. 105.2  Of Plowing. 105.2  Of Plowing. 105.2  Of Bullockes. 156.2  Of the Unite. 162.3  Of the Unite. 162.3  Of the Unite. 162.3  Of the Unite. 162.3  Of the Unite. 163.3	Milke to purific blood.	138.b		148.b
Mone observed in donnging. 43.2  Mynt. 62.b  Myllet. 31.2  Mulbery tree. 88.2  Mulbery the wisest tree. 88.2  Moiles, their colonor. 119.2  Moiles, to destroy. 66.b  Mosser to destroy. 42.2  Mustard seede. 55.b  Myrtle tree. 63.2  Namens. N  Namens. 56.b  Nontheards made Emperonrs. 107.2  Neighbourhood. 8.b.c. 44.b.  Of Corne ground. 66.b  Of Bees. 156.2  Of Polyse. 31.b  Of Moyles. 31.b  Of Moyles. 119.2  Of Moyles. 119.3  Of Shepheards. 144.b  Of Egges. 153.b  Of Peacockes, 157.a  Of Blood letting. 66.b  Of Corne ground. 66.b  Of Dounging of ground. 16.2  Of Dounging. 18.b  Of Dounging. 18.b  Of Polyse. 150.a  Of Corne ground. 16.b  Of Dounging. 18.b  Of Polyses. 150.a  Of Corne ground. 156.a  Of Dounging. 18.b  Of Polyses. 156.a  Of Polyses. 156.a  Of Dounging. 17.a  Of Bees. 156.a  Of Polyseat. 153.a  Of Wheat. 17.a  Of Wheat. 156.a  Of Wheat. 156.a  Of Bullockes. 156.a  Of the Time the Jones. 162.a		138.b		149.b
Mynt. 62.b Of Turkie-cockes, 158.a Myllet. 31.a Of Milke. 138.a Mulbery tree. 88.a Of Pulse. 31.b Mulbery the wisest tree. 88.a Of Hony. 174.a Moiles, their colonor. 119.a Of Harnest. 38.b Moiles doe breed. 119.a Of Moyles. 119.a Mise, to destroy. 66.b Of Sheepe. 130.a Mustard seede. 55.b Of Egges. 153.b Myrtle tree, 63.a Of Peacockes, 157.a Of Blood letting. 118.a Namens. Nonatheards made Emperoners. 107.a Of Gestes, and their forts, 66.b Noatheards made Emperoners. 107.a Of Corne ground. 8.b. 44.b. Of Donnging. 18.b Of Donnging of Ground. 16.b Of Donnging. 18.b Of Bees. 165.a Of Wheat. 17.a Of Bees. 156.a Of Wheat. 17.a Of Wheat. 17.a Of Bullockes. 118.a Of the Baily of Husbandry. 13.a Of Bullockes. 120.b Of the Ume. 17.a		51.2		51.2
Myllet, 31.2 Of Milke, 33.8 Mulbery tree, 88.2 Of Pulse. 31.2 Mulbery tree, 88.2 Of Hony. 174.3 Moiles, their colonor. 119.2 Of Harnest. 38.2 Moiles doe breed. 119.2 Of Moyles. 119.2 Mise, to destroy. 66.b Mosser deed. 55.b Of Sheepe. 130.3 Myrtle tree, 63.2 Of Shepheards. 144.b Mustard seede. 55.b Of Egges. 153.b Myrtle tree, 63.2 Of Peacockes, 157.2 Of Blood letting. 06.b Noatheards made Emperoners. 107.2 Of fatting of Swine, salting, and prescribed for the first seeds. 156.2 Of Donnging. 18.b Of Donnging. 18.b Of Donnging. 18.b Of Donnging. 18.b Of Bees. 156.2 Of Swine. 150.2 Of Plowing. 156.2 Of Plowing. 158.2 Of Plowing. 158.2 Of Plowing. 158.2 Of Wheat. 158.2 Of Wheat. 158.2 Of Bullockes. 150.b Of the Ume. 158.3 Of the Ume. 158.3 Of the Ume. 158.3 Of Milke, 31.8 And Milke, 31.8 And Milke, 31.8 And Moiles, their coloner in the milke, 31.8 And Moiles, their coloner in the milke, 31.8 And Milke	Moone observed in downging.	43.2		49.b
Mulbery tree, 88.a Mulbery the wifest tree. 88.a Moiles, their colonor. 119.a Moiles doe breed. 119.a Of Mayles. 119.a Mise, to destroy. 66.b Of Sheepe. 130.a Mustard seede. 55.b Of Egges. 153.b Myrtle tree, 63.a Of Peacockes, 0f Egges. 153.b Myrtle tree, 63.a Of Peacockes, 0f Egges. 153.b Myrtle tree, 63.a Of Peacockes, 0f Egges. 153.b Montheards made Emperonars. 107.a Neighbourhood. 8.b. 44.b. Of Corne ground. 105.a Of Donnging. 18.b Of Duckes. 156.a Of Swine. 140.a Of Bees. 165.a Of Bees. 165.a Of Wheat. 17.a Of Wheat. 17.a Of Wheat. 17.a Of Bullockes. 118.a Of the Baily of Husbandry. 13.a Of Bullockes. 120.b Of the Ume. 174.a		62.b		158.a
Mulbery the wifest tree.  Moiles, their colonor.  Moiles, their colonor.  Mise, to destroy.  Mosse, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mustard seede.  Namens.  No.  Namens.  No.  Nontheards made Emperonrs.  No.  Of Corne ground.  Of Corne ground.  Of Seedes.  Of Swine.  Of Duckes.  Of Bees.  Of Plowing.  Of Posses.  Of Plowing.  Of Corne.  Of		31.2		138.1
Mulbery the wifest tree.  Moiles, their colonor.  Moiles, their colonor.  Mise, to destroy.  Mosse, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mustard seede.  Namens.  No.  Namens.  No.  Nontheards made Emperonrs.  No.  Of Corne ground.  Of Corne ground.  Of Seedes.  Of Swine.  Of Duckes.  Of Bees.  Of Plowing.  Of Posses.  Of Plowing.  Of Corne.  Of	Mulbery tree.	88.2		31.b
Moiles doe breed.  Mile, to destroy.  Mosse, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mustard seede.  Northe tree.  Northe tree.  Northeards made Emperoners.  Northeards.  Northeards.	Mulbery the wifest tree.	88.2	Of Hony.	174.2
Moiles doe breed.  Mile, to destroy.  Mosse, to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mosse to destroy.  Mustard seeds.  Northeards.  Northeards.  Northeards made Emperours.  Northeards.  Of Dorchards.  Of Orchards.  Of Swine, salting, and present forming of Bacon.  Of Corne ground.  Of Dounging.  Of Dounging.  Of Swine.  Of Dounging.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Tartle-dones.  Of the Baily of Husbandry.  Of the Ume.	Moiles, their colonor.	119.2		38.b
Mosse to destroy.  Mustard seede.  Myrtle tree.  N  Namens.  No.  Nontheards made Emperoners.  No.  Noighbourhood.  No.  Of Corne ground.  Of Duckes.  Of Bees.  Of Ploming.  Of Ploming.  Of Ploming.  Of Shepheards.  Of Egges.  Of Peacockes,  Of Peacockes,  Of Peacockes,  Of Peacockes,  Of Peacockes,  Of Corchards.  Of Orchards.  Of Orchards.  Of Swine, Salting, and prescent forts,  Of Dounging.  Of Dounging.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Swine.  Of Ploming.  Of Ploming.  Of Ploming.  Of Ploming.  Of Seedes, and their forts,  Of Dounging.  Of Swine.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of the Baily of Husbandry.  Of the Ume.  Take		119.2	Of Moyles.	119.4
Mustard seede.  Myrtle tree,  N  Namens.  No  Noatheards made Emperoners.  Noighbourhood.  Of Corne ground.  Of Corne ground.  Of Bees.  Of Bees.  Of Plowing.  Of Bees.  Of Plowing.  Of Bees.  Of Plowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Bees.  Of Plowing.  Of Corne ground.  Of Bees.  Of Twrtle-dones.  Of Bullockes.  Of Bullockes.  Of the Ume.	Mife, to destroy.	66.b		130.2
Myrtle tree,  N  Namens.  Nontheards made Emperours. 107.2  Neighbourhood.  S.b.& 44.b.  Of Corne ground.  Of Corne ground.  Of Bood letting.  Of Mine, falting, and presenting of Swine, falting, and presenting of Swine, falting, and presenting of Swine, falting, and presenting of Bacon.  Of Seedes, and their forts, so by the Swine.  Of Downging.  Of Downging.  Of Swine.  140.2  Of Downging.  180.2  Of Wisel.  Of Wisel.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Mine.		42.2		144.b
Namens.  Namens.  Namens.  Nontheards made Emperoners.  Noighbourhood.  Noighb		55.b		153.b
Namens.  Neatheards made Emperours. 107.2  Neighbourhood.  8.b.& 44.b.  Of Seedes, and their forts.  Of Corne ground.  Of Duckes.  Of Bees.  Of Plowing.  Of Affer.  Of Bullockes.  103.2  Of Orchards.  Of Of String of Swine, falting, and prescripting of Bacon.  Of Seedes, and their forts.  Of Donnging.  184.2  Of Swine.  140.2  Of Wheat.  17.4  Of Wheat.  Of Wheat.  Of Turtle-dones.  Of Bullockes.  120.2  Of the Ume.  74.2	Myrtle tree,	63.2		157.4
Neatheards made Emperours. 107.2 Neighbourhood. 8.b.& 44.b.  Of Corne ground. 16.2 Of Dounging. 18.b. Of Swine. 140.a Of Swine. 140.a Of Plowing. 156.2 Of Wheat. 25.a Of Plowing. 20.a Of Twite-doues. 162.a Of Bullockes. 120.b Of the Ume. 74.a	N			118.2
Neighbourhood.  8.b. 44.b.  Of Seedes, and their forts.  Of Corne ground.  Of Downging.  Of Downging.  Of Downging.  Of Swine.  144.2  Of Downging.  18.b.  Of Downging.  18.b.  Of Swine.  140.a  Of Bees.  Of Swine.  140.a  Of Bees.  Of Flowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Bullockes.  120.b  Of the Ume.  144.a  50.b  60 Downging.  18.b  60 Downging.  140.a  50.b  60 Downging.  144.a  50 Downging.  18.b  60 Downging.  140.a  60 Downging.  160.a  60 Downging.  170.a  60 Downg				66.b
Neighbourhood.  8.b. 44.b.  Of Seedes, and their forts.  Of Corne ground.  Of Downging.  Of Downging.  Of Downging.  Of Swine.  144.2  Of Downging.  18.b.  Of Downging.  18.b.  Of Swine.  140.a  Of Bees.  Of Swine.  140.a  Of Bees.  Of Flowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Bullockes.  120.b  Of the Ume.  144.a  50.b  60 Downging.  18.b  60 Downging.  140.a  50.b  60 Downging.  144.a  50 Downging.  18.b  60 Downging.  140.a  60 Downging.  160.a  60 Downging.  170.a  60 Downg	Neatheards made Emperours.	107.2	Of fatting of Swine, salting,	and pre-
Of chusing of ground.  Of Corne ground.  Of Donnging.  18.2  Of Donnging.  18.2  Of Donnging.  18.2  Of Swine.  140.a  Of Bees.  Of Bees.  Of Geose.  155.a  Of Plowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Plowing.  Of Bullockes.  Of Bullockes.  Of Bullockes.  Of Seedes, and their sorts.  50.b  Of Donnging.  140.a  50.b  Of Wheat.  17.a  Of Wheat.  Of Turtle-dones.  Of the Baily of Husbandry.  13.a  Of Bullockes.  120.b  Of the Ume.	Neighbourhood. 8.b.d	44.b.	Serving of Bacon.	144.2
Of Corne ground.  Of Duckes.  Of Duckes.  Of Bees.,  Of Geofe.  156.2  Of Wheat.  Of Plowing.  Of Miles.  Of Bullockes.  150.b  Of Wheat.  Of Bullockes.  120.b  Of the Ume.	0	10.5	Of Seedes, and their sorts.	50.b
Of Duckes.       156.2       Of Foods.       59.b         Of Bees.       165.2       Of good Ground.       17.8         Of Geofe.       154.b       Of Wheat.       25.2         Of Plowing.       20.2       Of Turtle-dones.       162.a         Of affer.       118.2       Of the Baily of Husbandry.       13.a         Of Bullockes.       120.b       Of the Vine.       74.a				18.b
Of Bees. 165.2 Of good Ground. 17.1 Of Geefe: 154b Of Wheat. 25.2 Of Plowing. 20.2 Of Turtle-dones. 162.2 Of Assert 118.2 Of the Baily of Husbandry. 13.2 Of Bullockes. 120b Of the Vine. 74.2		16.b		140.4
Of Geefe. 154b Of Wheat. 25.2 Of Plowing. 20.2 Of Turtle-dones. 162.2 Of Assert 118.2 Of the Baily of Husbandry. 13.2 Of Bullockes. 120.b Of the Vine. 74.2		-		59.b
Of Plowing. 20.2 Of Turtle-dones. 162,2 Of Assert Services 118.2 Of the Baily of Husbandry. 13.1 Of Bullockes. 120,b Of the Vine. 74.2		165.2	Of good Ground.	17.4
Of Messes. 118.2 Of the Baily of Husbandry. 13.2 Of Bullockes. 120,b Of the Vine. 74.2				25.2
Of Bullockes. 120,b' Of the Vine. 74.2				162.4
Of Bullockes. 120,b' Of the Vine. 74.2				13.4
Orenge	Of Bullockes.	320,b	Of the Vine.	74.4
	Self		1 - 1	Orenge

Orenge alwayes bearing.	87.1	Plants, their dinerficie.	72.5
Orenges, their planting.	88.		70.4
Oline grape.	81.1		101.2
Oke groue, the planting.	96.1	Poplar grone.	98.5
Oke of a wonderfull bignesse.	97.	Poplar his vie.	101.2
Oke bis ve.	104.	1	98.b
	F 103.2	1-1	
Oline ripe, the tokens.	82.2		58.b
Oline wilde.	103.4	1	92,2
Oline gasherers law.	83.4		91.2
Order, bis commeditie.	#1.b	Pifan.	27.b
Oyfters.	164.b		150,2
Oyfter ponds.		Pomegranate.	. 86.b
Oyle, she making.	\$3.2	Pomegranates have like mum	ber of
		graines.	87.2
P P		Peares red.	85.4
Paniele.	30.b		85.2
Parfisep.	56.b	Peares, how to keepe.	35.b
Patriarches, shepheards.	107.2	Pearetree.	85.2
Plawing.	20.2	Penygrasse, his vertues.	d,181.b
Plowing, the Season.	21.2	Pastures.	43.b
Plowing in thenight.	21.b	Q	work.
Phone, his parts.	20.2	Quailes.	162.b
Poppey. 37.b.6	55b	Quince tree.	85.b
Peach tree.	92.4	Quinces, when to be gathered.	86.2
Peach with an Almond curnell.	69.b	Quinces, how to keepe them.	86.2
Pestilence in Cattell, whereof.	124.b	Quicksets, their planting.	48.2
Perfley.	54.b	Quickset.	48.2
Pach tree. 98.1	0.90.2	Quale, mother.	166,b
Pimpernell.	62.b	R	-
Pine tree.	98.b	Radish, his vse.	55.b
Pistaces.	89.2	Rammes, which to be bought.	
Pitch.	98.b		6.20 b
Plants prospering with cursing.	52.8	Rape harnest.	38.b
Plants prospering by theft.	52.2	Rape of great bignesse.	28.b
Planting, the Moone observed.	70.8	Raperoote.	28.b.
Plantes steeped.	72.b	Radift of great bignesse.	55.b.
Sperie	1		Radiff

Radifo roose. All mais in the	55.b.	Sheepe, what number to be ke	
Remedie against Gnattes.	66.2	Sheepes tailes, of wonderfull	bigneffe.
Remedie against Wynels.	41.2	0.13	130.b
Remedie against Catterpillers.	66,2	Sheepes legs broken, the cure	. 136,2
Rozin.	105.2	Sheepe yeerely to be drawen.	130.b
Reazins small.	59.2	Sheepe, their winde perished.	136.2
Romulus nurced by Shepherds	107.2	Sheepe having the fener.	135.b.
Rofe.	64.2	Sheepe, their great encrease.	130,2
Rosemarie.	62.2	Sheepe, their forts.	130b
Raspis.	59.2	Sheepe to keepe in health.	135.b
Reps.	52.2	Sheepe, the fould.	135.b
Remset for Cheefe.	139.2	Sheepe skabby chind.	135.b
Rabing.	24.2	Sheepe their feeding. 131.	b 133.2
Rye.	26.2	Sheepe, their lambing time.	131.b
Rye harnest.	39.2	Sheepe, the minrein.	136,2
Rich, how.	7.b	Sheepe skabby.	135.b
Ryce.	30,b	Sheepe coates.	. 233.b
. d.28 \$		Sheepe shearing, the time.	134b
Sman.	171.b	Shepheards resemblance with	Princes.
Saffron.	61.b.	n.0 c	107.2
Sauprie.	62.b	Shepheards care infeeding.	133.2
Setterwort, and his ofe. 65.b	117.b.	Slufes for Fish	16g.b
0.101.	125.2	Sage.	162.2
Sernants their looking to.	14.2	Sow farrowing, her age.	142,2
Sernants health to be regarded	14.2	Sommer Seedes.	24.b
Sanine.	66.a	Seedes, their comming up.	50,b
Sallets.	46.2	Seedes, what for every groun	d. 24.b
Sorell.	45.2	Seedes, the choife.	23.b
Sauce of Apples.	84.b		23.b
Sauce of Peares.	85.2		24.b
Sheepe pild.	134.b	Semin oyle.	31,2
Smalladge.	54.b	Sefamum.	. 31.2
Sellars.	12.4		. 86.b
Sellars and Larders.	12,2		103.2
Sheep ficke of the langs, the cun	e.136.a		2.4
Sheepes cough, the cure.	136.2	Spinage.	54.2
Sheepe, their time of blo foming	g.131.b	Sponge.	51.b
Natiff.			Sperie.
Control of the Contro		10.50	

Sperie.	36.	1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	ne. 94.b
Some, foure moneths with Pi	g. 142.	Trees belped with wrine.	95.4
Swine-sties, their standing.	142.	a Trees, the trimming of their	oots. 93.b
Shepheards of Switzerland.	145.	a Trees their fat.	104.6
Sheepe delight in Musicke.	133.		95.2
Sheepe, few, and well fedde.	131.		95,2
Sheepe, of what age, and hor	o to buy		104.b
	130.b		104.b
Sheepe, kept abroad.	14.		67.2
Sheepe, when to buy.	131,2		ts. 67.b
Sheepe conered.	134.b		95.2
Sheep having swallowed a Hos	rseleach		e. 95.a
bis cure.	136.2		vg. 94.2
Scabious, the vertues.	181.b	Trees young, their proying.	94.b
1.33		Trees standing Sawtyer wife.	68.5
T		Trees standing Checker wife.	68.6
Tymber for building.	103.b	Trees their bowes.	104.b
Tymber for pumpes, and water	er pipes.	Trees, their order for graf	fing and
103.b. Ø	.104.2	planting.	70.2
Trees, the North side mosy.	100.b	Trees, their blood.	104.
Trees of knowledge, why create	d. 67.a	Trees lannced.	49.5
Tree foresbewing his fall.	103.4	Trees, their feede plot.	72.b
Tree neuer without fruit.	86.a	Trees their kindes. 68	.b.69.2
Tree the wifeft.	88.a	Trees their dounging.	93.b
Trees best for tymber.	100.b	Trees their dropping. 68	b.94.b
Trees how to keepe from worme	s. 85.a	Trees their lone.	92,b
Trees springing best of the feede		Trees their remoning.	94.6
Trees soone growen, the fruit		Trees their veines.	104.b
not.	93.b	Trees their wennes.	103.2
Trees graffed in the stocke.	70.b	Trees their shadowes. 69	294.2
Trees graffed betwixt wood and	rinde.	Tymber for Plowes.	103.b
	69.2	Tymber forwater workes.	104.2
Trees whereon to be graffed.	69.b	Tymber for bowes.	104.2
Trees when to be proined.	94.b	Tymber for Bordes, for Axelm	
Trees foring flowly of the feed.	89.2	Haftes and Handles, for Ga	
Trees alwayes greene.	67.b	Lances, for Tables , Shippes	, Tar-
Trees to be pulled.	99.b	gess , Sheathes , Pullies , a	
and the second			cames.

Tenants changing, not good, Their labour more to be regarded then their rent, their ordering. 45.2 Thrushes. 162.b V Winter grainethe best. 27. Wheat sisteene dayes in blade, sisteen in slowre, and sisteene in riping. 26 Willow grones. 99 Willow grones. 99 Willow prones. 99 Willow prones. 99 Willow prones. 99 Willow the kindes. 103.b Uine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.2 Uine plants, their planting. 77.2 Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Uintage. 77.2 Vine, his easie husbandry. 76.2 Vine the placking of his leanes. 80.2 Vine the placking of bis leanes. 80.2 Vine his propping. 80.2 Vine his propping. 80.2 Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vines but late in Germanic. 75.2 Vines show to se planted. 77.2 Vines how to se fland. 76.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with	Beames. 103.2.0 b	104.2	W . 65	
labour more to be regarded then their rent, their ordering. 45.2  Thrushes. 162.b  V  Veronica, his vertues. 182.a Vernish. 105.b Vine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Vine the planting. 77.a Vine the planting of his leanes. 80.a Vine the propping. 80.a Vine his propping. 80.a Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vines but late in Germanic. 75.a Vines how to set planted. 77.a Vines how to set planted. 77.a Vines how to fland. 76.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with				65.b
Thrushes.  162.b  V  Veronica, his vertues.  182.a Vernish.  Vine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine the planting of bis leanes.  Vine the planting of bis leanes.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vines but late in Germanic.  Vines how to set planted.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines, his friendship and hatred with  Vines planted, their ordering.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  Vines first plant.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vines first planted.  78.b Vines how to be dunged.  78.b Vi	labour more to be regarde	ed then		104.4
Thrushes.  V  Veronica, his vertues.  Veronica fifteene dayes in blade, fifteene in riping. 26  Willow the kendes.  Vood cutting, the feason,  Woods coppised their senering.  Verods coppised their senering.  Veronica, his feason,  Verods coppised their senering.  Verods coppised their senering.  Verods coppised their senering.  Verods coppised.  Veronica, his feason,  Verods coppised.  Verods coppised.  Veronica, his vertues.  Verods coppised.  Veronica, his vertues.  Verods coppised.  Verods coppised.  Veronica, his versues.  Verods coppised.  Verods coppis				27.2
Veronica, his vertues. 182.a Veronica, his vertues. 182.a Veronica, his vertues. 182.a Vernish. 105.b Vine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Vine the planting of his leanes. 80.a Vine the placking of his leanes. 80.a Vine his propping. 80.a Vine his propping. 80.a Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vines but late in Germanic. 75.a Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines planted, their ordering. 75.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with		162.b		
Veronica, his vertues.  Veronica, his vertues.  Veronica, his vertues.  Veronica, his vertues.  Vine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a  Vine plants, their planting.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine his propping.  Vine the placking of bis leanes.  Vine the placking of bis leanes.  Vine his propping.  Vine his irist plant.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vines but late in Germanic.  Vines but late in Germanic.  Vines mingled, not to be planted.  Vines how to stand.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines, his friendship and hatred with  Vines, his friendship and hatred with	V			
Veronica, his vertues.  Veronica, his vertues.  Veronica, his vertues.  Vine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a  Vine plants, their planting.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine, his easie husbandry.  Vine the placking of bis leanes.  Vine the placking of bis leanes.  Vine his propping.  Vine his propping.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vine's but late in Germanic.  Vine's obst late in Germanic.  Vine's mingled, not to be planted.  Vines how to stand.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines, his friendship and hatred with  Vines first plant.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines first planted.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines his friendship and hatred with	0.001			99.2
Vine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a Vine plants, their planting. 77.a Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Woods coppied their senering. 100 Wine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Woods for Mast. 97.a Wine the planting of his leanes. 80.a Vine the planting of his leanes. 80.a Vine his propping. 80.a Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vines but late in Germanic. 75.a Vines but late in Germanic. 75.b Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with	Deronica, his vertues.	182.4	9	103.b
Uine plants, which, and how to get, their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a Woods coppied.  Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Woods for Mast. 97.a Wine the planting of his leanes. 80.a Wine the planting of his leanes. 80.a Wine his propping. 80.a Wine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vines but late in Germanic. 75.a Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with		105.b		103.b
their keeping, their length. 77.b 78.a  Vine plants, their planting. 77.a  Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b  Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b  Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b  Vine his easie husbandry. 78.b  Vine the placking of bis leanes. 80.a  Vine the placking of bis leanes. 80.a  Vine his propping. 80.a  Vine his propping. 80.a  Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b  Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b  Vine's but late in Germanic. 75.a  Vine's obst late in Germanic. 75.b  Vines guttered. 75.b  Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a  Vines how to stand. 76.b  Vines planted, their ordering. 75.b  Vines how to be dunged. 78.b  Vines, his friendship and hatred with		to get,		100.2
Vine plants, their planting. 77.a Vine, his easie husbandry. 78.b Vintage. 77.a Vine the placking of his leanes. 80.a Vine his propping. 80.a Vine his propping. 80.a Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vine's but late in Germanic. 75.a Vines southered. 75.b Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines planted, their ordering. 75.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with				99.b
Vine, his easie husbandry.  78.b  Vine gard stony.  Vine the placking of his leanes.  Vine his propping.  Vine his first plant.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vines but late in Germanie.  Vines southered.  Vines minigled, not to be planted.  Vines how to stand.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines, his friendship and hatred with  Vines for Mast.  Woods for Mast.  Whood greatly cherished by the R.  Whoods milde, their fruits.  96  Wheat the kindes.  25  Wheat the kindes.  25  Wheat and the Vine slowre together  Wine of Apples.  Wine of Peares.  Walnut tree, his vse.  103  Wooles the best.  134  Water Betony, his vertues.  183				100.2
Vine the placking of his leanes. 76.2 Vine the placking of his leanes. 80.2 Vine his propping. 80.2 Vine his first plant. 74.2 Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.6 Vines but late in Germanic. 75.2 Vines southered. 75.6 Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.2 Vines how to stand. 76.6 Vines planted their ordering. 75.6 Vines how to be dunged. 78.6 Vines, his friendship and hatred with		78.b		97.2
Vine the placking of his leanes. 80.a  Vine his propping. 80.a  Vine his propping. 80.a  Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b  Vines but late in Germanic. 75.a  Vines guttered. 75.b  Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a  Vines how to stand. 76.b  Vines how to stand. 76.b  Vines planted, their ordering. 75.b  Vines how to be dunged. 78.b  Vines, his friendship and hatred with		-		be Ro-
Vine the placking of his leanes. 80.a  Dine his propping. 80.a  Uine his first plant. 74.a  Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b  Vines but late in Germanie. 75.a  Vines yoked. 75.b  Vines guttered. 75.b  Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a  Vines how to stand. 76.b  Vines planted their ordering. 75.b  Vines how to be dunged. 78.b  Vines, his friendship and hatred with	Vineyard flony.	76.2		96.2
Vine his propping.  Vine his first plant.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vine his wonderfull encrease.  Vines but late in Germanic.  Vines but late in Germanic.  Vines yoked.  Vines guttered.  Vines mingled, not to be planted.  Vines how to stand.  Vines how to stand.  Vines planted, their ordering.  Vines how to be dunged.  Vines, his friendship and hatred with  Vines, his friendship and hatred with		So.a		96,2
Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74-b. Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74-b. Vines but late in Germanic. 75-b. Vines but late in Germanic. 75-b. Vines guttered. 75-b. Vines guttered. 75-b. Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77-a. Vines how to stand. 76-b. Vines how to stand. 76-b. Vines how to stand. 76-b. Vines how to be dunged. 78-b. Vines how to be dunged. 78-b. Vines, his friendship and hatred with		80,2		39.2
Vine his wonderfull encrease. 74.b Vines but late in Germanie. 75.a Vines yoked. 75.b Vines guttered. 75.b Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines planted, their ordering. 75.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with		74.2		25.b
Vines but late in Germanie. 75.a Vines yoked. 75.b Vines guttered. 75.b Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines planted, their ordering. 75.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with		74.b		
Vines yoked.  75.b  Vines guttered.  75.b  Vines mingled, not to be planted.  77.a  Vines how to stand.  76.b  Vines planted, their ordering.  75.b  Vines how to be dunged.  78.b  Vines, his friendship and hatred with  75.b  Vines, his friendship and hatred with	Vines but late in Germanie.	75.a		26,2
Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.2 Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.2 Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines planted, their ordering. 75.b Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with	Vines yoked.	75.b	Wine of Apples.	84.2
Vines mingled, not to be planted. 77.a Vines how to stand. 76.b Vines planted their ordering. 75.b Vines how to be danged. 78.b Vines, his friendship and hatred with		75.b		85.b
Vines how to stand.  Vines planted their ordering.  75.b  Wines how to be dunged.  78.b  Wines how to be dunged.  78.b  Water Betony, his vertues.  183		. 77.2		103.2
Vines planted their ordering. 75.b Wooles the best. 134 Vines how to be dunged. 78.b Water Betony, his vertues. 183 Vines, his friendship and hatred with				
Vines, his friendship and hatred with Water Betony, his vertues. 183	Vines planted, their ordering.	75.b		134.2
Vines, his friendship and hatred with		78.b		183.a
		ed with		1
73.5	certaine trees.	75.b	Y	
Vine when to plant. 77.2 Yew tree, his vse. 104	Vine when to plant.	77.2	Yew tree, his vie.	104.2
Vine bis graffing. 77.2	Vine bis graffing.	77.2		. 0
Vine who first found. 74.b Z		74.b	Z	177.5
The state of the s		0. b.c.	Zea.	27.b
75.a Ziziphos.		75.a	Ziziphos.	\$9.2

Finis Tabula.

#### 

The names of such Authours, and

Husbands, whose authorities and obseruations are vied in this Booke.

#### The Bible, and Doctors of the Church.

Hefiodus. Riffotle. Tragus. Aristophanes Hippocrates. Varro. Homer. Vegetius. Athenæus. Horace. Virgill. Anatolius. Alexander Aphrod. Ifocrates. Vieruuins. Iulius Firmicus. Xenophon. Alexander Neap.

Lucian.

Inlius Pollux. Appulcus,

Englishmen Ægineta. S. Nich, Malbee. Ælianus. Macer. M. Cap.Bingham. Martiall. Budaus. Mathiolus. M. John Somer Cato. M. Nical Yetzwert. Nicander. Cardanus. Callianus. Oppian. M. Fitzherbert.

Quid. M. Will. Lambert. Celfus. Perrus de Crefc, M. Tuffer. Columella.

M. Thom. Wherenhall\_ Constantine. Plato.

Platina. M. Rich, Deering. Democritus, Didymus. Both the Plinies M. Hen. Brockhull.

Dio. Plutarch. M. Franklin.

Dioscorides. Polibius. H. King. Diodorus Siculus. Richard Andrewes Ruellius.

Faccius. Solon. Henry Denys. William Prat. Florentine. Sotron. Galen. Theocritus. John Hatche.

Heliodorus. Theophrastus, Phillip Partridge. Herodotus. Thucydides. Kenworth Detforth

XUM

....

They have been Defined



the first books, entreat

#### The first Booke of Husbandry:

Entreating of Earable-ground, Tillage and Pasture.

Cono. Rigo. Metella. Hermes.

CONO.

trampling of Dorles without, goe Hermes go know what frangers there are.

Heames, Sir, If my aght faile

me not, it is Rigo, the principall Secretary.

METELLA. A goody matter, starts you have beene two dayes at home, and now you must be fent to; agains to the Court, perhaps to be fent abroad in some emballage.

CONO. Gob forbib : funge the belt, it may be be comes

RIGO. Ah maifter Cono. I am glad I have found you in the midft of your country pleafures: furely you are a happy man, that thifting your felfe from the turmoiles of the Court, can picke out to quiet a life, and giving over all, can ferretly lie hid in the pleafant Countries, inffering by in the means time to be tolk with the cares and businesse of the common weals.

CONO. Surely I mult confeste I have taken a happy way, if thele goods of the Earth wound suffer me to entop such happy neste, that have bequeathen the troublesome life of the Court

1

#### The first Booke, entreating

to the bottome of the fea. But whate bee you fatene, to bring me agains to mp ale troubles, being thus happily tifcharge.

Rigo. Rothing leffe, though I would be very glad you frould not so hattily socials the Court, not rid your selfe from the affaires of the Common wealth. You know we are not borne to line to our selnes, not at our owne pleasures: but so, our country, our Common-wealt, a kate whereto we are called. There cannot be a worse thing then so; a man to suffer his Country socials, to come into the hands of villanous persons, and to recover with himselfe, that being out of Gunthot, he hath left the hurly burly of government. And though Caro had no need of Rome, yet Rome and Caro his friends had neede of him.

Luculles.

Scipio.

Ciccro.

CONO. 3 grant von as long as veres and frength will beare it, we are bound to ferue in our Docation: but as you pour felle are briven to confelle, there is formctime a reasonable cause of air uing over. Lucullus is highly commended, that while his body was firong & lufty, he applyed bimfelle wholy to the fernice of bis country a that after his bonozable fernice both abroad and at home, in the end be got himfelfe quietly againe to his boke, And Scipio who after he bab conquered both Carehage & Numidia mascontent rather to leave of a reft bimfelfe, then to bo as Marius bib twho after formany bidozics and atchiuch bonours could net content himfelfe when he was wel, but puft by with brimeafure able befire of glozy e gonernment, would in his old accomtend with yong men : whereby he brought himfelfe at the length to most miserable miserie. Surely Ciccro toke a better may by much, when after the operthiolo of Catelins confpiracy, he rather contented bimfelfe to live quietly at home, then by ambitious the termeduling with the contentions of the Common-Wealth, to being himself in danger of his life. The belire of bearing rule in a common weale, is to be moderated with a bounded modeffie. Specially in this age of ours, when Courts are Subien to fuch enmes batrets flatteries Canbers coucteus & ambitious belires, and where no place is left for bertuonines & Christian Amplicts. tie. Thele are the things that brone Socrates & Plato from their common-weales a polikewile kove me being now of god veres and fickely, the Court forfaken, in this my page cottage at home.

R 1 a 0. Pea, but age is no inflicient excels for pon to leave
the governing of your Country. Pon know, iera vian Birds
yegortor, the labour of young men e the counfell of all men, and
how those common-weales are safeliest alwayes guided, where
old mens heads, and young mens armes are throug. Father
Nestor got great commendation so his counsell at the siege of Nestor.
Troy, where as Pelcus and Lacrees were despited and accomps
ted so bench-whitters at home.

CONO. Some are tickled with glory: some with gaine, gifts, a rewards, retaine the cockrowen Courtiers, yea such as have one of their feet already in the grane. Powif we would content our selnes with this life, a give our scheet othe true a perfect life.

In Princes Courts we should not gape nor gafe,
Nor ill successe in success should vexe our minde:
No vaine nor fond deuse our eyes should dafe,
Nor lewed affection should our fancie blinde.
All such things should be left and layd aside.
Now lives also each out of order quite:
And to our shame the sine away doth side,
All seeke to live, but none to live y pright.

As the Poet excellently well switch in his Epigram, it is ere the part of a mad man, or a corcombe, to run headlong without any profit into banger, when as he may line goody a quictly at home without all trouble, as our olde fathers were wont to boe.

RIGO. It is bery true: the Poet accompleth him bletter to whom this life can happen. But in the meane time you are alone, and lead your life with beatts, loids of the Country, and trees, that have spent all your time before among wife and honourable personages. Socrates affirmeth wisebome to be lear. Socrates neb in Cities, and not smoon beatts and trees.

CONO. Socrates his indigement, though I will not gaintlay, yet it appeareth by his disputations with lichomachus in Xenophon, that he did not disalow the Country mans life. And as for my living alone, it almost hapneth here to me, as Gicero reporteth Scipio to say, that he was never less alone, then when he was alone: so being alone, I have continual conference with the gravues a will well menused; either I apply my selfe wholeve the sacred

A 2

Dacies

#### The fift Booke, entreating

The vie of a

Diacles of the Wiophets and Apoules, toho teachthe true wifebome, by which both Bings tule, and paintes gouerne, and by which our foules (which we chiefely ourbt to regard) are fen. which also those bute be the perfect way to that everlating Court aboue: of when I lift, I have the company of the great tel Beinces and Monarchies of the world, with whom 3 conferre of the doubtfull fate & gouernment of Common weales, in reading the Diffozies and Chronicles of the world, travels ling as it were throughout all nations, or reading the workes of fact as write in hulbandete, I occupie my minde in the beholbing the wonderfull workemanthip of God in Tres, Plants, and Beaffs, whereby in the Creature, Jacknowledge the Creatoz. And beffes thefe bumbe companions, my friends come fometimes to fe me, fometimes Gentlemen, fometime Boblo men, fometime the Painte himfelfe bouchfafeth to bifft mee : fo that there is frarrely any bay but that fome come onto me, forme for their pleafure forme for goo-will, & forme for their bulls. nelle:for to my kiends and my neighbouts, I neither beny my counfel, not my tranel. Therefore it is bery expedient that god choife be made of Lawiers, e biftret men for the Countric, als tonges provides, they give their coincilities a without wages. Many times befor you from the Court lend me bither moreffe and arbitrements to be tries before me. Thus have I in the Countrie flucter and pleafanter company then you have, either in the Court or Ettie.

Rico. Lell me then I beliech pon, how you beltoto your time, and hoto you are occupied all thenay, for I doubt not but you doe as much as in you lieth to spend the time as proficably

as pou map.

CONO. I will tell you throughly, and not differable with you, if you will give me the hearing, and to begin, I will ble the words and vertes of the forefaid Poet, through in other his logitings france honell, yet in this freaking very grave e wife,

First ferued on knees the Malellie divine,

My feruants next and ground I ouerlooke?

To early man his taske I doe affigue,

When this is done, I get me to my booke.

The commonly to rife first of all my felfe, Specially in Some mer , when we lote the besithfullest & fluetest time with dagmilmelle. Ariltorie accounteth earely mang the belt, both for benith wealth, Elibie. In the winter if 3 be loath to rife if rw ther the bufeafonablenes of the weather, or fichenes caute me to heepe my bed, I commit all to my Steward, wholefaith & bili. gence Tam fure of whom I baue fo well infranteb, that I may fafely make bim my beputte : I bane alfo Euriclia my mato, fo failfull in hulwiferp, that the map well be mp wines faffragen. thefe twante we appoint to supply our places; but if the weathet and timeferue, I play the workemafter my felfe. And though I have a barlife as failfull as may be, pet remembring the old fape ing that the best boung for the field is the Mafters fot, the best Thomas provender for the horfe the Patters cre, I play the overfeer my doung for felfe. That it is hollome to rife earcly, 3 am perfenabed both by ground is the counsel of the most grave 13bilosophers, and by mine ofone the matter erperience. When my feruants are all fet to worke, and enery man as buffe as may be, I get me into my clotet to ferue Gob. and to read the holy Deriptures: (for this orber 3 alwayes here. to appoint my felle every pay my talke, in reading fome part elther of the old Wettament og of the Acto:) that done, 3 togite og resp fuch things as I thinke molt mabful, or bifuatch what buff nelle fo euce 3 have in no boufe, or with futers abroad. A little before binner I walke abroad, if it be faire, either in my garben. at in the fields, if it be foule, in mp.galerp: when 3 come in, 3 find an egge a chicke, a pecce of kio, or a pecce of beale, filb, butter, and fuch like as my foldes, my parde or my bairy and filbrones will pelo: fometime a fallat, or fuch fruits as the garben or orchard both beare : which biduals without any charges my wife proufbeth me, wher with I content mp felfe af wel, as if I had the bame tick bilb in Curope : I neuer lightly fit aboue one boure at my meat: after birmer & paffe the time with talking with my wife. my fernants, or if I have any furth my cheffs: I rife a walke as bout my ground, where I view my worke men, my Baffures, my Devotors,my Coure, and my Catteil. When 3 am in the Countrie, I not every bap, if the weather be god, and no other great butinetic, about my ground: if not every day, at the traft

#### The first Booke, entreating

once in two or thee Daves: as often as 3 come to the Citie from the Countrie, I doe the like, to bnderftand how my ground is hul banded, and what is done, what budone: neither do 3 ever go about it, but some and commeth of my travaile. In the meane while Thehold the monderfull wifedome of Asture, and the incomprehenfible working of the most mighty God in bis creatures, which as Cicero truly affirmeth, is the belicateft foo of the quell.lib I. Soule. & the thing that maketh bs come nerell unto God. Here waich I with my felfe, the benefits and wonderfull incakes of Cop who bringeth forth graffe for the Cattell, & groene hearbe for the ble of man, that he may bring food out of the earth, accorbing to the Plaime. Dere be preacheth to me.

Academ.

Pfal. 104.

The fruitfull Earth that tild in fundry wife, vnto the eye her goodly fruits dorh yeeld : The Violets sweet that each where thicke doe rife. and staine with purple die the pleasant field. The field with hearbes, the hearbes with branches braue, The glittering flowers that shine like starres of light,

And foringing fall disclose the grace they have,

Each hearbe with fundry flowre most sweet in light. What weakeman is there in the world, that is able to frame or counterfeit fuch heavenly mozks. Who could of a liender graffe. make Wheat or 18read and of a tender thrigge bring forth force ble a licour as Wine: but only that mighty Lozd that hath creas ted al things vilible & invilible - With thefe lights bo I recreate my minde, and give thanks buto God the Creatoz and conferuer or all things, for his great and exceeding goones, 3 fing the fong, To thee, D Lord, belongeth praifes in Sion, or, Praifethou the Lozd Dimy foule, ec. beferhing God to bleffe the gifts that he bath given bs, through his bounteous liberalitie to enrich the fictos, and to profper the Corne and the Graffe, and that he wil cromne the piere with his plenteoulnelle, that we may entry the fruits of the earth with thankelgining, to the honour of him, and the profit of our neighbour. Then returning home, I goe to wate ting or reading, or firth other bufines as 3 bane: but with thuty. of invention, I never meddle in thee houres after I have bined. I suppe with a small pittans, and after supper I epther seldome

#### of Earable-ground and Tillage.

az never write or read, but rather palle the time feina mo thene come home from the Field, mp Dren bragging bome the ploin mith weary necks, in beholding the pleafant paffures (weetly finelling about my house,o; my hearos of cattell lowing bard by me: fometime 3 lift to reft me bider an old Bolme. Ometime mon & greene graffe, in the mean time paffeth by me the pleafant Miver, the Areames failing from the fprings with a comfortable noile, oz elle walking by the Kincrlide, oz in my garden, oz næreft nathures. I confer with my wife or fernants of bufbanber, ans pointing what I will have bone : if my Bailiffe baue any thing to fav. if any thing be to be bought og folo: fog a goo bul band, as Cato faith.muft rather be a fellar then a buyer. Somtimes (fpects A good ally in ininter) after fupper, I make my Dinifter to tel fomthing bushand out of the holy Scripture, oz elle fome pleafant flogy, fo that it muftracher be honeft a godly and fuch as may ediffe. I two or three houres af, be a fellar ter lupper I get me to bed, and commonly, as I lato befoze, the buyer, laft in the house, ercept my Chambelaine and my Steward.

RIGO. In the meane time being farre from the Church. neither can you heare the Sermons, not be veelent with pour toife and your household at service : for your othne part, though pe map supply the matter with reading, pet your wife and pour feruants can not fo bee.

CONO. For my part (without baunt be it (poken, 7 have fernice enery day at certains appointed houres, where preacheth to me bally the Dapphets, the Apoftles. Balil, Chryfoltome. Nazianzen, Cyril, Cyprian, Ambrofe, Austen, and other excellent preachers, whom 3 am fure, 3 heare with greater profit, then if I fhould heare your fir John lack-latines, and folish fellowes in your Churches. By wife also being given to reading, readeth the Bible, a certaine Blaimes, translated into our owne tongue. if there be any thing to hard or barke for her. I make her to bus derstand it: belides, the bath private prayers of her owne that the bleth:in the meane time I have one, that boon the holy baies (If the weather or our bulines be fuch as we can not go to church) reaveth the Colpel, teacheth the Catechilme, and minittreth the Sacraments when time requires ; but in the Sommer time, if the weather be not unreasonable, luce goe alwayes boon the

Sundaves

#### The first Booke, entreating

Sundaies and fritigall bayes to our Barith Church, where Inch beare our Corate, and receans the bleded Communion : as for my boufcho's 3 bring them to this order that the palipaics forme Sabbefore their soing to worke, sat their comming to meales. The faving of faint It is waitten of Anthonic the Ermite, that being bemaunden of a certaine Philosopher bow he could in the folitarie wilbernelle Anthony. without any bokes occupic himfelfe in the ftubie of Dhinitie: he ansipered, that the whole world ferued him for bokes, an a well furnithed Library: in which he alwayes read the wonder. full workemanthin of God, which in every place frood before his eves. In the like fort have I my household fernants well inffrue ged in the chiefe grounds of true Keligion, who leaning to their pocation and innocencie of their life, not carried away with the baine entifements and pleafures of Lities, do behold the spaies flie of God in his workes, and boner the Creatour in his Erea. tures, not onely boon Sundayes, but enery pay in the vere. where they may also beare the little birds, and other creatures in their kindes, fetting out the glosp and Palettie of Cob.

R 100, Dou forme to tell me of a Schole of Diuinity . not of a Bulband-mans cottage: this was the very order of the Bar triarkes, and the monafteries in the Waimatine Thurch.

CONO. Indiede Chryfoltome would have all Chaffians. Homil. 16. maried folkes and bomnaries, to lead their lines according to the rule and order of Monkes: but of fuch Monkes as lived in those bayes, not fuch gon-fellowes as ours be now: for the mofele therplaces. from of a Bonhe in that age, was no other but the life of the pur reft and perfedelt Chuftians, which binde of life the olde Batrie arkes, as the beriptore doe witneffe, bib leab.

> Rico. Foftentimes wondzed, that having fo godly a houfe and to well furnified in the citie as you have, what you meant to Define rather to bivell in the Countrie : but now that I for the good weer of your life, 3 lesie to luender any longer.

> No. It is naturall to me, and left me by my perents to Delight in bulbanday: for my father, my Grandfather.my great Gantfather , and as farre as 3 can fetch my petigrer , atl my Annechours were occupiers of bul bandy, and increal borne and bied in this house that you lie.

> > RIGO.

woon the 16. of Mat. and in o-

Rigo. Tremembernot long fince, being in buffnoffe toit the Chauncelias Hyplographus, a lober man , your maighbour. and one that belights in buf bondy, it was my change to fe pour father, furely a man toould have taken bim for all Lacrees in Homer, at rather for Abraham, or Ifac and as the Chancellos talo me be was foure-froze and ten veres albe : but fo faire be bare bis age, as that I toke him to be fearce fiftie, his memory and inderment famed to ferue him wonderous mell he bould talke of the orders of the Countrie, of the autiquities there as bouts, of the Boxies of the Socripture, la functing and eloquentin. as I was wonderfully in love with him : beebat the Bronbets and the Changeliffs at his fingers enos, fo that I fato the noble men had bim in chimation not without great caufe.

CON O. Inner he toke fuch belight in the holy fortplurene as no pay poffed him inithout reading forme part of them: he bled to goe commanly every bay to the next Barift Church metheril would be miffe any Sermon that he could heare of he brought both Breather and Brieft into other, and caused themeto frame:

their lines according to the rule of the Gofpelt.

RIGO. Pour paint me here the natterne of a Billion of and onerfier : indeed the moft part of thele Bueffe bab need of fach overfixes to referame their concloufnede, the fixing of all their abufes.

CONO. La returne to the quietnes or me Duftiantre from tohence 3 bigreffeb: boeyon pet marnatte boto 3 can belighting felfe with this fo honeft and profitable a quietnes, then which in the inderment of the bolieft a wifeft men, there is nothing maze boneft not better, neither is there beffee any trace of tifemore The commost for a Gentleman nor frauatle more acceptable to Con, then mendarion is the tilling of the ground. The people in the oldtime (as Cato, a of Hufman of great belevoine, sa tracher of traffamory noth to mett) bandry. as oft as they would give a man the name of an honell men, they bould call him a god bufband, comprehensing in that name as much commempation, as they could give han : belides mell Emperours mightte liftigs and Emperoza were no tohit affamenta partife and Kings, this trade, as Xenophon reporteth of king Cirus: the little touteth of Hul-Quintu, Currius of Abdolominus, Nums the king of the Romans bundry.

#### The first Booke, entreating

bare a fingular affection to bulbander, for that hee thought there

was no kind of life fo fit to maintaine either peace of warres, of for the provision of a mans life, being rather a giver of good life, then riches. Mozeoner, Hiero, Philometor, Attalus, Archilaus, and a great number of Brinces moze, were belighted with the profession of busbandzy: this knowledge is also highly commenbed by Homer, the very fountaine in his time of wildome, where as bee describeth Alcinus the king of the Pheaces, whose belight in the planting e pleafures of his orchards was wonderful. And Lacrees the olde man, that with his continuall occupying of buf bander, brought his mind better to beare the absence of his son. Heliodus in his work ere Egyov xai nuegov gineth great praile to Aftres, that being banifhed the city, gave himfelfe to the life of the countrie: yea, the ground bath before time bin tilled by the bands of Emperoze, the Carth in the meane time, reiopring to be tozne with a victozers thare, and to be plowed with the hands of atriumphant conquerer, either because they bealt with the likere. gard in their feed, as in their warres, or bled fuch biligence in the come fields, as they bid in the campe, or elfe because all things handled with boneft and vertuous fingers profper the better, be Serranus. ing more carefully loked to. Serranus when he was called to hos nour, was found folding of fieb. The Dictators office thas brought Cincinatus by the purcenant to Cincinatus, being all naked & befmeared with fiveat and buff. The purcenants had first their name of calling Senators and Couernors out of the Countrie to the Citie. In like fort had this name at the first, the Fabil, the Pilons, the Curi, the Lentuli, the Ciceroes, the Pilumni, and other auncient houles. Horace telleth, that of bufbanduren bane bene beed the ballantell and worthieft foulbiers: affirming, that the hand that bath bene bled to the spade, proueth often of greatest value in the field. Homer reporteth agreat baliancie in Viiles his neat heard, in the flaughter of those fellowes that would have ranifles his mi-Areffe. Doft certaine it is, that a great number of Empergurs to be Em- bane forung from the ploin. And to let others goe, it is knowne that the Emperoza Galerius & Maximinus came both from poze Bearomen to the imperiall bignitie. The like is witten of lufline, Conftantianus, Probus, and Aurelianus, The Cories reports

Husbandmen come perours.

that

that M. Curius the Empetour was found in his house booling of a rape rote, when he refuled the great fums of gold brought by the Samnits Emballadors. What thould I freake of the antimuitie of it the holy Scriptures beclare bulbanday to be the and quitte of cientest of all trades. And to begin with the bery beginning of Husbanman a that neither Oficis, not Dionifius, were the first founders dry. of this knowledge, as the Bainins fable, but that the most mightie Lazd himfelfe did firft ozdaine it: foz Adam and his fons were all hufoanomen, Noe was a planter of bines, Abraham Ifaac, and The first Iacob, were thepheares, Saul from his Affes, David from his Vines. then ineregalled to the crowne. Elius & Amos of thenberns were made prophets. Ozias as we read profested bufbandry, lefus the forme of Syrach commending bulbander about the reft faith his cultomably bled himfelfe to hold the plow to befue the cart a to kere cattell:but what nico we moze? Dur Saniour Chaift bimfelfe glazieth to be the fon of a hufbandman, a frameth his para bles of planting of bines of thepe & thepheards: mozeoner as it is in Luke, our Lord fæmeth to be a teacher of hufbanday, where he theweth, that tres are to be bigged about a bunged, that they may profper the better. For fiththis knowledge is of all other most imocent, without which it is most plaine we are not abte to live: the best men have alwayes imbraced it and the alb fas thers have ever counted it bery Tolen-German to wifebome. Cicero callethit the Diffris of Juftice biligence, and theiftines : fome others call it the mother and nurle of all other arts. For whereas we may live without the other, without this we are not mother & able to fullaine our life: belides the gaine that bereof arifeth is pure of most gobiv and least subject to enuy for it bath to beale with the all other earth, that reftozeth with gaine fuch things as is committed bn. Arts. to her frecially if it be furthered with the bleffing of God. The onely gentlemanly way of encreasing the house, is the trade of bufbanday: and for this cause they were alwayes accounted the perfecteft Bentlemen , that, content with the liging their Aunceltoss left them , lined in the Countrie of their Lands, The wortrot medding with figging, chopping, and changing, not fee, thineffe of hing their tining by handicrafts. M. Varro in his time , fayth, dry. there was great complaint made , that the Hathers forfabing the Blough anothe Sickle, began to creepe into the Towne,

#### The first Booke, entreating

and buffed themfelues rather with Bagronits and Didfommery

games, then with the Mincpard of the field, whereas the Co astnours of Mome to beniero the peere, as thep allignes onchy the minth day for butinede of the Citie, ethereft of the time for the thinge of the Countrie, inhereby being hardened with labor, in peace, they might the better be able to abide the tranaile of warres. Withich countrie people were alwayes preferred before the people of the Citie, and more Bobility thought to be in them that till the ground abroad, then in those that living idely within the walles, fpent their time bider the fanoto of the penthoufe: except a man will, with the common fort, thinke it more bonck to get his liming with the blos and calamitie of pore foules, or not baring to beale with the fwozd, to make his gaine of mare chanbise, and being a creature of the land, contrary to his hinde, gine hinfelle to the rage of the beas, and the pleafuce of the Windes, wantering like a bird, from those to those, ant country to countrie, at to follow this goody profession of balwing at & barre, for game to open his fames at every bench. Surely, as I fair before, this onely bath bene ener counter the innocentes trade of life of all men, and in all ages. Hy bufbanday were made rich the group fathers, Abraham, Lot, Iacob, ambloab, and most certaine it is, that this profession & this gaine is most acceptable to Coo, when hee commanged Adam to till the ground, and to get his living with the fluent of his brownes. Thus is bulbandip of fuch authority, as God with his open witnesse hath allowed it, and afterwards by his fernant Mofes bath about his bleffing but to it, lapling, I will give the ground my bleffing in the firt years, and it thall bring forth the fruits of three veeres. And againe, If pou well keipe my commandements , 3 will fend pour rainte in one featon, and the earth thall veelo ber increase and your trees thall be loven with fruit, the thrething time thall lafte till the bintage, and the bintage that endure till the folding time, a pour that eat pour bread with plent coulings. Withat can there be note twose plenfant to a Chailtian man, than to get his living byfut) meanes as he knoweth outh pleafe God, and to play the White topher in the most west contemplation of the benefits of Coo, to acknowledge and renerence the wildome a power of the DIMINE

Genel.3.

Hurbandry pleafing to God. Leutan binine spatetie, and his bounteouthelle to mankinds, to give thankes and praise for his governet, the very hearnes and creatures in the field in the meane time preaching onto is:

R. 100. You frame me here of a hulbandman a dinine, and almost bying mee in minde to become a hulbandman, juho almaies hitherto with the common lost, accounted this hulband

rie to be a beaftly and beggarly occupation.

CONO. What Diminitie there is in it, and what a field of. the acknowledged benefits of God, pou bane heard. That the common fort obe thinke it a beattly and beggerly kinde of life. it is no maruell, lith the common people be never lubges right. The common people bor wonder at the pompe of the Court. and judge them for the happiet men that beckt with gold and purple, are in greated fauour with Poinces, and Officers, and Councelloss to them, little knowing in the moure time what beanes of foroless lies his onder that brane a glittering mifery. The common fort preferreth thamefull and beattip belicaffe before hones e vertuous labour, toping to confume the night in drunkennes, lechery, and billany, and the day in fleepe & pating. thinking fuch happy as neither behald the rifing not letting of the Summe. But thole that are of lounder tudgement, account the hulbandman most happy, if they buew their owne felt titie to whom the Carthin a facre quieter maner both minifter a fufficient lining.

And though with gorgeous gates the building high,
With earthly greetings alwayes doe not flow,
Nor feeling garnifht gay with imagrie,

Nor rich attire wee fee, nor costly show : Yet stedfast state and life voskild of guile,

With wealth ynough and Pastures wide at will,
And people strong traind up to paine and toile,

And youth with diet (mall contented ftill,

Where Godly zeale and vertues all did dwell,

When Iustice last did bid the world farewell.

As the Bost bath most gravely written in the praise of the George, bulbandman. Aglus Sophidus was inogen happy by the Dracle of Apollo, because he occupied a small corner of Arcadia, but yet sufficient

#### The first Booke, entreating

fufficient for his linelod, where he spent his life without ever comming abroad: whose order of life sheweth, that he was nel-ther bered with greedy desire, neither with any other trouble of minde, as Pliny witnesseth. But I holde you to long with commendation of that which of it felse is sufficiently commended.

Dato, wife, 3 pray you let be goe to binner.

METELLA. Pour shall fir by and by. Pod morrow maister Rigo, I thought Xenoplutus had beene here, who vieth to setch my hulband away, he bath by chance bene now at home a weeke or twaine, iwhich some milliking, prefer him to most paintfull and troublesome busines, procuring him to be sent in embassage beyond the pillers of Hercules, and (which they should be loath to beare themselues) they cast all upon his backe, as a common packhorse, who being now old, reason would be would be spared and suffered to be in quiet, that being at the last free from the turmoiles of the world, he might give himselfe to his prayers, and prepare himselfe so beaven.

Rigo. It were more for the benefit of his Country, that man Ber Cono came offiner to the court, but he is the felbourer there, because he taketh such pleasure in his husbandry howbest, I came for no such purpose, but onely to bilite him, being my old friend.

CONO. You must beare with a womans babling.

RIGO. I pray you, fince it is not yet binner time, let be walke about, that I may bie your house till binner be readis.
CONO. If it please you. I will their you my boule, where I

haue appointed my kingbome.

RIGO, Pow furely you have as happy and as pleafant &

hingbome as may be.

Whois happy.

CONO. Indeed I confidenty felle happy in this, that contents ing my felf with my page effate, I belier no mage: for as he faith.

Horace.

The man that most doth heere possets.

Thou canst not instly happy name,
But he whom God with gifts doth blesse,
And well doth know to vie the same:
Him maiest thou rather rightly call,

A happy man about them all.

pappy

benut then a great foot of kings a princes of the topalo, that are lorns of many a large bountions. Riches are not to be measured by their multitude, but by the mind of the polletor. And as Da- Who is rich. pid faith, a little is better with the gooly, then the great riches of the wicked. Cincinatus occupied only 4.acres of ground. Socrates baning but 20. Markes in all the morla mas counterra rich man. So I with Virgill doe comment great soffellions, but had rather occupte little. Therefore loke not to fee here the boufe of Lucullus or Hyrcius, which is faid to be fall for 4000000. H S. fuch fately Divellings ; marble flozes, as Cicero fatth, I pefpile.

RIGO. Botwithstanding, here is all things faire, and as

it appeareth commobiou ap built.

CONO. For my part, 3 build my boule, as they lap moon bing to my purfe, agreable to my calling, e to my lithing. I will their you in order how 3 have cast it, following the abuile of 16comachus in Xenophon, whom Cicero both greatly commend. And first, the leat of my boule bath mooned me to build it after The order of this fort. Cato would have a man long in betermination to building of a build, but to plant and follower of hand. Dur fathers bere be house for the fore, observed the same, and seemed to foliate the councell of Countrie, Cato ant Columella, with whom agreeth also Plinie, that the owner built his houle in goo opber lo as neither the boule be to great for the land nor the land to much for the boule. And here in it is muitten, that L. Lucullus, and Qu.Scauola, were both to blame: for one of them had a greater boufe then was anflverable to his living: the other, which was Sezuola, built a fimaller boufe then his lining required, where both are bunzofitable to the mafisr: for the great rumous house, not only is more chargeable in building, but also afacth greater coft in the maintaining. Again, If the House be to litle it will be a beffruction a lotte of pour some and fruit : therefore it is greatly to purpole, in lubat fort wee. builde arbaine our house. Cato mould have the house so featen. as the ave be good about it, and (if it may be placet at the bot The feat of a tome of a bill, loking biredly South, e in a wholefome comer. houfe. Varros minbe is, to have it places tolvare the Caft, that it map have the Chanow in Summer , & the Summe in Williter : with lohom Columella agreeth, faying, that if abilitie, ferue the feats:

is to be withen in a holesome place (for Caro, as shall hersafter be shelved, would have healthy standing chiefely regarded) with a fruitful mould, some part of it champion, some hilly, lying Case of South, well inatered and tombed and standing not face off from some haven, or nanigable river, to the end he may cary and transport such things as him lifteth. Cornelius Tacitus insiteth that the Germans were wont to build their houses, as the hill, the Kiner, the Wish, or the Lake, would best suffer them.

RIGO. Dereof I thinke fprang at the first to many fur-

Lakes, and Wilmos.

CONO. It may be, pet ofhers bo counfaile, in no cafe to Let pour boule nere a Marth, or a great Kiner : for the Fens and Darthes, in the beat of the pere, Do fend forth weffilent and Beably bampes , and a great number of benomous creatures ; Subich bring, for tacks of their olde moilture infecteth the aree, and bresteth further and frange bileales. Homer affirmeth bery truly, that the ayee which in the morning commeth from the Miner, is bery buholfome and pangerous : and therefore if the house must needs be built niere a Miner, they would have such herbe taken, as the Miner rather frant on the backlibe of the boule, then before it: and that the frunt of the houle be turned from the burtfull & bubolefome winds, and placed towards the bealthieft quarters. Since all waters commonly with Dampill bapours in Bammer and Ainking cold mifts in Winter except they be well purged with bolefome Winters, be infer both man and beaft with peffilence: beff is it therefore in good & healthy places, to fet the boufe toward the Caft,or the Southet in fir Specied aires to place them against the Bouth. From the Socialit is got to beas far as may be because the winds that blow from the fea, are buboleforment the fpace tring betweet you anbit, pelos alinaves a loate bate aire. Pou matt beware belibes, that you fet not your boule by any great hie-way, left you be mole Leb with pallengers; and troubles oftentmes with more quells then you mould have.

Neighbourhood.

Rigo. As far as 3 remember, o's fellowes bit measure the gustines of their vivelling by the qualities of their neighbours.

CONO.

CONO. Dou fay bery well : indeed I had almost forgotten tt.a froward knaue to a mans neighbour, is not one of the leaft milchiefes, as thaibe lavo in the end of this boke. I have knowne funday god men, belirous of quietneffe, that have forfaken god Divellings, rather then they would abide the injuries and trong bles of fuch companions : wherefore Heliodus han fome reafon in faving:

As great a mischiefe is a froward knaue. As is the joy a neighbour good to have.

But you maruell what I meane by fuch a long preamble. fure In I am the longer in this matter because von thould buder frand the reason of building of my boule. For whereas there are sunber purpofes of building: fome build for pleafure fome for wans tonnelle, and fome for necessitie, I thought it good to recite the minds of the old writers, concerning the building of a boufe. And Subert as every one will not fuffer fuch curiofitie as they require in the placing of a house, some building boon rivers, some with out or within the Barth wals, who cannot thun the neighborhood of the river or the fea. some in lakes, some in woods, & some buils bing byon mountaines, are briven to fupply the befort of nature with art & industrie: I my felfe, fith I can by no means anoit the necencile of the river, bo feeke as much as in me lies, to turne a wap the discommodities: and because I fele the discommoditie of the riling of the floos, I have let my boule in this place without the banks, a mounted it as high as a could: and left the rage of the water, and force of the ife thould beare it away, I have planteb round about it great trees: and that I might than the bamps of the ground, and the blafts of butholfome winds, I have turned my dozes and my windowes to the wholfomet quarters.

Rigo, Surely, either von, oz vour ancestazs haue both coms mobioully and handlomely placed this houle: for the front is bow ble, one part loking towards the Caff, the other towards the South, and fo built with Galeries and Cables, as it both receis ueth the Sunne in Winter, and the Chabow in Summer : befibes, von haue afaire Bosch as you enter in, that keepeth away the winde and the raine from the pose.

CONO. All the one libe, if you marke it, where the frontis,

ticth South, receiving from the first corner, the rising of the sum in Winter, veilining some what from the West, whereby it is warme in winter, and not troubled with over-great heat in some mer: for this kinds of building hath an equal medly of the winter windes essumer windes so that it received the cole winds in sommer, and is not subject to the bitter blassain winter.

RIGO. Some part of the building, me thinketh, is after the Italian manner.

CONO. Some part of it being ruineus, I built after my fancie, and such as I found sound, I thought enough so; mee to have in reparations.

Riso. I pray you, proceed to describing of the rest. This base court seemes to be after the Italian fashion, with two gates.

Cono. This Court I thus denicomy felfe. Here was a kind of Court befoze, but not fo commodious: therefoze I made a fquare wall here with a great gate, for the bringing in of my carriages, a a lefter for people to pake in a ont. In the bow place here besides the posch. I have made a little walke, concred with a Time, with divers seats in it for shadow, where I many times walke a talke with such suters as I have: I have in it a table of stone to sup open when I am disposed. Duer against the gate, as you se, at the south side of the Court, there is a Bake-house, a Cornermil, with Duens for bread, other baked meates, there is also a Brewhouse, with an Dast for drying of malt to make bore with.

RIGO. Sirely, all very handome, and in very god order. Cono. These offices (for feare of fire) you see, are all severation the house: there is hereunto adiopning a faire Mell, which befores the service here, both also serve my lattchin, and other houses of office: for within the house, I have neither Well may Fountaine, which is a great discommodity, such as I would give a great deale of money to remedie, both for health a colenes in sommer and for watering my Gardens a Dechards. Whater is one of the principalest things to be eared so, as the greatest cause of health both in man a beast: but this want is supplied partly by a god Well without, a partly by Lesternes, receiving the raine water that sals in certaine Conduits and Hipes, which water is most wholesome so, the body; and beside, the river is not far off.

RIGO.

R 1 G o. Come on I pray you, let be fie this back-houle, I beare that you have a new falbioned spill, of your stone beuile.

Cono. Fon thall fee it. When as in a great house, there is great need of Corne milles, and the common Pilles, being farre off, the way foule, and I at mine own libertie to grind at home, or where I list, thinking to make a Pill here at home, when neither place nor authoritie will serve mee to build either a water mill or a wind mill, and a Querne, or a hand mill, ooth but a litle god: and to build a horse mill were more troublesome. When I saw the wheles that they vie to draw water with, turned with Alles or men, I thought in the like sort the lubele of a mil might be turned, a after this sort deutsed I this engine, which a couple of Asses, guided by a boy, doe easily turne, and make very fine meale, sufficient sor mine owne house, and most times sor my neighbours, whom I suffer to grinde toll see.

RIGO. Surely I like well your denice. Withat will not the

biligence of man bring to paffe ?

CONO. I finde it profitable buto me, but because it is not the specific way of grinding, I have beside a horse-mill, which if need require, is turned about with a Jade or two.

RIGO. Lo, here is a great lead placed handlomly in a brick furnace in the corner, which I thinke ferueth to brew withall.

Con o. Inded, to that end it is molt occupied, but it ferueth ather turnes befide.

RIGO. There is a Hopper (me thinketh) over the top of the Dalt: where to lerveth it?

CONO. At ferueth to convey bowne the spalt, after it is was tered but o the baircoloth, where it is dayed.

RIGO. Wiherefoze ferueth that great Tume ?

CONO, To water the Barley in . when need is, other wife it ferneth for a main fat. Hereby is a bake-house, and a pastrie with two Duens, one serving for household bread, the other for manchet for mine owne table, and for tarts and fine bakemeats. Here are also troughs to keepe meale in, and troughs to lay lead wen in, and there is a faire table to mould be pon.

RIGO. All is handlome; but what meanes this building

about your Court ?

00 20

XUM

25 2

CONO

CONO. These buildings severed from the rest, do serve for guest chambers, with a chamber for my hot house: this side you see lieth against the setting of the Sunne in Summer, where the Sunne may lie from none till night.

R 1 G 0. But that little 3le moated about, and senered from the court with a bridge, seemeth to be more gorgiously and sumptuously built. I take it to bee your owne lodging, where you,

your wife, and your fernants, meane to lye fafely.

Cono. It is even lo, and therefoze it is built byon a higher ground, both for the better syze and fayzer prospect: before, my Barben and my Drhard are adiogning to it, which with the sweet smell of the slowers, and the faire beautie of the trees, bringeth both health and pleasure. The windowes, for the most part open all Cast, and some Porth, very sew West, except from such chambers or galleries Southward, where I dine and sup, to receive the sunne in winter abundantly, and in summer very little: the Cower that you see serveth for my Dove-house.

RIGO. The great flights of this house must needs fill the

Maifters purle, and ferne the Bitchin Well.

Cono. Invert, if as that noble and passing well learned Varro affirmeth, they might be sold, as in some ages they have beine, at eight pound a payze, or that a man might meet with such soles, as Columella writeth of, that have given 40- pound for a paire: I graunt I could make a god handsome gaine of them, but as they be, they hardly serve mine owne table.

R-1 G o. Wahat both not the mad beffre of belicaffe procure? even in our bairs of late, I have heard, there was threeffore

Flozens ginen foz a papze.

CONO. I will keepe you no longer here about mine owne lodging, you have fene a great number of better houses, and peraduenture had rather overloke my out-houses.

RIGO. 3 had fo inded: pou haue, 3 fe, beuided pour houfe

into thee parts.

CONO. So Ithought it belt; one for my felfe, another for my bulbandmen, and the third for graine and fruit.

Rico. What meaneth this Cell bere, fo handfomely built

at the entrance ?

ON OB

SAME P

CO NO.

CONO. This is, Ar, my Ballittes leaging. I lay him by the gate, that he may be who goeth in and out, and what is brought and goeth forth: from thence he may also lake into the kitchin, and sie, a heare what is there done: so, beside the meate that is present, there are other things done there in the Whinter mornings. Duer my gate I have taid my Sectuary, from whence he may lake into the Court, and to the gate, and overlie his neighbour the Bailisse.

RIGO. Sparry fir, here is watch and ward indeede, this 3

thinke, you learned of Varro, for it is a part of his order.

CONO. Thus experience teacheth. Hereby is my flosehoule.
RIGO. Percifult Goo! what a feet of twies have you here?
CONO. Hefiodus would have a halband have ait his furniture ready, and will not have him boxroto in anytale.

Of others borrow not, left they refuse to lend,

So thou shale want, the time shall patte, and bulines never end. Therefore 3 baue fo furnithed my Bailiffe, as be hath of every fort thin, Marcus Varro binibeth his hulbander necessaries into thee parts : bowels inhere he puts his ofone fernants and fuch as he hireth: halfe bowels, where his working cattet be: a mutes, be thefe that you fie, whereof the fmatter fort be thefe, ares, bat. chets, and fithes, of all forts, come fithes graffe fithes, flubble fithes , handbils , fichles , unines , pealehates , fpades , fhouels , toedges, braghokes, great fawes, lefter fates, hand fawes, time ber faires, pitchforkes, fron hokes, fron forkes, twybils, boung. forkes, tonges, Cheares Cofars mattackes, files, cleaners, claspes, launcets, ftrings, cutting knives, gelving twics, clipping theares, leaners , preffes , rulers , garben-rahes, hammers, chipps-ares, winches, pullepes, wheeles, rakes, fingle e bouble, pokes, collers, briole reins beaoftals balters trances corbs Bames, Bafhets, Farmes, Williams, Flavles, Strikes, Spoakes, Draining kniues, Sackes, Wallete, Bottels, Micobokes, Bakes, Bempebes tels, Diffanes, Sombles, Wihacls, Firehouels, Firekones, Grevirons, Banobarrowes, Doung-Carts, Whitharrowes, Mannes, Hampers, Hopes, and Linc, of alt lorts.

The facts and parts of Plowes and Waines, 3 will fleto you when wer come into the Court, next the Paybarne, Hog-

theos, Tunnes, and fuch like, hall like wife be the web you, when you come to the Bechohouse, and include, and like wife be the web you, when you come to the Bechohouse, and include, and include, and include, boulters, that you hal see in the Backohouse, and instruments so all other purposes, laid by every one in his place, till they be to be occupied: for it is very necessary to have of every sort two, as the number of your servants and not restrict requires, that if one be lost or broken, you be not driven to goe a borrowing, or to leave your worke, whereby your men halbe idle, while your twess be a seeking: for to runne every bay to getnew, is not for a halbands profit. Beside in the mean time your servants loiter, and lose more then the value of their twices.

RIGO. Eruely they be all placed in god ozber.

CONO. I place first by themselves, such as are most in vie, that they may be the readier, a next to them, such as be occupied once a moneth, or in a yere: I give the keeping of them all by tale, to my seeward or my bayliste, that they may beliver them out as new is, and lay them by againe, and charge them in any case to loke to them every moneth, that they may mend what is amisse in them.

Rico. Other is a folly fellow, and no godlier a thing in a man, then to be every thing of derly, and to lay by every thing in such other, as it may readily be found: of which, a singular erant ple both I somathus thew in Xenophon, in his 14 hinician backe, wherein a wonder it is to see what a deale of stuffe hee had be stowed in so small a bessell: he carried with him all the furniture that a man should nied, and every thing in such other placed, as they were at hand when nied was, without any trouble.

CONO. Impfelfe have an inventory of all my hulbandry implements, and to hathmy Baily and his wife: my Steward hath the key of the storehouse, and belivers out and receives as I told you, what every man nicos: for I willingly neither borrow nor lend: Thave a neighbor or twaine, of whom sometime I borow, and lend againe: but errept them, to none, as Cato teacheth me.

R i G o: The fame Catoalfo, as I remember, teacheth to know a mans hulbanday by his twies, a therfore by your great number. of twies, a man may gueffe you have a great beale of accurying.

CON O. The comble number of them makes the muffer the

greater : otherwise, if there were but to ferue the turns they mould not feeme fo many.

R. 1 G O. I prap pou goe forward with your beferintion.

CONO. Don fee a bood rome before the Bitchin, which is an entrie both to the Bitchin, to the Folkes chamber, and to the Dre-boules, fo that if any misfortune hannen to the cattell in the night, my men may fpeebilp belve them.

RIGO. The Mitchin is very well handled in that you have The Kirchin.

fo well pargetted the roffe.

CONO. It is because I bane a great number of servants: Inbich for lacke of other rome, boe dine and fup here: belide, the pargetting or fæling, is a god fafetie against fire.

RIGO. Dere is a good bandfome role by the chimney, feell Mozed with red Berring, Bacon, and Partilmas beefe, there is

alfo a bandfome Sincke by the Bitchin.

CONO. This lettiled wall that you fer forneth to my Bave liffes chamber, lo that bee may lee lobat is done in the Bitchin, and about the boule. Deceunto is also joyned my Larbersa bault Larder. with thee romes, one feruing for Butter and Bilke, the other for Bere and Wline, the third for to keepe flethin : bere baus I no windowes to the South, not to the Wacft, but all to the Roth- and to the Caft, because these quarters are leaft fubied to corruption, and will longest preferue any thing. About in the loft ponber doe I lav my come byon a faire floze, clofely fenced Corneloft. and fieled against spile, receiving the light by Lattille windowes from the Both. Bard by, is another loft very close, with like Appleloft. inendowes toward the Routh, feruing for my fruit : for that quarter is cold, and not mort, whereby it preferues beft, both Deat, Corne, and Fruit. Bowif you will goe through this bore, you map behold the back-lide of mp houle : loe here a faire three thing flore, whereupon my come is fundry times threshed, fanned, and winnewed, and many other things bone, chicke in the winter mounings, though I have belide a threshing placein my barne. Dit cach fice are lobgings for mp beruants and other romes and lofts for Stratu and Fobder for my Cattell : and there by the Stables, are also Bernants lodge mas on every live, and my Paides chamber nere the Bitchin,

15.4

and the malking boule. Mon le this faceltail closed round about, to the end that the cattell, when they be watred and out forth. while their houles be made cleane, may be in lafety. And here I herpeatfo Dele, Duches, Beacockes, Turkitockes, tother pouls trep. At is as you fee, so enclosed with fables, barnes, and other houses, that nothing can get out, Varro will in any case have time Courts an inner court with a little pond in it of francing water. or running water, in manner of a filhpond, and there be would have Horle and Oren, comming from the field, or fable, to be matered and malbed, & toferne like toile for Shepe, & wine, and Befe. In the Mer Court would bee haue a lake to caft in wheeles, flancs, and pieces of timber for inftruments of bufvan. bepithat they might there be feasoned. This Court he would have often Brained with Brain, and chaffe, that being trampled with cattell, it may formeto lay boon the ground. You fee in this court a bouble boungbill, one of them newly throwen out of the fables, an other old, and ferning for the field : for new boung nothing to good as the old, for manuring of the ground.

RIGO. Withat meanes thefe twigges, bowes, and ficalmen

caft bpon the boung ?

CONO. This preferres the boung, that the tupce that the ground requires, be not lucked out of the lunne: and hither allo runs the water from the Lannary to most it the better. Varro would have here also alonging for fernants: But leaft we tarry to long among the bounghils, let be goe let the other buildings about the Court. These great romes that you see, be Barnes to lay Come in: insome places they ble houses, in others againe, stackes, let boon props, which they call moives: but the houses are a great deale better. Pert to the Barnes, are the Stables, standing arow round about the court. And because Virgil would have the stable stand toward the South, and Virrousius, neare the size, I have followed their order in building my stables. And sirst have I set here my stable to my cart hoste. I have another stable neare my source longing, for my hosses of service, and backness, R 1 G 0. That the most be bory bandsomely built.

Co No. The nert are boules to my thepe, mert them to, line calnes, and heylers. There is a hogitie with two rumes, one

laz

Barnes.

Stables.

for my farrolving fowes, the other for Bogs, and boares. There is allo a third the not farre from the wallhoufe, for the fatting of my Boshes: enery kinde hath their heepers lying neere them. that they may be at band inhatfoener channceth. Last of all, there famos my Baybarne, which hath in the opper romes my Bay. beneath, waines, enris, carres, waggons, coaches, barrows, fleds, plowes, rowiers, wheles, naues, pokes, rakes, plowbeames, and fuch like, which are there lafe from wet, and from pillerers,

RIGO. I may you, who both lake to all this means, and

keepeth every man to his worke ?

CONO. 90 Balliffe, as 3 told you before overfeth both my worke and my workemen : befibes, I hane a Steward that low beth to the receasing of my reusines and commodities.

R 1 G O. Four bailiffe had need to be afhilful and truffyman. C o N o. You fartrue, for as Xenophon faith, the chopse of a Bailiffe and a Dhilition ought to be one : you must chafe luch a one as being a very expect bulbanaman, may wel be able to take The the charge, and not to beignorant of thole things hanfelfe, that he Bailife of commendeth others to bo, for nothing is well taught or learned, husbander without grample. For as Caro faith of a hufband of the old Campe, it goeth ill with that mafter whom the Barliffe muß teach. As I (comachus being bemambeb of Socrates, inhether bes would bure a 13avliffe, as he would hire a fmith, or rather teach bim bimfelfe at home + De anfwered, he would have bim of his olone teaching.

Rigo. But this is after the old world. wherein no man was bufkilfull : but it is a womber, how you that have allwayes beens brought by in winces affaires, could in thefe daves when bery few, ercept plowmen, and fuch as hane no other trade of life hane any fatil in it) apply your mind to buto it, as a man would thinke pon had mener minbeb any other profession.

CONO. Surely, I think he hal never have a god Wallitte, that is not able himfelfe to tudge failfully of him : noz let him ener thinke to have his worke well bone, that knoweth not holomos which way things ought to be done, but malt be fame to tearne of his man: for there is none can image of a worke, but a morker man. Therefore in the choyle of a Battiffe. I would have foure \$binas

What things ought to be in a Bailiffe of

things chiefly confidered that he be louing, offigent, meet to rule. and trultie, fif you will abbe a fift, 3 am well contented, that is, that he be not given to brunkenneffe: for a brunken man lofeth with his memozy, the regard of his butie. I do not enquire lobehasbandry ther bee haue bene brought bp civilly or baintely, but 3 wonlo have bim a bard fellow, brought by from his chilohod to labour. and one that were throughly well failled, of a meane age, that be be not builling to worke for pouth, nor bnable to trauaile for age. I would have him have fome faill in carpentrie, that if there happen to be any thing broken about his Stables, his Carts, or any other his infruments, he might freedily mend them, & that he could mend Wals and Debaes. I would have bim allo not unfkilfull in the difeafes of Cattell : fuch a one as hath beene brought by with fkilfull bufbands, will proue metelt to baue charge for there be a great number, that though they be Cailfull enough in their vaofellion, vet haue they not government in thems but exther biling to much harpenelle, or to much gentlenes to wards fuch as be buder them, doe binder the profit of their mas ftet: and therefoze & toould hane a Bailiffe well trieb befoze be be taken : neither is it oncly to be fought, whether be be failfull in this craft, but whether be be truffic and louing to bis Batter. without inbich, be is not worth a rufb, though his fkill be never fo great. And chiefely be muff be failfull in this, to know lobat worke is meteft for every manifor fame works require trength more then faill, and others, otherwife. And therefore in appoint ting of thefe be ought to have great inbrement good differction. which bee cannot have, ercept be baue goo faill. Therefore a Bailiffe is as welt to be taught, as a Smith on a Carpenter : and the knowledge of bulbanday is greater e of moze difficulties Witherefore I mervaile, that in this fo necessary an occupation. there are found to felw Batters and Bentices.

Rico. Berhaps the tedtquinelle and hardnelle thereof bel

neth them away .: min to ulluffit

Con o. Wher have not Dators bene like wife briven as Swap for as Cicero faith, there bath bin no perfect Daafor found, Rico. Of inhom would pour hane pour Balliffe to be taught? GONO. Pour quellion is good Will thew pourthough bery BUILT

felo have taught what belongeth to a hulband in all things, neis ther thall you finde many (ktifutl in enery poput. Therefore he that thail be a Bailiffe, muft be taught by begres, he mutt firt begin when he is a chiloc with heeping of Sheepe of Swine, and The traywhen he is cloer, with ozones of Cattell, and keeping of Pople: Ballife. he must learne next to bigge to the fb to fet to fowe to bedge to boild, to mend fuch things as are broken, to play the butcher, to give brinkes and medicines to ficke Cattell, and furh other like things. And thus mult be proceede from one to another.

RICO. Dou frew mee Wonderfull Bhilosophie.

CONO. As I faid at the first, his best age is betwirt thirtie and the coze: for the flames of lufty pouth beginning to abate, he will not be fo hot in his woinge for whileshe followes that game, he will have no minde but of his minion, neither fhall any reward be fo welcome buto him, as the fruit of his fancie, noz any artiefe fo great to him, as the failing of his belire. If he once patte theefcore, he wareth flothfull a bnable to labour : for 3 bat rather have the worke of a painefull & biligent Balliffe.then the feruice of a great number of flothfull lubbers: as he that had rai ther have a Lion captaine over Barts, then a Bart captaine over Lions. This must thiefly be loked buto (fince earely going to worke is a great matter) that the Bailiffe be a god rifer, that, Supplying his Walters place, he may be first by in the morning. and the last that goeth to bed, that he for the voozes fast locked. and every man in bed, that the cattell have meat enough, a be well littured, that he let forward, according to the time of the yeare, fuch as do lopter in their labor, that he himfelfe go luftfly before. that he luffer no man, after it is bay, to lag behind, but that they follow the Bailiffe luftily with a courage, as if he were their caps taine in alkiemith: and that he ble fundap denifes to there them by in their labor formetime to helpe him that fainteth, to take his toole out of his hand, a labour luffil v before him. And as a carce full thepheard, earely carrying out his there, a bringing them bome late, looketh that he leave none of his flocke behinde him: to likewife ought a good Bailiffe to carry out his men's to have good regard ouer them. If any of them be burt ozfiche let him looke to the Dieffing of them, and if they be bery fiche, to carry TANKE S them

them to the ficke folkes longing, a to fee that they be well appear ren: and to that ble have I built vouver house that you fee remonet from the other buildings, that the ficke may be had thither e loked buto frecially if their difeafes be contagious leaft other thould be infected. It is the Paifters ontie to baue fuch regard of the health of his fernants, that their Echenes man be prenens ted by got medicines a god loking to las to le that their meate and Drinke be tuholeforme & god, and given in due fealon: belide, that the Bapliffe eate his meat with them, and not by himfelfe, iphereby it thall he the better ordered. And because Bhilitians are not alwayes at hand in the country it behougth to ble fuch remedies, as experience bath taught a fuch as have bolpen others of like difcales. Those that labour in the Sunne (because the Sunne burteth the body & bames)their dict mul be the thinner. that they make not to great meales, but eate litle and often: this azder Beepeth them in health, a helpeth digeftion. Some do bfe to give Wormelvood. Wine, or pottage made of Wormelvod. It is bery necellary for them fomtimes to recreate themfelues. to that in the meane while they give not themfelnes to naughtinelle. There muft be heed taken that they beinke not inhen they be bat, maz le boon the cold ground : if their water be not god, it must be well purified. It is very and also to let them brinke barter mater. 'Me must remember that fernants be men : bes Abes, fuch and loking to, will breed a greater god will a butie, and lightly they will ferue the faithfuller and better when they haus their health, which have had good cherrifting in their fiches melle: and belides (which is not well oblerued in greater goners nots) the Bailiffe must beware that he beale not to eruelly not to gently with them, that he alwayes make much of those that be biligent a painefull, that he be not to halfie with the worfer fort that they may rather reverence him for his feneritie, then hate him for his crueltie, which he thall eafely bring to patter if be rather beware that they offend not, then after their offence. to late, to punish them. For there is none to god a brible for an eutil defvoled perfon, as to let him alwayes be occupied. Do that Caroes laying beerein is molt true, that men in boing nothing, learne to doe emil. Let them have their allowance, and their meat

meate in one feafon, let them alwayes feed together in one place, and the Bailiffe with them, that he may be an crample to them of all thufftines. If he finde any of them to baue laboured paince fully and truly, let bim give them a good countenance, and encourage them with rewards, to make them the willinger to bee their dutie : befide, let him looke that they bee rather well cla thed, then curioully apparelled, that their garments may keeps them from the colde a the raine : let their mages be well paich them, that the want thereof be no excuse for them to loyter in their labour. And as meat and apparell is necellary for them, fo likewife is correction. For the wife man faith, give a Borfe the whip, an Ale the fnaffie, and a foole the rob. And againe, bee that beales too gently with his fervants, shall make them in the end flubborne and fromard. About all things let bim let that they feare God, let him in no wife luffer them to (weare, 02 to blafpheme, not to ble filthy of bagodly frech : but let him prouide that they bee instructed in the Catechisme, that they ble prayer, that they goe to Sermons byon the holy payes, and receive the Sacraments at times appointed, that they be not hunters of Alchoufes oz eutil company. Fozas the Boet farthit is law. full to be well occupied, even on the festivall paies. When they have ferned God, & bined, let them walke abroad in the ground, let them looke there be no Cattell in the Corne, and Rop luch gaps as they finde open, and looke that their Lattell be in fafety abroad. To be thort, the Bailiffe muft in all thefe matters be, as it were a Bibop, oz a Pafter of the workes, to thall enery man the better doe the worke that belongeth buto him. The Bailiffe must never be from their beles, least in his absence they fall to loytering , neither must be suffer them any time to be tole: he himfelfe mult not be given to prinking or gaming nor to hunting or filbing ercept for his mafters profit: let bim bery feldome en tertaine any gueffs, ercept they be of his mafters retinew : let bim not beltow his mafters money about his owne merchandise, for fuch kinde of bargaining makes him the flacker in his butie, and maketh his accompts feldome fall out fult. Above all things this is to be withen in the Bailiffe, that he do not thinke himfeife inifer then his mafter, or fuppose himselfe to have more skill then

he bath, & that he alwaies feeke to learne fuch things as be isige mozant of. For as it is bery profitable to be any thing failfully fo is it moze burtful to be it butowardly. Columella had rather have a Balliffe that could neither read not write, fo that his memore be goo : for fuch a Batliffe (faith be) will oftner bring his shale ffer monv,then a boke : because (not able to write ) be cannot so easily frame a falle account. The Bayliffes wife must alivates The Baylifes wife. be mith him, that the map keep him from running at roughs, and may belve bim in his labours : ber age must be such also, as we required in the Bapliffe befoze, the mutt be painful, healthy, cares full a honest, the must not be twill favored lest the be loathsome buto him, noz to beautifull, left he poat to much byon her, and kepe home when he thould be abroad. She muft in the meane time loke to the Mitchin, and to other works at home governe the Maibes, and keepe them at their worke, loke to their necel faries, and give them their allowance.

RIGO. Pou fieme to me here, to make the Bayliffe a spale

fter, and the Maifter a Bayliffe.

Co No. This age of ours, quite corrupted with belicacie and Daintines, little regardeth the bonefte profitable orders of our force fathers: for in those baies the Baitters themselves plaid the bul bands, & thought it not to goe well with that Maifter that muft be taught by his Bayliffe as Caro initneffeth & Varro alfo come plaineth, that the hulbands in his baics had forfaken the plow & the fithe, a gotten themselves within the walls, and went their time rather in mapgames & miblummer fights, then with tilling the ground, oz planting of Wines. Therefore Caro e theolo wais tere bo attribute many things to the Maifter that we afigne to the Bailife. And I though I feeme to put the charge of the houls hold in the bands of my Bapliffe, pet wil I my felfe be ouerfeer. and have every thing bone as 3 appoint, entreating gently (as 3 taught the Bavlife afoze) both the Bailife a my labourers, regarbing more their labour then mp gaines. But I carry you about to long being falting. I way you let be age to binner: you shall not bine at Court to bay neither meant I to thew you as you fee. the palace of Lucullus, but the pore cotage of Cincinatus, Abdolominus, at Lacrtes, Dere you fer the romes for my bufbandmen. feuereb

fevered from mine own houle, but yet to as 3 may eafily fee what they boe. Here I and my wife, with our household feruants lie.

RIGO. All bery excellently well as may be, there is no. thing wanting that is to be wither for. Bittriffe Merella, pou trouble your felfe to much, like Martha, about the prouiding of pour dinner.

METELLA. Rot a whit bir, von muft be contented with Countrey fare, you fall neither haus red Dore, Barchpaine. noz Sturgion, noz any Courtiers fare : but an @gge, and a Ballet, a Bullet, oz a pecce of Lambe.

RIGO. This dict contenteth me above all other.

Cono. Fall to it then, and tell me boto you like our couns trep Waine.

RIGO. Surely it paffeth either wine of Deleans, or Anioin: Thin not thinks to have found to god a cup of wine in thefe quarters.

CONO. The bulbandy, and good leafon of the porre both pell the fame.

RIGO. Well, we at too long at binner: the incather being fo faire and fo pleafant abread, it is a fame to fit any longer but

to malke out and loke bpon your ground.

CONO. The weather being faire, you bring a horfe to the field (as they fay ) when you freake to me of going abtoat: for 4 my felfe, if the weather or butineffe bo not let me, am every bay. according to Caroes counfel, abroad in my ground : e if it pleafe pou, I will carry you abroad and thew you my ground. You must not los to fee the great countries of Merclius, 02 Lucullus but the polleflions of a poze country man, that contented with his fate frould be as he is, a would not change lives with the Emperour.

Rigo. I pay you let me heare pour opinion of the field and Of the tilthe tilture thereof : for 3 fee you are a perfect bufband, and no ling and . thing bufkilfull. I have a great befire to heare fome rules, and husban-

fuch as ferue our turne beff.

Co No. If it bee a hame for an apprentife at the Law, and a ground. pleater of caufes, to be ignozant of the law wherein he dealeth, a greater thame is it for a profettor of bulbandry to be bulkilfull in the ground whereon his whole trate lyeth. How is beable to inage braightly in bulbanday, that knowes not which way to till

ding of the

KUM

The good nature of the huf-

The de-

forts of

ground.

bis land ! The profestors of all other arts, be commonly heepe to themselnes, such things as be the chiefe motheries of their know. ledge. Contractivile, the bulbandman recovceth to baue enery bandman, body mabe paint to bis fkill, & being bemaunded in what fout be both this and that be gladly declareth his whole bealing in cuery point: fuch goo natured men both this knowledge make. I bane ordered my ground bere,according to the diligence of the old fa thers, rather then for the wantonnes of thefe times. Therefore I will firft thew you their opinions, and afterwards mine ofone grees and fancie. First, Cato appointed nine begrees of the land in Italy. The first, the Mineyard, that perloeth much and good wine: the nert the well watered Barben: the third, the Willow Groue: the fourth the Dlive tres : the fift, for Deboow: the firt, Corne ground : the feauenth, for Copie ground : the eight, for Timber tres : the laft for Maft. But thefe begrees, as Varro farth, are not generally allowed of neither have we the ble of them all in thefe countries : but make moft account of fuch land as ferueth for Garden or Dechard ground, Corne, or Filhponds. Df Corne ground I will first entreat, and afterwards of Basture, Debow,

Of Come Woo-land, and Willow Groves. ground.

RIGO. 3 pay you then take the paines to thew the natura

of it, and which wap the best ground may be knowen.

CONO. Caro counteth that the beff ground, that liet bat the foote of a mountaine, being levell, and lying toward the Sunne, as the whole countrie of Italie lieth. In colde and Portherly countries, it is good to have the land lying Caft and South, leat thefe two quarters, being bard off by any hill, the land be frozen with colde : but in hot countries it is better to have the ground ive south, both for pleafure and health.

RIGO. They fay it is needfull to know the conditions of enes

ry ground.

CONO. It is lo, and fooner thall you boe it, then the conbi tions of a man: for being well tilled, it will not deceine pou, but know the beale willy with you. To know the nature of enery ground, goodnesse Iscomacus in Xenophon, both will you to marke well the plants of the and the pelo of the Countrie, except you will loofe your tabour ground. or fight with Bod. Varro counfels you to looke whether there be

be in the land ofther Stone , Parble, Sant , Granell, Mabrell Chalke, Clay, Baeble, og Carbuncie, that is, ground over-heates and parched with the funne, which will burne the rates of what foener commeth in it. Alfo if it be wet of meeping ground, or full ten but o other inconveniences, and fuch ground allo, according to the nature of the foile, is good or entil. In fome Countries fromis ground is altogether barren , Specially for Come and Fruit: In other places againe, thep ble flones in the manuring and bette ring of their land, as in certaine places of Arben is to be liene. Theophraftus writeth, that the Cormehs bin caft away all the thenes out of the fields of Sarragola , e there by made the ground the worle, when, the froncs being away, e the country bot, there was no fuceour left to petend the ground from the extreame heat of the funne. In other places in Conte and billy ground, Dtes be mofber well. In like fort allo, in all Countries we must regard the large of the Countrie, and the nature of the feed that we folios: for Granell in feme places, is call byon the ground in fread of bungle fome things mefper beft in exauelly grounds. In Barbary (as Columella both witheffe) the berp rotten fambs exceed any or ther ground in fruitfulnette. It is also something to the poppose, whether the granell be white, red, oz vellow: befibes, fome granno both Deceine both with colour and quality. In fome Countries the blacke monit is enely effermed : in others, the fat reb monit is thought beft. In England, the chalkie ground beareth goo come. and pattures very well. In fome places the thicke and the clame mie ground is most fruitfall. In all thefe it is to be tearned, what is belt for the hilly ground, what for the bally, what for the titled, what for the lay ground, what the moile feggie ground requires. and what the bay and barren. Alfo in planting, what ground is belt for Mines, what for other trees, what belights in brie granno, what in moift ground. Virgil commendeth a mellow ground that is fat, and will fone be refoluce, for fuch ground is tilled with fmalleft charge and labour : the west, that which is fat and fiffe, which greatly recompenseth the bulbandman his travaile and charges : the woult is, that which is bape, leane, and friffe : for both it is tilled with great labour: and belide, neither answereth in his crope the hufbandmans travaile, neither ferneth it for good thebbole of patture any time after, and therefore fuch ground is mot

Signer of Mot to be medaled withall. Alfo, the ground is ground

the good- easily perceived by perfect tokens: for a clod fprinkled with a little hes of the water if in working with the band it be clanmy, and cleuing, and tricket b to the fingers like pitch, when it is bandled, as the Boet fapth, and breaketh not in falling to the ground, this the worth a naturall fatucile and richneffe to be in it : befices, you may know the mould that is god for Come, if it beare Bulruches, Thifties, Thicleaned graffe , Danwort, Brambles , Blackethorne , and fuch like, as never grow but in good ground: as on the other live, lothfome and fil fanoured toedes, declare a leane and a bitter ground: Ferne, and withered plants a cold ground, fad and bear nie coloured, a moift and a wet ground: a raddel & a ftony ground, is difcerned by the epe, a fiffe and a tough clay by the labour and toile of the Dren. A good token is it also of good ground lubere the Crowcs & Dies follow in great number the Blow, fcraping in the fleps of the Blowman. The goodneffe is like wife knowen, if at the Sun letting, after a Kameboto, and in a Chowse of raine, following a great brought, it veelbeth a pleafant fauaur; also in talle it will appeare: if taffing a cloo that bath bene toatered in an earthen beffell, you finde it froet, it is a figne of rich ground if bits ter, a great token of barren ground, ifit be faltilb, it is to be thunned, and not to be bled byon the boungbill. Hon mult remember alfo, that ground will fometimes change, and of fruitfull become barren, twhich bath bene ferne, as Plinic reporteth in the old time in Theifalie, and in our time, in funday places of our Countrey. Beffe, one kind of ground though it be neuer fo fertill, will not The difeo beare all things as the Boet wifely noteth, Ne ferues one ground for every crop. Mozeoner, the disposition of the Deanens is a great matter, all Countries have not the weather and appealike ; inherefore it is the part of a good bufband to know the nature and propertie of his ground, and to marke the disposition of it for euc. ry part of the pere: he must also confider what crop is belt for ence ry laper. Some granno ferneth for Corne for Mines, fome for Ditues fome for Debbolo, fome for Bafture, neither map all things wel be fowen in rich ground, not nothing in barren ground. Such things as not not much moilture, are belt foiven in light ground, as the great Taluer, Sperie, Chich, and the other pulles. that are pulled and not cut, Those that require more futtenance,

Ground. Mark change,

fition of the heamens to be observed.

ara

are fotone in richer ground, as Bot-hearbs, Wibeat, Kye, Bariy, Ein fied. Some of them Doe good to the ground the piere fol laining as Lupines that are bled to be fowen for the bettering of the ground. There is difference also to be put betwirt fruits for pleafure, and fuch as be for profit : as fruit trees and flowers. and fuch things as pecio both pleafure and foffenance, and are allo profitable to the ground. Don most choic for Willowes Dipres. and Kebes, a wet and a marrifb ground, and contrary tobere pour will have Corne & Bulle, that belights in Die ground: Sperage and fuch like, must be folven in hadowy places, and other ground for Duichlets. Timber, Balt, and feinell: vea, fuch ground as is bery grauelly and barren , bath his ble, where you may plant Birch, and fuch like, and watry grounds where you may fet Al bers, 1820me, and Bulrufbes.

Rigo. Surely the temperature of the ayze, both much in the fruitfulnes of the ground, for I bave oftentimes marked, that one kind of ground is more fruitful in one Countrey then in another.

Co No. In Venefri, the granell ground beares Dlives bel. where as about Granado, they require the richeft ground that may be. Wiben in other places the Wine both not profper bery well in Kony grounds, about the Rhine the bery ragged rockes boe peeld as fruitfull Mines as may be feene, Plinie both witnesse, that in fome places the Mines doe grow even in the Fennes and Barthes, fuch a fecret force is there in nature. About Chalcia, an Iland about the Robes, it is faid there is a piece of ground fo fruitfull, that they mow their barley being folged in his feafort, and their Croppe, fow it agains, and gather it with their other graine. The Albanoyles receive the fruit of their land angera Mal avngor a butilled and bulowen, and being once lowen, it pel beth his croppe thee peeres together. Homer calleth Phrigea αμπελοέαςαν & Argos πολύπορου. Hedorotus inziteth, that Babilon is fo fcuitfull as the ground pelbeth increale two bundged & thee hundred fold, Plinic affirmeth, the increase in his time to be fiftie. e to good bulbands an hundred fold. About Monte Gibello, it is reposted by credible perfone, to be an hundred fold. Italy is fo fruits Italy, the bill, that Varto calleth if the garden of the world, became it is so the world. tertile a wel planted in enery place Campania, being ful of come: Apolle Menteous with Immerant Venetri abounding with Dyle.

Rigo. I have beard fay, that Germany & France bene not bene in times pall very fertill and that they baue benealtogether without Times , a now we lie no country more fruitfull, that yel beth greater abundance of all things. Wibece can you finde better fuines, then about Manser and the Mbine + 3 (peakenot of theit great those of grains. Wines of gold liber fron and lead. In the fulneffe of countrie of Thurin in Germany, it is lape, that after wheat once Germanic folden, the ground will pield Kie of it felfe two pieres together.

Co N o. Dea, and in our Countrie bere, twe have ground that will beare Wheate enery piece. Kape-feed being once fowen with ps, both oftentimes veld his Crop tive veres together, without

fowing or labouring.

R 1 G O. Ander the Rothzen Boie, it is reported the ground is to fertill, as they folce in the Morning, and reave at Cone. In The fruit- Barbary, where the ground is low, they plant buter the Date tree funefl. of the Dline, boder the Dline the figge tre, buber the figgethe Barbary. Domegranate, bober it the Wine , buber the Wine thep foine Wilheat, and under wheat Bulle, all profpering one under the o thers habole, and perloing their fruit the fame pere.

CONO. That made me to fap, that the ground followes the

dispetition of the heavens.

RIGO. But lith in all places the ground is not of like goods nelle, what if we chance byon a leane and a barren ground, as beathy, banthy and grauelly ground; may thefe be made fruttfully and mended by Art ?

CONO. Werely well there is no countrey that the most grations Low bath left without fufficient perlouf labour and travell

be not refuled.

Rico. That fail & would glably benber fand.

Of dunging of ground.

Con o. It is brought to palle divers waves, principally by bounging and biligent labour : and to this cub feme thole beapes. of bonng that I lately thewen you.

RIGO. I was poulet me know what boung both most en-

rich the ground,

Theforts

CONO. Varro and Columella his follower, appoint the fests doung of bonnes: the first of Bonitry, the next of Pen, the third of Cate tell. Of the first fort, the beft is that which is had out of Donce boufes, the nort is of Buline, call other fewle ercent Dele and Duckes.

w the boung of them hallifeb fo ring of their ground. The next to this, is mans ordere, if it be mires buth other rubbilo of the boule : for of it leffe it is to bot and burnes the ground. Mans bring being fire moneths kept a policed boon therates of Apple from and Alines, bringeth great fruitfulnelle to the trees and ginethe plealant talte to the fruit In the third place is the boung of Lattell, whereof the belt is the boung of Affes, because this beaft both chain with most leafure, whereby his meate being well bigelied, is made the profitabler boung. Bert to this is the boung of Sheve nert of Coates then of Dren, and Dorfes: the most of all of Swine, very hartfull to Come, but bled in fome places for Garbons, for lacke of other boung but is a great breder of novious wieds vet Plinie femeth to allow it as the filth of a filthie creature. The downg of Boules likelvile, where the Borlen are fed with Barley, buth bred great ftoze of webs. The Lupine before be beare his cob is most commended, being turned by with the Poloin or Mattocke, and land in bunnels about the rotes of Tresor Mines. Where they have no flore of Cattell, they bie to ment their ground with firein and Ferne, with the falkes of Lupines, and the branches lard toge ther for fome Ditch : hereunto you may cat Sibes , the fifth of linkes and printes, and fram, with bull and other things raked to gether: but in the midff, you must lay forme found matter against the braving of Abbers & Smakes; allo Demlockes, Walingstand the webes growing about willow Trees and fernestwith other fuch ratten weedes, you may gather and lay buber pour fabere. They that swel in Granelly and Deathy grannes, socials the Muries of the Barth and the Beath and laving them in beaves poliobed with a little boung, faffer them to lee and cot and after lay it boon barres ground, but fperially where they keye areat This of Shape, they can into their folds such Turnes pasts from the ground, Columbells counts them but mill bulbands, their bone structo one of the leffer hand of Catel leffethen Cartinen of Old boung in 300 bayes to each of the greater fact tan land, before the this hath througherd; is bed for Come, fout both wolfindicts Cresoth, and breezeth leffe wates, but byon speabalt Aure,

tine svins or I bos Moone. smikatme off the

.blad

Sania ist riving to 200 27364 Suffer &

Kentifor beit for Corne, D Medd

Bure, von mult lay then their because it byings most graffe, and this mult be bone in februarp, the Monocherealing, for this is the bell time to caule encreals of graffe. In the manuring of pour ground loke that you lay most boung then the top of the Will for the raine will beare it to the lower parts fall enough. Dee that minbes to have her ground beine Come if her meane to fotos in the end of Summer mult turne in bis dount in Deptember : if in the Spring, be may lay it on at any time all the winter. Wihat feruing of time focuer it be bone, you must loke that the wind be Wiefferly,

and the Mone in the marne, This observation belyeth greatly

The obthe winde and the Moone.in mending of the ground.

field.

to the bettering of the ground. Belloe , pou must not forget to let the boung be bibe before it bee two boon the bround. For though Columella be bid the centrary our owne experience wils be not to follow him: for boung while it is moit; both more barme Wet dung to the ground then good las paily experience teachetb. Aolp as hurts the pour land will ware color if it be not bornigen, fo will it be oxied or burntifft be manuted perly ortwinich. The watrie ground

> requireth more froze of boung, and the brieground the leffe. Rico. I cemember, I have por this fane Carth taken out of the Helps nere adjourning and lave know the land, I therefore

queffe the earth may be menter with earth.

Co No. The Germanes, belides fundapother forts of en riching of their grounds boe inflied of boung raft boon it a kinde of pitch and fatneffe of the earth of Plinic counts toto be first des infed in England and Fraunce) called Marga, as it were the fat of the parth but a rather thinks it to be the invention of the Gervied com- manes with tohom per both the name and the ble is retarned: it is cotton in the bepopits, but not alike in all fortes. That part of France that ites boon the Manle both thew afandphind of Marte, differing from the fat sparle of Germanic, but of the fame qualitye lobich carles show the Sea imbeffels; is folde as a great man chanolise: an fome places the frotizing of the ands our with the sis bled to the great christing of the ground in the mountains and barrer grounds. In fonie Countries they make their land bern fruttfall with laying or of Challe as Plinisteffifieth of the Bure rundains, and the Calcornes, and in Ocumenic those bayes, this manner of mending of ground Is common But long ble of thin of ground the ent byings the ground to be flarke hought, whereby the come

Marie, a fat kinde of earth monly at this day in diners parts of Suffex & Kent, for the enriching of land. Chalke P fed for mending

n, people have a death, died groun kee a rich frather, one a beggette fo force from the speaks, in the Countelpof Lycge, they mend their land with a kind of flate frome tobich caft byon the ground both moulder alway, and makes the ground fatter. In Lombarate they Daneine like fo well the ufe of aftes, as they efferne it farre about and boung, thinking boung not meet to be bied for the butcholdiome nelle thereof. Columelle writethe that his ancie man wont to mend fantie and granely grounds with Chalke, and chalkies bard grounds with granell and fand, inhereby hee hab alwayes godly Come. So do I thinke that Miurr land by overflowings. and fall ground with umbbe minglet with fand and gravell will platerbur Celderland a abaut colovine for antited drum stam se

RIGO. You have taught me funder wares of mending of ground, I would gladly now learne the right way of plowing beste then be seed been the ground is Pricette congridual one

C'o N o. In plotting and otherly preparing ground for fied; The mine conflits the chiefell poput of bulbandap. Cato affirmeth the fit & ner of poput of bulbandap to be to prepare the ground wett : the fecond plowing. to ploto it well: and the third to boung it well. Of plotomer and furning by the ground, the fallion is bivers, according to the nae ture of every lople and countrie. All great fields are tilled in the Plate and Share, the leffer with the Space The Blates are of funday fathious, according to the diacrtitie of County fome fingle . fome double - fome with inbeles, fome with The parts of the Ploin, are the Taile, the Shelfe, the Beams The parts the Smite, the Coulter, the Share, the Wilhinles, and the faffe) of the The Share is that which first cuts the way for the Coulter that Plow. afterwards turnes by the furrow. Where the ground is light. they ble onely a fmall thave. In Liffland they barre for their Ablow nothing but a forke. In Syria, where they cannot one very bepe, thep ble (as Theophraftus togites) bervlittle moines. Plinic Inteth, that inheles for Plomes were benife by the Frenchmen, and catted Plugrat, a Germaine name, which com ruptly is printeb Planarati. In bivers places, lubere the ground is fiffe, they have a little wing on the right five of the Coulter, which wing is to be remoned to which five you lift; with the rod o) Staffe well pointed the Ploinnian maketh cleane his Coulter.

they may have more handlously inith their heater at liberita,

the your Open mult be yoked our fogieffer, fi

This drawing with the bead, if vied in the vpper parts of Fraunce

The like is vied

simbire.

tells burt to their neckes. Ehis haid of ponding is bettertike wol. many then to be pohed by the bornes: for the Cattell thatbe able to brain better buth the nicke and the breft then they find with their beads: and this wan then put to the force of their lobole but bies, inhereas the other hap (being reftramen by the policion their heads) they are forgrieven, as they fearcely race the byper & Spaine, part of the earth. Withere bostes map be bled, their ble is moze commediates for the Blow and the femer of them the better: for many borles beato to ballily, smake to large furroines, which is not got p twhereby wer fie the ground to be excellently well plained in Gelderland, a about Coleyne, inhere they plots altraies with two boiles, going berp foftly. In Fraunce, and other places, with vs in where the plow with Open, they make their Furrolocs rather Norfolke, Diepe then broad, Wihere the ground is fliffe, the coulter muft be the greater a the fironger, that it mine goe the Deper: for if the cent of the earth be turned by bery bload it remaineth fill lubole. tohereby heither the tombes are killed, not the ground can be welsarcamed. The Futroly qualit not to etcar one handsed a tiven to fot brienath for if it bos as Columella faith, it is hurtfull to the headis, because they are to much wearted totthall; but this rule. where the fields are large is not in many places regarded, as in the Countrie of Gulicke, where the fields are great, their furrotuge ateopatione berylang. For mit not plots in toot toear ther not wet ground, not when after a long brought a little rame falling hall but wet the Opper part, e riot gone beye. Af it be to wet when it is plowed, it both no goo that viere Dou mult therefore have a regard to the temperature of your featon, that it be neither to de not to ivetifor, to mach moisture maketh it to bur tis and to great beeneffe maketh that it will never moske well ? for evither the hardnes of the Carth refifeth the Blow or if 1000 enter, it breakes it not finall enough, but turneth up great flakes, burtfull to the nert plowing. For though the land be as rich as may be, get if you goe any Depth, you hall have it barren, tiblich is turned up in thele great cloudes, whereby it happeneth that the baste mould, mixed buth the good, perfect the worles

Dead : mould:

Wibere

Chart for bour from the engine make your labour the lighter. There is thing beine water in to be affected again grafton sand oth watere, and toben the weeves are full grafton sand fieves in their toppe, hibich being plotes in white fairle la where the Coulter buty gone, bestelp mile eth the tombes : belives, through many iterings, your falls bjonght to fo fire a moult, as it Cal new beer little as we barcoins ing at all when you fold it : for the old Homans, as Columella intresteth, would say that the grains win all busiants that under solving has not of the harrolls. Spoteiner the gas busians must Triall of the whether it be well proved by no, 4 not onely stull your eyes, good.... which (the balks being coursed with monte) may easily be seed plowing. ueb, but trie it with your hand, ( which is a certemet pools ) by thentime voters a covered the factors, which it is discussioned enery place, if the west that the ground is well plotted friens thallow in one place, e deepe in another, it vectores the ground to be suff handled in the plotsing. If you are to plots book a fill pour The plovemult ploto onerthwart, e not by and bottone the thereby the mines ing of a hill menterice of the the pures is inet with, my the the bottone. negletics of the trepies is met mits, my tremour of the same and Cattell is lightness: But herem you ministering (Jak Jane) plots not always one long, but fourtime flighes, tometime these; toughing allope as you half he cause. Lonching the senses of your The best plowing it mult be thiefly in the lying arthe Boot food feathers. When as the pleasant foring occ. For inclination the grounds to batter the former than a to be presented to be the set of During the acount being mellow is early to be lorought and the weedes are then belt turned in, which both no good for the energy ting of the ground, and plucked up by the roles before they have feeped, will never frzing againe. And therefore with be the tibes begin to plato about the intopete of spaceh but he famop and light of count, they vie to plow in the minuted of country if the femon will luffer. Plinje in of upinton, that friffe ground also them be Attree. A Cenver and levell ground, libited to water, would be bell plower in the end of August, a tiered agains in Deptember, und prepared for fotoling about the twelfth of Spech. Die light ally ground, is not to be broken up in Dunning, but about the

malanta of benjember 1692 fift, by hisben by after having barrow
and instituted types, that burnt by with the Source, and bath no
governed remaying in it. West ground, four example and bath no
typ after the Isan of Appill, tubich being ploined at that time,
though he kiered agains about the tenth of Imme, and after agains,
about the halours of he antomics, according to Columpilace unine,
Butthole what are faitfull in bulbance, agree that after the tenth
of Inne, inithout great flave of raine, you thall not plow: for Al
the years be took, there is nothing to the contrary but you may
plow in July. In the means time, between that you peale not with
ground ones ivet, as I gave you warning before

Plowing in the Night, Rice of Son a plots in the night, if I like and and and a competities you may begin in the evening, and continue fill the human rice, that the mothers and fatheffe of the ground, may remaine that the mothers and fatheffe of the ground, may remaine that brites in the close the fatheff, the angle and that the Cattell, the angle and work beats of the forme, be not diseased no bury. Hold of you that plain the ground that you means to law, partly the nature of the forle, and partly the condition of his labe will teach you, as inhereine came to it, I will tell you; for it is not natural to fire a groundle and a light ground, to after as the fifte ground; yet ine finds, that land, the stine it is five to, the better it bears. He that for lowe lade, you must not onely tingfallow, and therefollow your ground, but also four full in it, as they bear in the fruitfuliest places of Italy and Germanic. In Milnia and Aultria they plain but these, hother ground, as they commonly doe in Italy, is built to be folged by on the still through in Tulcan, upon the ninth. Thus bath every Countrie, both in this, and other matters, his falliant, according to the nature of the ground.

Rigo. But may I not lowe one piece of ground every pore

Con on Eberearolome grounds pon may lote perceip, as in Ataly, and in Autria, a likelysic in four parts here about the Kinner, that are fruitful either by nature, or by auerflowing. In other places per must observe the old laying of the bulliand. Take not too much of your ground. Virgill would have ground test entry after pareciopish if you have store of ground, out of all neith is both Dereel but the ground that is solved entry years, his name

the spiral, the fourth, w (at the fe naifeth, that'in Olynchia the land beneath thico piece most plentifully. But if poisivill be were foliof it with lighter liene, that folieth wit felle t countries Lupines & others, that the will alformath to be confrorced, whether the grown that your put lap ground percely folune, of fallows If you break up nelly if it be rich beaup, and prepared for feed, if lufficettito al and to four it immediately and harroto H. Het belighte o ground, you must theplation it, specially at the first the station.

R's along over you speake of purees transfer belonging the

trabe, & pray pou make me buderttand them; before you proceed my farther

CO no. This Art, (as likeloife all other) haff certaine toppe peculiar and belonging to it felfer and because funder uten ut god words be-learning haus flerein beens becomes less ally marries to but bet longing to marren with barks and firange tearnies, Ford Signe the world husbands as playing as I can, digitelling a white would be summer a received. An arol of beliech pout Beartiformit at dimorg amololames ted.

Latine longing to husbandry

ancio and thretake Agrains Firem with Withhirt of a To Agri Pers. rifortion, a Elocette, or a Source, at the bis little years that I rable or patture. Ager, Aruse, or Preliant, we can willbir gratitio that in to the plotte of an Colone. When the half he have fair of the colone. Ararinagine met Sarura Eipe-Freit epartifelt av Rettlimit tenniure, and truck before the cultivity the water the bis troppe on the place. Ager Novelly becitted b Vario, the monitor parties band fetune att falle wee ( ) of Plinic count ca da bac forbit endere actes plan e it milly the the the person of the to the bulgar fprechtique mint theat wer the inverland file with the fewelth book call Novale Agenta, the which to net m by, also buth was before biblie piumen/popercof commetty Notalismi Decumpy the Withou of Heritigal uthers are formelearnes that countil that to beit which after his

on Verus framés of Verre telten for that green, that there is sure to but have for a local force esta that also called Norme, both the Seld that both in that inhich is broken by the first spring: so the h Varco: Chere is great difference whether you fall in buthe or in that which bethice ambile and is broken by in the fining, Passener half Columellanto Plinic De ble not feldome, Vertuctum, for grand now broken up in the fizzing taking their realon of the time. The field is faid to be plowed, to be fire mith the plate, when it is turned by. It is broken by when it is first plattich. Iping in grent clone. The fecond platting is called Off pages Agrare, at larrace, to plate agains a Terriare, to theifal. low it. Ager iceratus, and servictus, be brugil togods with Columella and Plinic. Novare, is to change the ground, well butban anniel hed before, and to ploint and mapare it for the foining ... Occare, to harrow it as Warro laith is fo to breake it as there remaine no words be-The horsely is an influencent croffe lectured, to breake the in without, and to course the leedes. Cravic is likelyife bled in fame liquidection. Arone is, tuben that lobich is folume and A hurbandsy egrerotes the .621 come to lome growth, is turned in with the ploto. Plinie calleth known as it incre Approve, to plain often that bubich is fotune. Secretaries for present with the rate. Runture, is to incree out of the ground uniforms increasing for indirect also used Averruncare, a Decruncare, and as Columbias Experience, Pallinare, and Republicare,

s to Maga about the Mines, Pallicum, an forket pritonment to

spero jug plaju, la us ins leave betinist time Furramens Kings, or the drie hering of the grains, like a garden bedi. And hereof is the loace called Lissa Mings, which the hulbandmensel Possus,

because the place being sailed bigh; extended the count from the trades and Live blorsently about in a garden. Scandish in inits,

is the gradue with that both kinyen the plate in Plinie toullath uthat that he no balks make, not great close remaining encountry the great that is to the first plateing. Scaninatualizer, is called of Fibina Vabicua, that land in both connecticall including from Chief a Balk which the more of length their best have

24th byon the Aostha's called Swigarus Whe land if felicing

celled grotte and rate that is not well mellowed which hath men tobe featoned with the heat of the formmer and the cold of it ter mio to be plowed in the Apping. It is also catled rich fruitfull. fertill : and that which is nought, and pailes not his fruit, is cale led leane, barren, bungen, og bamift : alfo falt, bitter, femith, where the water till continues : Wet, that fametime lies mie: Carbunkles, that is burnt with the Sounce, rotten and moffie. It is also called pleasant ground, Cheet, blacke, rotten, and mellowed, which are the figures of god ground : but hereof I thinks Thane now fooken fufficiently.

RIGO. That you may continue your freech. I may you goe

to vour former matter againe.

CONO. Withen you have broken by your ground, ffit be Noualis, as 3 faid, and not titled before, pou may foice at prefently, and harrowit, and if neede bee, rake it. The ground that is verely folione, and that hath Iven fpare, is to be plomed thatle, according to the nature of the foyle, and the fiede that you meane to foine.

Rigo. Bow you have told me how to other am land for feebe. I pray you let me understand the forts of fiebe, and in whatfort

they must be folved.

CONO. That must 3 boe : The feede that commeth of that Of Seede. which the Latines call Fruges, as Buile, and Come, toe bere boe and their call Fruges, all logts of harneft graine : which the Germans call divertity. ynia and apaid, because they are gathered in their beautie, and their ripenelle. Iulian the Lawier, calleth Fruges, all things where with a man is feb. The ancient waiters bor beberftand it moze largely for all the fruits of the earth. Plinic benides it into thos timbes: into Come that growes on care as Gallus the Lawier befines it : the other, that beareth cobs, as all hinde of Bulle, 02 Bedivare, Df the first kinde, is Waheate, Mie, Barley, Bigge, Dates, Biechioheat, or Buck, or if pou will in Bracke promueor. Hile, and Lenten Wilheate, though all kinnes grow not in all places, not have in every place all one name. In forme places pour have not Lenten Wheate, chieffp where there is plenty of Big. In other places they ble neyther Dates noz Bucke. Dethe kinds of Bulle are thefe; Beanes, Benfon, Lentiles, Chiches, Tares, Linte's, Lupines, and fuch like. And though there be fund; y facts Old Seede office, and enery Country bath his hinde, and fowes fuch as bell fowne.

grees with their nature : vet generally this is to be regarded. that you folie none that are old and dayed, but the newest: for old feed both oftentimes as they write change their nature: as the feb of Colwarts that being fowne turneth to Kapes : and Kape feb like wife into Colworts. The feed of the firft vere is belt. of ting viere ald worfe, and of three, work of all the reft is barren and naught. The best feed also is that which is wartiest, and weth in the bottome, and fuch as is full, and being broken, batha god co. tour: fuch as is tounckled and thin in the eare is to be throwne a way. There is also another necessary note, to have the feed from frange ground, e from the toose to the better, and not the contras ricinos from colo Countries into hot nos from the fostpare to the floin . to beware that it be not bitten with Birds, Wife, oz Ants : and to profper the better, fprinkle them before they be fown, with the jurce of Boullake. If you mingle with your graine the feed of Bearfot, fow it about your ground, you hal fane it from the any The order novance of birds. Fou must fow your Kidges with an equal band,

of lowing. xai oualas, and all alike in enery place, letting your forte (specially your right for) and your hand goe together: Wheat, Rie, Barley, Otes, a other, chiefly such as bear ceds, as Melium & Panicum, must be some with a full hand, but Rape sad onely with the fingers.

Rico. A man muft ble bis band I perceine, as the Barper,

both, to make it perfed.

CONO. He must indeed. And as we put more water to stronger Waine, then we doe to small, and lay the greater burden byon the stronger man, and some stomacke requires the stronger sod, so some ground may be are much seed, and some away with lesses neither can it be certainely appointed, how much seed is generally to be cast byon an Acre: though I know the old writers appointed a certaine quantitie to enery Acre, which perhaps might serve with them: but we should sonlely deceive our selves, if we should observe the like in enery place: First, because some ground requires more seed then other, as the ground is of stiffenesse alightnesse: for the stiffer ground as in Holland never the should requires much seed, where sighter ground exquires helde. The simely sowing, the thinner: and the later, as Columelia saith, the thicker. Secondly, their measures and Acres differ, as the thing that at this day is not throughly agreed byon. But now

bou fiall beare what fiene enery ground requireth.

Rigo. That I long to beare.

CONO. After tong reft,og the firft bunging,epther Bartey 02 Maheate is to be folune : but Wabcate, though it require goo ground, vet if the ground box to rich lubere it is fomen, it mill groto to ranke, and the leadge boon the ground. And therefore byon fuch ground, it is belt to fow your Wheat after a crop of Barley Beale, or Bucke, and after pour Witheat crop, to foine it with Mie: and then againe (if the ground ware not poze ) with Barley. In very rich ground, immediatly after the gathering of Kape feed, plow it prefently for Bucke, inhereby you may have tino croppes in one peere. In the like manner Cabeggeb rape foipen after Kie, maketh two barnelts in one piere. Beafe, Beancs, Tares, and fitches, and almost all Bulle elfe, requireth rich ground which afterwards may verely ferue for Wilheat. Milium, and Kape. Plinic would not have Mapes folgen , but in bery well bunges ground: but we finde by experience, that after a Grou of Mie in means ground, you hat have the fame pere great Rapes. Sandie and gravelly ground, muft reft every third vere. for tipo or thee veres, that being then well bounged, you may foine Mie, oz Buck, eafter Dates. In god Balture ground new broken bo, pou may fowe Dates after the first plowing, after that. Rape feed then Barlov, after that Wilheat, or Mie and at laft Dates or Rie If the nature of the Countrie be for it. Wilhen this : is done, you must exther doung it, or let it lee lav. If the ground he mellow after Barley, in fome places they fowe Millie, then Kapith, after that Barley, and Wilheat, as in Campania: and fuch ground is sufficiently plowed, when it is sowen in some place where Lenten Wicheate is fowne, it rells the moneths, & after is folgen with Beanes in the Spring, in no other wife map you tharge indifferent ground. If after tino featons of Come, you fow Bulle or Debivare, the barrener ground muft reft three veres. Some will in no safe have you fowe wheat, or Barlev, in ground Harrowthat lies fallow. After per have thus fowen pour fiede in ground ing. thrice plowed a well prepared, then mult von Araightwates bar. row it, which is bone with a tettuled infirament full of teth, mawen byon the ground whereby the clobs are broken, e the feed conered: in Come places it is done with a bord tyed to the Blow, inbich ?

Raking.

which they call in latine Lirare. Sometime rahing is neoful & which in the Spring lofeth the earth, made clunges touth thecold of winter, and letteth in the freth warmeth, It is bell to rake Wilheate, Barley, and Beanes twife. Poproner, they breaks

Rowling. afunder with the Howler the greater and fiffer clobs. Winding is when the Come is knotted, the noughtie loads being plucked The time bp, belimersth the rotes of the Corne, and fenerethit. To freake for fowing of the featon of Dowing, it is agreed byon of all men, that there ought to be no fowing in Winter: for the Winter come, when it is falves before winter, appeareth above the ground formetimes within a feauen-night after, which if it be feweb after winter is begun,it fcarcely appearethin forty bayes after. Some bery fond ly thinkeit better to fowe in the Spring, then in Autumne, Plinie waiteth that in Trevers the Barnell being in they bane folies in the coldest of winter, and raking their ground in the Dwing, baue hab an excellent god crop after. Amongt our barueft febes, there are forme harder, that are able to abide the winter, inhich are folime in bot Countries, as Virgill faith, about the letting of the feanen farres, which Columcila buberfanbeth to be about one and thirtie baves after the Autumne Acquinoctiall, that is, the o. Malends of Bouember and in France and Dermanie in Depe tember and the beginning of Daober as Hape leeb, Wabeat, Mie. Winter Barley, that are nourifhed in the blade all Winter, and grow by towards earing in the bring. Some there be that will you to fowe befoze, onely in by ground and hot Countries. Some againe would have you to lowe in cold Countries after

fayleth.

Late for the Autumne Acquinoctiall, in hot Countries later, left they ing alwaics (bonilo flouriff before winter, and be beftroped of twozmes, or blas fteb. Some on the other fibe make hafte faving. That foone fowing fomerimes deceives, but late fowing ever. Itis and reafen to folde timely in wet grounds, that the lete rot not with avermuch moiffure : and later in dep grounds Left lying long & not free for ting, it come to nought. Allo, in timely forbing, to fore thicker, because it is flow in coting: and in later sowing thinner, left with the thickneffe it be choaked. Summer febes, which are fowen before the riling of the feauen flarces, & in the Spring are Beanes. Beale, and fuch, Bulle, Billet, Bantcum, Selamum, Summer. Barley, Flare, Bempe, Dates, Bucke, Sporie, and fuch other.

Summer graine.

are folioto in the Spring time. In Alia and Greece they foline all as they fay, at the fetting of the feauen Barres. Bow, although there be certaine precepts of the time of folding, and how much feede is meete for enery quantity of ground, furely, they might as I have faib before, for their ofone Countrey and nature of their ground, gine a kinde of guelle, but to betermine any thing herein certainely, there is no man that can bee it, but the ground and every mans ofone practile is berein the belt Mafter. One ancie A generall ent generall rule of bul bandy there is, wherein we are warned rule. in cold Countries to folde late, in temperate Countries foner, and in one bote Regions fonest of all. Eratolthenes faith, that India is Subject to much raines in Summer, and that then they fow flar, Selamum, Mice, and Millet : and in Wlinter, Waheat, Barley, Ded. ware, and other fruits that we baue not. Heliodus, the Brince in his time of hul bandap, wils be to low according to the cultome of Greece, his naturall Countrey. Virgil, Cato, Varre, Columella, and Plinic, appoint their rules for Italy, whole mindes if you will have followed in all other places, pon thall but feeke to coner eue ry pot with one couer. But to come to the matter, fith the febes of funder natures require funder times of folding, and divers foets of ozbering, and that herein every Countrey hath his guife, I will bere (observing such enthomes as are most generall to them all) feuerally their you of every febe by himfelfe, and fo beclare buto you the order of their lowing. And firth, among all the fruits and graine that the earth both peld for our fultenance, the chiefelt place is rightly given buto wheat, catled in Græke meis in Italian Grano, in Spanish Trigo, in Dutch Weyls, in French Four- Wheate, ment, as a graine most needfull for a man, and therefore most fruits ful because Bod bath ordained it to nourish man withal It is wonderfull what pelo it bath beene of in some Countries. Augustus his Deputie fent him from Bilaice in Africa of one graine of wheat foure hundred branches. And Plinic witnelleth, that in the fame place, one bufhell hath perloed a humbred and fiftie bufhels.

RIGO. There are that hold opinion, that this which the common people call Wheat, the Germaines Weyls, and the Pollanders Terue, is not the true Wheat, but a kinde of Mie, and that the true Wheat which the Italians call Grano, groweth onely in

Italy and in Spaine.

丑

CONO.

CONO. That which growes in Italy and Cicil at this bay, differeth not from ours in fathion, colour, noz flowe, though the graine there be fomeluhat great , and the floinge more clammie, which maketh it that it cannot be long kept, frecially about Rome. And whereas our Wheate is either bearded or pollard. theirs is altegether pold : we call it pold or pollare that hath no Asnes boon the eares. And that we call the Aane, which grows eth out of the care, like along pricke or a Dart, whereby the care is defended from the banger of Birds. With Virgilithe Rane is bled for the corne, as the parke for the wheat. Gluma is the bulke of the come inhole top is the Aane. Frit is the small graine leffer then the come that growes in the top of the ripe care. To returne to the wheat, I graunt there are some that boubt of this wheat of ours, fuch bath beene the murp of the time (as all things almost forgotten) we fearfely know how to name the fode that we daily fiede of Poz my part. I will follow common ble, as a Wiffris in Speach. The old waiters have waitten of funday forts of wheate. whereof they have thought that most needfull to be fowne, which they called Robus, as the fayzeft and waightieft. The fecond called Siligo, they bled in their fineft cheate. The third, they called Trimeltre, because it would be ripe in the moneths after the sowing. Ehough Columella alow no fuch kinde, yet was it most aunch ent with the Czekes, and called Trimenon, growing onely in the cold countries. In Thracia, they have a kinde that is ripe in two moneths, and is covered with a number of bulks, against the extreame colo of the countrey. In our Countries also we baue Wheat and Hie, that we fow with our Summer graine, as we likewife doe Kape febe, but to no great commoditie : for the luins ter feedes to farre ercede them; and being nourified in the earth all winter, they proue, as Theophraltus faith, of moze substance and profit. Amongst all these farts, Plinic recounteththe wheat of Italie to be the beft, both for beautic and weight. We ble with bs onelo tipo forts, differing in this, that the one bath (mothe eares without any beards, the other with long beards of Aanes. berp rough and tharpe, not much bulike to Winter Barley : in all other properties they are both alike. It is fowne in Sep-

for Wheat tember, the feafon being faire, the ground thate plowed and inell raked or barrowed, although you may fow it bery well after fewing.

me plowing byon ground where Beale, Mares, at Bucke bath hene newly has of, in a goo foyle. Plinic & Columella would have pon fow of Witheat and Rie, fine buffels byon an acre : but as 1 faio before, this measure is to be measured with reason. The at this day fow not fo much tobeat byon an acre as rie, noz fo much rie, as barley. It is beft, if the winter be like to becold, to fow the foner: if warme, the later. Wheat belighteth in a levell, rich, marme and a dep ground : a Madolved, toedy, and a hilly ground, it loueth not, though Plinic fay the hill yelloth harder wheat, but no great fore. Afterit is fowne, it putteth out a great company of [mail rotes, and appeareth at the first wo or blade : it bath funber stalks, but such as cannot beanch all the winter, as other winter corne is, it is nourithed in blade : when the Spring draweth en.it beginneth to fpinole: bpon the third or fourth topnt thereof, commeth out the eare, which first appeareth inclosed in the blade. it flowgeth the fourth og fifth day after: if it grow to ranke at the firft.it is eaten bowne with cattell,og in fome place mowed: it is after weded: it flowes about the 10. of June, somer og later, as the vere falles out, even at one time almost with the Wine : two noble flowers, with comfortable lanour flourishing at once. Varro affirmeth that the wheat leth I 5. daves in the blade fourilbeth 15, and riveth 15. After it bath flowed it wareth greater, and as Theophrastus faith, is within fortie baics after full rive, where with the lateft they reape in the eight moneth. Dther fay in fire and thirtie daies, and reaped in the minth moneth. It never eares, till all his joynts or knots be growne. There are foure joynts in Tobeat, as Plinic faith, and eight in barley : but in our country and our paies, both Wibeat, Kie, Barley, & Dtes, hane but foure, and not that almaies. Before the full number of the founts, there is no appearing of the eare: which when it commeth, beginneth to flowes within four eoz fine daves, and fo many, oz little moze, it fabeth. Withen the flowe is gone, the graine begins to fwell, and in foure or fine daves after, to ripe. The blade of the wheate is Comething like a Sedge, but narrower then the barley : the fpin ble, Galke, or Grawe thereof, is (mother and gentler, and not fo brittle as Barley. It is closed in many coates. The falke that beareth the care is higher then that of barley : the care groweth more buright, and farther from the blade, the chaffe is fofter, D 2 Imeter.

Iweter, and moze full of tupte, the eare of wheateis out of ozber and breuen, as well of the Bollard, as of the bearded, whereas Barley hath his care of juft number, and in perfed ozber. In Ba-Aria, it is faid a graine of wheat is equall in quantitie to an eare of our wheat. In Babpion the blades both of wheat and barley. as Herodorus reporteth, are foure inches broad. Witheat, as Columella writethafter the third folding changeth to Kie, which hath bene knowne in Ocrmanie, as I faid befoze in many places. Df wheat is made Amyl, the making whereof, Cato and Dioscorides teacheth. After wheat we fow with be rie. There are that thinke it to be that which the Breekes call Theex though Homer take έλυραμ, for a kinde of fode for borfes : fome others take it for a kitte of wheat. Herodorus faith, bread was made of it. Df Laurentius it is called Far. Df Gafa, Siligo. Diners learned mencall it Secalc, and take it for Plinies farrago. The French men call it Segle. The Dutchmen Rock. The Italians, almost as the Latines, Sagala : the graine is fomething blacke, and maketh blackith breas. But to paffe oner all controverses, I follow the Country (pech, take Siligo for our common Rie, which is fewed immediately after wheat, about the end of Deptember, or in the beginning of Dc. tober,in god ground : in landy and gravelly ground,it is lowed in February, realled Summer wheat; it requireth the bell ground, warme, e faft, and refufeth not light ground e granelly, fott be belped with bung : it loweth wet ground as ill as wheate, then both require to be fowen in a beepe mould and a plaine foile: but Mie is folded a little after wheat, in the folding whereof, you must occupie a third part moze then of Wheat : it prospereth lightly in any ground, and many times with the yell of a hundred for one. It must be folwed after the third plowing, as Wheat, and harrowed much after the fame fort, the falk or frente thereof, is fmaller then the Wilheate Halke, taller, and fironger, his care hangeth downer wards, and therefore more fubicate blatting, because it receiveth and keweth the water that fals while it flo wzeth, and fuffereth the biolence of miffs and frofts: the firato thereof is gentle and fierible, feruing for Times and conerings of boufes, Dow followeth Barley, accounted in the olde generations among the worthiest fort of graine, and not of imall estimation at this day. The Itas lians call it Beade of Beaue, of Orza : the Spaniarbs Ceuada :

Barley.

the Dutch men Gerft: the French men Orge: the Grecians weight: and though it be bled in Grece and Italie, and fuch warme and fruitfull Countries for Cattels foo as Homerallo witneffeth, pet in the Portherne Countries it supplies the place both of bread and wine. There are of it two forts, Hexaltichon and Polyllichum, whole eares are thie foure, and fometimes fire fquare, and divers eares fpringing from one grayne, every eare contaming about fourescore graphes, so wonderfull are the gifts and bleffings of Bob. The other fort is called Diftichon, bauing in the eare but two rancks or orders onely. Againe, there is one kinde of it to be fowed in winter, another for fummer. The winter Barley is of better veld, but it is some burt, specially with much wet a frosts following. There is nothing moze hurtfull to winter Corne, fpc cially Barley, Kape feede, and Ric, then the wet of winter, nipped with often frofts, and after a warme thaw, to be prefently from sen againe : both the forts of Barley require ground that is becy rich. Wainter Barlep,after two or thee plomings, is to be fowed m Deptember : Summer Barley in Warch og Appillafter twife plowing: and many times necellitie forcing after once plowing: in the foling, you must occupy more fiebe by balle, then in foling of wheate: it requireth a mellow and a fat ground, and therefore is belt lowed, where the ground is most manured. The winter feebe floweth in May, and is ripe in June at the furtheff. This kinde was not wont to be fowed in thefe parts, but great numbers now moved by my erample, do ble and receive great gaines by it. The fummer Barley in many Countries is rive and ready in thee moneths after the fowing. In Aragon, as Plinie waiteth, it maketh bomble haruefts enery pere. The feuenth pay after it is fowne, it commeth by, and one end of the feede runneth downe in rote : the other, the foner fpringeth, commeth bp in blade: the greater end of the grapne maketh the rote, and the Centerer the flowige. In other graphe the rote and the blade fpring both from one part, the blades of both kindes are rough. It mult be gathered with more food then other graines, for the frain ofit is bery brite tle. Df Barler is made as Diologrides mutteth both Beere & Ale.

RIG O. I fike pour Bere you have excellently well, I pap

Con o. I will not hide my cuming in this matter. Dy Barly

is firft freped in a Cefterne of water a bay or two, if if be winter fabe it is barber bulled and requireth the longer watring. The Summer graine is thinner, and requireth a leffer time. Wihen it is watred, I byp it byon a floge or abele, till it fivell and breake, putting out as it were little berds or threds, if it belapt thin, it will in fummer, frecially in Barch, Dip & breake of it felfe without any fire. Dog mult take good hied, that in furo witing it of ven not to much and lofe his floinge. This being done, 3 grinde it, and put the Beale into a Balb- fat, whereunto I put my licour fooden, and after let it feethe thee or foure times, adding buto it, both for wholeformes and tafte, the floinge of the Bop: after this, I put on Deft. and fet it a working, and then cleanfe it. The more it is cleanled, the wholfomer & cleerer it is that which commeth of the fpurging is kept both for Brewing and Baking: the brinke will be the better, it you put to it a fourth part, or a firt part of wheat : the moze Come pontap on, the pleasanter and better coa lourco will pour Bere be. Pour greatelt care muft be to fe it well fooden well cleaning, and well hopped, otherwise Balt of it. felfe will fone corrupt. Dbferuing this order, your drinke hall be both wholefome & pleafant: that endureth belt and longet, that is. brewed in Barch. There is made of Barley Alica, a reasonable. god meat, and Pulan. Bow they must be made, you may read in. Plinie: Bert to wheat and barley followeth Zea, which the common people, both in Italy, Spaine, and flanders, call Speka, the French call it Elpelers, with Homer is greatly commended, Prishwood desposithe fields that beareth the Zeam, being as Galen faith, the meane betwirt wheat and barley, for he bath the qualilities of each of them, & is of two forts, the one in Halke, toynt, and eare, like to inheat and carrieth in enery buffe two fabes, and therefore is called Ainonnoe, the other baning both Stalke and care. thater, and but one graine in every bulke, growing into rancks, win the top refembling Barip with his Charpe Aanes. In Italie, Epecially about Mirandula and Concordia, it is bled in mouender. for Dorfes it is not in thefe countries in ble. I would fow it bere. With the ground will ferne for it, a that both bread & prinke might be made of it tery well, but that it is fomething troublefome to grind, because of the double bulks. It defireth a moitt ground, rich. and god, it is foined after the fame maner that lobeat is folico,

Zez.

in September of Ditober : it flowerth in June, and is ripe in July, very meete for colde Countries, because it can abide frosts and formes.

RIGO. There is (as I remember) a kinde of wheat called Far, Far, Adoraum cient people called it Adoreum, that groweth in many Tours reum.

CONO. Dou fav true, for with the olde fost. Far inas a generall name to all corne, as wheat Far, Barley Far, and Mie Far, and when mils were not pet deuiled, they did beat their corne in moze ters wherof came that the meale was called Faring: pet after was the name of Far onely given to Adoreum, though Columella called it alwaics Far Adoreum , making foure funday forts of it. The Frenchmen call it Brance, the Italians Sandala, the Spaniaros Elcandia, the most people of our Country call it Farro, the Dutch Keskorne, whose graine is bery like wheate, but that it is thorter and thicker, and where wheat bath a clift, there hath it a rifing. It is beauter then barly a lighter then wheat, it velocth moze moale then any other Corne. The people of Home as Plinic laith, lined with this Come at the first three bundred pieres, it groweth in Cappt without Aane, with a greater eare and a waightier:it bath in the Stalke feauen joints, and cannot be cleanfed except it be parthed, France bath two forts thereof one of a redoith colour, which the people call red wheate, the other whiter, which they call white wheate : the care is the fourte not builke to felt. In Ita. He they make pottage of it for their labourers. Far or Adorcum. Virgil would have folone before the fetting of the feauen farres, after the Aequinoctiall of Autumne : but in fuet and sold barren grounds, it is best to fow it about the Balenos of Dctober, that it map take deepe rote before the freeing and cold in winter. It is folded in low ground, watriff, and chalky: after it is folded it must be barrowed raked, and weeded: the raking lofeth in the furing. the heavy thates of winter. In raking or harrowing, you must take heed, as I faio befoze, that you burt not the rotes : tweeting Johen it is knotted fenereth the Lozne from all annovances. The French men fow it in hollow furrowes, because it is bery subted to blatting, thinking thereby to preferve it both from blatt and milbew. To fow it in hie ground is difce mended though it prof. per there well inough because cattell cannot away with it, for the

tharpnelle and ruffnes of the cares and because it requireth great labour in getting off the buf hs. which if it be not clerred of is neis ther goo for man nor beaft : the bucleane chaffe both burt with the Cough, the Cattels lungs, Amongf the winter febes, Liave feebe both challenge his place, which I take to be the feebe of the Rape, which Plinie maketh for his third kinge, and wilde, whole rote, the the Maddith, runneth in length, the leaves being ruffe, like the other kindes, and the falke bully and full of branches : the rate of it is good for nothing, but is onely fowed for the lede, whereof they make Dyle, feruing for pore mens Bitchins, falts. and lights, Specially in Germanie, where they want the Dyle of Dlines whereby arifeth great gaines to the bul bandman. In the bot Countries where they have other Dyle inough, this fied is of no ble, but in feeding of Birds : It is fowed in the end of August, of the beginning of September: how be it sometime it is sowne in Barch among the Summer feetes, but to nothing fo great a profit : it is caft into bery rich ground, or well manured, thrice plowed and well tilled, it must bee foined very thin : for being a very small feed, it must not be sowed with the full hand, as wheat is but onely with thee fingers : it floweth in Barch, or thereabouts, as the verc is forward, and continueth his flowzing a long time : the flowe is vellow, and bery fwet, wherein Bes boe much belight : as fone as it hath left flowning, it is prefently ripe : it groweth two cubits in beight, bearing a plentifull fiede in little small coos, it rensereth for one bushell, a hundred bushels of feebe. Witherto have I fpoken of Winter feebes, now muft 3 tell you of furbas are fowne towards Summer.

R 1 6 0. Will you speake nothing of the Kape rote, which is greatly occupied of the husbandman, and not to be despited as a thing that groweth in great quantitie, and is meetely good meate

both for man and beaft ?

Rape.

CONO. The Kape is named of the Oziekes yeyida, in Italian Rapo, in Spanish Nabo, in French Raven. The ozdering of which, though I take it to belong to the Carden, wherein you are able to say moze then I, yet because you require it, a that some time the husbandmen do plant them in their fields I wil tell your as much as I know therein. There are 2. kinds of them, the first both rate all in length like the Ravoish, which in many places of

Germanie

Germanie is bled for a daintle meat; the other syther arefuet in great roundnette, or elfe bery flat : they are nouvilbes with mifts frofts and cold the moneths together and grow to an er cobing greatreffe. Plinie watteth, that bee hath feere Motes of them that have weighed fortie wound. Some fay , they bane feene of them that have weighed an burreged pound. It is mondere full, that of fo little a feet thould come fo great a rot. The Ores clans make two kindes of them, the male & the female, both comming of one feed the male when it is folinen thicke and the female when it is folved thin. There are two featons for the folling of it , epther in Warch, which will be ripe about the tenth of June. or in July by August, after the first plothing commonly bran the ground where Mie a minter Barley baue bene netoly ban af. It is thought they are the flucter by loung in the ground all winter. loben as the encreale is not in the leafe, but in the rote. They are also fowed (as Plinie weiteth) in hot and moiff Countries in the Spring, and will the better encrease if they be fower with chaffe, who would also have the lower naked, and in calling the fiede, to will and lucke to himfelfe, and to his neighbours. They are preferued from the Caterpiller, which commonly confumeth the young leanes, by mingling the feed with Somte, or freping them all a night in the inves of Boufleke: Columcia affirmeth. that be himfelfe hath frene it proued.

RIGO. Rolp proceede ( 1 pray pon ) with pour Sommer feets. Co No. The Sommer fordes are almost all fuchas are rive within this moneths, or foure at the ottermost after they are fowen , and fome of them foner, if the ground and the weather be gob. Among the Sommer febes we will firft talke of graine, and after of pulle. Df the graine, Dates are the first that are Oates. fowco, though Virgill count thenrbarten, & Plinie counteth them rather webs then come, affirming, that Barley when it profper reth not, will many times turne to Dates : pet the frenchmen the Germanescount (it at this pap )the beft prouender for Dogs fes, and foo for Cattell. Plinie allo witneffeth, that the Bermanes bled to make pottage of Dates. And Diolcorides maketh mention of Daten pottage, Toxtog in Beauxylenna; pottage of graell'is made of Dates, it is called of the Breches Bedius, in Italian Vena, in Spanish Auena, in French Agoine, in Dutch Hauer.

Haver . Inhich though it grow not commonly in Italy, vet byon Monte Ficelto, and in the kingbome of Raples about Siponto it is found. Wiee have amongst be two kindes of them, one full and weightie, ferning in bere veres, to make bread and brinks of, frecially if it be medled with a little Barley, and this kinde profeereth in rich and neto broken by ground ercabingly. The other kinhe is lighter which the common people call Cipen and Brunhaner , it is berp light, and pelbeth but little flowe nos fode:it groweth byon fandy and barren grounds, and ferueth mell for Cattell and for Borle: both the kindes baue bolby tops. from whence hangeth the feebe in like wife refembling the graffes hopper: the flowie of it is white, a from one graine, there frains weth biners falkes: mith Diofcoridos. Bromos, is a kinde of Date that refembleth wheat in the falke and the blade, & groweth like milne wheat. Theophraftes calleth it anyunora. The Dat is not bangerous in the chople of his ground, but groweth like a goo-les low in every place, where no lete elle will grow. Of the like bis fuolition almost is Buck or Bechiobeat, onknotone to our old fa thers. It is called Φαγόπυρομ Bechweat, 02 μελάμπυρομ, Blacke wheat though werduneou fignifieth another graine. I had rather call it Beechwheat, because the graine thereof is threecornerd, not bulike the Bechmaft both in colour & forme, differing only in the finalnette. The falke is bery great & fraked like to the greater fearne: it bath many branches, with a buthy top, a great fort of white flowers in a knop, like the flowers of Cloer : it floweth long together, eafter appeareth the graine, firft white and gree milb.in thave the ecounery :after they be ripe the colour chaungeth to blacks or brownift like a Cheffnut. This graine bath not long fince bene brought from Kuffia e the Borthren parte in Germa nie: now it is become common, and bled for fatting of Bogs, and ferneth the common people in beare feafons, to make bread and brinke withal. It may be formed in any ground, and is folwen in A. will, May and in June after the reaving of Mare fieb. You must fowe lefte of it boon an Acre by a fourth part then of Wheat or Rie: it is much bles to be folded boon the ground lobere Kapes grow, whereby the ground both peeld a bonble crop in one peere. sother it is famen, it commeth bp, if it be moift weather, within foure or five papes after, having timo leaves at the first appearing,

-Buck.

not much bulike to Burllaine. Amongst the fommer feebes is alfo received Commer Barley, tubich from the Summes entring into Sommer the Equinoctiall, till the end of Barch & Apaill, is fother, and is Barley. reaped againe for the most part in three moneths, or at the bitter mofffoure. It requireth (as winter Barley both) a rich and a mellow ground, to be fowed after twice plotving, though fomes time for neceditieit is folded after the first plowing. And though it vield not fo god not fo perfed a graine as the winter Come both whole graine as Theophrastus watteth, is farre more perfed and of fironger fubiliance, bringing greater fram and weigh tier eares vet becaufe it is barber buffet, and the Summer feb more fine and gentle, is therefore of most men belired and count teb to well moze flowe then the winter graine : fome againe Millet meferre the other Miller, called in Latine, Millium, in Breite KEYYPOW, in Italian Milio, oz Miglio, bauing as it were, a thous fant grames in a care, as Fellus femeth to anoto, in Spanifi Mijo, in French Miller , and in Dutch Hyers, Where they make pottage of it and bread. The Kullians and Bulcourans are chiefe ly nourifled with this kinde of pottage, lobich they make with the floinge mingled with milke, and the blod that they let from their borfes. The men of Ind, as Plinic farth, known no other graine but Barley and Billet, which grew in his time plentis folleft in Campania, it is the belt leaven that may be made, neis ther is there any graine comparable to it for waight, that more increafeth in baking: for of one bufbell bath bin bratoen threefcore pound of bread, & a bulbell of lobben meat, made of the quartes inet and bulod. It is lowed at this day in every place, though bery little in the low Countries: it groweth with a stalke full of fornts a cubit bigh, a leafe like a rede, a round and a fmall febe hanging bolune in long cimmes with many tops : it groweth. fometime fenen fote high, it belight eth in a watrilb mozy ground. and in granell, to it be not and then ouerflowne, it bateth bate and chalkie grounds. Some giue counfell to foine it firt in a cold and wet ground , and then in a bot ground : before the boxing you muft not fotoe it, fozit belighteth much ir warmib. "A little fiebe of it, is fufficient for a great beate of ground: ff it be foloco thicke; it comes to nought : a great handfull will ferue a tobole : Acre, wherefore in raking pon mult rake out what is more then

then netofull : an acre beareth fourtie buthels; if it be well fower. enery febe pelbeth about a pottell. It isforbibben to be folune as mong Mines of fruit Eres, and muft continually be triebed and raked. Teben the eare is full growne, it must be gathered with the band, and paped in the Sunne , left the bot weather thatter the feedes. This graine map bery long be preferned, for being well lays by where the winde cannot come, it will well laft an hundged pere. There is another like graine that they call Inbian Billet, with a great graine, and a blacke and big retop falke. which was first brought into Italie in the raigne of Nero, which (as Plinic faith) was called Loba, whereas Loba are rather the Cods of all Buile, and Phobz, the manes and toppes of willet. as it appeareth by Theophraltus. Panicum is talled of the Ozeks Exunos, of the Dutch Plennich, of Heidengreifis, of the Italie Pannicle. ans Pannacho, the Spaniards Panizo, the Frenchmen Paniz, fo called of the little Bannicles, wherein the feed lieth. It commeth by like Willet, with many leanes, and flippes, glittering with a reddilb bulbie top, full of fedes,like Buttarb feede, fome vellow, purple blacke and white : it must be ordered in all things almost as Billet : being fowed in Sommer , it is ripe in forty bayes af ter : in other places folued in Day in wet ground it is to be gar thered in September. The harnest, and the ble of it, is almost all one with Millet , neither can it, as Millet, be fined without pare ching: when it beginnes to fpinble, it muft be weil webeb, leaft the wedes overgrow it : being well breft with Chefill and Bilke, it maketh indifferent god meat:in bread it is not fo much bled as Willet, for the bread is bery brie, and crumbleth like Dand or Athes, being altogether without mothers or cleaning: but the common people remedying that with Larde of Dyle, bo make a fift with it as well as they can. They that bivel about Pontus, are land to efferme it abone all other fode, asthe people of Nauarc bos at this bay. An many countryes it is bled onely to fabe Bigeons withall.

Rife.

Of the number of outlandilly graine, is Rife, in thape as Theophraftus fapth, like Darnell, having a buffic toppe like Willet of Barnele, but no care: his grayne is like the kinde of Barley, called Zea, the leaves are thicke like the leaves of Lockes, but broader, the Kalke a cubit high, the floure purple. This graine is

hai

but geason in Fraunce and Germanie, but in Italie and Lungbardie common, where it is called Eleiso, and Mencifro Deleiso, the French men leaning the first letter, doe call it Rison, the Grekes Egysa, the Spaniards call it Arross. Plinic supposeth it to be engendzed of the water Sedge. There is made of it Furmentie, as Horace calles it, Kise Furmentie. It is sowen in Parch, as Pollet and Pannicle is. The Indians (they say) doe druss it before they soweit, to make it the lighter of digestion. And as Strado reporteth, they make drinks of it.

RIGO. Withat lay you to Sclamum, that was greatly in ble

in the olde time :

CON O. Sefamum is named with the Brekes σήσαμου, the Sefamum. Italians Selamo, the Spaniarus Aionioli, the Frenchmen lugiolin. In times palt, it bath beine moze bleb and greatly commendet, both of Columella and Plinic. At this day it is knowen to a bery few, as a great fort of feedes elfe are, in fo much as the bery come that we baily fee of, we fcarcely know what it is. Some reckon it in the number of Graine, and fome of Bulle: the stalke there. of is not like Millet or Bannicle, full of igents, but planne and froth, like a rede, the leanes thereof ruboy, the leed white, not le bigge as Linfed, and is contained in little knops like Bappie: it is fowen before the rifing of the featen flarres, after the manner of Italy. Columella fapth, that he hath feine it in Cilicia and Syria folged in June & July, and reaped in Autumne. Itrequires a mellow blacke mould, though it will grow byon good fandy ground, forced ground, raine is burtfull buto it after it is folieb, where as it both god to all other Graine : no great Cattell noz Wermine will meddle with it, it burteth ground bery much , because of the great quantitie and thickens de of the falke, and the number of the rates. Plinic watteth, that it was brought out of India, and bled both for meate and ople. But to returne to fach graine as we are acquainted with. Amongst the fommer febes is Difcelin to be reckonen. The bufbanomen boe fome. time make a medley of funday forts of feebes, and fowe them partly for Cattell, and partly for hope that though fome of them falle, pet fame will growe. But here muft you beware,left you mingle not winter Come and fommer Come together, for that bere a great overfight, and one of them mult metes perith. Some

Some barley may well be mingled with Dates of Buck, as well for brewing, as for feeding of Cattell: and Cares or other like Poulse may be mingled with Dates, as very god for beaus. They are to be solved in time and place as I have tolde before, in my severall entreating of them.

RIGO. You have well latillieb mee for Graine and Corne

pour may noto (if it please pou) doe as much in Bulse.

Of Pulle.

CONO. Bulle oz Bedware, is called of the Greekes doneia. the other parts of the fruites of the ground : of thele there are fundap fortes, as pou haue fene of Corne: fome put Billet. Bannicle, and Sciamum, to this kinde, because Columella sometimes puts them in the number of Graine, and Cometime of Bulle: but I following Plinie berein, boe put them amongst the kindes of Braine, accounting those to be Bulle, whose febes are contained in cobbes as Beanes Beale, Lentiles, Tares, Choches, Fitches and fuch like which all are to be fowen in the fpring. Dfall binde of Bulle, the greatest bonour is due to the Beane, as Plinie witneffeth as to a Bulle that is most commodious for man and beaft. In Greke tt is called woamos, in Italian and Latine Faba, in Spanith Haus, in French Feue, in Dutch Bonen. This amongt all other Bulle groweth if beight Without any fay , it bath a thicke leafe, a creatted flowing of biners colours, fpotted white and blacke, which Varro calles the lamentable letters : it bath a long codde, his fruit within broad, like the naple of a man, of bie ners colours ; it appeareth at the first with many leaves like a Beafe and not with one alone like Wibeat. It is fowed first of all other Bulle in the frzing time, as Virgill will have it, and timely. because of Fabalia, which is the offall of the Beanes, for both the cods and the Stalke, is a fode that cattell much belights in. Columella reporteth bow be beard a Chilfull bulbandman fan, that he hab rather have the offall of Beanes timely fowed, then the Crop of that which is rive in the moneths, you must some them in the encrease of the Mone, and after once plowing. It is fair, that if they bee enclosed in Goates doung and sowed, they will pelo great encrease, and the parts that are eaten or gnalune, in the encrease of the Mone will fill by againe. If they be sowed nere to the rates of Trees, they will bill them. Some holde opis mion, that if they be freeped in Capons blood, they will be fafe from

Beanes.

all birtfull webes, that layed in water a day of two before they he folmen, they will grow the foner. The Beane delighteth int rich & well dunged ground, as all other Bulle both: wet and lowground it both not refuse, though all the rell belire base ground it majeth not weeding, being able to onergrow them. Af all other Bulle it onely foringeth with an opright Stalke full of knots, and Bollow. And whereas at other Bulle are long in flowe, this flows reth longeft. flowzing fortie bayes together, one flaike beginning inhen others end, e not all at one time as inheat, they con in fune by bapes, the loweft part of the stalke flowing first, a fo byward Hill in ozber. So fruitful are they in fome places, as you thall find one falke to beare a bundeed beares. The Beares flicke close to their Coos: the blacke in their tops, the Latines call Hilum the cons Valuuli, the warmes that baced in them, Mids, Lomentum is the meale which the people in olde time did ble for the fmothing of their fkins. Frela Faba was the beane that was but fmally beo. hen, and hulled in the Bill. Refrina was that which they bled to offer in facrifice for god lucke with their Corne. It is good to fren your Beanes in the water of Saltpeter, a bay befoze pou fow them, you that keep them from Wipuels, as (Palladius faith)if pou gather them in the wane of the Mone, therith them, a lap them by before the encreafe. Beanes, and all other Bulle boe mend the around that they are fowen in. The next to beanes in worthines and folding, is Beafe, called in Greeke mirog, in Italian Pife, and Peafe. Pilelie, in Spanish Aruera, in French Pele, in Dutch Errettem, a Balle that groweth with hollow stalkes and full of branches, lys ing boon the ground, many leaves and long, the cobs round, containing in them round feedes and white: though Plinic write, that they be cornerd as Chych, of which fort the hane some at this day blewith with flowes in fhape like the Butterflie, purple coloured toward the midt. There are two forts of peafe, the one fort co neteth to climbe aloft, runneth by byon flickes, which with little winders be bindeth bimlelfe, e is for the most part only fowen in garbens: the other fort groweth low, creepeth bpon the ground: both kindes are bery goo to be eaten, fpecially tohen they be pong and fender, they mult be folune in warme ground, for they can in no fuite ainap with co'b they are folged enther boon fallowes, 02: rather in rich and percely bearing ground once plotoeb and as

all other pulse, in a gentle and a mellow mould, the featon being marme and morft. Columella farth, that ground is made bery rich with them, if they be prefently plowed, and the coulter turne in, and couer that which the Boke bath newly left. They are folwed among fummer Corne, commonly with the first. first Beancs, Beafe and Lentiles, then Tares and Dates as is faio before. Beale and Tares muft be fowen in Parch and Aprill, and in the wane of the Done left they grow to ranke and floine out of order inhereas the best folding to; all other pulle e graine, is in the encreale of the Bone. There are that count Beale to be the Bulle that the Orekes call ocosoc, the Latines Eruum, the Italians Eruo, the Spaniaros Yeruo, the Dutch men Eruen, of which there are two kindes the one white, the other red. The latter is wilde, and groweth in bedges and come fields : it is a Small plant, bauing his leaves narrow and flender , his flowe eyther white, as medled with purple, growing nere together like Beale, there is no great bufineffe about it: it belighteth in a leans barren ground not morti, for it will be full with to much ranckes nelle : if must be fowed before March, with which moneth it as greeth not, because it is then burtfull bnto Cattell. Eruilia is a pulle like fmall beanes, fome white fome blacke, and others fpece kled , it bath a Kalke like yeale , and climbeth like a Hoppe, the Coddes are fmoth like Beafcods. The leaves longer then the teanes of Beanes: the flowie is a pleafant fode to Bes. In France and Lumbardie it is called Dora, of Dorella. Phaleolus In Latine, in Orecke out of Kunaia, garben Smalar, some call it Falielum, Dolichium, among the Italians fome call it Fagiuoli, Some Smilace, de glihorti, others Faginolo Turcheles, others Lafanio, the Spantards call it Frifoles, the Frenchmen Fafioles, and Fales Pincos, the Dutchmen Facelen, oz wilbe bonen. It is a kinde of Bulle, tohereof there are white, redde, and pellow, and Some Speckled with blacke Spots, the leaves are like Inie leaves, but some thing tenderer, the stalke is slender, winding with claspes about such plants as are nert him, running op so high, as you may make Arbours boder him : the coobes are longer then Fennigreks, the Graines within diners coloured, and fathioned like kidneyes: it profeereth in a fat and a verely bearing ground. in Garbens, az where you will : and because it climeth aloft, thers

Seculo

there must be fet by them poles of states, from the running to the tops, it climbeth byon tries, serving well for the spaceting of Arbours and Sommer houses. It is sowen of diacrs from the Ides of Detober to the Kalendes of Rouember in some places, and with be in Parch, it sloweth in Sommer, the meat of them is but indifferent, the suprenot bery god, the code and the grains are eaten together, or like Sperage. The Iewes sell them at Kome, preserved, to be eaten rawe. Lens and Lenticula, in Greeke Lyndes. panis, and panis, in Italian Lendi ix bon manastre, in Spanish Lenteza, in French Lentilla, in Dutch Linsen, is a pulse very simil graines in enery cod, of all Pulses the least, they are soft and stat. The white ones sor their pleasantmess are the best, and such as are aptest to seth a consume most water in their boyling.

It is fowne with be in Germanie, in March and in Amillithe Mone encreasing, in mellow ground, being rich, and bive : vet Plinic mould rather have the ground leane then rich, and the fear fon baie: it flowaeth in July, at which time by ouermuch ranchnes and moviture, it fone corrupteth. Therefore to cause it quickely to fuzing and well to profper, it must be mingled with ber bound before it be fowen, and when it bath I pen fo mingleb foure or fine dayes, it muft be saft into the ground. It groweth bigb (as they fay) when it is wet in warme water and faltpeter, befoze it be folven, and will never corrupt being fpzinckled with 15 engwing and Wineger. Varro willeth, that pen low it from the five and twentie bay of the Moone to the thirtieth, fo thall it be fafe from Snaples. And Columella affirmeth, that if it be mingled with athes, it will be fafe from all annovance. Cicer in Latine.in Bzecke spe Sw 905, in Italian Ceci, Cicere Rollo, and Cicere biance, in Spar niff Garuangos, in French Chiche, and in Dutch Cicererbs, is a Ciche. buthie kinde of Bulle, having a round Cod, & therein a couple of the cornerd feedes, whereof there are that make the kimes, tobite rep, and black, differing onely in the colour of their flowe: the beff kinde bath a ftickie ftalke,croked little leanes invented. a white, a purple, or a blacke flowre. And whereas other pulle have their Cobs long and broad, according to their feede, this bear ceth them round : it belighteth in a black and a rich mould, it is a great foopler of land, and therefore not good for new broken by ground :

. . . .

ground: ft may be fowen at any time in sparch, in rainie weather, and in bery rich ground : the feed winft be freeped in water a day befoze it be fowen, to the end it mae foring the foner:it floweth in June and July, and then falleth to foode: it flowgeth a bery long while, and is gathered the fourth bar, being ripe in a berp thost time : when it is in flotore of all other pulle it receiveth harme by raine: tohen it is rive it mult be gathered out of band. for it feattereth bery fone and lieth bid twhen it is fallen. In the Chich there never bredeth any worme, contrary to all Bulc elle: and because it brineth amay Catervillers it is counted god tobe Cicercula, fet in garbens. Cicercula in Latine, in Orieke Noi Jugos, in 3tar lian Cicerfe, in Spanish Cizerche, it differeth from the Chich, only in that it is fomelobat blacker, inhich Plinic accounteth to have bueuen comers, as peafe bath: and in many places about bs, they ble them in thed of Beafe, efferning them farre abone peafon : for they both veels more flower then peafe, e is lighter of bigg fin on, and not fo fubicato wormes. Columella counts it rather in the Tares and number of fooder for Cattell, then of pulle for man: in which nums fodder for ber are thefe that follow. And firft, Vicia in Latine, in Orecke Binenov, in Dutch Wycken, in French Vellac, fo called, as Varro thinks, of winding, because it bath tendzels or claspes, as the Mine bath, whereby it climbeth boon fuch falkes as grow nert it: it groweth halfe a vard high, leaved like Tintare laving that they be fomething narrewer, the flowie like the flowie of Deale, bas minglittle blackefeedes in cods, not altogether round, but broad like the Lintell: it requireth a bave ground, though it will also grow well enough in hadolov places or in any ground, with final labour, being not troubleforne to the bulbandman : it requireth but once plowing and loketh for neither harrowing nor bunging. but enricheth the land of it felfe, specially if the ground be plowed when the crop is of, to that the falkes man be turned in: for others wife theretes and falkes remaining, do fuche out the gooneffe of the ground: pet Cato would have it foliven in graffie ground. not watrith . mnew broken-bp ground,after the bealo be gone, and the moiffure dried by with the Summe & the winde. Don muft beware that you fowe no more , then you may well coner the fame bay: for the leaft beame in the world both Spoyle it. Acither

mult you lot them before the Mone be twentie-foure bafes olde.

ather

Cattell.

atherwife the Smalle will benome it : his time of folving is, as Plinic muitethat the fetting of the farre called the Berward, that it may ferue to feed in December: the fecond foloma is in Tanua rie : the laft in Barch. In Dermanie they ble to foin them in Darch oz Apzill, chiefely foz fobber foz their Cattell. To foin Tares as Plinic faith Beanes in not broken by ground without loffe is a great piece of bulbander: they floinge in Tone at inbich time they are bery good to fcoloze Berles : it is good to lay them by in the cod, a to keepe them to ferue cattell withall. Tares and Dates make a god melline folved together. Lupinus in Latine, in Lupines. Breeke Segude nuceoc, in Italian & French almoft as in latine, in Spanish Altramuz, in Dutch Roomsche Boonen, is a Bulle bas uing one onely Calke, the leafe tagged in fine Divisions like a Carre, the flower white, the cods tagged, indented about having within them fine of fire feedes, hard, broad, t red, the leanes therof Do fall. This Bulle requireth least trouble a is of fmall mice and vet most belyeth the ground of any thing that is solone : for there can be no better manuring for barraine Minevards & Corne fields then this which either byon barraine ground profvereth or, kept in the Garner endureth a wonderfull while; being fodden a laid in water,it febeth Dren in winter bery well:e in time of bearth (as Columella faith) ferneth men to aff wage their hunger:it prospereth in sandy e granelly grounds, in the work land that may be: neither loueth it to have any labour bestoined boon it, noz waigheth the goones of the ground. So fruitfull it is, as if it be call among Buthes & Briers, vet will it rote and profver : it refuleth both barrowing and raking, a is not annoved with weedes. but killeth the weedes about it. If bung be wanting to mend the ground withall, this ferues the turne about all other; for being foined, and turned in with the plow, it ferneth the turne in fload of punging : it is folded timelieft of all other, and reaped laft : it is foined before all other Bulle.a little after Baruelt: cover it how Tlenderly you will, it careth not (an ercellent good febe for an entil husband) pet befireth it the warmth of Autumne, that it may be well roted befoze winter come, for other wife the cold is hurtfull untoit. It flowzeth theile, firft in Day, then againe in June, and faft in July: after enery flowing it beareth his cobbe. 18 cfore it floweth, they ble to put in cattell: for where as they will fixe

Œ 3

#### ne first Booke, entreatu

byon all other graffe or wedes, onely this for the bitternes theres

of while it is greene, they leave butouched. Being bried, it ferneth for fuftenance both of man and beat to cattell it is given medica with chaffe and for bread for mans ble it is mingled with wheat flowie, og barly flowie: it is very god to kepe it in a fmoky loaft, for if it lye any thing mort, it is eaten of little wormes, and thereby fpopled. The leafe beyeth a certaine course and turs neth with the Sunne, whereby it theweth euer to the hufband. Fenugreek man, even in cloudy weather, what time of the bay it is. Fenum grecum in Latine, in french Fenegres, and Fenigrent, in Italian Fanigraco, in Spantih Alholuas, in Dutch fometime by the Latine name, and commonly Rohorne, and Lockshorne: commeth by with a small stalke, the leafe like a threeleaued graffe it is fowed well in a flender barren ground you must take hed you plow it thicke, and not very deepe, for if the fied be coues red about foure fingers thicke, it will bery hardly grow. There. fore the ground must be tild with small Plowes, and the feed prefently covered with Kakes. There are two forts of it, the one called of the common people Siliqua or Cobbe, which they foin for Fodder in September, the other in January, or the beginning of February: When they fow it for febe, it flowgeth in June and July, when also it beareth his Cobbe, but the feede is not ripe till August: it is dressed to be eaten after the order of Lupins, with bineger, water, and falt, some put to a little ople: it is bled both for fooder, and bivers other bles. Furthermoze of Bulle called of Gellius, Legamenta, the haur thefe generall rules, that they all beare cods, a bane fingle rotes enery one, ercept the Beane, the Chich growing deepeft. The falke of the beane e the Lupine is alfo fingle, the others are all full of branches and flender flips, and all hollow. All Buile for the most part, are to be sowed in the foring, and require bery rich ground, ercept the Luvine, that cares not where belies, they are all fowen in the encreale of the mone, ercept Weafe:if they be watered befoze their lowing, they profper the better: they are freedily to be gathered when they be ripe, for they suddenly thotter they will endure longest being gathered in the change of the mone. It is much to be regarded whether you will keepe or fell them, for the feeds in the encrease of the Mone bee mare greater: there are that preferue them in earthen beffels, Arawing

Eraining other funder them, and fpainckling them with Miner fome wie ather slone, others wie to fprinchle them with Berger wine bineger, as I handlaid of the lentill. Dozeouer the Brakes have willed to mingle with the bung a little faltpeter when you fow them, whereby they thall the better forth and be thetenberer. and if they be not presently tender, they will to call into the not a little Buffard fed, which will make them fraightwap well. Theophraftus abbeth divers things befine which increto long to tell.

RICO. Is it newfull for energ bulbandman to law all thele

Braine and Dulle in his ground ?

CONO. Bo: but as I favo before in fpeaking of ground and feet, you muft chiefely foto fuch as belt aftre with the nature of your ground : howbeit , there are fome of them that refule no ground. There are certaine of them as Varro fauth that are not Toweb for prefent neceffitie but for other afterturnes. And others againe that are of necellitie to be folien, as Come for man, and Fobberfoz Cattell : of ininebenut fosciali care be ban that there be no want of them, without which mee can not live : as Kie. Dates, and Buck. Lunines andcertaine Bulle elfe,for foober, refule no ground though it be never to barren. Belides luben as Fodder the hulbandman must not onely bane a care of proutning fuch for Caras ferme for the futtenance of man, but allo for fuch as ferue for tell. the fieding of page Cattell, without which the ground cannot be hufbanded : therefore must be foine lanife for the ble of man and beaft, and fooder in more abundance for the futtenance of beafts. Amonat all forts of Fober, that is counted for the chiefe and the belt subject the people of olde time, a the Italians at this day call Medicalforne call it Treffeile the frenchmen call it Grandweffe, Medica! the Spaniards Alfalfa others call it Burgundie-graffe because it was brought in by the Burgundians , it is now also come into Germanie, and there called Welfholken. Plinic weiteth, that it mas brought by the Momanes, out of Mediainto lealy, Differing almost nothing from Expfolip, or the leaved grasse: but that it is greater bigher and ranker for in Halke Leafe, and flowie it is oil one: it groweth altogether bulling in leanes. In the toppe of the stalke it putteth forth short coroes, swithen like hornes indentob about and baning no it more, little prickles, loberain is the

Deth :

beth great abundance of blood. Columella writeth that one acre of it wil well finde the Bosles avere. In fome Countries this bearbe both grow in great plentie in every Webbots, erther of the nature of the ground or through the difposition of the Weapens. and fometime the relickes of that which bath beene leng ages folven both perely framg of the feede that falleth, & overgrowen with Graffe and webes , both change into Mebbow. I fe no canfe but that it may grow of it felfe, but that verhars fuch Blants as are brought out of Avange Countries require folding and berffing:it is beft to be mowed when it beginneth to flowee. for it muft not be luffered to led, whereby the Fooder thall bee the better: which being well lapd by, will continue in goodnette thie veres, to the great profit of the graffer, for as I have fand befoze, there can be no better fobber beuiled foz Cattell, wheres with they will better feebe, and fooner rife. The nert in goodnes to this Medica is Cycifus, wonderfully as Plinie waiteth, comment Cycifus, bed of Aristomachus, and as Virgill layth, a good fooder for Shepe and being bie, a belightfull food to Swine : it may be motived funday times in the piece, to the great commoditie of the \$169.5. bulbandman : a little whereof both foone fat by cattell, neither is there any other graffe that pelbeth evther moze abandance az better wilke, the most foueraigne medicine for the fickenesse of Cattell that map be: belide, the Philosophers promife, that 18 es will wener faile that have this graffe growing nere them: there. fore it is necessary to have your ground fored with it, as the thing that belt ferueth for Boultrie and Cattell : the leanes and fiedes are to be given to leane and brouping Bullen : fome call it Telinen, fome Trefolle, fome great Belilot, the Komanes call it Trifolumaius, great tralle, it is a plant all hairp and whitilb, as Rhampus is having branches haife a vary long a more inherepron groweth leanes like bnto frenigræke og Clauer, but fomething leffe, baning a riling creft in the mioft of them. This plant was first found in the Hland Cythno, and from thence foread throughout the Cyclads, and to to Greece, whereby the Hoze of Thele came to be great: neither is there any countrey at this pay where they may not have great plenty (as Columella faith) of this figuib. In Italy it groweth about the enclotiers of binguards it firembeth meither for heat cold, frost, nor inolvet requireth and ground, if the ineather A 4

## The first Booke, carresting

beather be been brout must be waters and when it first fraings inell harroined: after the veres, you may cut it botone and gins it pour Cattell. Varro would baue it fowen in well order ground; as the feets of Colemate hould be, and after removed and fet a fot and a baile alumber, or elfe to be fet of the flips. I be time of folding of Cyclius is either in Aurumne or in the foring in ground inell ploined and land out in beds: if you want the feet, you may take the flipe fo that you fet them fourefor afunder, and a banche call about them with earth well bounged: you may also fet them before September, when they will bery well grow and above the colbe in winter, it lafteth but the piers. Columella hath two kindes of Cytifus, one wilde, the other of the garden. The wilde both with his clashers feede bery well : it windeth about, and hils: his neighbours as the Bute both: it is found in Comefields, fpecially amongst Bartey, the flower thereof is like the flower of Beafe, the leafe, if it be bruifed, fmelleth like rocket, and being champed in the mouth, it taltethille Chiche,og Weale. There. is an other kinde of Fodder among the plants, boknowen to the olde writers, bern good to feed both Tattelland Boultrie. 3 know not inhether it be knowen in other Countries befide Bermanie. the common people call it Spurie, oz Sperie : it bath a flathe a fate in beight or more, bulbes forth in many branches, it hath a white flowe without any leafe: the flowne enbeth in little knops as Flare hath containing in them a bery little fablike Maveled. Then are much deceined that take it for Cytifue, when that (as Diofcorides faith) bath leaves like femgreche, and this is altogether without leanes : neither is the feed any thing like though the ble be almoft one. The beft mile and butter in Bermanie. commeth of this feeding : whereforeit is effermed almoft as god as Barley or other graine: the fraw is better then any Dev: the chaffe feebeth as well as any graines: the feeb feebeth Digcons and Boultrie in winter passing well: it is somed in fandie and light. grounds all the Sommer long and fome fowe it in Spring time with Dates, for the liebe lahe: in Aucompeand Barnell time it isfolved to frede Cattell : it is profitable for Bufbanburen that bivell in famby and granelly Countries, wherefore they thould neuer bee without good fore of it, for Bennes, Bies, Goates. Shows, Oren and all kinde of Cattell delight bery minch.

Sperie.

bill : note cemanist bebe to whose Shed and Dange ...

Rie or Hotelort

CON O. Eliefe, although they be not to be received in the number of Corne was Phillie. Forese nor Bruteba, yet is these great account to be made of them with the bufomonium things, with out which no boufe can be fornifice . was man well apparrelled : which being besten to'a foffrede ferneth fas webs of linnen, and twilling of Coabs : and more, of this to little a feebe both fming. that, which (as Plinie faith) curriets the lobole would bether and thether, that bringeth Cappete Haby convicts be from Cales to Offia in 7. Daics. Linum in Latine : in Breibe ywov in Stalian and Boantis Line: If Prettel Dolin: to Dutibalmofilia. Jauna that they call the feb Lin. And the plant Flanci to a been common Flaxe. Wearbe, interestretti thattieti ace fot a booken : it hatte a Clember. faltie, not much buille to Spery, but that it groweth higher a little, and bigger, totti harvole leanes, and longblete fletezes in the top, which falling alway leageth behind thein little round knops as big as a venty, where are encloses velicing factor; it velighteth fr rich around, e forme what thouse form this barraine ground, after once platulment is following the fixing, and gathered in fums mer. In Welberland and Galicke where thete in great frose of its they fold it about the beginning of spay: there are agains that obferne the leafons to: foreing of it; as the wenther thail fall out. for it requirethrome emolfines: the rivenelle of it is netteined by the warma yelloto, a fivelling of the knows that bold the leed. being their plucked by and made in little benedes, it is boyed in the Summe, the rootes fambling bulbate, that the face map fall out. Some ble agains to care off the lange foith an weds combe & baye the them in the finme to eather the fien The bundles afterioards are fato in teater heaten tout The funne, with forme loatabl boon them to keepe them orione the rande loaning lace; the weth fuhon they have beene theres enough. Then the bumples unloce and byped in the fun, are beaten with bactles; when an the outer rinde to pilley off, and combed a flacked Sport an year combe : the mose lozong it fafferett, the better both it paone: the towe is fenered. from the flare, and appointed to his ble, to are they fenerally four open the billatte, made to in bottomes, and fent to the wear mers, inhereof are inquer webs; to the great commoditie of all

men. Last of all, the web is late out in the bot Sunne, and sprinchled with water, whereby it is brought in a passing substantial
Ji may be remembred that not long since the women of Oceans,
whe line was confer attyre. The best Flare that is at this day, so
brought from Pulconia, Livenia, and those Countries, for excelling ours in beight and godnesse, except there be great encrease
of it, and plentie in the Countries where you divell. Columella
would not have you meddle with the solving of it, so, it is most
buttfull to the ground, as Virgill hath noted.

Flaxe, where it growes doth burne the Field.
The like doth Oates and Poppey yeeld.

And therefore (but that women must have fome things to occupy their hands withall )it were more profit to fow the ground with Come and to bur linnen abroad, especially if you waigh the burt of your ground a the charges of the making. Hempe, in latine is Cannabis, in Ozethe nerva Gic inegos, in Italian, Canabe, in Spar with Cannamo, in French Chamura, and in Dutch Haueph, is a plant of the Reedill kinde, baning a bery Brong lanour : it grow eth with a fingle falk, a many times to fuch a beight, that it mate cheth with indifferent trees : it is of great necessitie for the ble of snam, and ferueth both for making of Canuas, Framing of ropes: the falk bath many knots, out of which procedeth branches with narrow leanes invented & tharpe. Diolcorides Deferibeth both the wilde Dempe, the garben Dempe, to baue leanes like the Afte. bollow Stalks, a ftinking fanour, e round fed. There are two kinds of it, the Male, that is without flowers beareth a liebe of fundap colours : and the Female, that, to recompence ber barrennelle, both vield a white flower. It is folded in Carbens, Dechards, as other god ground, (as Plinic would have it) after a Southwell winde, with bait is fowne in the end of Appill, for it cannot away with cold : fome fow it at the rifing of the ftar, called the Berward, lubich is at the end of february, or the beginning of Warch : it loneth rich ground, well bunged & watred, and bope plowed: it is naughtie folding of it in raynie weather, the thicker you fold it the tenderer it will be and therfore many times it is fowne theife, though fome there be that appoint to every fot fquare fire feets. The Female or firble Dempe is firft pulled bp, afterfvarb the male,02 the marle, when his fiede is ripe, is plucked by, and mabe

Hempe.

diam.

DD.

made by in bundels, layd in the Danne to; their of faire bayes, and after is call into the water, with weight laive byon him for sight of terme sages, till he be histocrently loaters, and as flare, till the vinde ware lade: then taken out, it is wish with the Dan, and after broken in the brake, and their confider and harked for yarne and Ropes. Of Hemp, are made Cables, Corbs, Pets, and Dailes for Shippes, garments for Labourers, Shirts, and Shirtes: the chales or stalkes ferne for heating of Quens, or hindling of fires.

RIGO. In the Countrey of Culicke, and forme parts of Fraunce, I remember an hearbe planted of the common people

with great biligence, that forueth as they fait for Diars.

Cio No. Youlay true, that hearbe, Celar in his Commienta ries of the warres of fraunce, calleth Glaftum, in Breite foxily Woode. nuceos, in Italian Gnado, in Spanith Paftel, in French Gudum. and Guelde, in Dutch Weyt : the Diars Doe ble it, and with them it is accatly effeemed, a great gaine arifeth thereof buto the people of Celberland Inties and Darin, & Dipor Countries elfe: the leanes as Plinic toxiteth arelike onto Dock leanes Diofcorides inziteth of tive kindes, the witte, and the Carben Woade, laying, that the Barben Wioade which Diars ble,han elenies like Blam tine but fomething thicker, and the wilde leaves like I entill with vellow flowers : with this hearbe Delar, faith the beople of Cha land incre wont to paint their faces and bodies to feine more terrible to their enemics : it requireth like folling and folle as Tembeate both : but it is a great loker of the ground, and much hurteth it : it would have a been rich and a far ground; and will bigged: for the ground incre better to be thines be forth forbes then with Plowes for the folding of this plant, It must be bery wel webco. It is fowed in Belbertand in Appilland after the common peoples tute,in Cafter week at the first fallowing they murle the ground, after fowe it : pou muft be bery herbefult iff the tode bing of it. Wilben it is growen a hanofall howand mbie thep hif fer it not to howee, but with an intrument for the purpole, thep cut it close by the rote, wath it, and carry it to the Mill, and fuffe ring it to grow againe, they cut it the or four etimes, and fo leave it to fiebe. The greene bearbe they grinbe in willes like Apple Min meeting it til they get out al the fuice therof, then voule they it

# The first Books, entering

to laify their hands in cound balles, and to lay it inpor boyace Ames to be toped.

RIGO. Pou bone greatly bulighted me, innefailing bute me the order of following offiche without which, not analy the people of the Countrep dutallo the Courtier and Litizan are not able to line : mp defire is now to boder from the order of barnett, the Country mans long lokes for time a the remord of all his tople.

Harueft.

C.O.N. O. I will proceed in the accomplishing of your recourt. Withen the come is ripe, before it be fcorched with the great beat of the Conne (which is most extreame at the rifing of the leffer bog) it is to be cut before out of hand : for belay berein is panerrous. First, because that birds, and other hermine will benoure it: and againe, both the Graine and the Gare, the towns and the Erolo being brittle and over by will fone fall to the ground: if frome or tempetichance to artie the greateth part therof wil to the ground. and therfore it must not belinged butiohen it both loke wellow in enery place, and before that the Craine be thosolo bard, lobert they come to lake geddiff. you won't therebone it at, that it may rather ware in the banne, then in thefield. @pperience teacheth. that if it be ent baime in due time, the face will grow in fidnes as it lyeth in the barne : for the Mone increating, the Corne grades greater : at the change you must gather fuch liebe as you would thould be leaft facilitie. Vareo faith, that the best time for Barnell, is betwirt the Sunneflay, and the Dogge baves : to: the Come thep lay, both lie in the blane fifteene baies, flotes reth Afterne bayes, and riveth in fifteene baies. Amongft Braine Rape Har. mp Bulle, the Gritthat is tobe gathered is Mape fabe. And be cause the Conce fuhen the can beginn oth to wave vellow bedareth riperede, it would be gathered out of hand : and ath the feete will salily featter, it must be lapb eyther in plaine frunth places in the field, or boon Cannelle : and if it be prefently to be carried the Wilayme on Cartemust believed inith Sheetes, dell with lagging and tratting of the carriage, the liebe fail thosolo. Sou must take any bone as well har em an all other Bulle, that you present the sapne, fat the rayne falling, the cons one open. As force as vone Mapeleton is off, if the ground be plowed, you may foto Bucket or Branke as they call it : forthat of one piece of ground in one Borra, Polaviopinahe tipo Harneffs. B grt into Have barnell in

thefe Countries, followeth the barneft of Winter Barley, which Harneft is to bedilpatched before the liede (the Cares being ouer oried) ba for Winfall, for they have not bufaes to containe them as Wilheate bath. and the eares being brittell, will fone fall : pet fome thinke it beft to let the Barley lie a while in the field, whereby they thinke the Graine will ware the greater. Then followeth the Bempe bar. Hemp harneft. But firft (as 3 lato befoze) the Fimble og the Female, is well. pulled, and is bried a while in the Sounce, then (bound bp in butte bels) it is throwne into the water, and kept bowne with some weight , that it fwimme not abone. After likewife the Dale, the fiebe beclaring his ripenette is pulled by, and the fiebe being threathed out, it is call into the water, till the falke be foft : al ter, being bried in the Sunne, it is made by in bundels to be knockt and thaled in Wainter enenings. Hye is to be mowed in Rie and June of July, and after that, Wheate. Do better rule, then befoge barueft. the Graine be bard, and when it hath changed colour. An old 1020. nerbe (as Plinie faith) it is better to have in barneft two dayes to fone, then thee dayes to late. In Rie there is not fuch fears in frattering as in Wiheate, which as fone as it is rive, will theb with enery winde. Wherefore god hede muft be taken, that pon linger not with Waheate after it is ripe : although Plinie af. firmeth, that Witheat will have greater veelo when it Canas long: but furely beforring of it is bangerous, as well for the benouring of birds and bermine, as for thattering and falling of the face through frome and weather: as the profe was feene in the great windes that were in the piere of our redemption, 1567. Then The harfolloweth the haruett of Beale, Beanes, Tares, and Lentils, ac weft of all cording as they are timely fower, wherein you must take hede, as other corn and pulle. I warned you before in Kape feed, that they lie not abroad in the raine : for if they doe, they will open and lofe their feb. Laft of all commeth the Paruel of the other Summer feebe, as of Bare lev, Danniele, Willet, and Dates. It is found by erverience, that raine is goo for Dates after they be downe : for it caufeth them to fwell and to be faller, and to that end they are left in the field many times tino or thee weekes after they be powne.

Rico. Wihat ogder haue pon in your reaping ?

Gono. There are biners forts of reaping, according to the Divers namer of enery Country. Some with Sorthes which differ also forts of an resping.

as the worke requires. In this Countrey we ble their forts of corne Dithes, for either we bane a Sithe like a Sickle, which bols ben in the right hand, they cut the frate dole by the ground, and baue in the left band a long boke, where with they pull together that that they have cut, and lap it in heapes; and in this fort Wilheat and Kie, and fuch Graine as hath the Aurdieft Araw, is reaped. In other places as in lulis, where the ground being bery rich, the Come groweth higher and rancker, there they hold their left hand full of Coune, and with the right hand with tothed Sickles they cut it, leaving the frate bnder their hands long, to belpe the ground withall. In other places they ble a greater Sithe with a long Swath, and fenced with a croked frame of frickes. where with with both their hands they cut downe the Corne, and lap it in Swathes as they boe Graffe when they moive it, and with that they mow the higher forts of Corne. Varro and Columella, and other boe tell of funder other forts of reaping. Palladius teacheth, beside the labour of men, a shorter way to be done with an Dre, that Chall in Chozt time cut bowne all that groweth, which was wont to be bled in Fraunce. The deuile was, a low kinds of Carre with a couple of whieles, and the frunt armed with tharpe fickles, which ferced by the beaft through the Come, bid cut bowne all before it. This tricke might be bled in leuell and champion Countries: but with bsit would make butill-fanoured worke. In reaping, pou must regard to goe with the winde : for if you worke against the winde, it will be hurtfull, as Xenophon faith both to your eies and your hand. If the frain be but fhost. you must goe never the ground, if it be long, you may put your Dickles to the middell to bispatch it the somer, & to make it thresh the better : and the ftubble boon the ground must either according to Virgile rule be burnt, or rot byon the ground, for the bettering of the land. Some weferne that which is longelt, to thatch Barns, Stables, Countrey Cottages withall. And ivbere Bay is fcant, it ferneth for fobbeing of Cattell : for Barley frain is a foo that Bullochs lone well, and befine, all hinde of fraw is god to litter withall. When the Come is bowne, it is prefently to be bound in heaves : although Barley, Dates, and other Come and Bulle is made by in Cops and Rickes, but not without burt and basard. The Come being cut, is not to be had into the Barne prefently

but to be let day, accepting to the nature of every Gapne and pulse: for if it be carried in before it be through day, it corupteth and rotteth. Dates and Bucke, are longed lest abroad, as als so Lentiles, Peale and Pulse, because they are longed in daying. Wheat may sould be carryed, if it be not mingled with two many wiedes, that hinder the daying of it. When Paruell is in, the Plowing ground must out of hand be plowed, both to kill the wiedes, and size Harto make it the meter southeners sowing. The Corne cut doinne well, and date, is to be laid either in Barnes, Pouels, or Stacks: and after in Winter, to be trove out with Bealis, or threshed out with Plailes, and to be cleaned with Faures.

Rico. In Italy they ble to treat out their Come with Cat-

tell: the like reporteth Xenophon of the Grakes.

CONO. I have tame it my felfe, where they rather take Hogse then Dren: and that time they also winnow their Cozne, thinking the Southwest winds to be best for that purpose: but to stay for that, Columbia thinketh but the part of a small husband.

RIGO. I fee you have very large Barnes, what order ob

ferne you in the building of them #

Gono. You must so set your Barne, that the Come may The Barne be well brought into it, and set it be very close on enery five, leaving open a space so two vaces, a soze daze, and a backe daze, but so, as neither of them open to the Wick, but rather Rozthand Cast, and at both socs of the saze bestow your Cozne in severall tasks and mows, so that you may easily come to every one at your pleasure. And though the Cozne be layed byon batterinthe stages, yet let there be a space lest in the midst, that may be open to the very top, that you may setch what sozt you list to be three shee. In some places they have a Pully in the midst, where with they hopse by the Cozne to the very rasters of the house. In Holiand they have selve close Barnes, but all Doucle and Stacks, so placed with hanging rastes byon postes, that with pinnes and winches, they may heighten it, or let it down as they list.

R.1 Go. Tholekinge of Barnes they fay, are not fo fubicates

Dife and Kats, noz fo chargeable as the other ...

Con or Solvioener the Barne be, pon must place it as high as you may, lest the Come be spopled with morture or

bamps,

names : fame thinks it better far them to be that chet then tolent the largenette must be according to the greatnes of your oscippy ing. Dome, to the end Cats and Bagels may the better come by, they be bault the flore with bricks, and laving cafters thereon, be lay on their Corne. The flore must be fayre and fromth made, to as the Come map be well threshed or troben out. Colomella topulo have the flore faire valued with flint or flone, lobereby the Come will the forer be threthed, and the flore not burt with bear ting and trampling of Dren, and when it is fan'd or winnowed, it will not be full of gravell and burt, as the earthen flores veil. But we content our felnes with our earthen Smes, wellmade, and of god party; mirth with a tittle Chaffe, and the grounds of Dyle, for this preferueth the Comefrom Bile and Cinets. Den must make it berp even and levell, and after it is mingled with Chaffe let it be well troben and fo fuffered to byp. Don muft keepe alle from it Beafes, and Boultvie which with trampling a feraping will make it rugged and bhenen. When the flooris orb, the Come laid on it, is beaten out with flaples, and cleanfed with Fans, though in fome place they rather like to tread it out with Dremand to winnow it after the old fathien, with the winde.

R 1 GO. Well Dir, when you have thus threthed your Come,

what water have you to keepe it from winels ?

Garners. TO O N O. The Garners, of Come Lofts, wherein pour Come thus threften and cleanled thall be lave, must frand high, that they may be blowne through with the Cafferne & Bostherne winds, to which no morture from the places abiopining must be suffered to come for the quarters of the beanen that are colbeft and bypell, one both preferge Corne the longett. In Spaine and Apulia, being bot Countries, the winde is not onelplet in on the lides, by winbolves, but also at the bottome by grates. Some againe prefernes it in baults buder the ground, where the bay earth both cherify fuch fruites as the hath brought fouth, bled as Varro faith, in Spaine and Carthage : and in out Dapes we bie to hieve both Wine and Braine in fuch baults. In Countries that are wet and watrilb, it is better to make them in Carrets, as bigh as may be, having goo regard that it be ivell toalled and daged, 4902 coner, tubere as Corne is fubicat to Winels and Electrice, except it be berplately lapo op, it will fine beconfumed i there

for

fore von must make with Clay, mingled in freat of frain, with Against happe, then overcast it within and without with white Botters breeding Clay : talt of all, flape the rates and leaves of twilbe Curum of Wyucis.

bers in water two papes, and with that Water, and Lime, and Sand, make Blaifter, and walh therewithall the walles within :albeit, Plinic counts Lime as burtfull a thing as may be for Corne Dome mingle with Lime the Wime of Cattell, as a thing that will net cap Winels of the leaves of Bonfalecke, or Willorme twod, or Boppes : but fpecially if pou haue it, there is nothing to got to beffroy all fuch Mermine, as the brogges and bottoms of Dple : fome ble in the fead thereof, the pickle of Berrings. Bauing in this fort ordeed their felings , and their flores being Die, they Cuppole that no butfull woune halt annoy whatfor ener Come they lay in them. Some lay bnoer their Come, flee toott: others thinke it an affured remedy, if they be often fanned and beinnoined, and thereby coled: but Collumella thinkes it butrue, and that by this meanes the Wermine thall not onely be not beinen out, but they thall be dispearled throughout all the Corne, which if they otherwife be left alone, will meddle with no moze then the outward parts, for a bandbrebth depth within, there never baches any Wanuels, and therefore be thinks it bete ter to let that alone that is already corrupted, and will goe no further, then with farthet medling to marceall: fog it is an cafe matter, whenfoeuer pe niebe to occupy it to take away that is tainted and to ble the reft. But for all this, experience teacheth bs, that there is not fo god a remedy to deftroy the Mapuell, as is the often farming and winnowing in Dummer. After the firth ting pieces, they bold opinion, they will not meddle with Come: but I weary you with carrying you to much about, and if it pleafe you, we will returne bome.

RIGO. If it be for your eafe fo to be : otherwife there can be no greater pleasure to me, then walking abroad to heare you talks of husbandey. Are thefethat I fie your Baltures, where your fat Of Paffine

Dren, and pour Bares, and your Colts goe leaping.

Cono. They are fo I lay all my pattures feuerall, for enery kinos of Cattell to be by bimfelfe : in the bithermalt that you fir, are my Cattell that Ifat : in the next are my Dogles, my Bares, and me Calts : in the nert are my poung breite, Derelings, and Two. .041

and Med dow.

Ewoperelings. The Perboines that you lie in ponder Malley, the all to be Powed. Herenert to my house, are my Sucklings, that are brought to their Dains to suck thise a day, and therefore ought to be neere: howbeit, such as severare eff, must bu ligently and bally be loked to, for feare of diseases.

RIGO. Since I have troubled you thusfarre, I cannot leans

till 3 bnoerstand all pour others.

CONO. Po trouble at all to me; but rather as I faib before; the recording hereof, is my great too; for in talking of these mats

ters you bring me a bed.

Rigo. I pray you then take the paines to describe me the orbering of Pastures and Pedowes, when as there seemeth to be a great affinitie betwirt them and Come ground, and because they are sometimes also to be plowed, me thinketh this part re-

maineth to be fpoken of.

Cono. Withall my heart . I will fatiffie pour befire in as much as 3 am able : and indeed lince I have all this while fooken of Corne ground, it is not out of order to tel you my minde of 13a. fture : e although Cato in fome places both que the preeminence to the Ulinepard : pet other old watters boe moft of all preferre Baltures, as the ground that requireth leaft to boc about it: and therefore they were called, as Varro fatth, Prata, because then foere Parara, alway in reatines, e neoconcither great charge noz labour, noz are in banger of Roznie oz tempetts, as other binbe of ground is except fuch parcels as He neste Kiners & Blands, which are fometimes overflowed: and that difcommobitie is fufficiently recompenced with the fatnelle that the water leaves behinde it. which enricheth the ground, and makes it the better perely to pelo his gaine cyther in Ballare or Debooin. The Ballures with be boe commonly ferue both for Baffure or Deboolo when we lift fpecially in fuch places where the ground is rich and baie, which they hap rather to employ to Walture, because with bungs ing of Cattell, it wareth alwayes the better, whereas with continuall bearing of Dap, it hath growne to be moffie and naught: but inhere the ground is alwaies wet and watriff, there it is better to let it lye for Peddow. Columella maketh tivo kindes of Balture ground, whereof one is alwaics bap, the other overs foince. The god and rich ground bath na note of overflowings

the

the Bay being much better that groweth of the felfe goonelle of the ground, then that which is forced by waters : which former time not with fanding is needfull, if the barrennelle of the ground requireth it : for in bad and naughty ground, god Bedbow may be made, if it lie to be ouer flowne : but then muft the ground neither lie hollow, not in hils, least the one of them keepe the was ters boon it to long, and the other prefently let it forth againe! Therefore lyeth the ground belt, that lieth levellet, which fuffer reth not the water to remaine bery long, nozauoideth it to fone. If in fuch ground it chaunce to fand overlong, it may be autoided with water freame at your pleasure : for both ouerplus, and the want of water are alike burtfull buto Debbowes. It is bery bandfome, where by and barraine ground lieth fo by the Kiver. as the mater may be let in by trenches when you life: in fine the occupping of Balture grounds require moze care then travaile. Firft, that we fuffer not Bulbes, Thornes, nor great Wiedes. to ouer-grow them, but to bestroy some of them, as 15 zambles. Briers, Bulrufbes, and Sedges in the end of Summer, and the other that be Summer webes, as Solothiftell, and all other Thiftels, in the Spring. Don muft take bebe of Swine, that Spoile and turne by the ground ill-fauouredly, and all other Cattell': except it be in hard and day weather, for other wife they guit and marre the ground with the beepe fincking of their feete treads ing in the Graffe, and breaking of the Motes. The bad and bartaine grounds are to be belped with dung in Winter . Specially in Rebauary, the Done encreating, and the fronce, fickes, and fuch baggage as lye fcattered abroad, are to be throwns out for ner, or later as the ground is. There are some Debowes that with long lying, are over growne with spotte, which the old buf. bands were wont to remedy with calling of certaine feedes a broad, with laying on of bung, frecially Bigeons bung : but no thing is to good for this purpole, as often to caft Athes boon it. for that bestropeth Bote out of hand. Botwithfanding these are but troublesome remedies. The best and certainest is to Plowe it : for the ground after his long reft, will beare godly Corne. But after pou haus plowed it it will-fcarle vecouer his old effate again for Baffure & Debbow in thee or foure peres. Will ben you meane to let your ground lie againe for Debooli of Balture, POUL

your belt is to folie it with Dates , and to Barrols the ground cuen and leucil, and to burle out all the fonce and fuch things as map burt the Sythe : for Dates is a great breber of graffe. Some Doe call Bapifeede , gathered from the Bapiloft og the Kackes, ouer the ground before they barrolo it. Dthers againe, when their Debootes baue lien long, fowe Beanes byon them, of Kape lette, of Billet, and the pere after Wibeate : and the third piere thep let them lie againe for Deboot or Dafture. Don mult beware, that while the ground is lole and fort, pon let not in the water, for the force of the water will wall away the earth from the rotes of the Graffe , and will not fuffer them to grow together : neither mut pou (for the like banger) fuffer Cattell to come bpon it, except in the fecond perce Goates, or Shape or fuch like, after you have mowed it, and that if the feafon be bery baie. The third pere you may put on your greater fort of Cattell a. gaine, and if the ground be billy and barraine, you may bung the highelt part of it in Februacy, as 3 faib before, cafting on it foms Day fade, for the higher part being mended, the raine or water that comes to it , will carrie bowne fome part of the richnelle to the bottome, as 3 faib before, when 3 fpake of the manuring of earable ground. But if you will lay in nelo ground for Mebbolu. and that you may have your choife, take fuch as is rich, deluy, les well, or a little hanging, or chole furb a valley, where the water can neither lee long, no runne away to fall : neither is the ranke Staffe alwayes a figne of gob ground : for what goblier Graffe is there faith Plinie , then is in Germanie , and pet you hall there have fand within alittle of the opper part. Beither isit alway a watry ground where the Graffe growes bigb, for the very Moun. taines in Sycherland pell great and high graffe for Cattell. The Ballures that lies by the Lakes of Dumone in Auftry and Hungaric are but flender, not about the Rhine, fperially at his falling into the Sea about Holland, as likewife in freschand and Flaunders. Cafar Vopifcus, the ffeldsof Rofcius were the prins cipall of Italy , lobere the Graffe would fo foone growe, as it would hibe a Raffe in a pay. You may make good Debpoine of any ground, fo it may be watreb. Pour Debbowes are to be purged in September and Deober , and to be rib of all bulbes, brambles, and great foule Woods, and all things elfe

that amon them , then after that it both often beine frired, and with many times plowing made fine, the flones caff alway, and the clobs in enery place broken, you must bungit frell with fresh bung, the Done encreafing. Let them be keut from golling and trampling of Cattell. The mouldbils and dunging of bosfe and bullocks , must with your fpade be caff abread, fwhich if they remaine, would either be barbarours of Ants e fuch like Wermine, or elfe breeders of huntfull & unprofitable mens, pour Beddowes muft be land in towards Warch, and kept from Cattell, and made bery cleane : if they be not cich, they must be memed with bung, which muft be laid ou, the Done encrealing, and the newer the bung be the better it is and the more Graffe it makes: which muft be lain byon the top of the highest of the ground, that the gubnes map rume to the bottome. The beft bearbe for Bafture or Debbow is the Erefoile or Claner: the next is fwet Brafferthe worff as Plinic laith is Rulbes, Fearne, and Borletatle.

RIGO Bow thall I know when the Braffe is ripe, and ready

to be rut :

neth to fade and ware fiffe, and befoze it wither. Caro bids not to mow your Graffe with the lates, but befoze the lied be ripe. It is best cut downe befoze it wither, whereby you had have both more, and better hey of it. Some, where they may overslow it, do water it a day before they cut it, it cutteth better after a dewie enough.

RIGO. Doe you cut graffe in the like lost as you doe Corner Cono. Almost in the like lost, some doe de thost Sithes, motiving it with one hand; but we here doe de the common great Sith, motiving with both our hands, as I said before, that Dates, and Barly, and such other like Corne was motived, which Sithes we de to tharpe with Whetstones, or instruments of wood dested with sand. The Graffe being cut, must be well tedded and turned in the Summer, and not cocked till it be dry: and if it chance to be wet with raine, it must not be turned, till the dipper part be dried. There is a measure to be ded in making of it, that it be not had in two drie, nor two graine. The one lost, if the succe be dried dry, scrueth anely sor litter: the other (two grains and morst) if it be carried into the Lost, rotteth, and the bapour being over-heated, saileth on sire and burneth. And if so be the raine chance to fall

byon the graffe that is networt bolune, if it be not flicreb,it takes not lo much harme : but tfit be once turned pou muft fill be fite. ring of it, otherwife it will rot. Therefore the bypermoft part befogett be turneb , muft be well brieb with the Sunne and the winde : when it is bricd, we lay it in windrowes, and then make it bp in Cockes, and after that in Dowes, which muft be tharps and piked in the top, the better to befend it from the raine, lubich if it boe not fall, pet is it god fo to boe, that they may fivent in. the faid Moines, and digest inhatfocuer mothure is in it. And therefore good bulbands doe not lay it by in their leftes, till fuch time as it hath fineat in the Ficio. Graffe is commonly mowed twile a peere, in Map of June, and againe after Baruelt : the first mowing is counted the beft. As cone as the Bay is off after the first mowing, it would be overflowed (if you may conveniently) to the end the after froath may be mowed in Aurumne, which they call in Latine Cordum. In the Dukebeme of Spoleto, it is faid they moine foure times a peere, being bie ground, and diners other places there a viere. Medica map be cut fire times a pere, if it be entered as it ought to be. It is best mowed Suben it beginneth to flowie, for it must not grotve to fabe : being bried it is made by in bundels, and kept goothee percs, to the great comfort of pore Cattell : but because 3 haue tolde pon of Medica before, it is but baine to rehearfe it againe.

RIGO. Dou have tpoken of a very large and great knowledge of hulbanday, tobich out of boubt requireth in a man great

trauaile and biligence.

Cono. It requires indeed great differed and travalle, howboit, it recompenses the paines and the charges not without great gaines, whereof Plinic bringest for example Caiw Crasinus, who when upon a little piece of ground he reaped more fruit and graines a great deale, then his neighbours his upon their great eccupiers, grew into great haved amongs them, as though her had bewithed their field: whereof being accused by Spurius Albinus, and feating to be consemmed, when the Quest though passe upon him, he brings all his instruments of bushandry into the common place, and brought in therewithall his daughter, a folly great Kulle, his trontales persons well made, great Spades ; mightie Consters, and luthe Cattell: Loc bare (quoth

(quotybe) mine enchauntments, neither can I bring before pon The dilimy great and painefull labours . watchings, and fiveat, where Caus Crabyon be was prefently quit by the boyces of them all. But I finus. keeps you to long about my husbanday, it is goo time he leans and dos bome.

RIGO. With a goo will, 3f 3 may obtagne one thing at pour bands, which when you have made an end inith. I will trouble pon no longer.

Coko. Withat is that?

Rico. If a man would buy a Farme of a Manner, in what fort thail he best noe it ? for 3 noubt not but you have goo fail

in fuch matters.

CONO. Ischomachus in Xenophon, telleth, that his father taught him that he Could never buy a peece of ground, that hab beene Chilfully or curinnaly busbanded before, but rather fuch ground as by the flothfulneffe and powerty of the Baifter, bath lyen butilled and neglected and yet fame to be bery good ground: as it is better to buy a leane Boyle, fo that he be not old, and that be bane the tokens of a good Bosle, then a fatte Bosle, and one that is curioufly kent. A well extered pace of land is bely beere. and vieles no great encreale, and therefore is newther fo please fant, not fo prefitable, as that which by good busbandry may be made better. Cato would have two thinges to be abferned in buying of land: The godnelle of the ground, and the whole Comenelle of the aire : of which two, if either be lacking, wholo ener both bupit, be judgeth him madde, and mete to be fent to Bedlam : for none that is well in his wittes, will bestow cost opon barraine ground, not hazard himfelle for a little rich ground. to be alwaies inbient to veitilentiall bileales : for lobere a man must beale with the Divell there is not onely his commoditie, but his life boubtfull , and rather his beath then his gaine certaine. After these time wincipall notes, as Columella saith, Cato abded of like weight these thee that follow to be regarded : the Way. the Water, and the Beighbour. The godnelle of the may is a great matter, for it both makes the Walter haue a belight to goe about it, and it is commodious for carriage, tobich bringeth great gaine, and little charges. Of the commoditie of water who bouls teth without whole ble no man is able to live . Dla mans neigh-

## The first Booke, outreating

bour, he would have a man have speciall regard. Hesiodus satth, what xexes have, an entil neighbour is a great mistricte. I have knowne vivers, that so, the troublesommess of their neighbour, have so, laken good dwellings, and changed gold so, copper, because they have had salse knames to their neighbours, and quarrellers, that suffering their cattell to runne at large in energy mans ground to spoile their Come and their Times, would also cut volve wood, and take what socue they sind, alwairs by abling about the bournes of their ground, that a man could never be in quiet so, them: o, else have dwelt by some Caterpiller, Kustian, of swall-buckler, that would leave no kind-of mischiefe budone. Amongst all which commonly there is not so ill a neighbour, as the new upstart, that takes upon him the name of a Gentleman, who though you we him never so well, will at one time of other give you to but erstand from whence he comes, and make you sing with Claudian.

Aperius nibil est bamili cum sargut in altum,
A lewder wretch there lives not under skie.
Then Clowne that climes from base estate to hie.

As the Proverbe in England is, let a knave on horleback, and you thall for him thoulder a knight: for an Ape will be an Ape, though you cloath him in purple. Surely D. Portius mould have a man thunne the neighbourhood of luch, as the petitience. I for my part am happy in this point, that I have no neighbour that I needs to feare.

Rigo. Perhars they dare not for your authoritie to doe, as other wife they would.

CONO. But since beath and other cassalties rive a man of them, the divelling is not to be lest, if it have other god commonities, except it be places in the bodders of sunday Countries that be subject to great sicknesses. Some common the divelling that hath faire water about it, is more some kiner or god Parket, except a man may carrie his Perchandize with lesse charges. Opeold sellowes would never have a man place hunselsenerse the bigh way, so pissering of such as passe by, and troublesonmesse of guests, as I said before in speaking of the placing of an house. In the letting of a Farme, these things are to be observed that I spake of before, in describing of a Bailiste of Husbandise and his labour; that you let it to such, whose transite and god behaviour.

The letting of a

behantour you may be affered of, and that you regard more their good expering of the land then the cent, which is least burtfalland most gainefull. For whereas the ground is well bufbarmen won thall commonly have gaine, a never lotte, except by bureafonable, neffe of the weather, which the Civili Lawrer fanth, fooil not be any bamage of the Eenant, or the innaffan of the enemie. inherethe Zenant cannot beipe it. Befipes ; the Last mut not beale with his Emant fo Rtaightly in cuery point, as by law be might, for his rent bayes, bargaines of wood quitrents, or fuch, the rigour wherein is more troublefome, then beneficiall: neither anabt mee to take every abuantage, for law many times is right plaine iprong : neither muft ye be to flacke on the other fibe far to much gentlenede many times makes a man the morfe. And therefore it is ont if the Farmer be flacke in his painents, to make bim to know it : but in no wife to be a raifer or enhannier of rents for that bifcomforts and many times braneth the tenant. Mozeover, you muft not lightly change the olde Farmer, both because of his beferts, and that hee is better acquainted with the ground then a new. L. Volulius would alwayes fay, that bee was in best case for his Lands, that had alwayes his Tenants borne and bredde by in them , whereby the long familiaritie Should make them more louingly to ble themfeluis: for fure it is an entil ble often to change Tenants, and therefore 3 doe like well that order where the land is let for the lines of the Tenant. bis wife, and his childe, paving a perely rent, to that as long as he papes his rent, and keepes the reparations, it thall not be lawfull to beceive bim : for hereby the Tenant Chall be pronoked to order the ground with more oiligence to repaire the boule and to loke to if in all noints as to bis owne befrowing many times as much as he bath boon it. This way of letting Land me femes is bett. where the ground is subject to the Sea or the Miurr, or other banger . that the Tenant bee tharged with the maintenance of it. And here be fure that you let it rather to one of habilitie, then to an bothefftie man, that is not able to beare it, whereby pon may lofe both pour Land and your rent. In fuch place aslies nere the Lozb , bee may counte it by his Bapliffe, as to balones: but where it isfar off, it is better to let it out for a verelpa rent buon the forelaid conenants. For if you occuvie it with your fernants:

#### The first Booke, entreating

fernants, they will exther loke all to your cattell, or your ground, or latter things to be feoline, or feale themselines, or make you be at more charges then needeth, and be carelesse in enery thing. In letting of ground commonly it is concuranted, that the Acnant thail not let not sell without leave of the Lord, and that he shall not breake any pasture or meddow land, and what, and how much he shall some of enery kinds of grame, how much hee shall have so, Dassure, how much he shall let lie, and how much he shall mend. Here have you almost as much as I am able to say in husbanding of the ground.

CONO. I thanke you, you have greatly belighted me with

the belerbing of your Paffure-ground and Carable.

The end of the first Booke.

The



# The fecond Booke: Of Gardens, Orchards, and VVoods

THRASYBULVS. MARTUS. TULYA



( Ta) Caule of the aliance betwirt Bearbes. Trees, and Corne, and because their bulbanden is almost one it is reason that next the firit boke, weitten of Carable ground and Tillage, thould follow the Defcription of Dechards, Barbens, and their fruits: Virgill in waiting of Bulbanday, left this part bniwitten of: bowbeit, biners others

both old e new waters have not without fome biligence waitten of this part but pet by fnatches (as it were) a not throughly lubofe avinions is need with mine own experience it feemeth god to me in this boke to beclare. And fince the ble of Dzcharos & Bardens The vie is great and ancient, that Homer writeth, bow Lacrees the olde of Garman, was want with his trauaile in his Decharbs, to beine from dens of his minde the farrow her take for the absence of bis foune. And great anti-Xenophon reporteth, that king Cyrus, as great a prince as he was would plant with his owne bands, a let trees in his ozchards, in fuch order, as it famed an earthly paradife. Q. Currius wate teth of Abdolominus, that for his great vertue, of a pore garoner, came to be king of the Sidonians. And facely, not unworthily is this part of bulbandap effemed, fixing it both not alonely bring great pleafere, but also is greatly profitable for the mainter nance of bouleholde, and the sparing of charges, ministring to the bul band daily lode, and lufficient luftenance without call. for inhen (as Columella faith) in the olde time the people lines moze temperately, and the pore at more libertie fed of fich & milke, and fuch things as the ground e foldes pecided, but in the latter age when root and baintines began to come in, and the wealthier fort to efferme no fare but coffip, and farre fetched, not content with meane diet , but coucting luch things as were of greatest

#### The lecond pooke, entreating price, the prace people as not able to beare the charges feere has

nithed from the collicer cates, and brinen to content themfelnes mith the baleft fode. And bereaf forang at the first the planting of Dechards, and making of Carpens, where with the poreff creature that was, might flore his hitchin, and baue his bidnals als maves at band, the Dichard and Carben feruing for his Shame bles , with a great beale more commendable and burtleffe biet. Berein were the olde buf bands bery carefull, and sich, alinaves to funge, that where they found the garden out of apper the loife of the house (for buto her belonged the charge therof) was no god an ill hufhalinife, for they thould be forced to have their bidnals from the Shambles of the Barket, not making to great account of Cole inorts then, as they boe now , conbemming them for the charges that were about them. As for fleth, it was rather lethed then be Led amongt them. Dnip Dzcharbs and Carbens Die chiefly pleafe them because the fruits that they vield necheb no fire for the breffing of them, but fpared wood, being alwayes of themfelies ready Dielleb, ratie of pirettion, and nothing burdenfame to the flow macke: and fome of them feruing alfo to pouber or preferve with all, as god marchandise at home, as Plinic fayth, not byfuing men to feeke pepper as farre as Inbie. Df Lucin, 3 the Dyffer not regard as the Boet favth. And therefore to make them of more worthinede, and that for their common profite, they thould not be the leffe regarded, there were biners noble men of the boufe of Valerius, that toke their furnames of Lettule and were not affer med to be named Lettismen. The old people had in great effis mation the Garbens of the baughters of Atlas,and of the kings Adonis and Alcinoi, of tohom Homer to much (peaket), as also the great baultet Carbens, eyther built by Semiramis, 02 by Cyrus the king of Affiria. Epicure is reported to be the first that ever beuiled garden in Athens, befoze his time it was not feme, that the pleafures of the Countrie were bat in the Citie. Row when Thrafybulus transfling in the affavzes of his prince, channeed to come to the house of Marius, & carried by bun into a Carben that he had, which was bery beautifull, being led about among the Sweet finelling downer, and bover the pleasant Arbours, tohat a

gooly fight (quoth Thrafy bulus) is beere + beto excellently hane pou garnithed this paradife of pours with all kinds of pleafures?

An cuill Garden

token of

wafe.

Pour

Sour Warlers, and your banketting boules bath within and with out, as all beverked with pittures of bemtifull foinges & Eres, that you map not onely fiede your eyes with the beholding of the true and lincip flotner, but also belight pour felle with the coun. terfait in the mint of winter frame in the me the painted flower to conteno in beautie with the been flower in the other the monverfull toucke of pature, and in both, the passing godnes of God. Poseover, pour pleafant Arbours to inalke in whole thanboines haps of the beate of the funne and if it fortune to raine, the closfters are hard by But specially this little River, with most cliere water, encompating the garben both womerfully fet it footh, and berewithall the grams and couly prickfet beages, no chargeable kinde of enclofures, differeth it both from Man & Bent. 3 fpeake nothing of the well orbered quarters inherens the Dearbes and Trees are fenered enery fort in their due place, the Pot-bearbes by themselnes, the nowers in another place, the Trees & Junes in another quarter, all in full fquare and propertion, fuith Alleis and walkes among them. Among thefe goody fights, 3 pray you remember according to pour promise (for fo the time requireth) to their mee fome part of your great knowledge in garden mate ters, lith you have boon this condition heard me beretologegrabs ling, at rather wearping you with the designing of my page fail in the tilling of the field.

MARIVS. Pour memorie is herein a little to quicke, but what that I boer Promise must be kept, and fince you will need force me, you that heare me babble as well as I can, of my know, ledge in Gardening: but not with the like pleasure that I heard

you talking of your graphing and your ground.

A recommendation of the second

THEA. Pestruly, with as great pleasure evelire as may be.

MARIVS. Come on then, let be here fit downe in this Arebour, and we will now and then rise e walke, resting is as oft as you will: in the means time I will shall make ready our supper. And first, even as you began with the choosing of a place (meet to set your bouse upon, so well a moth the choose of a place (meet to set your bouse upon, so well a moth the choose of a place (meet to set your bouse upon, so well a mother should be made by the Panna, house, some in the Citie, where some they be, if the place will suffer, they must be made as more to the house as may be; but so, as they be as far from the Barnes.

Barnes as you can for the Chaffe or buft blowing into them, and either fobicat to the Dounge heape, whereby it may be made rich. or effe in fome bery good ground that bath fome small Brooks comping by it, or if it have none fuch, fome Well or Conduit. Soberebrit man be watered. An excellent plot for the purpole is, that which veclineth a little, and hath certains gutters of water running through divers parts thereof: for gardens mult alwaics be to be easily matered, if not with some running treame, some pumpe to be made, or kettle Will, or fuch like, as may ferue the turne of a natural fireame. Columella moult have you make your fearch for water, when the Some is in the latter part of Virgo. which is in September , before his entrance into the Winter Equinoctiall, for then may you best buderstand the strength or goonelle of the fprings, when after the great burning heat of the commer, the ground bath a long while continued without raine. If you carnot thus bane water , you muft make fome flanding pond at the boper part of the ground, that may receive e contains fuch water as fals from about, toberefuith pee map water pour Barben in the ertreame heat of Sommer: but where neither the nature of the fople noz connevance by Conduit of Dunne of rune ning Areame is to be had, you have no other belpe but the raine mater of ininter, which if you also have not, then must you belue and lay pour Carden thee or foure fote nepe: which being to or bered will well be able to abide what focuer brought boe happen. This is also to be regarded, that in gardens that are bellitute of mater, you to order them into fenerall parts that what part you will occupie in winter, may lie towards the South, e that which thall ferue you for Sommer, may lie towards the Roth. In a Garben, as in the choyle of Come ground, you mult loke whee ther the goodnelle of the ground be not hindered by the bulkilfule nette of him that bath occupied it. You muft alfomake chople of pour waters, of which the bell (as Plinic fauth) are the colocit, and fuch as be fweet to brinke: the worft that comes from Bonbs, or is brought in by trenches becamfe they bring with them the feets of graffe and tweedes : but the ground both most belight in raine water, which killeth wormes and baggage that breds in it : but for forne bearbs, falt water is neoful as the Habbith Bete Meln. Saurell to bibith at falt water they fav is a frecial belver-making

thens

The time of fearching for water, them both pleafant and fruitfull: to all others. fivet mater is only to be bleb. And becaule 3 haue begun to entrent of watering. The time must give this note, that the times of watring is not in the heat of wates of the ban but earcly in the morning, e at might, least the water ring of be heated with the Sunne: onely Bafill pou muft toater at none, Gardens, the feed fomething will come the foner by, if they be fyzinckled at the first with bot water. Dou hane bere beard, that the first new full thing for a Darben, is water. Ehe nest to that is en:loture, Enclofing that it be wel enclosed, both from burnly folks & theenes, and like of Garinife from beatts : left lying in waite for your bearbs and your dens. fruits, they may both bereaue you of your paines, and your pleas fore: for if epther they be bitten with bealts, or twoften handleb mith men, it binozeth them both of their growth e firbing : and therefore it is of necellitie to haue the Garben well enclosen. Row for enclosures, there are fundaphindes, some making earth in mould boe counterfeit Baichwals: Dthers make them of lime tones: fome others of frones layd one byon another urbeapes. cafting a Ditch for water round about them, tobith hinde Palladius forbios to follow, because it will brain out the morffure from the Carben , ercept it be in a mariff ground. Dibet make their fence with the leedes and lets of Thorne : forme make them of mubbe walles concred with Brate of heath. Varro maketh men tion of foure tunder of enclosure : the first natural! the fecond inilde, the third fouldierly, the fourth, of carpenters ipozke. The first a naturall is the quickelet bedge, being fet of poing thornes, inhich once well growen, regarbethneither fire noz other burt. The fecond is the common bedge made of ocad wood, well faked and thicke plathed or railes. The third the fouldfours fortifping. is a neepe detch with a campier : but the outch must be fo made as it may receive all the water that comes from above or fals into it. wherein the banure mult be fo frepe, that it may not eafily be climen This kinds of fence is to be minde, where the ground fies neere the tree war loobute boon the Miner, of which fort I that bane occasion to Speake more beceaster E beforr to fince mate by the Carpenter of by the Bafon, is commonly knowen: Whereof there is foure fasts, either of Stones, of briches, or Eurfe, and earth, a little fignes framed in monloe. Columella following the anciented authors, preferreth the quicklet bette befall the vent.

The making of a quick-fet bedge.

because it is leffe chargeable, and also endureth the longet continuing a long time : which bedge of pong thomes, be teacheth to make in this fort. The place that you befermine to enclofe muff after the beginning of Deptember, loben the ground bath beens well taked with raine, be trenched about with two furrowes, a part biffant one from the other, the benth a breakth of cuery one of themmust be tipo fot, inhich you must fuffer to lye emptie all winter proutbing in the meane time the feetes that poumeane to folie in them, which mut be the berries of tharpe thornes, briers, holly, and wilde Eglantine, which the Greekes call bog beier. The berries of thele pou muft gather as ripe as you map, and mingle them with the flowie or Deale of tares, which when it is frince kich with water, must be put byon old ropes of thins, or any other copes, the capes being thus handled and bued, mult be land by in fome borbes flore. Afterward when winter is bone within forty papes after about the comming of the Swallow, if there be any water remaining in the Furvolves, it muft belet out, the mellower earth, which was call out of the furrowes in the enne of Summer, muß now be caft in againe, till von bane fileb them bo to the midt : then mult you bandlomely bufolde the ropes, and lay them in length through both the furrowes, and fo cover them. taking god bot that pou throw not too much earth byon them for bindering the fpring which commonly bleth to appears with in thirtie dapen after, and loben they be grainne to be of fome beight, they mult be made to encline to the frace betwirt the ting furromes: in which fpace you must have a little wailed betge,to teach the fprings of other furrowes to climbe by inbich will be a tolly flay and a comfact to them. But 3 have another and a more newerand readier way of making of them, which I first practiting in this Countrie, biuers others have followed. I also bo make a certains of making Ditch, e gathering in the wood, the young frangs of thornes, cut ting off their tops, I fet them on the bancke of the Ditch fo that they fand halfe a foot out of the ground, plucking by all the weeks (Specially the first Sommer) that grow about them and fucke a way the inyce that comforts the fet. The rootes being this rid. I cover all the earth about them with fram, whereby both the heate of the night is let into the rootes and the poore plant is he tenach from the hurning of the Sumer. The perce after I make

Another better way bedge,

a little flender raile of plants, lobereunts 3 lay by the fprings, wearing them in fuch foot as I will have them to grow, which I percip make higher, according to the beight that 3 mauis baue the Debge to fpring. Cight, or at the bttermoft nine fote. is a fufficient height, and whatfoeuer fpring aboue, must be plathed of one fide of the other , to make the fence the fronger. Withen I have thus bone, I mat it thicker and thicker every vere-Alling by the places where I fee it thinne, with fach bowes as I fee grow out of ozber : and thus is it women to thicke with peeres ly bindings, that not fo much as a fmall bird is able to paffe tho. rowit , noz any man to loke through it. When it is thicke o nough and bigge enough, the fuperfluous fraings muft cuery pere be cut: This hedge can neuer be bedroped. ercest it be plucked by by the cotes : neither feareth it the burt of fire, but will groive the better foz it. And this is my way of encloting a Barben, as the pleafanteff, most profitable, and of least charges.

THRA. There is another way of making of a quick-let Bedge, Another inhich our Bedgers in the Countrey doe die, which is something fort of the stronger. For letting the young dets, as you have laid before, hedging, when they be growne to some greatnesse, they cut the Thorne more to the ground, and being halfe cut and broken a sunder, they boide it along the Bedge, and plath it. From these cuts spring up new plants, which still as they growe to any highnesse they cut them, and plath them againe: so doing continually, till the Bedge be come to his full height. This way the Bedge is made so strong, that neither Bogge nor other beast, is able to breake through it: but the other is a great deale more pleasant to the eye. But if I have not dets enough to serve, may I make an Impe Garden of their serve.

MARIVS. Dea very well. Pake your Thome Barden of Core plot in this lost. Take your Berries of Cones, and mingle thom with earth, lay them op for the first years in some place make so, them, the nert piece sowe them as thicke as you can, and you hall within a little time have a whole Mad of thomes.

THAA. Fon hane note spoken of Water and enclosure, tipo principall points in a Garben: It now remaineth to speake of the ground mate for a Garben, and the order of the fling it.

MARIVS, Ofthe funtry fasts of ground, and of the bifcerning

Ø

0

of them, became you in your discribing of Come ground before have sufficiently spoken, I do not think it needfull so, me to repeat it. Againe, it is enough to me to adde onely this, that the ground ongst not to be twich, not twill leane, but sat and mellow, which hangeth south a small kinde of Grasse like haires: such ground requires least labour, the sufferand the rich ground asketh greater paines about it, but both recompence it agains with his struitfulnesse. The stiffe, leane, and cold ground, is not to be medled with as Columella writeth in appointing god ground so. Gardens.

The ground that gives the ripe and mellowed mould,
And doth in working crumble like the lands:
That of his owne good nature yeeldeth manifold,
Where Walwoort with his purple Berrie Itands.
For neither doth the ground that Itill is dry,
Content my minde, nor yet the watrie loyle:
Whereas the Frogge continually doth cry,
While in the Itinking Lakes he Itill doth moile.
I like the land that of it felfe doth yeeld,
The mighty Elme that branches broad doth beare,
And round about with Trees bedecks the field
With Trees, that wilde beares Apple, Plumme, and Peare,
But will no Bearefoot breed, nor Itinking Gumme,
Nor Yewe, nor Plants, whence deadly poyfons come.

What to be confidered in the choise of garden ground. Ayre. Windes.

The ordering of

And thus much of the Carden ground, which as I faid, is was treb. or may be watred, and is enclosed either with a wall, a bedge, or fome other fafe enclosure. After this it is needfull it lie well to the Sunne, and warme: for in ground that is very colde, the warmth of the Sunne will not much availeit. And contrary, if it be a hot burning fand, the Benefit of the Deauens can little helpe it. Douinuft pet loke, that it lie not fubied to ill loindes, that are bay and freeching, and being frofts and mifts. But now to the oze bering of pour Carden. Firft, pou muft be fure that the ground which pon meane to fow in the Spring, be well digged in the fall of the leafe, about the Kalends of Daber: and that which pou garden in the fall of the leafe, muft be bigged in Day, that either by the colbe of Winter, or the heate of Summer, both the clob may be mellowed, and the rotes of the wedes beftroped, not much before this time must you pung it. And loben the time of Coloina

folding is at hand a fine dapes before, the weedes must be got out, and the bung laved on and to often and biligently muftit be digged. as the ground may be throughly medled with the mould.

Therefore the parts of the Bardens muft befo ordered as that Tobich you meane to fowe in the end of Summer, may be digaed in the Spring : and the part that you will fowe in the Spring. mult be bigged in the end of bummer : fo thall both pour fallowes be feafoned by the benefit of the coide and the Sunne. The Beds. beds are to be made narrow and long, as pri. fote in length, and fire in breanth, that they may be the caffer worden : they must lie in wet and watrie ground two fot bigh, in bay ground a fote is fufficient. If your beds ipe lo bap, as thep will fuffer no water to tarry boon them, you must make the spaces betwirt higher , that the water may be forced to lie and anothe when you will. Of O'diethe hindes & forts of ounging being fufficiently entreated of by you, ging and I will fay nothing : onely, adding this that the bung of Alles is dunging of Garthe belt , becaufe it breebeth fewelt webes : the nert is Cattels dens. bung, and Sheepes bung, if it haue lien a perce. The ground as 3 faid which we meane to fowe in the Spring, we mult after the end of Summer let lye fallow; to be featoned with the frost and the cold : for as the heate of Soummer, fo both the cold of the Winter bake and leafon the ground. When winter is bone, then must we begin to bung it: and about the fourteenth of fifteenth of January, we muft big it againe , beuibing it in quarters and beds. Firtt must the weedes be plucked by , and turffes of barraine ground muft be layd in the Allepes, which being well beaten with 18es tics, and fo trob bpon , that the graffe be wome away, fo that it fcarce appeare, it will after fpring by as fine as little hapre, and pield a pleafant fight to the eye, which will be very beautifull. Wahen pou haue feuered your flowers by themfelues, pour Johi ficke hearbs by themlelues, and your Bot-hearbs and Sallets in another place: the bebs and the bozbers muft be fo caft, as the Weders hands may reach to the mible of them, to thall they not neede in their labour to tread boon the bedocs, not to hurt the hearbs. And this I thinke fufficient for the preparing of pour ground before the folding. Bow will & Speake of folding, and Of Som lobat thail be foined in enery leafon. To speake of all forts of ing Dearbs and Flowers, were an endlette labour, onely of those that

Three feafons to fove in.

ere most minbfull. I meane to entreat. And first of bearbe, some are for the Bot fome for the fight fome for pleasure and finet favour, and forme for Whiticke, And againe forme are for Wilinter, forme for Summer, and fome betweet both. The firft time of folding after Wainter, is the moneth of Barch, April, and Bay, wherein we bie to fow Colinarts Kabifb, Kave, and after Betes, Lettufe, Sozel, Buffardeleebe, Coziander, Will, and Barben Creffes. The lecond feafon for folwing, is in the beginning of Daober, loberein they fet Betes , and fow Smallage in Nigella and Arreche. The third feafon , which they call the bummer feafon , in fome place the Gardners beginne in January, wherein they fet Cucumbers, Courds, Spinnach, Bafill, Burflaine, and Sauerie. Many things may be folwed betwirt thefe feafons, and pet one bery well. All Garden hearbs are commonly fowen before the tenth of June, fuch things as you bould not have feed, you may fow after this time.

Some things are fowed onely two times a vere in the Spring. and in the end of Summer. Dthers againe at lunbay times, as Lettule, Colwarts, Mocket, Habifh, Creffes, Coriander, Cheruill, and Dill. Thefe are foived about Barch, oz about Deptem. ber and Columella faith operome either of the fiede oz of the flip : Come of the rote, Come of the Italke, Come of the leafe, forme of the Clot, fome of the Dead fome of both : others of the Barke, others of the Dith, fome both of the feene and the flippe, as Mein, wilde Parierum, and Bafil, this they cut off, when it comes to be a panofull high : Dthers growe both of the fabe and the rate, as Orions, Garlicke, and fuch like. And although all things will grow of their fiedes, pet this they fap, Rewwill not boe : for it very schome springs, therefore they rather let the flips. These that are let of the rote, boe commonly laft longer, and beauth bet ter, putting forth poung dippes from his fibes, as the Onion and Oith. The ftalke being cut, they all doe fpring againe for the moft part, except fuch as have freciall stalkes, called by Theophraffus exolouly, that is, fuch as when the falke is cut grow no more : Gafa interprets it Sccaulia, The Rape and the Habith, thrir leanes being pulled away and concred with earth, doe grow and continue till Summet. The fruits of fome is in the earth, fome without. Of feedes, and fome both within and without, fome lie and grow, as the Cus comber and the Courd, and fornetimes bang, though of greater.

meight

ineight by much then the fruits of Eres : fome requires flaves and belpes to clime by as Bons, Lupines, and Beafe : fome fees groweth better, the newer they be, as Letes, Nigeba Romana, Cocumbers, and Cournes, and therefore fome ble to thepe their Cucumbers, in milke or water, to caufe them to grow the fped. lier. Du the other fibe, of olde febe better grofveth the Bete, Barden Creffes, Benfriall, great Parierum, and Coziander. In the Bete this is onely obserued, that the ledecommeth not all by in one perc, but part the fecond yere, and fome the third : and therefore of a great beale of feed, fpringeth but a little. E onching fied this is to be well fiene to that they be not to old and bap, that they be not mingled, or taken one for another : old feed in forme is of fuch force, as it changeth the nature : for of old Colwort febe Coungeth the Rape and likewife of Rape febe Colworts. Alfo that per gather not your feedesto fone, not to late. The berp time as Theophraftus writeth, is at the fpring, the fall of the leafe, and the rifing of the Dog : but not in all places and hindes alike. Df Seds, the foneff that fuzing are thefe Bafill, Arach, Bauen, what sold Kocket, that commeth by the third day after the fowing, Lettule foring the fourth day, the Cucumber and the Gourd, the fift day, Bur, foone, and flin, longer ere it come, Dill, the fourth day, Creffes & Buffard, which febe the fift day , 15 etes in lummer the firt bav, in lumter the tenth or the twelfth, Lekes the rir. Day, Cometime the rr. Coal ander later : which if it be new, (except it be thauft together) it groweth not at all. Deniriall and great Barierum, come by alter rrr. baves. Barfly is ofall other the longeft before it come by. appearing the fortieth day after, or many times the fiftieth. You The weamust also consider, that the weather in solving is of great force? therfor. for the feafon being faire & warme, they some by the foner. Some Sowing. forts feed one være & neuer after come bp: fome againe continue, as Partly, Smalledge, Lettes, Rigella, that being once fowed, come by enery pere. Such as continue but a pere prefently byon their febing die: other fpzing againe after the loffe of their faile, as Lekes, Digella, Dnions, and Garlicke: and commonly all fuch as put out from the five: and all thefe require bunging a mafring. Infoling befibe forme think, you must have regard to the Pone, The and to fow and let in the encrease, and not in the loane. Some a Moone. gaine thinke it best from that the is foure dayes old, till the bee ciabteme:

eightene : Come after the third, others from the tenth, till the twentieth : and beft (as they all suppose ) the Mone being as left, and not fet.

THRA. But now 3 pray poutell be something of the ordes

ring of the beft Barben hearbs pou baue.

M. A R I V s, Some Deuide their Garbening time by the Mas

nethe, as they boe their other busbanday.

THR A. 3 care not whether by Boneths of other wayes, but I would fame know the ordering of your Garden beere, for 3 know in hot Countries they Garden all the Winter long, but 3 am altogether for our Country, whole order we must here follow.

The time ning.

MARIVS. In thefe parts they commonly begintheir Gara for Garde- bening (if the weather be faire and feafonable) in the end of fee banarie. At this time therefore the Garben being bunged, bigged, raked, and cleanfed, they ble to plant Sperage, and Retve.

Of pothearbs.

THE A. 3 prap you begin with Alparagus, or Sperage, and the other Bot-hearbs, enery one in his order: and afterward with

Flowzes and Whylicke bearbs.

Afparagus.

M ARIVS, Afparagus was wont to grow wilde, but now is brought into the Bardenatt is called in Brake, amagahoc, in Itas han, Spanish and French, it is almost all one; the one call it Afparago, the other Afperge, the Dutchmen call it Sperages and Spiritus, becanfeit comes bp of it felfe: forthe Carben Sperage they were not acquainted with. It is planted in two forts, either of the febe, or the rote: they take of the febe as much as you may take by with their fingers, and bestowing it in little boles, every two or three feeces halfe a fote afunder : they fet them in rich ground, in February, and cover the ground with bung. The wedes that grow, must be well plucked away, after the fourtie eth day they come by as it were to one rote, and tangled toger ther: the rotes have funder frong threeds, which they call the Sponge. In ground that is brie, the leedes are to be fet bepe, and well tempered with bung. In wet grounds, on the other fice, they are to be fet wallow in the top of bozders, left the mole Attre beltroy them. The first peere you must breake off the stalks. that grow : for if you plucke them by by the rates the whole fets will follow, which are to be preferued for two pere with bunging and wirding. All the veres after, you must not gather them in

### of the order of Gardening.

the Balke, but pull them from the rot, that the rots being avened. map the better fuzing which ercept you boe you burt the During. Dim that you meane to keepe for for pou muft in no foile metale withall, after, burne by the bulbes, and in Winter bung well the rotes with bung and aftes , they are planted alfo of the rotes. which after two peeres you mult remove into a warme and well bunged around. The trouches where you meane to fet them muft fand a fot a funder, and a faft-martin bepth, wherein you must fo lap your Sponges (as being coucred) they may beft groto ; but in the Suzing before they come by, you must lofe the earth with a little forke, to cause them the better to spring, and to make the rots the greater. Caro twould have you to rake them, but fo. as you hurt not the rote, and after to pull the plant from the rot : for if pou other wife breake it, the rot will bic, a come to nothing. But pou may fo long crop it, till pou fee it begin to grow to feet: in lehich peere for the Wainter time, you must according to Catoes minde cover it with fram or fach like leaft the cold doc hill them. and in the Spring open it againe, and bung it well. Some thinke, that the first pere it is needlesse to bee any thing to the plant, but onely to ipede it. From the rots, which they call the Sponges. there foringeth firft certaine bubs with crumpled knops, bery god and pleafant for Sallets : which if you fuffer to grow, it fraight inap butheth forth with branches like fermel and at length grow to be wickly: after it bath flowaco, it bearctha Berry, firt greene. and when it is ripe reb. If you would have Sallets of Alparague all the pore through : when you have gatheren the Berries, open the rotes that runne aloft by the ground with bigging, and you that have the roots fend forth new buds out of hand. It is thought, that if you breake to powder the horne of a Kam, and fowe it, watring it well,it will come to be good Sperage. In the Spring time they make a bery good Sallet , being foode in water , os fatte Broath, till they be tender : for if you fixth them too much, they will wafte away. When they be fod, they decle them with Minegar, Dple, Bepper and Salt, and fo eatethem : og as my friend William Prat, berp latfull in thefe matters, telleth me thep ent them in fmall pieces like Dice, and after they have parbois led them, butter them with fwet Butter, a uttle Amegar and Bepper.

04

THRA

THE A. Pou have bere well thefued me the opering of Afpa-

ragus : 3 pap pou goe formard to Meine.

MARIVS. Kew, which the Grakes call whderer, the Latines Rutam, the Italians Rutache, the Spaniards Ruda, the Frenchmen Rude de gardin, is planted at the end of Fedruary. or in Parch, prospering best in drie and Summe grounds, it abhore the both water and dung, which all other heards most delight in, it most delighteth in askes: and where all other plants will spring of the side, this they say will never doe it. The branches being sipped off, and set in the spring, will very well grow, but if you remove the oldrot, it dieth: it delighteth in the shaddow of the Figge trie, and being solne (as they say) it prospereth the better: it is solved with cursing, as Cumunin, and divers other, and cannot abide the presence of an incleane woman.

THRA. I fie good Lettule bere, I pray you bow doe you op.

Der it :

MARIVS. Lettule is called in Dutch Lattich, in French Laictuc, in Czecke Seusaf, in Italian Lactuca, and so in Latine, in Spanish Lechugas, inhereof besides the wilde, there are their kindes, one crumpled, inhich Columella calleth Czellia, and Spanish Lettule, of the Countries where it most groweth, and is greatest estemed, in Dutch called Krauser Lattich, in French Crespue, the other Cabbedge Lettule, in Dutch Knopf Lettice, in French Laictue testue, of Plinic called Laconica, and Sessilis, because it groweth round like an head, of an Apple. The third soft is called Rotunda, because it groweth in compasse upon the grounds.

THE A. 13 ut how come you to have to good Lettule, and bow

boe you oaber them ?

Letrafe.

Reys.

MARIVS. At the end of February, of in the beginning of Parch, we be to sowit, that it may be removed about Aprill or Parch, with the countries as Palladius telleth, they fow it in Janussis, of in December, with intent to remove it in February: but you may sow it at any time of the pare, so the ground be god, well bunged, and watred. When you remove them, the rates must be pared and rubbed over with bung, and such as be already planted, their rates must be pared and bunged: they love a god ground, most and well dunged, they spread the better (if you set by them the Kape) or when they begin to Kalke, the Kalke being tenderly cloves.

though you lay byon it a clob or a Wilethard: they will be white if you fprinckle them often with fand, or tie fand within the leanes, and both tender and white you shall have them. If two daics before they be gathered, their tops be tyed by, they wil be round and Cabbedged. If the rote being removed when it is growne a hand broad in height, be pared and finered with fresh Colo bung, and earth call about it, be well watred, and when it groweth bigh, the top be cut, a potfhard laid bpon it, the fweter allo they will be : the more you reffraine the falke from footing op which must as 3 faid, be kept bowne with some some or waight, that they may foread the better. If the Lettule channe by reason of the babnelle of the forle, the feede, or the feafon, to ware bard, the removing of it will being it agains to his tendernelle: it will have funday and divers talls, if taking a Trebble of Shepe, oz Coates dung, and hollowing it conningly with an Awle or a: Bookin, von thauft into it the fiebe of Lettule, Creffes, Balil. Mochet, Smallage, Bercely, and Madbilb, and after lugapping it in bung, you put it into bery god ground e water it well. The Bercely, 02 Smallage goeth to rote, the others grow in beight, keping till the talt of every one. Constantine affirmeth Lettule to be a mort and cold hearbe, a quencher of thirt, and causer of fleps: and that being boyled, it nourifleth most, and abateth Letcherie, for which the Pythagorians call it Eunuchion. Galen himselfe the Drince of Physitions both greatly commend it, who in his youth did alwaies ble to eate it raw, and after in his elder pieres boyled, whereby he kept his body in god temperature. Endine, in Latine, Intubum, of Intubus, not bulike to Lettule, Endine forme call it Garben Succozie, the Dutchmen, and common fort, Endiviam, the Italians and the French, Cicoriam, the Spant ards, Endibia : it is folome as other Garben bearbs in Barch, it loveth movifure and god earth, but you must make your beds when you fow it the flatter, left the earth falling away, the rotes be bared : when it hath put fouth leance, pon must remove it into well dunged ground: that which is sowne before the mas lends of July, both come to feede : but that which is fowne after, feeth not. Don must fow that which you would have to serve pou in iminter, in Detober, in marme ftonie places for Sallets in winter: they ble at this day when his leanes be out, to fold them

bu

by together, and tie them round in the top with some small things covering them with some little earthen becell, the rotes still remaining to nourish them withall: thus doing, they will grow to be white and tender, and to lose a great part of their bitternesse. It is said, that they will be white, if they be sprinkled a few dates abroad, and lying youn land, be washed with the raine: And thus is Endue with his encrease preserved all Winter. Some there be, that contenting themselves with lesse charges and labour, does only cover them with earth, others againe with straw: this order of wintering of it, is now in every place growne to be common.

Colworts.

THE A. I fee also in this pleasant Garben Colwoorts, that we Country folias be so well acquainted with.

MARIVS. It is meete my Garben spould not want that.

inhich as you know Cato preferreth before all other hearbes, in pescribing the wonderfull properties and bles thereof: and this place I onely appoint for fuch common Bothearbes, as Colwoors Betes, Endine, Dnions, Rapes, Pauenes, Lekes, Carrets, Radbill, Barlicke, and Partneys: the worthier fort I place by themselues, and as the nature of every one requiretb. Col ipotts is commonly called in Latine Braffica, oz Caulis,in Wzeke κο αμοί, in French Choux, in Italian Caule, in Spanish Verza, in Dutch Koil. The olde matters made divers forts ofit, as at this pay there be. One fort with great and broad leanes a big Calke. and bery fruitfull. This fait is commonly knowne, which being the pleafanter in Winter, when it is bitten with the frofts, is fob 10th Baken, and bled in Borredge. The tender part of the top being a little boyled, is ferued for Sallets, breffed with orle and falt. The fecond fort with the crumpled leafe, of the refemblance that it bath to Smallage, is called selinocis of Apiaria, of the come mon people crumpled Coll, oz weinckled Coll. The third fort which is properly called Crambe, bath a finaller stalke and leafes fmoth, tender, and not very full of tupce. The fourth fort is the great Cabbedge, with bread leaves and a great head, called in Dutch Rappes, in French Cheuz Cabuz, of the olde writers Tritiana Braffica, and this kinde is onelp moft fet bp. In Germanie there is one kinde of them that they call Lumbardy Colwort as Sauor Colwest, fweeter then the other, and not able to contine the Winter: and another with very broad leanes crumplenta

full

and of humekles, but a great deale blacker, which the Afalians call Nigrecaules , and the Latines Nigra Braffica, of the number of those that they call commonly red Coll, of the olde writers Mary cina Brassica. There are belives other forts, taking their names of the Countrey where they grow, as Aricina and Cumana. The bell time for fetting and fowing of Colworts, is after the Abes of Anzill. In cold and rapnie Countries, the offner it is bungen and raked, the better a great Deale will the Colports be: forme ble to folde them about the Balends of Barch, but the chiefeft of it and eth out in leafe, and when it is once sut, maketh no good falke for the Winter after : yet may you twife remone your greatest Coll. and if you fo boe, you shall have both more feed and greater weld: for it to aboundeth with lede, as it is towed with no lette advantage then Rape feede. For the making of ople, Colworts may be folven all the peere long, but chicfip in Barch after it is folved it appeareth within ten bayes, ercept your feebes be old and bay for old feede will grow to Kapes, as old Kape feede will to Colmones. Some favit profpereth beft in falt ground, and therefore they ble to cast byon the ground Saltpeteroz albes, which also bestrovetb the Caterpiller : it is removed in June , chiefly when it bath put forth fire leaves, and that when the weather is rainie, fo that you couer the rote before with a little freshoung, and wan it in see incede, and fo fet it. More diligence is to be bled about the Cab bedge : it muft be fowen in Barch in the full of the Bone, that it may remaine in the ground two Mones and in May you must take them by and let them againe two fote alunder. The ground mult be well bigged where pon let them and as fall as they grow, the earth must be raised about them: fo that there appeare no more than the bery tops of them: for to cause them to grow faire and great : you must as oft as you remove them, banks them bo withearth about them, that nothing but the leanes appeare. And thus you must often doe to all the kindes of them, the hoare frosts make them have the greater (weetnelle. The Mineyards (thep fap) where Colinorts grow, doe velo the worfer Tines, and the Toll carrupteth the Wline ...

THE A. I pray you procede with the rest of these pot hearbs.

MARIVS. Pou fix herrby Spinage, so tearmed (as you spinage, may know) of the prickly sedes, called in Latine Spinacia, and

in the stocke, or by inoculation: and so thall the berries be softed by is grafic also in the Fig. 4 the Gime, which in old time they would not luffer, so leave of corrupting. Of the Pulberie is made a very noble medicine so, the stomacke, and so, the gout: they wall longest induce (as it is said) kept in glasses. The leaves do serve to seide bilke-warmes withall, whereof some make a very great gains, and set them rather so, that purpose then so, the fruit.

THR A. Walhat tree is that with the rubble coloured fruit, that

is like a Cherrie:

Marivs. It is a Cornell tra, called in Latine Cornus, in Italian Corneolo, in Spanith Zereko selvestro, in French Cornier, in Dutch Cornelbaum: this trae is thought never to except twelve cubits in height: the body is sound and thicke, like home: the lease is like an almond lease, but satter: the soive and the fruit is like the Oline, with many beries hanging upon one stalke, first white, and after red: the supress the ripe berries, is of a bloody colour: it loveth both Pountaines and Wallies, and prospereth both in moysi ground and drie: it groweth both of the slippe, and of the siece. You must between you plant it not never

Reth it.

THRA. Withat Tre is the fame that groweth nert bs ?

to your Bas, for the flowes both kill as many of them as ta-

Ziziphus.

The

Cornell.

MARIVS. That Tree is called Ziziphus, in Italian Guig giole, in Spanith Azofeifo, in French Iniubæ, in Dutch Burdbyric, the beries whereof, are like the Cornel berries, the flower like the Dlive flowse, but more florter. Columella freaketh of two kindes thereof, the one red, the other white : they are let of the fromes, in bot Countries, in Appill, and in cold places in Day, oz elle in June : you may let both the ftone, and the branch : it is very flow in growing : if you let the plant, you must bee it is Sparch in foft ground : but if you fet the ftone, you muft fet them in a little trench of a hand broad, the Cones together, with their points boloneward. It loueth not to rich a ground, but rather a light ground, and a warme place In Winter (as Palladius faith) if is good to lay Cones about the body of the Tree. Thenert are Italian Filberts, in Latine Pillaces, in Italian Pillinachi, in Spanit Alhozigo, in French Pillaches, in Dutch Welfce pinpernus : the leafe is narrow and browne ; for boon the branches

Italian Filbert. hang the Auts, like the Auts of the Pine. Of this tris it is thought there is both male and female, and therefore they grow commonly together, the male having underneath his theli, as it were, long stones: It is graffed about the first of Appill, but by on his ofone stocke, and upon the Terebinth, and the Almond Trie, they are also set (as Palladius witnesseth) in the fall of the lease in October, both of the siys, and the Aut. It delightethin a hot and a moust countrie, and loves in often watring.

THEA. Because I remember you tolde me before, that of Plants and Eves, some doe grow of the seed, or fruit, and some are Graffed: and because I have beard the Graffing of most of them, I would now faine heave you speake of such Eres as grow

onely of the ftone, oz berrie.

MARIVS. Your remembrance is god: for though they commonly grow better when they be graffes, yet some there be that prosper the better being sowen, and will scarce grow any other way. And though some of the social Trees being set, one well prosper, as the Pedlar, the Cornell, and divers other, yet sometimes they ware wise, and are long before they come to perfection, which Virgill also affirmeth:

For that same Tree that of the seed, the stone or berrie growes, Doth slowly spring, and long it is, ere any fruit he shewes: And when it comes, it proueth wilde, and doth degenerate, And so seed that same relish sweet, that longeth to his state.

But by Graffing it is reflozed againe: Some of them againe, how foeuer they be somen or let, doe not degenerate or grow out of kinde, as the Bay, the Date, the Typrefle, the Peach, the Abricot, the Damson, the Pistace, the Firre Trie, and the Cherrie: and because they be not all of one order, I will tell you severally of the chiefest of them. To plant Tries of the siede, Pature (as I sayo before) taught men at the first: the siede being becoured of Birds, and with the down let fall in the clefts of Tries, where they after sprong and grew.

The Bay, in Latine Laurus, in all other tongues almost as in The Boy.
Latine. The berry is called in Latine Lauri Bacce, in Atalian
Bacebe de Lauro, in Spanish Vaya de laurell, in Dutch Lorboten,
a most gratefull True to the bonse, a poster to Emperouse and

Bithops, which chiefely garnifbeth the houle, and ffanbeth all mayes at the entric. Cato maketh tion kindes thereof, the Delphick and Cyprelle : the Delphick, equally coloured and greener. with great berries, in colour betwirt greene and red, wherewith the Conquerours at Delphos were wont to be crowned. The Cypzelle Bay hath a thorter leafe, and a barker greene, guttered (as it mere) round about the coges, which fome (as Plinie farth) suppose to be a wilde kinde: it groweth alwayes greene. and beareth berries, hee Choteth out his branches from the fives and therefore wareth come old and rotten : it both not bery well away with cold ground, being hot of nature: it is planted divers wates, the berries being dayed with the Boath winde, are gather red and land abroad bery thinne, left they clufter together, after ward being wet with Trine, they are let in furrowes a bandfull bape, and bery nere together : in Parch they be also planted of the flip, and the frience. If you let them of the flip, you must fet them not palling nine fot alunder: but lo they grow out of kind. Some think, that they may be graffed one in another, as allo byon Secretife a the Afhe: the berries are to be gathered about the bes ginning of December , and to be fet in the beginning of Barch.

Nut trees.

The Al-

But trees are commonly planted of the But , as all other Chellfruits are. Df all Buts, the Almond is counted to be the worthieft. mond tree, called in Italian Mandorle, in Spanifh Almeidras, in French Amandes, in Dutch Mandeles : they are fet in February, e profper in a clere and bot ground, in a fat and a moyff ground they will grow barren: they chiefely fot luch as are croked, and the yong plants: thep are let both of the Dlips, the Mot, the Bernell. The Quits that you intend to let, must be laide a day before in foft bong : others flepe them in water foode with honey, letting them be therein but onely one night, least the tharpnesse of the honey fpople the Blant : and being thus extered, Columella faith, they will be both the pleasanter, and grow the better. The tops and the tharpe ends pou must fet botonctoard : for from thence come meth the rote, the edge mult fland toward the Boath : pou muft fet there of them in a Eriangle, a hanofull one from the other : they must be watred enery ten baies; till they grow to be great t It is alfo planted with the branches, taken from the midf of the tre. The Almond is graffed not neere the top of the flocke, be

shout the mint, buon the boines that grow out. This Tre both fone beare fruit, and flowzeth befoze all others, in January, oz February, Virgill accounts it for a Broomoficatour of the plens tifuineffe of Corne.

When thicke the Nut Tree flowres amidde the wood.

That all the branches laden bendwithall :

And that they prosper well and come to good.

That yeere befure, of Corne shall plenty fall. The bitter once (which are the wholefomer) are mabe finet, if round about the Ere, foure fingers from the roote, you make a little trench, by which be thall fiveat out his bitterneffe: 02 elfe if you oven the rootes, and notice thereon enther Urine, 02 Bogs bung: of if at the rote of the Tree, you though in a fat webge of Bitch Tre. 13p this meanes (as Bafill fayth) they will loofe their bitterneffe : but no Ere grometh foner out of kinde , and therefore you muft often remoue it, or graffe when it is great.

Mainute, calles in Latine Inglances in Italian Nocy, in Dua Walauts. nith Nozes,in French Noix, in Dutch Groille nulz : thep are let in the ground (as Plinic farth) the feame downeward, about the beginning of Parch: Come thinke, that they will grow as the file bert both, either of the flippe, or the roote : it groweth freedly, and likethabeie and cold place better then a bet. The Aut that you meane to let, will grow the better, if you fuffer it to be foure or fine payes before in the water of a boy, and will profeer the more if it be often removed: those Buts (asit is thought) profe per beft, that are let fall by Cromes, and other biros. If you pierce the Tree through with an Augur, and fill by the place agains with a pin of Clime, the Trethall lofe his knottie haronelle, net ther will he lole his fruit, if you hang by either Mallet, or a piece of Skarlet from a Dungbill.

THRA. Wihat is the reason you plant your Walnut tra round about on the outfide of your Dechard, and not among yo

other Trees

MARIYS, Becanie his thatow is great, and brioboles fome, belide the burt he both with his bropping. De fucketh out a great beale of god inges from the ground : for as you lee, they are bery mightie and high Trees , fo as fome of them are two op the faborne about : they occupie a great seale of rome with their

fanbing.

#### he lecond Booke, fanding, and begulle the other Trees of their luftenance : Ber

Hafell Nuts.

fibes, there are certaine Trees they agree not well withall, and therefore hane I fet them on the outfide of my Dechard, as fram pards to befend their fellowes from tempelt & weather. Among Buts, is alfo to be recounted the Bafell Buts, a kinde whereof is the Filbert, called in Latine Aucllanz, in Italian Nociuole, in Spantih Auellamas, in French Noylette, in Dutch Halelnuzes they are planted after the manner of the Almond: it belighteth in clay and watrifb grounds, and byon bils, being well able to abibe the colde. They were first brought into Alia, and Greece, from

Filberts.

Pontus, and therefore called Pontica and Heracliotica, &c. Among CheRnuts the Auttes alfo chalengeth the Cheffmut his place, though he be rather to be reckoned among Baffe, wherby be is called the But or Walte of Iupiter, in Latine Caltanea, in Italian Caltagne, in Spanish Castava, in French Castagnes, in Dutch Kastey: it loueth well to grow on Wountaines, and in colbe Countries : it hateth waters, and befireth a cleane and a con mould : it militheth not a mort granell ground, and topeth in a Gabowie and Boitherly bancke, it hateth a fiffe and a red clap ground: it is planted both of the Aut, and is let : it is better planting Wands of them, of the But, then of the Cet, otherwife the fafer way were the fet, which in two pieces beareth fruit. It is planted when the Sonne is in the Equinoctiall, both of the Ctience, the let, the branch, and the rote, as the Dline is. The Cheftnuts that poumeane to folie, must be bery faire and ripe, the newer they be the better they grow. Dou must not let them after that fort that pon let Almonds, oz filberts, but with the tharpe end bymard, and a fot a funder : the furrow must be a Chaftman Deepe. Dou were bet ter (as 3 layd) to make pour Orone of the But,then of the fets. which will be mote to be felled for flapes in fcauen pere. Columella, writeth, that the Cheftnut, met for the Capporting of Hines, if he be folmed in well bigged ground, both quickly furing, and being felled after fine peres,it profpereth like the Willtow: and being ent out in Capes, it lafteth till the next felling, as thall be welved hereafter, when we fpeake of Wobs. They will also gethe Chestnut to be graffed on the Walnut, the Bech, and the Dake : it bath beene feine , that where they grow the mo the together, they molper the better.

The Dine in Latine Pinus , in Italian and Spanith Pino . in French Pin, in Dutch Harrzbaum, is plantes not much brilike to the Almond, the kernels of the bette-clockes being fet as the Almond is : they are gathered in July , before the Capiculer windes, and cre the Auts, the bulse being broken, fall out. The belt time of fowing them, Palladius Pedioneth to be Daober, and Bouember : this Tre is thought to be a nourither of all that is folven bnder it. The Ditch tre is salled in Latine Picca, in Italian Pezzo, in Spanith Pino negro, in Dutch Rordannonbaum : but I come now to the Cherie. The Chery tra, rietre. in Italian, the Tre Ceralo, the fruit Cerale, and Ciregie, in Spar nith Cerezo, and Cereza, in French Gerilier, and Cerile, in Dutch Kirsbaum, Kerlen: the Tre is ealie to be planted, if the Cones be but cast abroad, they will grow with great encrease : such is their forwardneffe in growing, that the flaves or lapporters of Wines, being made of Cherrie tre, are commonly feene to grow to be Tres. They are graffed byon the Blome Tre bon bis olone focke, bpon the Blane Trie, and on the Bramble, but beft bpon the wilde Cherie,tt iopethin being graffed, and beat reth better fruit : if pou graffe them byon the Mine, pour Eris thall beare in the Spring : the time of graffing, is erther when there is no Gumme byon them , og when the Camme bath left running. They remoone the wilde plant, either in Dueber or Bouember, that the firt of January or February, when it bath taken roote, it may be graffed byon. Marriall would have you graffe it in the focke: but inded it molpereth better, being graffed betwirt the barke and the wood. It belighteth to be fet in Diepe trenches, to have roome enough, and to be often digged a bout. It loueth to have the withered bow continually cut away: it groweth beft in colbe places, and to hateth bung as if it be lapo about them, they grow to bee wilde: it is also planted of the dips, and will beare his fcuit without ftones : if in the fetting of the fet you turne the byper end bowneward. Dthers will that the tre being yong and two foothigh, be fit botone to the mot. and the pith taken out of both fibes, and topned together, the feames close bound about, and couered with boung: which with in a piereafter, when it is well growen, the pong graffes (which hitherto bane borne no fruit) if you graffe thein , will beare Cheries.

Cheries without flones as Martiall Capth. There are fund bay hundes of Theries (as Plinie reporteth, or Apronianos) that are reboer then the reft, Actianus, as blacke as a cole: which kind in Cermanie pet at this bay they call Acklische kirfen, Celicians, that are round. Plinie in Speaking of the Sunday feats, preferreth the Duracins, which in Campania they were wonted to call Plinians: and a little after be faith, bpon the bankes of the Mhine, there grow allo Kerlis, of colour betweet blacke, red, and greene, like the Juniper beries liben they be almost rive : in which the coms mon fort of bokes have Terrius for Kerlis amongst the Ber. manes : for Plinie, whereas in many places bee blurpeth the Dutch worts, as in the 9. 10. 17. and 18. beoke, and in diners other places, which being not bibertob jof the Latincs, came altogether corrupted to the pofferitie. There are also Bay Che ries, graffed at the first in the Bay, and baue a viety pleasant bitternelle : at this bay, the finall Chertes are beft effemed, growing boon a low buth with thoat stalkes, round fruit, and bery red, much meat, foft, and full of liceur. It is faid they will beare berytimely, if you lay Lime about them : it is goo to gas ther them often, that they which you leave may ware the greater: for letting and planting of Cheries, you may reate a great fort of rules in the gatherings of Conftantine. There are alfo found a kinde of Cherries growing wide in the Wioobs, and Bebge rowes, with little beries, fome repoe, fome altogether blacke, which the Farmers in the Countrey doe ble for to fatte their Bogs withall. The Blome tree in Creche nounumndoc, the fruit HOUNT JUNA, in Latine Prunus and Pruna, in Italian Prune and Succivi, in Spanish Cirvelo, and Cirvela, in French Prune, in Dutch Proumen, it is planted from the midble of Winter, till the Thes of February : but if you fet the frones at the fall of the leafe, let it be done in Bouember, in a gob and mellow ground tive handfuls depe : thep may be like wife fet in february, but then they must be freeped in ipe thee dapen, that they map fones frzing : they are also planted of the young fets that grow from the bedy of the tree epther in January ou in the beginning of fee bauarp, the roces being wel courred with dung: thep profper beff in a rich and a mort ground, and in a colde Comtrep : they are graffed toward the end of March, and better in the cloven focked then.

Plome trees.

then in the barke, or elfe in Tanuary, before the Comme beating to brow out : it is Graffed boon his olone Bocke the Beach and the Almond. There are fundap forts of Blomes, whereof the Damfen is the principall, toping in a dry ground, e in a bot countrep, and is graffed as the other plomes are. There are divers coloured Blomes, white blacke, purple, and red: Talbeat Blomes. and Bosle Blomes where with they ble to fat Bogs. The finder Blomes are moft commended , being of length, amans finger. which are brought buto be from Bohemia and Hungarie, and lulians and Noberdians, being blein in colour, but later. The Dame fons are bried in the Sunne boon Lattifes, Leads or in an Duen. fome bae bip them befoze, either in fea water , oz in Brine , and after bais them. The Beach tree , calles in Latine Perfies, in The Italian Perleo, in Spanish Duraluo, they are also called Rhodo-Peach cina, and Dorocina, og Duracina, whereof there are foure hinden: Tree. but the chiefest are the Duracins, and the Abacots : in Bouens ber in bot Countries, and in others in January, the Cones are to be let time for alumber in well breffed ground, that when the young trees are fprong by, they may be remoued : but in the fete ting you must let the harpe end downeward, and let them stand two or three fingers in the ground : wherefoeuer they grow they rejavce most in water grounds, which ground if you want, lake that pon mater them abundantly, to thall you have great Boze of fruit. Same would have them let in bot countries, and fandy ground: inhereby they fay their fruit will longer endure: the bets ter will also the fruit be, if as some as you have eaten them, you fet the Rone, with some part of the fruit cleaning to it : it is grafe feo either on himfelfe, the Almond , az the Blometres The Apples of Armenia, or Absteat, both farre ercell the Beach, blen The Abris as a great baintie among Boblemen, and much belired of the ficke: they are beff graffed in the Blome, as the Beach in the Ale mond tre: the faireft graffes that grow nert the body of the tre are to bee cholen and graffed in January , at februarie, in cole countries , and in Bouember in bot : for if you take those that grow in the top, they will epther not grow, or if they grow, not long endure. Pou Chall moculate, oz imbudthem in Apzill in Bank the Bocke being cut aloft, and many young bubbes let in : netther mall you lufter them to thand very farre one from the other,

that they may the better befond themfelines from the brat of the Sunne. The Arenebmen and our Garoners alfo, after the Itas lians order , boe graffe the Abricot , taking a graft (not full a finger long) or the bun that is well that out, with a little of the rind cut off, and fitting the rind of a pong Plome tre croffcwile they fet them in, binding them well about with Dempe, 02 Towe, and that in the end of June or in July and August. Some thinke thep will be red, if they be cither graffed in the plane tre , of baue Roles fet bnberneath them : they will alfo bec figured, oz written in, if feauen bayes after that you have fet the fronc, when: It beginneth to open, you take out the Bernell and with Hermis lion . oz any other colour you may counterfeit what you will after the frome closed by about it, and covered with Clay, or Hogges bung you let it in the ground. Againe, you hall have them without flones, if you pierce the Erie thosolo, and fill it by with a pinne of Willow, or Cornell tree, the pith being had out : the Rootes of the Tre muft be cut and preffet in the fall of the leafe. and bounged with his owne leaves: you thall also at this time provine them , and ribbe them of all rotten and beab befores. If the Eree profper not, poince boon the rootes the Lies of old Wine mingled with water. Against the beat of the Some. beare by the earth about them, water it in the evening, and that bow them as well as you map. Against the frosts, lay on enng enough, or the Les of Wine mebled with water, or water Inberein Beance haue bene fobben : if it be burt with wormes. or fuch baggage, power on if the Thine of Dren medled with a third part of Winegar.

The Date.

The Date tree, in Italian, in Latine, and in Spanish Palma, in French Arborde Dates, in Dutch Dacelenbaum: the fruit in Latine Palmulæ, in Italian Datoli, in Spanish Dattiles, in French Datte, in Dutch Dactelem, it groweth in a mild gravelly ground, and belighteth in a watry loyle: e though it betiresto have water all the recelong, yet in a day yeare it beares the better: there fare some thinke that dung is hurtful but o it. A bout the Kiver Nilus, in the Case parts, it groweth plenteously, where as they bis to make both Wine and Bread of it: this Tree in Europe (for the most part) is barren, though it be planted of many for nourity sake.

The somes of Dates are planted in trenches of a cubit in depth

and breakth, the trench filled by againe with any manner of bung. ercept Boates bung : then in the mionelt of the beane fet pour Rones to as the tharper part frant byward : others would have it famo toward the Cas: and after when firft they bane framck led thereon a little Salt, they couer them with earth, well med led with bung : and every bay while it foringeth; they water it : fame remoue it after a pieres growth, other let it grow thi it be great. Pozeouer, because it belighteth in falt ground, the rotes must be decled every peere, and falt theolone boon them : and fo will it quickly grow to be a great Tree. The Sets are not prefently to be put in the ground, but first to be fet in earthen Bots, and loben they bane taken rote , to be removed. Date Tres baue fuch a belight one in the other that they bend themfelues to touch together, and if they grow alone, they ware barraine. They are planted (as Plinie faith) of the branches, two Cubites long, growing from the top of the Tree: also of the flips and flip vers. The fame Plinic affirmeth, that about Babylon, the bery leafe (if it be fct) both groin.

THE A. Fremember you tolome once, the Spring and Science that groweth out of the rotes of fome Eres, will bery well

be planted.

MARIVS. I told you before that piners of the Trees tobered of I hake, might be planted of the branches, and of the Scient tes, bauing forme part of the Kote plucked by with them: and fo Hato the Cherrie might be planted, as also the Bafell, the Lau. rell, the Myztell, and the Deblar : likeluffe the faireft branches Timed off and the ends alittle benifed and thruft into the ground, commonly doe growto be Tres, as Imp felfe bang tried both in the Pulbery, the Propetrie, and the Appletrie. One thing 3: will abbe belibe, that the Eres that beare fruit over halfily, boe either neuer come to their inft bignelle, oz the fruit that thep beare , both neuer long endure : whereof I thinke fprang firth that law of Moiles, that fruit Tres thould for three veeres be counte fro baciccumcifed, and their fore-fainnes with their fruit mould be diccumcifed: that is, the burgens and blokomes foonlo be plucked off, leaft he fould beare befoze his time, or when he hath bozne, lose his fruit; but Thepe you to long in the describing of my Dechard.

THEA

THE A. Dno, I rather (whileff I heare you) imagine my felfe to be amongst them, planting and victoring of their fruits; but note remainest that in stead of a conclusion to your talke, you beclare the order of preferring them, to that end specially, that those things that are appointed for cemedy (being not duely, or in time administrate; be not rather a burt) then a below.

MARIYS. Dour motion is god : Firft therefore, and denes raily, bunging and watring is needfull for fruit Eres, a beryfein ercented : and berein bede muft be taken . that you boeit not in the heate of the Sounne, and that it be neither to new, not to old: neither muft it be laine close to the fote of the Tre. but a little pikance of , that the fatnelle of the bung map be bunke in of the rote. Digeons bung, and Dogges bung, boe alfo beale the burts or mounds of Trees. The water wherewith me water them. mult not be Fountaine water , or Well water , if other may be had , but drafune from fome muddle Lake , or franding Bole. Moreover, vou muft take home, as I alfo told vou befaze) liben we began to talke of planting of an Dechard) that pour Eres fand a god biffance a funder, that when they are growne by. they may have rome enough to fpread, and that the finall and ten-Der, be not burt of the greater neither by fhabbolu, noz bzopping. Source would have Bomegranate Trees, and Bostels, and Baies, fet as thicke together as may be, not palling ninefate a. funber : and likewife Cherry trees, Blumb trees, Duinces, Apple tres , and Peare tres , thirtie fote and moze a funder : every fact must thand by themselves, that (as 3 faid) the weaker he not burt of the greater. The nature of the Sople, is berein molt to be regarded : for the Bill requireth to have them Band never together . in windy places you muft fet them the thicker. The Dlive (as Caro faith) would have fine of wenty fot biffance at the leaft. Don must fet pour plants in such feet as the tops be mot burt, or bruiled, nor the barke, or tinde flamed off; for the barke being taken away round about, killeth any kinde of Erie. You mult alfahaue a regard of the Chabbow, what trees helpeth, and what tres it burteth. The Walnut tree the Dine tree the Dotth træ, and the firre træ, whatfoener they fbadbolo, they porfon. The Cabboto of the Walnut tree, and the Dake is burtfull to Come: the Walnut tre with his Chandoth alfo, is burtfull to mens beads.

Shadow of Trees.

beads, and to all things that is planted niece it. The mine trie with his thaboto likewife beffropeth young Blants, but they both reffit the winde, and therefore god to enclose Timepards. The Epprelle, his thanolo is bery fmall, and foreaveth not farre. The hadolo of the figge tree is gentle, though it fpread farre, and therefore it map fafely enough grow amongt Times. The Cime tree, his thadow is also milbe, nourilbing inbatfoeuer it covereth. The Blane tree though it be thicke and groffe, is pleasant. The Doplar bath none, by the reason of the manering of his leaves. The Alber tree bath a thicke fbaboin, but nourifbing to his neighbours. The Uines is fufficient for bimfelfe, and the mouing of his leafe, and often haking, tempereth the beate of the Sounde, and in great raine well concreth it felle. The Chabom of all those, Dropping is commonly milbe and gentle that have long falkes: the Dropping of Trees. of all Eres is nought, but work of all those, whose branches grow fo as the water cannot readily paffe through: for the brops of the Bine, the Dake, and the Batholme, are most hartfull, in whole company you may allo take the Walmit: the Cypielle (as Plinic faith) hurteth not. Pozeouer, propning and cutting, is bery Proyning. god and necessary for trees, whereby the bead & withered boughes are cut away . and the broughtable branches taken off: but to proine them every peere is naught, though the Uline requireth mitting every vere : and every other vere, the appetil the Bomes granate, and the Dline, whereby they will the foner beare fruit : the others mitt be the felbomer propned. Dline tras mult be proposed in the fall of the leafs, after the fetting of the feauch flarres : and first, they must be well bunged, as a belve against their burts. Don must cut away all the oto rotten branches that grow in the midden, and fuch as grow thicke, and are tangled tos gether, and all the water boughes, and bnprofitable branches as bout them: the olde ones are to be cut clofe to the Bocke, from whence the new fprings will artie. Scarifying also or launcing is Scarifying bery wholfome for the trees, when they are freened with their leaves, & brineffe of their barkes : at tobich time toe ble the barke with a tharpe knife, cutting it thraight bowne in many places : which, what god it both , appeareth by the opening and raping of the rinde, which is ftraight wates filled by lotty the bebaberneath. Bon must also trim and breffe the rates of pour Tres:

tion.

Ablaques- Tres after this foat : You muft open the ground round abe them, that they may be comforted with the warmth of the Soume and the raine, cutting away all the rotes that cunne beware, The trees that you remone, muft be marked which way they from at the firft : for fo teacheth Virgill :

Remos ming.

And in the barke they fet a figne, To know which way the Tree did grow to Which part did to the South encline, And where the Northerne blaftes did blow.

Alfo you must consider well the nature of the Sople, that pour remove out of a bite ground, into a mout, and from a barraine bill, to a moif Blaine , and rather fatte, then atherwife. The young plants being thus removed, muft in the fecond or third pere be proposo , leaning fill about three or foure branches bus touched, to thall they the better grow : thus muft you bfually boe enerie other vere. The old tree we remove with the tons cut off. and the rotes byperifled, which must be belyed with often bungs ing and watering. Appletres that blottome and beare no fruit. or if it beare, they fobainly fall away, you fall remedie by flitting of the rote and thruffing in of a frome, or a wooden wedge, Alfo if you water pour Ares with Whine that is olde, it greatly analy leth (as thep fap) both for the fruitfulnelle, and pleafantnelle of the fruit. If the Tre becay by reason of the great beate of the Somme, you muft raile the earth about it', and frater the rotes enery night , letting by fome befence againft the Sunne. To their truit, caufe their fruit to be quickly ripe, you must wet the little rotes with Winegar, and Weine that is olde, covering them againe with earth, and oft bigging about them. The Wine of men. if it be kept the or foure moneths, both wonderfull much god to plants. which if you be about Ulines, or Appletres, it both not onely bring you great encrease, but also giveth an excellent talt and fac nour both to the fruit and the wine : you may also ble the mother of oyle, fuch as is without falt, to the same purpole, which both must spenily be bled in Winter.

When trees beare not, or bold net a remedie.

THE A. Wile for that frofts and miles, boe oftentimes great

barme to Eres, bane you any remeby against it?

MARIVS. Against frosts and mists, you must lay boround about your Dechard, little Jaggots made of Stalkes, rottes

boughes, or firain, which when the froffs, or miles arife, may be kinvled, the imvake whereof anopaeth the banger. For must stave also drie dung amongst your Alines, which when the frost-is great, you may let a fire: the imvake whereof disperseth the frost.

THRA. What if the Trees be fiche, and profper not?

MARIVS. When they have any ficknesse, they be to power byon the Rotes the Less of Whine mingled with water, and to low Lupines round about them. The water also wherein Lupines have been sod, power round about, is very god (as Plinic saith) for Apple trees.

THRA. Tres are oftentimes also burt with wormes.

MARIVS. If your Trees be troubled with wormes, there are pivers remedies for the juvce of Wilameland defroveth the Caterpillers. The febes or graine, that are thepen in the inper of Dengreene, oz Bonfelæke, are alfo fate from any wormes : alfo Afhes mingled with the mother of Dyle, or the fale of an Dre, mebled with a third part of Minegar. Pozeover, they fap, that the Trees that are imoaked with Brimitons, or Lime, are fafe from burtfull bermine: Galbanum like wife burt boon the coales, brineth them away. The blabes also of Barlicke, the beads bemy off, fo burnt (as the fmoake may paffe through the Dzchard) both befroy the Catervillers: fome mingle Sote with the lebs. and fuzinckle them with water. Democritus wateth, that a woman in her bucleaneneffe, bugirt, and her haire hanging about her fhoulders, if the goe bare-fote round about the place, the Caternillers will presently fail : but perhaps I trouble you with this tebious, or long bilcourfe of Bearbs, Plants, and Trees, and therefore though there be much more to be fpoken of , leaft 3. thould feeme to oner wearie pon, I will make an end, ...

THE A. A trouble? no, you have done me a fingular great pleature, in declaring but o me the right exdering of a Carden, and an Dechard, which not throughly entreated of by others, you have briefely, and perfectly, to our great commoditie described. And whereas you have largely spoken of our Trais at home, it remainest for you to say something of the disposing of Mades, It was my channes to passe yesterday, by a great thind of Dakes, and Cappille, planted in very good order, and hard by, a Wall observed.

Grone topon the five of a River, excellently well arbered, when the fields were enclosed round about with great Clines, which greatly beautifieth your divelling, and yield (3 warrant) no small profit: 3 therefore greatly befire to heare something of this part of busbandzie.

MARIVS. Though it be without my conenant, and that you bemaund more then I promifed, yet fince you force me, I will not refuse it, least you should thinke I would faile you in any Of Woods thing. As touching Thous, Ancus Martius (as Petrus Crinicus toxiteth) was the first in Rome that ever dealt in them: the olde father had alwaics a speciall regard of Rawds, wherefore Virgill saith:

Fifthat of Woods I frame my Song, Woods vnto Princes doe belong: If that of Woods I lift to fing, Woods may full well before a King.

It was ordained by the Komanes, that the Confuls fould have the charge of the Mands , that there hould no Tymber be wanting for building of Boules, and Ships, and other Tymbers ivezhes, both publique, and prinate. The fate of Venice at this bay, obserueth the same order, pointing a prinate Officer for their Wiots, who bath in charge as well to fie to the verely planting of them, as to let that there be wanting no Evmber for their necessarie bles. The Wood that you told me you passed by. is of Dakes, Beches, and other Balt tres: fome part feruing for Tymber, and other for felvell. Of thefe therefore will & firth begin to fpeake, and then of Dline Gzones, and Willowes, fome of them be wilde, and grow of themfelues, not needing any loking to, but fuch, as bally experience theives, are nothing fo god, as those that are planted. Winds, and Forretts, bee chiefely con fift of Dake, Biech, Fyzre tre, Byzche, Wine, Witch tre, Paffe bolme, Corke, wilde Dline, Bedlar, Crabtra, Juniper, Cop nell, and Porrie: other Wands have other tres, according to the nature of the ground. The great Wood of Bartefwald in Oere manie, as it runneth through biners Countries, beareth in foms place onely Dake, in others Bech, in others fyeres. The Fast reft of Groerne for the most part beareth Dake: Montificello, Barth, Fore, Cornell, and Camarice, Monte D.S. Gotharde

great aboundance of Chellmut trees. Thele intiver fort, though they grow of themselues, may yet well be planted, if you have morte ground of the Acome, and the Berry each of them liketh fome one kinde of ground better then another, as first Theophraflus, and after Plinie bath beclared. In the mountaines belighteth the frere tra, the Cedar, the Larth, the Bitch tra, and fuch as beare Boline : as alfo the Boime, the Terebinth, the Cheffnut, the Maltholme, the Dake, the Bech, the Juniper, the Tornell, and the Dogge træ: though fome of thefe alfo profper ivell ce nough in the plaine. The frere, the Dake, the Cheffnut, the Porrebech, the Baltholme, and the Cornell grow as well in the Walley, as on the Mountaine: bpon the Plaines you hail have the Tamarir, the Clime, the Boplar, the Willow, the Bafell, the Mainut, the Domebeame, the Paple, the Athe, and the Bech. You thall not lightly fee the Dlumb tre, the Apple, the wilde D. line, not the Wlainut, boon the Mountaine, all fuch as grow as well in the Plaine, as byon the Dountaine, are larger, and fairer to the eye, growing in the Blaine, but are better fez Ermber. and fruit, byon the Mountaine, ercept the Beare, and the Ape ple, (as Theophraftie faith.) In Barrith ground belighteth the Millow, the Alber, the Boplar, and the Briney. And although the most Woodes boe fpring of their ofme nature and accord, pet are they by planting, labour, and diligence, brought to be a great beale more fayre and fruitfull : for, as afore I told you how fruit tres are nourithed and brought bp in June Garbens; to are thefe wilde and fruitleffe tres fet and planted for Timber and Peiveil. De that is bilpoled to plant a Wood, muft firft, accorbing to his foyle, choic his fets : and if be bane them not furing ging of his olone,let him make an 3mpe Carben of the febes em choling well the ground with Debge, Kampire, oz Ditch, leaft Shepe, Coates, oz any other Cattell, come in to bite and bzouse ft : for whatfoener they have once bitten (as it were infected with a beably poplon) peritheth : and therefore those that meane to plant Modes, epther for Timber, fewell, or Batte, muft tarefully prouibe against thefe burtfull enemies. The Countrey lawes bane therein well pronided, that inhere fuch Springs are, they thall febe no Coates, noz fuch Cattell. Amongft the Spate The Oaks Eres, and fuch as ferne for Epinber, the first place of right

belomgeth.

## The fecond Booke, entreating

belongeth to the Dake , called in Latine Quercus , in Italian Quercia, in Spanith Roble, in French Chelay, in Dutch Bichenbaum, he that will then plant an Dake Grone, muft mouibe him of ripe Acouncs, not over bated, not faultie, or any wap corrup ted : thele muft be fow in god ground well tilled, with as great carefulnelle as be plants bis Dichard, and well enclose it. that there come no Cattell in it : which (when they be Comethine growne) you must about Februarie remone to the place inhere you entend to plant your tamo : if you cut and propne them, it is thought they will profper the better for spaft : but if you referue them for Eimber , you mult not touch the tops , that & may runne by the Braighter and higher. In remoning them. you must make your trenches a fote and a halfe beve, conering the Kotes well with earth, taking god hede you neither brule them. noz breake them : for better pou were to cut them. The Dake agreeth well enough with all manner of ground, but prospereth the better in Marthes, and watry places : it groweth almost in all grounds, yea even in gravell and fand, except it be over-byy it liketh worft a fat ground , neither refuleth it the mountaine. THE have at this bay an Dake in Weltphalia, not farre from the Cattle of Altenan, tobich is from the fote to the nereft boin, one bundged and thirty fote, and thee elles in thicknesse : and ano ther in another place, that being cut out, made a bundged Waine loade: not farre from this place there erely another Dake of tenne pards in thicknesse, but not bery bigh : the Kouers in Ger manie, were wont to ble for their Ships hollowed Tres, where of fome one (as Plinic faith) would carrie thirtie men. The nest amongs the Bast trees is the Beech, in Latine Fagus, in Italian Faggio, in Spanish Hava, in French Faus, in Dutch Buchen, plane ten almost after the same manner that the Dakes be. The Batte bolme in Latine Ilex, in Italian where it is better knowne Elice. in Spanifh Enzina, in French Hauffen: it groweth bigb, if it bates ground mate for it: it profereth been billes, and likes not the Plaine : it beareth Acomes leffer then the Acomes of the Dake, a leafe like a Bay, and is continually grane. The like bath the Cooke trie, in Latine Suber, in Spanith Alcornoque, in French Liege, which is counted among the thole that beare Ball, the barke tohereof toe occupie for the flotes of our fifting Bets.

Reech

and in Pantofels for Winter : all other trees (faming onely the Corke,if you fpople them of their barke boe ove, Another Maft. bearing Dke there is , called in Latine Quercus filveltrum . in French Cheine, a kinde whereof fome thinke the Cerre tre to be, called in Latine Cerrus, growing in wilde and barren places. There are fome that ooe number the Chellnut tre among the Balt bearers : but of this I baue fpoken befoge. The belt Balt Mak, and Is the Dhe Daft, the nert the Bech and the Cheftnut, then the his diffewille Dhe, ec. All bery good and meet for the fatting of Cat. rences: tell, fpecially Bogges. The Dke Balt, oz Acozne, maketh thicke Bacon, found fieth, and long lafting,if it be well falted and bried: on the other fibe, Cheffnuts and Bech Baft : make fwet and belicate flefb, light of bigeftion, but not fo long lafting. The nert is the Cerre Ere, that maketh bery found and god delb : The Pattholme maketh pleafant Bacon, faire and weightie. Plinic faith, that it was opdained by the Law of the twelne Tables, that it thould be lawfull for any man to gather his ofone Patt, falling boon the ground of his neighbour, which the Boid of the chiefe Juffice both thus interprete: that it thall be lawfull for him to boe it thee Dayes together, with this prouifo, that hee thall onely gather the Acornes , and boe no harms to his neighbour, as Vipianus witnefeth. Glans Maft (as Caius fapth) is taken for the fruit of all trees, as Angolow, fignificth with the Oriese, though properly Angualeod, be those fruits that are felbe, as Buts, and fuch other. Apon thele Baft bearers there graweth also the Gallin French Noix de Galle, in Italian and Dutch, as in Latine, in Spanish Agalla, a little Ball, rugget and beenen without, whereof fome be mallie, fome bolle fome blacke, fome white, fome bigge, fome leffer. It grometh (as Plinic fapth) the Sunne rifing in Gemini, commonly all out Subpenly in one night: in one day it wareth white, and if the beat of the Sunne then take it it withereth: the blacke continueth the longer, and groweth fometime to the bigneffe of an Apple:thele ferneth belt to curry withall, and the other to finish the Leather, the worft is of the Dake : and thus of fuch Trees as beare Waft. Bow will I joune withall the principallett of the other Cres, to make by your Woodes, amongst which are the Cime, and the William : the Cime, in Latine Vimus, The Elme,

# The fecond Booke, entreating in Italian and Spanish Olmo, in French Orme, in Dutch Vim-

baum, and Yffenholtz: the planting whereof, because it is to great ble, and eafily grotes, wemay not let palle : firft because

it graweth well with the Mine, and ministreth good love to Cat. tle : feconoly (as it is all heart) it maketh goo tymber. Theophrastus and Plinic Doe both affirme the Elme to be barraine. peraduenture because the foebe at the first comming of the leafe. femeth to lye bid among the leaucs, and therefore it is thought to be fome of the leafe (as Columella affirmeth.) De that will planta Grove of Elmes, muft gather the febe calleb Samara, a bout the beginning of March, when it beginneth to ware vellow. and after that it hath baped in the shabbow two baies, fowe it bery thicke, and call fine fifted mould boon it, and if there come not god Boze of caine, water it well : after a yere you may remoue it to pour Cime Ozoue, fetting them certaine fotea funber, and tothe end that they rote not to bepe, but may be taken bp againe, there must be betwirt them certaine little tren. shes, a fote and a halfe diffance: and on the rote you must knit a knot, or if they be very long, twift them like a Barland, and being well nointed with Bullockes bung, fet them, and tread in the earth round about them. The female Climes are better to be planted in Autumno, because they have no sebe : at this day in many places, cutting off Sets from the faireft Elmes, they let them in trenches, from whence when they are a little growne. they gather like Sets, and by this dealing make a great gaine of them : in the like fort are planted Ozoucs of Albes. The Albe Alberoves in Italian Fraxino, in Spanish Freino, in French Fraine, in Dutch Efchen : the Athe belighteth in rich and moift ground and in plaine Countries, though it grow well enough alfo in baie grounds, he fpzeabeth out his Motes bery farre, and therefore is tiot to be fet about Come ground, it may be felled enery third of fourth peere , for to make flaves for Almes. The Ache groweth. berp faft, and fuch as are forwards are fet in februarie with fuch ponng Blants as come of them, in god handlome ozber franking a-row : others fet fich Athes as they meme thall make fupper ters fez Garben Gines, intrenches of a pare olb, about the Ca tends of Sparch : and before the thirty ligth moneth they touch them not with any knife, for the preferring of the branches : after encry.

enery other pere it is proposed, and in the firt pers topned with the Mine: if you ble to cut away the branches, they will grow to bery godly beight, with a round boby, fmooth, plaine, e ftrong: Plinic touteth of experience, that the Servent both lo abhorre the Afte, that if you enclose fire and him with the beanches, be will rather roune into the fire then goe through the bolues. Byrch, Byrch. called in Latine Betula, as Theophraftus watteth in bis fourth Booke, is a Tre bery metefo; Woods : it profpercth incolos Countries, froffie, Inowie and granelly, and in any barraine ground, wherefore they ble in barraine grounds, that ferue for no other purpole to plant Briches: it is called in Italian Bedolla . in Dutch Byrken , in French Beula. Dine Woos, Spire THOS. Ditch tre, and Larly, are common in Italy about Erent. The Wine tre in Latine Pinus, in Italian and Spanith Pino, in The Pine. Dutch Hartzbaum, is planted of his kernsis , from Daober to Januarie , in hot and by Countries : and in cold and wet places. in Februarie or Murch: the kernels muft be gathered in June, before the clogges doe open, and where you lift to fowe them, etther boon billes of elle where : pon muft first ploto the ground and caff in your feete, as per boe in forming of Come, and couer them cently with a light Barrow oz a Rake, not covering them abone a hand broad : you thall boe well, if pon lay the kernels in mater the baies befoze. The kernels of the Dine are calledin Spantit Pinones. The firre tree, in Latine Abies, in Italian Firre tree. Abere, in Spanish Abero, in Dutch Deamen , loueth not to have amp great aboe made about it : If you be to carious in planting of it, it will grow (as they lay) the lowale, it growes of his owne hernell in wilde Bountaines, Blaines, or any where. The sich Bitch tre,in Latine Picca, in Italian Rezzo, in Spamith El pino tree. de que le baza lapez, in Dutch Rododemem, is a træ of the kinde of Bines, and very like to the Bine, flueating out his Mozen as be both : for there are fire kindes of thele Kozen tres, the wine, the Ditch tre, the wilde Dine, the Firre, the Larib, and the Tarre tre, the planting of them all is alike. The Siber, atre The Alder allo mete for Woos, in Latine Alnus, in Italian Auno, in Butch Elfen, in French Aulae, it groweth in plaine and marrilly places nere to Miners. Theophraftus faith, it pelbeth a fruit. full feete in the end of Summer : many places are commobioully planted

# The fecond Booke, entreating

planted with Boplar, whereof there are two forts, the Willite, Poplar. white and and the Blacke , the Wibite is called with the Stalians, Populo bianco : with the Spaniards, Alamo blanco : the Blacke, of blacke. the Italians, Populo nigro : of the other, Amalo nigrillo : in French, Peuplier : in Dutch, Peppelem : it is planted of the Branches and Settes, and belighteth in watrie places, or ampor ther ground, it proueth bery faft : the blacke hath the ruggebber barke, his leaues round while be is poung, and cornered in his

age, white buberneath, and greene aboue. The Tymber berce. of is god for buildings. Evecially within dozes : his wood is whitith within, and the rinde blackith whence be bath his name. Theophraftus atheth a third kinde, which fome call the Boular. Willower, of Libys, and of the Alpes, it bath a rugged barke, like the wilbe Werrie : a leafe like Juie, and is in colour like a barke greene, tharpe at the one end, and broad at the other. The blacke Poplar groweth in great plentie about the lower parts of the Thyne : though Homer call the Wallow a fruitleffe tree, bes cause his fruit turneth into cobluchs before they be rire: pet is the fourraignty given bin among t telobs that are biually felb. Cato gineth the third place of husbanday grounds to the Will low, preferring it cither before the Dline Grone Corne ground. or Debbolu, for it is oftner to be cutte, and groweth the thice ker : neyther is there to great gaine with to little charge in any thing. It belighteth in watrie grounts, barke and that bowie, and therefore is planted about Riners and Lakes, bows be it it groweth in Champion, and other ground. It is plans ted of roung Settes, a fote and a balle long, and well covered with earth: a loct ground requireth a greater biffance betwirt them, wherein you thall boe well to fet them fine fote alunder. in oaber like the Sinke byon a Dre : in the baie ground thep may be lette thicker together, pet Columella would have them fine fote biftant, for paffing by them. There are two forts of Willowes, one fort enturing for cuer, called Blar, feruing for making of Baskets, Chaptes, Bampers, and other Toontrey finite: the other kinds growing with great and high beans ches, feruing for flaves to Mines, or for Quickfets, or fakes of Debges, and is called Stake Wallow: It is planted both of the tweete and of the falke, but the falke is the better, which must

Ofiar.

be let in a mort ground well bigged, two fote and a balle in the ground before it fpring, and when the twigges are bare, you must take them from the tree, when they be bery bay, otherwise they profer not fo well : thefe fakes or fettes being taken from the poung frocke, that bath beene once or twice cut, and in thicknelle as much as a mans arme, you must let in the ground the fote, or a forte and a halfe beve, and fire forte afunder, laying god mould about them, fence them well, that there come no cattell to will off the barke of them. After thee or foure peres pou may pull them, whereby they will grow and foreat the better, and fo you may continually cut them enery fifth . or fourth were, inhereof you may make Sets for planting of more, for the olde ones are not lo god to be occupied. The time of cutting of them, is from the fall of the leafe butill Apzill, the Bone encreafing, andin Mefterly, or Southerly windes : for if you doe it, the winde bes ing in the Routh, we finde by experience they will not grow fo well : you must cut them cleane away, that the olde branches burt not the young Springs : fome thinke the young Willow to grow the better the never the ground, and the fmother he is cut. The Ofiar commonly groweth of his owne felfe, and is ale Forplanlo planted of his Robbes, in watrie and marify grounds, the ting of earth railed by, and lavo in furrowes: it is planted and frings most plentifully, where the earth is beaten by with the rage and over-flowings of the water : it ferueth as a fure befense for mas king of Bankes and Walles in Parthes, and that chiefely in Barch, the Done encreafing : the Ofiar may be cut enery pere. or enery two peere if you will. Loe, here hans you concerning Wands what nedefulleff are for our Countrymen to plant : for as for Bands of Cedar. Cipzelle, and other ftrange Tres, it is not for our Bufoands to buffe themselues about: wet and rich grounds that are mete for Corne, is also goo to be planted with Dakes, Bech, Willow, and Boplar, although the Dake and the Bech refule billie, and lighter ground : Sandie, and bar taine grounds, are good for Birch, Bramble, Broome, and Beath, as I have lufficiently laid before. Dow perhaps you would have me procede with Coppile Moods, that are contie mually to be feld.

THE A. I would : if it were no paine to you.

£ 3

MARIVE

# The fecond Booke, entreating

MARIVS. Coppiffe, og fale Wiod, were firft brought bp/as Plinic fafeth) by Qu. Martius, This hinde of Willow groweth come monly of his ofone accord in forreffs, and watrie places : but all Moos are not for this purpole, for fome Tres there are which if you cut and poule often, will fade and bye, as the Athe, the Juniper, the Cherrie, the Firre, the Apple, and the Wirrie: and some againe if they be not cut, will perith : the Wine requireth peerely cutting, the Dlive, the Dictell, and the Domegra nate, each other peere. In cutting of them (as they are biners) fo. is their order : for the Dake, as he groweth flowly, fo is he not to be cut, before he be of feauen, or eight vieres growth : and the nærer the ground you cut him, the better he growes, though he may be polled feaven or eight fote about the ground : The like is of the Bech, fauing that he may fonce be cut. The great Willow, and the Poplar, are cut after one fort, as I thefved a little befoze : though the Ofiar may be cut euery two pere. 02 euerp pere. The Chestnut map be feld euery seauenth pere, both for fewell, or for Time fraues. Tres are cut and polo funbate luaves, for either they are felde close by the ground, or the body is volbe, when it comes to be of the bigneffe of a mans. arme of more, as the Willew is. Coppilled Woods are commonly feuers into fo many parcels, as may ferue for yearely feld ling, fome till growing while others are a felling, and because fome of them grow fatter then other fome, every fort hath his place, and his feafon appointed. Some are felled enery fourth pere, some enery fifth pere, as the Willow, the Boylar, the Alber, and the Birch : fome, once in feauen piere, as the Cheff. nut, and fome in moze, as the Dake. It remaineth, that I now thew pon the manner of felling of timber, and what timber is metett for everr worke.

THRA. 3 have a great defire to heare what time is metelf for felling of timber, which much analleth (as they say) to the long enouring of it: after, I would know what timber is mete for

euery purpole.

MARIVS. The leason of felling, no boubt is to great purpose, whether it be so timber or selvell: so, such Eras as are feld either in the Spring, or in Summer, though they seeme dry inithout, are notinithstanding full of morture, and wetnesse

wifbin, which in burning, will never make god fire ! and there, fore Coppiffe and fire-ivod, pour beft felling is in Winter : and for building, it is belt cutting of your tres in December, and Ja nuarie, the Mone being in the wane, from the twentie, to the thirty bay. Det are there fome that fay, they have found by erne. rience, that Trees being cut in Januarie, are full of San : and therefore thinke it better either to cut them before, or after, Cato faith , the beft time is about the twelfth of December , for the Timber Tre that beareth fruit, is beft in feafon when his febe is rive, and that which hath no feede, when it villes it is time to cut. Such as are flatued , feruing for Billers of Churches or a ther round workes , muft be cut when they fpring: Shingles. and fuch as the Batchet muft flaive, are to be cut betwirt midde Winter, and the beginning, in the Wielterne Wines. Plinic af firmeth the belt feafon for felling of timber, to be lobile the Mone is in conjunction with the Sounce. Viervuius an excellent fellom in building, both will you to fell your timber from the beginning of Autumne . till the time that the Welterne windes begin to blow, the which windes begin to blow (as Plinic faith) about the firt Joes of Februarie: for in-the Spring, all Eres are as it were with childe, and bend all their force to the putting out of their leafe, and their fruit. Since then they be Sappie, and not found, by the necellitie of the leafon, they are made by the reafon of their lofenelle feeble, and of no force: even as the bodies of women, after they have conceived, from their conception, till the time of their beliverance, are not indged to be found, oz perfit. In like fort the Eres in Autumne, when the fruit and leaves begin to fall, the Kotes brawing from the earth their fufficient fus frenance, are reflored againe to their olde effate : belide, the force of the aire in Whinter both fatten and make found the Tres. and therefore it is then thought the beft time to fell your timber. The manner of cutting of it is this, first to cut it till von come to the mibole of the pithe, and fo to let it fand, that the Sap that is in it, may befrend and byop out : fo fhall not the morfture within putrifie, noz corrupt the timber, but paffe clearely away. Withen you have cutte it, and you fee it bite that it hath left bropping. you may cut it bowne, and fo thall you be fure it thatt best ferne pour turne, There are fome Baffers in building , that thinke it bett

# The fecond Booke, entreating

best after you have sawne out your timber in bozdes, to lay them in water so their of source dates, or if they be of Berth, sor a longer time, eight or nine dates: and being ordered in this wise they shall neither (they say) be rotten, or worme eaten.

THE A. Bow let be heare what trees are beft for timber.

MARIVS. There are bivers and fundzie bles of timber : fuch as are barrains, are better then the fruitfull, excepting thole forts where the male beareth, as the Cipreffe, and the Cornell : in all tres the parts that grow toward the Both , are harder, and founder, which are almost covered with moste, as with a cloake against the colpe: the worst are those that grow in sha powie and watriff places, the maffier and better buring, are they that grow against the Sunne: and therefore Theophrastus dent beth all Elimber into thee forts, into clouen, fquared, and round, of which the clouen doe never rent noz coame : for the with being bared, brieth by and bieth: they also endure long, because they have little moifture. The fquared, and the round, or the fobole timber , both coame and gape, specially the round, because it is fuller of pith, and therefore renteth and coameth in enery place. And fuch bigh Eres as they ble for villers and maine voftes. they first rub over with Bullockes bung to feafon them, and to fucke out the fappe : for the moiffure both alwaies coame forner then the bay, and bay better to be fatone then the greene, ercept the Dake, and the Bore, that bee more fill the teth of the Daive. and refift it. Some againe refuse to be glued either with theme felues, or any other, as the Dake, which cleaneth as foone to a frome, as any wood, neither boe they well cleane, but to fuch as are of like nature : to be bosed, the grane is worler then the bay: the light and the bay, are harber to be cutte : for Bandes and Withes, the Willow, the Broome, the Brich, the Elme, the Boplar, the Wine, the clouen Kede, and the Bramble are beft : the Hafell will alfoferne, but the first is the Willow: they have allo a certaine baronelle andfairenelle, mete to be bled in graven workes. Among those that ferne for Timber, are moft in ble the Firre, the Dake, the Bine, the Larly, the Elcle, the Elme, Will low, Cedar, Copreffe, the Bore, Brich, Blane tree, Albar, Afte, wilde Dake, Date tree, 15 ech, wilde Dline, Baltholme, Walnut, Daple, and Bolly, and binges others, bled according to their nature.

nature, and the manner of the Countrie where they grow. The fiere tre , whereof I baue fpoken befoge, gweth out Mogen, The Fire, and his timber is meet for biners workes, and greatly effermed for his height and bigneffe, inhereof are made the Ship Mafts. and Billers for houses: For it is very frong, and able to abide great force. It is bled allo in building , for great Cates , and Doze poffes: in fine, goo for any building within , but not fo well enduring without bozes, and berp fone fet affre. They be fed (as Theophraftus faith) in the olde time to make their Cal-Hes and long Boates of firre, for the lightnete fake, and their Ships for burben , of Dine tres , and Dake. Df Dake, 3 baue Spoken alittle befoze, the timber whereof is beft, both for inward buildings, and for the weather, and also well enduring in the mater : Heliodus mould have pokes made of Dhe. The wilbe Dhe ferueth alfo well in water workes, fo it bee not nere the Sea : for there it endureth not , by reafon of the falt. nelle : it will not be pierced with any Angur, except it be wet befoze : neither fo will it fuffer (as Plinic faith) any Daile Dais nen in it, to be plucked out againe.

The Maltholme, in Grieke weirog, a Tre well knowne The Maft. in Italie, the Wood whereof is tough and frong, and of colour holme. like a barke red , mete (as Heliodus faith) to ferue for Dlow hares : it may also bee made in Wainescot, and Baile borbe. The Larth Tre, in Italian Larice, in Dutch Lerchenbaura, was The Larth in the olde time greatly effemed about the Kiner Poc, and the Gulfe of Veniz; not onely for the bitternelle of the Sappe, inhereby ( as Vicrouius faith ) it is free from corruption and wormes, but also for that it will take no fice, which Mathiolus femeth with his arguments to confute. It is goo to fulfaine great burdens, and ffrong to relift any biolence of weather, bowbeit they fap, it will rotte with falt water. The Eicle is a kinde of Dhe , called in Latine Efclus, is some burt with any moisture : the Clime, the Wallow, and the Boplar, whereof I have Cpoken before, will very some rotte and corrupt : thep will ferue well enough within Doze, and for making of Debges. The Elme continueth bery bard, and firong, and therefore is meete for the Chakes and Bolles of Gates, and for Gates, for it will not bolue, not warpe : but you must la bispose it, that the top may

Cano.

# The fecond Booke, entreating

frant bolunewarp: It is met (as Heliodus fauth) to make Blois bandles of. The Albe (as Theophraftus fapth) is of two forts. the one tall, Grong , white , and without knots, the other more full of Sap, ruggebber and harber. The Bay leafe (as Plinie farth is a poylon to all kinde of Cattell : but herein he is Deceined, as it should appeare by the likelinede of the name, mados, omage, is the poung Tree, whole leaves, (as is certainely tried) killeth all fuch beafts as chain not the cub. Albe, befides his mant fold ble other wayes, maketh the beft & faireft horfemens flaues. whereof was made the staffe of Achillis, which Homer fo greatly commendeth : it is also cut out in thinne bordes. The Bosch. whereof I have froken before, although it be brittle and tender. and may be fo cut in thin bordes, and bent, as he feemeth to ferue onely for Cafkets, bores, and Coffers: his colour being bery faire, vet is be fure and truftie in bearing of weight, as in Areltrees. for Carts or Wames. The barke of the Beech, was bled in olde time for beliels, to gather Graves in and other fruit, and also for Ernets, and bellels to doe facrifice withall: and therefore Curius finare, that he brought nothing away of all the spoile of his ence mies, but one poze Bechen Cruet, wherein hee might facrifice to his Gods. The Alber is a Tre with ftreight bodic, a foft and reddilb wood, growing commonly in the watrie places, it is chiefly effemed for foundations, and in water workes, because it never rotteth lying in the water : and therefore it is greatly accounted of among the Menetians, for the foundations of their places, and houses: for being briven thicke in piles, it endureth for euer, and fustameth a wonderfull weight. The rinde is pulled off in the Spring and ferueth the Diar in his occupation: it hath like knots to the Cedar, to be cut and wrought in. The Blane tre is but a Aranger, and a new come to Italie, brought thither onely for the commoditie of the Chadow, keeping off the Sunne in Sommer and letting it in in Winter. There are fome in Athens (as Plinic faith) Inhofe beanches are 36. cubits in beeth: in Licva there is one for greatnette like a boule, the Chaboly place binderneath containing 81. fote in bigneffe : the timber with his foftneffe hath his ble but in water, as the Alder, but dier then the Cline, the Albe, the Bulbery, and the Cherg. The Linder, in Greeke pillugia, and to in Italian, in Spanish Latera, in Dutch Lynden , this tree Theophrastus

Theophraftus counteth belt for the workeman, by reafon of his foftneffe : it breedeth no wormes , and bath betwirt the Barke and the Wiod, funday little ringes, whereof they mere mont in Plinics time to make Ropes & Withes. The Byzch is bery beaufull and faire : the inner rinde of the Tree, called in Latine Liber. was bled in the olde time in freed of Baper to write buon, and mas bound by in bolumnes, whereof bokes had first the name of Libri: the twigs and bowes be fmall, and bending, bled to be carried before the Magistrate among the Romanes, at this pap terrible to poze boyes in Scholes. The Cloer tre scalled of Dioscorides ANTH, in Latine Sambucus, in Italian Sembuco, in Spanish Sauco, in French Sufeau, in Dutch Hollenter, both of all other trees fonest and califest grow as erverience besides Theophrastus both teach be, and thought be bery full of pitch vet the had is frong and god: it is hollowed to divers bles, and bery light flaves are made of it. It is frong and tough inhen it is Dive, and being laid in water, the rinde commeth off as fone as he is bape. The Cloer wood is bery hard and frong, and chiefely bled for Boare Speares, the rote (as Plinic fapth) may be made in thin bozdes. The figge tre is a tre bery well knowen and fruitfull, not bery high, but somewhat thicke (as Theophrastus fauth) a cubite in compatte, the tymber is frong, and bled for many purpoles, and fith it is loft, and holdeth fall inhatforner flickes in it, it is greatly bled in targets. Bore tree, in Italian Boxo, in Spanish Box, in French Bouys, in Dutch Bultbaum. an excellent Tree, and for his long lafting, to be preferred before others. The Bore that furned is, (faith Virgill) Juniperical led both of Theophrastus and Dioscorides Agueis, because it bat neth away bermine: for with his fanour, Toades and Snailes, Juniper, and fuch like, are briven away, in Latine it is called funiperus, in Italian Ginipro,in Spanith Euchro,in French Geneurs,in Dutch Wachoiter: it is bery like to Cedar, but that it is not fo large. not fo high, though in many places it groweth to a great height: the timber whereof well endureth a hund eth veres. And theres fore Hannibal commanies that the Temple end of Diana Chouls be built with rafters and beames of Juniper, to the end it might continue. At allo kepeth fire a long time, in fo much as it is fail. the coales of Luniver kindled - have kept fire a perre together?

the ..

CHENOBOSCVS. And if you will niedes have me, 3 will not refule to their you formewhat also of my feathered cattell.

MELLISSEVS. 3 pappon boefo.

Of Geefe. CHENOBOSCVS. Amongst the fowle that we keepe as bout our houses in the Countrey, the second place of right is one to the Cofe and the Ducke, which are of the number of those that they call Amphibia, because they live as well byon the land. as the water. And because the keeping of Bele requires no great labour, it is a thing not bumiete for the Busbandman. for that (if be bane place commobious for it) it is bone without amp charges, and pielbeth god abuantage both with their bambe and feathers : for befibe the profit of their Eggs, you may twife in the piere, at the Spring, and the fall of the leafe pull them. Mozeover, they are a bery god bill for the Table : pea, being mide watchfull then the Dogges, they give warning when they flepe. And therefore they were with the Komanes hab in great honour, because they with their gaggling betwayed the enemie, that otherwise in the night time had taken the Cowne. Plinic witeth of a Oole that would neuer be from the Philolopher Lacydes. Dour chople muß be of thole that be of the faireft kinbe: Varro liketh beft the white ones , which colour was most effer med in the olde time, as appeareth by the prefents that were gimen: the fame Varro accounteth the grap for a wilbe kinde. They are kept in Parthes, Fennes, Lakes, and Pozith Commons : for to Come ground, Debbowes, and Baltures,it is a bery burt full Fowle: the biteth whatforner young Spring the may reach, and what the once hath bitten, both neuer lightly profper againe: belies. the frencheth the ground with her bnpafitable. or rather moft burtfoll bunging : wherefore (as 3 faid) it is belt to hepe them in Fennes, Lakes, and Parthes. If you have Roze of fuch ground, pon shall doe well to keepe them: for pou cannot well kiepe them without god floze of water and pafture. The Gols belighteth in fuch meat as is naturally moilt & cold. and thunneth naturally fuch things as are burtfull for her, as the leafe of the Bap and (as Alianus weiteth) the Olcander : the belt and meetelt time for them to brade in, is from the Balends of March, to the tenth of June. They tread most commonly in the water, while they firm in the Miners, or fifth-ponds, Columella moult have

pou hape for euery Camber, their Bele, thinking by reafon of their brivelbineffe, this number to fuffice: within your Court. you muft make them for their better fafetie, feuerall, and ferret nennes. in funday parts thereof, where they may fit and breede. Some would baue the Cole-rome framed in fuch ozder, as euerp Omfe may have a place to ber felfe : which, if any man thinks to troublefome, he may make one fufficient wine rome to ferus them all. The places where they hall lay, muft be bie, and well frames with fram, or fuch foft matter, and well befended from Mermine. The Gole mult not be luffered to lay out of her neft, but when you that! perceine they leeke it, you muft grope them, and if they be with Egge, which you thall eafilie fele, there that them by in their nefts, which you thall not nieve to doe at bour once, or twife: for where the bath once lapo, the will alwaies of her felfe lieke to be. They will lay (as some hold opinion) the in the vere if they be not luffered to fit, as it is best you poe not: for their Egges are better to be hatchen binber a Benne, then of themlelues, and will better a great beale profper. The Cores of Dele, and Swannes, were bled (as Alianus witneffeth) as a mot baintie bilb at Bankets, among the Bings and Princes of the Indies. Ariftorleaffirmeth, that the Bole alwaies bleth to fit, and never the Camber contrarie to the order of many other. Fowles, continuing alwaies till the bane batched. After the laff laving, you hall fuffer them to fit, and marke enery ones Coges with a fenerall marke, that they may be fet bener their owns Cole for it is thought they will neuer batch a ftrangers Cages, without the hane ber owne bnber ber. Df Bole Egges, as of Debennes Egges, vou thall (as 3 (aib befoze) neuer fet bober a Denne aboue fine,noz binder thee : but binder the Bole von Gall let at the leaft feauen, and at the most fifteene. You must kepe to lap binber your Egges, the rotes of Bettles, which they fay meferneth them against the Ainging of Qettles, which otherwise many times killeth the Coyling af they King them. The Egges will not be hatched if the weather be colde, before the thirtieth day, if it be warme, in leffer time : bowbeit for the most part, the Woeling is batched the thirtieth bap after the fitting. Some Doe ble to let by the nells Barley freped in water , or Manit,

M 3

whereby the Gole thall not be forced to be any while ablent from

ber Egges. When pour Goslings are come fath, pon fhall for the firft ten bapes febe them with the Omfe in the neft. Afterivards, twhen the weather is faire, you may fuffer them to goe a. broad, taking goo beede that they be not fringed with Asttles, noz that you let them goe an bungred into the pastures : but to give them after they goe abroad the leanes of Endine, or Lettule. chopt, to allwage their bunger : for if you put them an bungreb. into the field, they fraine and breake their chone necks, with pulling at the tough and Aubborne webes, by reason of the sude ben farting backe agains of the wiede, The Boglings of diners brodes muft not goe together, not be fint by together, for bur-Patring of ting one another. Wiben they be foure Moneths old, 02 foures what before, is beft time for fatting them : the youngest are for nell, and eafelieft fatteb. If you give them ground Mault, and Wheate flower, you neede give them nothing elfe, fo you let. thein bane brinke enough, and hope them from going abroad. The Grakes bid ble to put to two parts of ground Mault, foure parts of Bran, tempring it with water, letting them brinke thrife. a day, and at midnight. If you would have their Liners foft and tender, you thall mingle bay Figs, well beaten with water, and making pellets thereof, cram them with it for the fpace of feauen tene of twentie baies. The Jewes at this bay, being the fkilfple left febers that be, boe blea Brange ogber in the fatting of them. wapping the Cole in a Linnen Apzon, they hang ber by in a barke place, Ropping ber earcs with Bealon, 02 fome other thing, that by neither hearing noz feing of any thing, the be not forced to Aruggle, nos cry: after they give ber pellets of ground Balt. or Bar lepfteped in water, thrife a bap, fetting by them water and grauell, by which manner of feeding they make them fo fatte, as the Liver many times commeth to be fine poond in waight. Wahilf 3 was at the Councell of Wormer, there was a Liner of a Cole brought me by a Zew, that walabet foure pount. Plinie is allo a withele of the greatneffe of the Livers of fat Oele affire ming, that they will grow after they be put of the bodyes being Sprinckled with milke. The common order of fatting with out Countrep people, is to Qutte them by in a barke, and a narroto place, and to fet befoge them Barley, or Beech lobeate, guing them water, with a little fand, or granell in their Erongbese ann

Gcele.

and with this order they have them fat in fouretime bapes. After baruell, they will be fat with the Grotten,or Stubble. Ebey are plucked (as 3 faid befoze) thefe in the piere ; in the Spama, and in the fall of the leafe. Some ble to clippe them, but then their feathers neuer groto fo well : but if pou pull them, pou thall have them to come betie fayse againe : and this is mough for a Omle.

Ducks and Teales are to be opbered in like manner almoft as Ducks. the Oole, fauing that thep belight moze in waters and Marithes: and therefore you muft force fome Waters, Lakes, or Boles. for them, whereunto they may eafily gos and fwimme, and bine at their pleasure. Columella wonib hane ven baue a Court for the nance for them, where no Cattell ble, and nære to the houfe. round about the which you thall build for them little bandlome Romes, the fote fquare, with prettie bores to enery one of them : which when they breede, you fall keepe futte. Bard be. pon mult baus either fome Bond, oz Miner, wherein (as & faib) they may flormme : for without the belpe of the water they can as cull line, as without the land. It is good alfo to have niere buto them, fome goo Baffure, or Debbolu, or to fet about the Donds oz Miners, fuch Dearbs as they belt like; as Claner, Fenegrake, Endine, Lettule, and fuch other as they mot belight in, and wherewith their young doe well feeds : belibe, you mink gius them Dtes, Barley, and other Come in water. There is nothing that they more loue then Acomes,nor that better fatteth them. They belight wonderfully to be amongit Mebes and Debges, wherein they may lye lafe from rauenous biras, but fo, as there grow no great stalked weedes, that may hinder their Iwimming : for they belight greatly to play themfelnes in the water, and to frine who can fwimme faftelt, when the weather is fayes and warme : for as they lone fuch places wherether map bell pray boon the creatures of the water, fo are they much of fended if they be reffragned of their libertie in Cinimming. In Wilnter, when the waters be fregen, you muft ply them fame times with meate. They belight to make their neffs infeme fes tret Couert, but therein pou muft preuent them, and make their wells in their otome longing, or abroad, well courtes and close with Micoes : to which nett you muft haue Come lettle fince; my gufter, by which you may enery day politie in water and priente. Their

III 4

Their fobe muft be (as I fait) Dtes, Barley, Beale, Panicle, Millet, and Sperie, if you bane any floze. They lap great floze of Egges, wherewith, as with Oole Egges, you may well febe pour familie. The Egges of Ducks and Ocele, are kept in like fort as I tolo pou of Dennes Egges : and belide, in Branne, Wibeate, og Albes. They breede in the lame leafon that Ocele. and other Fowle bo, about Parch & Aprill. And therefore where you have them, you must drawe dickes and drawes for them to make their nefts withall. Their Egges muft be luffered to be batched by themfelues,oz elfe remoues and fet bnber fome Den: for the Ducklings that the Denne batcheth, are thought to be gentler and tamer. Dou mult take goo bebe, that the Cages which they lay, be not eaten and fpopled by Crowes and Bres. while the Danme is fæhing abroad for meate. If fo be pon haue Rivers and Lakes for the purpole, it is belt to let the Dammes bring them by : for when they be hatched, they will line bery well boon the water with their Dams, without any charge at all : onely take got bede, that they be befended from Busards. Bites. Crowes, and other like Elermine : but fo you ble them, as they will every night come home to the houle: fog it is not good to let them be abroad in the night, for danger of loling them, and making them wilde. Det bath it bene feene, that fuch as have batched abroad, have afterwards come home, and brought with them a great number at their taples. Wahen I was Ambal. fabour in England, it was told me by men of god credite, that there was in Scotland niere to the Sea certaine tres, that piere ip brought forth a fruit, that falling into the Sea-became a kinde of wilde Ducks, or rather Barnacles, which though it femen frange to me, pet found 3 Ariftorle a witneffe of the like, lpbo waiteth, that the River Hypanus in Scythia, bringeth forth trees, whole leaves being Comewhat larger then Paple leanes, where of commeth a kinbe of foure foteb 15 yabes.

Peacocks.

But now to Peacocks, which Birds, being more for pleasure then profit, are meeter to be kept of Poble-men, then of page Basbands of the Countrey, though Varro writeth, that M. Aufidius Lurco, who first began the fatting of this Folule, made peerely of his Peacocks source hundred pounds, whose example numbers following, the price of Peacocks grew to be great, so

much

much, as their Egges were fold for halfe a crowne a piece, the Beacocks themfelues, at foure Aobles a pecce. The fleth is berp and and belicate, meete for Roble-mens Tables, and will be long kept without corrupting, the Egges allo be bery pleafant, and god to be eaten. Hortenlius they fay, was the first that ever hilled Beacocke fo; the Table in Kome, as a new bill at the Driefts feath. To this 15 yed, is afcriben both buberftanning. and glozy : for being praifed, he fets by ftraight his taile, and (as Plinic eloquently belcribes it ) chiefely against the Somme toberes by the beautie may more be feene. Dis taile falling enery pore with the fall of the leafe, he mourneth , and creepeth in corners till his taile be fpzong againe. They goe abroad, as Bennes and Chickins doe without a keeper, and get their owne linings, they be beff kept in little glands : for they flie neyther bie , nor farre off. Some thinke it to be a spitefull and enuious Bird, as the Goofe to be hamefalt, and that he benoureth his owne bung. because be would haue no man receine benefit by bim. De lineth (as Ariltotle faith) fine and twentie yeres : be bzebeth at the peres old, the Cocke having his feathers bigers coloured : be batcheth in thirtie baies, as the Oole both, and laveth thee times in a piere, if the Cages by taken alvay, and fet buber a Denne, You must loke that those that you fet biber a Deme , be new lain, and that the Denne from the first of the Done, be fet bonn nine Caces, fine of the Deacocks, and foure of ber owne. The tenth bay after Behath fit, take away the Bennes Cages, and put bober the like number of freth Bennes Chaes. They muft be turned, and therefore marked bpon one Goe. And fe that pou chafe the greatest Denne, for if the Denne be little, vou muft take the leffer number of Egges,as the Beabens Canes. and fire Denne Egges. When they be hatched . you muft as you poe with the Denne , let them alone : the firtt bay aftermaros being them out, and put them with the baume into a Ben. and febe them at the first with Barley flowe, fpzinkled with mater, or pappe made of any other Corne, and coled. A felo Dates after giue them belide this chopped Lekes and Crabs, 02 fret Cheefe, the Wilhey well wong out : toz Wilhey is thought to be bery burtfull for the Chickins. After they be a moneth old, you may let them gos in the field, and follow the Benne,

tying the Denne with a long line, that the goe not to far abroad. but that the Chickin may come home in time. After the firt moneth, you may give them Barley, and 152cab : and after the featenth moneth, you may put them to rouft in the boule with the other, not luffering them to fit byon the ground, but buon Berches for taking of cold. And although when they ware great, they chiefely belight to fit byon the toppes of boules, and be as the Dofe is, which are the belt watchmen, and also the bet warning giners in the night time : pet is it beft for you to ble them to fit boon Berches, in houses made purpolely for them. Columella thinkes it not goo to fuffer funday Dennes with their Chickins to fied together because the Donne after the feeth a big. ger then ber olone, maketh the leffe account of ber olon Chickins, and many times by that occasion forfaketh them. The Cocke, by the great luft that he bath to tread, breakes a funder the Cages that be biber the Benne, and therefore it is belt to have the Bennes to fit as fecretivas may be: they allo ble to beat and chafe their owne Chickins, till they for them creffed byon the head taking them till then to be none of their ofone. One Cocke fufficeth for fine Bennes, who by to oft treating, both many times caufe that the Egges neuercome to god. In warme coun tries they begin to tread in February, when letting by his tails round about him taking himfelfe for no finall perfon, be beginneth to woe and therefore at this time both the Cocke and the Denne are to be cherified with meates for the purpole to increase their Inft, as Beanes tofted a little by the fire, and ginen them warms every fine baies in the morning. The quarrellous and trouble fome Cockes, muft be leuered from their fellowes, for burting the weaker, and keeping others from treabing. The Bennes must be kept to, as they may lay onely in their boules, and encry bay groved for ber Egges, and hebely laken to, with foft fraw laid boder their Werches : for many times they lay as they fit buen the Berch. The difeates of this foule, and the remedies, are almost one with the bileales of the bonle Cocke and the Benne lpoken of befoze, that is, the Dippe, and ill bigiftion. Their greateft banger is when their Coames come firtt out, for then are they pained as children are in braching of teth.

Diferes.

tykna

MELLIS-

MELLISSEVS. I would faine learne the right oppring of Turkie their outlandith Biros, called Ginny-Cocks, and Eurhy-Cocks. Cockes,

CHENOBOSCVS. This knoe of Boultrie wee have not long had amongst bs : for before the perce of our Lord 1530.they were not fiene with be,not 3 beliene knowne to the old writers. Some have Supposed them to be a kinde of the Biros, called in the old time Melcagrides, because of their blein. if Coames : but thele kindes have no Coames, but onely wattels. Dthers againe reckon them for a kinde of Beacockes, bes cause they one in treading time after the same fort, spread and fet by their tailes, bragging and banting themselves : bombeit they neyther refemble thefe in all points. But because this hinde of fowle, both for their carenelle, and also the great nelle of their bodie, is at this day kept in great flockes, it thall not be much amile to fpeake of theur : for in baintineffe and gooneffe of meate, the Dennes may compare with cyther the Oole, or the Beaben, and the Cocke farre ercell them. Thecofour of their feathers, is for the molt part white, blacke, or pico white and backe, fome blew and blacke. Their feete are like buto the Beacockes, their taile (bost , but fysead , and bosne by after the Beacockes quile, forcially when they treat. The heads. and the neckes of them; are naked without feathers, conered. with a winchled famme, in manner of a Cotole, or a Boobe, lubich hanging over their billes, the biato op, or let fall at their pleafures. The Cocke bath the greater toattels bnber his thinge and on his back a tuft of baire. The colour of that wainch ted frime about his head ( which hangeth ouer his bill, and a. bout his necke, all fwelling as it were with little blathers ) be thangeth from time to time like the Camalion , total colours of the Kainebolo, fometimes white, fometimes red, fometimes blew fometimes pellow, which colours ener altering, the Biroappeareth as it were a miracle of pature. The disting and hee ping of them, is almost all one with the Beacocke, faning that this Bird can work away with coldand wet. It is a Bird wonberfally ginen to bacoing, euery Coche muft as the Beacocke. hane foure or five Dennes with him : they are more forward in breeding then the Beacocke, beginning epther the firth yeere, at the farthest at two years old ; they begunne to lay in march.

## Historian Too

march, or Coner. In bot Countries they lap great numbers of Cares, if they be continually taken from them , and fet binber Bennes, and if lo be von take them not away, they begin to fit at the first : for they be of all others most given to fitting, and fo much, that if you take away all their Egs, they will fit boom a ffone, or many times the bare Beft. Don muft therefore re fraine them of this befire either thaulting a feather through their nole (as 3 told you before) or by wetting their bellies with cola mater. Don muft fet biber their Egges as (3 taught von be fore) in the Beacocke : for they baue both one time of batching. The keeper mußt marke the one fibe of the Egges, and alwaies turne them, furinchling them now and then gently with faire was ter, and take bood the Cocke come not at them, for he will breake them as well as the Beacocke : for the Cocke of this kinde, is a fromard and mischienous Bird. The Chickens being batched binder a Benne, may be kept with the Bennes Chickens, oz elfe hery fuell alone with the Benne, growing fafter a great beals then the Beachicke. You thall feed them in like fort as you bos the Beacocke, or other Poultrie : for they will eate any thing. and belight in Graffe, Wiebes, Granell, and Sand. And becanfe they cannot away with cold, not wet, you must keepe them in Winter , in the warmet and brieft places you bane. The Dearches whereon they ble to fit, must not bee bigh, but an epott of tenne foot from the ground, neither be they able to fife any great beight, and therefoze muft be bolpen with Lathers, of fteppes. The greatest difeale that they are fubied buto, is the Dippe, and the Squecke, which muft be bolpen in like fort as the Dennes , and the Egges kept after the fame manner. In fome places they ble to make Capons of them toben they be pound, inbich are ferued as a baintie bilb to the Table, as was much bled in the house of that godly and bertuous Semproma, the Labie Hales of Kent, who was first the wife of Sir Water Mauntill, of Northamptonfhire, a luoman in whom all bertues of Gentle- and bounties in her life time flozifbed.

Lady Hales, a mirrour women.

MELLISSEVS. 3 well remember that Laby, and bane heard ber highly commended of fuch as in ber life time belt knew her,for a number of gracious and godly gifts that were in ber, as her specialt lone and belight in God, and in his fernice, ber helpes full hand and comfort to such as were page, and districted, as well in relicuing them with meats and money, as with healing diseales, and curing a number of loathsome, and almost incurable vicers, and wounds, her miles and sweets disposition, her great humilitie and carelestnesses of the bains world, and other such vertues, I would to Christ that all other Gentlewomen, that professe Christ outwardly were as well given to follow him in deed, as the was unfainedly.

CHENOBOSCVS. She was a very Phenix and Partagon of all the Gentlewomen that ever I knew, neether am I fire I hall suer see the like: but thee happily resteth with him, whom in her life time she so earnestly served. If you be not weary, I will returne to my Fowle, and thew you the best order for keeping and maintaining of Pigeons.

PYLLARIVS. Ithinke both MELLESSEVS, and PISCINARIVS would gladly heare you tell ba fomething

of this, as 3 my felfe mott willingly alfo would.

CHENOBOSCYS. Though pou PVLLARIVS are better able to fpeake hereof then 3 am , pet because of my mofeffion, 3 will not refule to take it byon mee. Wibatloeuer he be, that gives himfelfe to the trade of Bufbandap, it behooneth merially to have a care for brieding of Digeons, as well for Pigeons. the areat commontie they polo to the Bitchin, as for the profit and perely revenewe that they weld (if there be good floze of Come fields ) in the Parket. Varro waiteth, that in bis time a payze of Bigeons were fold for 1000, H.S. And that Lucius Axius, a lanight of Kome , before the ciuill warres betwirt Czfar and Pompey, fold his Digeons at tenne pound the paper:fo much was that time ginen to wantomeffe, and ginttone, yea. at this day in our time , bath beene feene given for a pape of Bigeons tenne pound flemifh. And therefore the Douebous tes are commonly built with great coft, and beautie, in the toppes of turrets and houles, from whence by narreto grated minorines they die abroad to their feeding. Digeons ( if the countrey be for them ) are fet and maintained with little colt. teeding themselves all the peere long with such meate as they Tribe abroad, ercept at fuch time as the ground is conered with bitolu, when as you must of necestitie belpe them with a little meate.

meat. There is time forts of them, one wilbe kinde, that is blought by in Doue-boules, and of colour, epther blewith, tobite, fpeckled, or banne : howbeit , the white is not goo to be kept. because they be somest bestroyed with bermine. In Italy there are of this fort, as bigge againe as ours, and are now common in Flaunders. Another fort is more familiar and tame, and fome thing more large of bobie, with rough fiete, and commonly of co long white, and fometime fpeckled and pellewith : this kinde is commonly hept in Cities and Townes , where the others cannot be kept, and is fed with meat at home, t because they are ener in banger of bermine, and ranening Birds, they are ftill kept within pozes, and alwaies feb at home. This kinde the common people call tame Digcons, or meneth Digeons, because they brabe enery moneth , lane in the bead of Wainter. Both thele losts are inonderous fruitfull, beading commonly eight times a pere ( if the kinde be god ) yea fometimes tenne, and eleuen times : foz in Cappt (as Ariftotle telleth) they baens all the Minter long. And though Demnes are moze fruitfull in laying of Egges, pet Bigeons are more profitable by often bringing forth young : and therefore you must prouive you fuch breders, tobole bodies be great and faire , not to old , nor to young, of a god and perfed colour, and a fruitfull kinde. It be boueth him that will begin a Doue-houle, not to begin with the poung and little ones, but with the brevers, and to buy fo may my Cockes, as he both Dennes, and to keeps them if he care matched together of one Belt: for if they be fo matched , they will brebe a great deale better. They bring forth commonly a Cocke and a Denne together (as Ariftotle writeth) and our en pericuce thewethit. In March they begin to briebe, if the wear ther be warme, before. There is no Birb fruitfuller then the Digeon, and in fortie baies the conceineth, layeth , and fitteth, and brings by, and that for the most part all the pere, ercept (as 3 haue laid befoge ) in Winter. She layeth tivo Egges, and Suben hee bath layed the first, which is a Cocke, the next the layeth, which is a Denne, the third never lightly commeth to god. Both the kindes Doe alwaies fit, the Cocke in the bay, the Denne in the night, they batch in tiventie baies, they lay after fine treadings. In Summer they Cometimes being forth in the moneths

î

moneths there paire : For boon the nineteenth day they batch. and prefently conceins agains. And therefore you that often finde among the pong Digeons, Cages fome readle to hatch and fome Aping : if there be no Cockes, the Bennes will tread one another, but the Egges never come to goo, but are winde Egges : Ariftotle and Theodorus calleth them water Egges, whereof there never commeth any thing, and because the young ones will breede at five moneths old, we fuffer the first flight to flie, to increale the bzede : as being batched in March, will bicebe againe in July or August. Those that we meane to take for the hitchin, or the Warket, are beft to be bratone at the lat ter time of the pere, when they are work able to befend thems felues from the colo, and from Bussards, and Crowcs : the beft for brood among all Fotoles, is the March brode. They that meane to fat Digeons to fell them the bearer , boe feuer them loten they be nelvly feathered, and feede them with chawed white 13 jead twile a day in Winter, and theile in Summer: and fuch as be now hard pend, they leave in the Reft, plucking the feathers of their wings, and breaking their legs, that they temone not from their places, gining the bammes good plenty of meate, that they may better febe themselues, and their young. Some (as Gellius writeth ) boe foftly the their legs, forif they fould breake them, they thinke the paine would keepe them from fat ting : but this tring both little good, for while they Aruggle to ret themselves loose, the labour will keepe them from being fat : but their leas being broken, the paine willnot remaine as boue two baies, or three at the bttermoft, and will keepe them that they fall never frap from their places. Some ble onely to pinion them, but fo fal they many times out, and become a prey to Mermine : and therefore it is good to bring them to the Bitchin, before they be full ripe. The buftnitfull and naughtie coloured, and the otherwife faultie, ought chiefely to be fatted, and mult be trammed in fuch fort , as you cramme Capons. Done-boules, or places for Digeons, to builde in, are made after biners manners : for the tame Digeons, and fuch as are fed at bome. thep make in the highest parts of their Boules lying toward the Bouth , certaine bollow Koomes, and Celles for them, fuch as P.V.L. ARIVS hath described of his Builein : and if

the place boe not to ferne, brining in certains Dinnes into the wall, they lay boon them frames of boots, with partitions in them, or earthen pots to breed in, letting certaine Ledges runne from bole to bole, that they may the better come to their Bells. and malke by and powne in the Sunne. But the boules for the other wilber kinbe, becanle they containe great numbers, are built after a moze banfomer ozber, although binber the Ques of boules and in freples of Churches , von thall have thoulands breding. Varro appoints the Douehouse to be built in this fort: a Towale abjorning to the house, and well lofted and feelen abone with one little baze in it, and foure windowes, and wering the foure quarters of the Beanen, which windowes must be well grated, fo as they may give light enough, and keepe out bermine. All the walles within must be faire white limed, for with this co lour is the Bigcon wonderfully belighted : befiees it muft be well pargetted and plaiftred without, specially about the win boives, fo as neither Soule, Walell, no; other Hermine map en ter : the windowes muft be fo placed, as they may let in the Summe all the Wainter, baning a bole of fufficient ividenelle of ner against them, well netted and tunnelled, in fuch fort as the Digeons may eafily file out and in at, and vet not fuffer any hate full Bird to enter : for the Bigeon taketh great belight in flying noin and then abroad, where after the bath recreated her felfe, the commeth with top to ber neft againe : as on the other five the mourneth, if the be reftraines of ber liberty. Kound about the wals within you must have little round bales from the top to the bot tome wherein they may breed: Varro would have them three hand fulsin length, and ledged from bole to bole for them to walks boon Dome thinks it beft to make pour holes of Lome, 02 Lims and not of Bricke and Stone as may bo because of the marmth. There be fome that builde their Douehoufes byon pillers in the miatt of fome Bond, azgreat water, both because they belight in water and because they wil have them lafe from bermine. The mest that they moft belight in, is Mares, wiibe fetch. Beale, Willet : where thele benot, you map gine them Spery, fuerially in Winter Kapelen, and Cockle : for by gathering and pecking by thefe little foos, they get themfelnes a beat in cold weather. When you give them meat, you must throw it hard by the

the malles : for that part is commonly cleanest from bung. And though Varro bies pon to Cheepe and make cleane pour Dones houses continually, a that the bung is god and profitable for the firlb vet feeing this kinds of fowle both delight in places fezinke led with their owne cung, you hall not nece to be carefull in clenting of it. Lone well that they be not fraid, or disquietes with Cannes, og notie of people, og other like, fpccially when they fit: if you have occasion to goe into the house, fe that you boe it a bont none time, tohen they be abroad a feeting, and be fure to knocke wel befoze pou come in. Some lay, that it will caufe them to love the house, and allure others to come thither, if you so inhie them with Commin belege they goe to feebing, oz perfaine the boule with Sage, and Frankenfence. Some haue another erne. rience for this purpole, and that is Bottheros beaten fmall and fearced, mingled with the hearbe Coaft, and good old Wine, and ginen bito them. Dthers take Barly flologe , fooden with baie Figs. and a part of Bonp. Cardan teacheth this, as the beff far this purpole, of Barly of Millet, of Commin, of Coaft, of Agnus Callus, of Bony, of old Lome, or Moster, of god Bulsadel, boilethem all together, and make a ftone of them to be fet in the miobell of a house. Tragus teacheth to take the rotes of the Thiftell, and to bothe them with the pickle of Bearings. Conftantine out of Didymus, writeth of biners other things for this purpole which who fo will, may trie. Loke well that they be not beftroped by the Bawke, or Bussard : the Baluke is a speciall enemie to this Bird, whole taking, Varro teacheth you in this manner : to lay a Bigeon spon the ground, and to flicke, bending closely oner her. a couple of Lime roos. There is a kinde of Bawke , that natur rally is terrible to other Bawkes, and preferneth the Digeon! the common people call it Caftrell. Columella affirmeth, that if bou take the poung Caftrels, and preferue them every one in carthen beffels well courred and plattered all over , and bang them for the corners of the Doue-houfe,it makes the Digeon haur fuch a lone to the houfe, as they will neuer forfake it. They have many other aduerfaries, Crowes, Baives, and Dies, which all beffrop the Bigeons, specially when they breed. 3 found of late firmine owne Done boule,on Dwie fitting folenmip in the Beft boan her Cares in the middeft of all the Digrons, and bard by the:

io by

.

g

the bonse of an old bollow tries, I found pieces of young Piger ons, that the Divies had brought to fieve their young with: and though the Divie same to be greater then the Pigeon, by reason of the thicknesse of her feathers, pet will they criepe in at as little a place as the Pigeon will: so small and little is their bodies, though they be bombased with Feathers. Againe, Meelels, Stotes, such like, Palladius would have you hedge the Done-house about with Charpe prickly branches bond of leaves, as Gorse, Bryers, and such like, as they dare not passe through so, pricking. Dydious and others, so bid you hang great branches of Kne all about the house, specially at the entrance of the dare, or to put wide Kne boder their wings, or to sprinckle them with Kne: so, this hearbe (as they say) hath a special sorce against such hutful bermine. Some say, that if a Wolfes head be hanged in the Done-house, it will brine away all hurtfull bermine.

MELLISSEVS. Enebaue heard enough of Pigeous, 3 pear you proced with fuch other Birds as you kepe in the coun-

trep. Bepe you any felants berce

Felants.

CHENOBOSCVS. This kinde of Bitths (though they be berie felbame kept among the countrey people ) vet of many curious and fine fellowes , for their rarenelle and baintie neffe, they are brought by and kept. And because they benefit the heeper, and profit the Bulband, ( if the lople and countrey be for them) the old writers have placed the keeping of them, within the compatte of bufbandie. Palladius teacheth, that you muft provide fuch as be poung and luftie, that were of the last pieres bringing forth: for the old ones be neuer fruitfull. Dne Cocke is lufficient for two Dennes : they breede once a pere, and lay to the number of twentie Egges, beginning in Appill, and fomes tobere in March, but they are better to be brought by binder a Denne : lo as pou let buber one Benne fiftene @gges, obfers ming the time of the Some, and the number of the Dates, as 3 told you before of the Benne. The thirtieth day they come forth : for the first fifteene baics you must feed them with Barly. Houre tenderly foo , and coled , byon which you must fpzinckle a little Mine. After von Chall gine them Wheate, Crafhop. pers and Antes Egges : let them not come nere the Water far catching the Dippe, which if they chance to have, you thall rubbe

rubbe their billes with Barlicke, Hamped together with Marre. They are fatted in thirtie paves with Wheat-floure, oz Barty. floure made in Bellets , the Bellets muft bee fuginchied a little with ople, and fo put into their throates ; you must take bece you put it not biber their tongues, for you soe, you kill them : neither must you give them any meate till you perceive the first be bigefteb.

PVLLARIVS. What fap pon to Burtle Dones, thefe

are also brought by and kept in some Countries.

CHENEBOS. Columella affirmeth, that Turtles will nes Turtles. mer lav, not being forth in the house, not Partridges:and there, fore they bled to take them wilde when they were ful rive, and to feede and fat them in little barke romes like Digeons holes: the ploe ones be not fo good, as neither the Wigeon is. In Winter von thall hardly have them fat in Bommer they will fat of themfelues, fo they may have plenty of Wheat and Come: the was ter muft be bery cleare and freih that you give them. They hold opinion, that the Turtle after be bath loft his mate, continueth euer after folitary. But because there is greater fore of Thanthes and Blackbirds, we care the leffe for keping of Wurtles. Though Ebruthes and Blackebirds bee kept in Diners places : Throftes vet as Plinic faith, there is in no place greater companie, then is and Black taken in the Winter time in Bermany : that they were bled for birds. great Danities, appeares bu llorace:

No daintice dish then is the throfts:

Nor sweeter then the Trype.

They are commonly oreffed tobole, and not bratune, for their in: ward partes map well be eaten , fo they be new : their Crops are commonly full of Juniper Berrics: Waffer Varro writeth that Thusbes were were in his time at timelue vence a verei Wahere they ble to hope them , they also put as many as they take wilde among the others that they brought op before, by whose company and fellowship they passe away the forrow of their priforment, and fall to their feeding: for pou mult ale mayes have olde fellowes for the purpole, by whole example thep may learne both to eate & brinke. They must have warme houses, as your Bigeons baue, croffed throngh with fmall Bearches for after thephane flowen about, or hane fed, they befire to reffe

Thes-

The Berches muft be no bigher then a mans height, fo as pou map eafily reach them fanbing byon your feete. The meate muft be caft in fuch places of the boule, as lee not bober the Bear. thes, for filing of it. Columella and Palladius maite, that buripe figges beaten and mingled with Wheate-flowze muft be given them . that they may eate thereof their filles. Aristorle maketh many kindes of them, among which hee ale fo putteth the Colmons , that feebe boon Crapes. Dur Thruthes Doe feede for the most part byon Juniper berries, which their Croppes being opened (as 3 faid) doe thew. They ble allo in many places to keepe Quailes , which is rather a Quailes. Bird of the Carth , then of the Apze ( as Plinic faith ) but bre caufe they feede byon @leboz, and benemous feedes, and befide are bered with the falling fickneffe, many boe meruaile ( as Athen zus writeth ) why they be fo greatly chemed. They fay their young muft be febbe with Antes , and Emets Egges, as the Partrioge. It is thought, that he flieth ouer into other Countries in the Winter time, as the Crane, and the Stocke both, following for the guibe their olbeft Quaile, called the mother Quaile.

fowle, that is bled to be brought by in the hulbandmans Bonds,

Lakes, and Miners, 3 means the Swanne.

The Swanne.

CHENOBOSCVS. You layarue: for this Bird is commonly brought by in the Low-Countries, and kept in great numbers in Lincolne-thire, a Countrey replenished with Gentlemen of good houses, and good house-kepers. And Arhenaud alledging the authoritie of Aristocle, accounteth this Fowls to be very fruitfull, and of great stomacke, so much, as it is thought they dare give battaile to the Cagle. They are bred and kept (as you well say) in Lakes, Kivers, and Fish-ponds, without any charge at all, and doe great good in the Kivers by plucking by the weeds, and other annoyances: for the excellency of his downe, and dointinesse of his stell, he is greatly cheeved. There is one excellent kinds of them, that taketh his name of the good watch that hes keepeth, and is alwates the rished and kept in the Bitch of Cities, and sortesses, so his great satisfulnesse in guing warning. They be kept almost in

like mammer as Ciefe are, but that they ble to fit longer, fitting a whole moneth or there abouts : they bring forth felbome abone eight, and fo many bib my Swannes bring me, and fometime fine. They make their Rells barn by the mater, of bebees, Micos, and like ftuffe : their young ones they carry fraight into the rivers. If the Lakes and Streames be frozen in Winter, you mult boule them. This Bird is counted among fuch as live longest fore-thewing her owne beath, as Plato and Martial witnelle, with a fweet and lamentable fong. Thus much concerning my profession & have tolo, & trust pou that be my friends, will take it in god part, and now Piscinarivs A religne my

place to vou to whole turne it is come.

PISCINARIVS. It falleth out in good ozber, that from Of Fifttalking of Winter Fowles we thould come to entreat of fifth ponds. ponds, and fift : although I boemeane to entreat largelier both of keeping and taking of Filhes in my Halienticks, but because the bulbands boule, both for watering of cattell, and other bles. cannot be without Bonds, and Lakes, and that every boule is not fo leated as it bath earable ground about it, it is lawful for the bulband to make his belt abuantage of his Bonds, and Waters. The Roble-men and Centle-men of Rome . were wont to build about their Boules faire Fift ponds , and many times fatiffied herein their pleafure, with erceding coff and erpences as M. Varro writeth of the fumptuous and coffin fill ponds of Horrenfins, Hircius, and Lucullus, M. Caro, inhen he had the warblip of Lucullus, made foure bundged pound of the fifthin his Bond. The fame Varro maketh mention of time forts of Filb-ponds, the one of Cheete water, the other of falt, the one amongt the common people, where the Springs febe them. and of great mofit, the other nere to the Sea, where Neptune both well them both froze of Water and filb : for examples. may ferue the fill-ponds of Horrenfius , which rather pleafed the eye, then the Burle. The belt making of Bonds , is ep. (4.7) ther by the Dea, as Lucullus, who to let in the Dea into his ed in Bonds, made a passage through the middelt of a great bill, where form walk by be thought himfelle as great a Lord of fifth, as Neptune him to he felfe : og elfe to hane them from fome great freame og Miner, // that may bebeg in hoth Water and filh, lubich by floud og Sinle.

Questo

Siule, may let in alwaies freib mater, not fuffering the old to corrupt, but alway refreshing it, and bringing more Fish. The nert in gwonese, are these that are led with pipes or secret pasfages broer the ground; and may be let out againe by blufes, which Solutes muft to be made, as when you lift, you may let the water into pour Meabowes, to make them moze fruitfull, as is to be fiene in the Countries of the Switzers, and Heluctians, and in many other places: And therefore the waters ( as I fait ) muft be well inclosed with god Baves, Bankes , and Walles, that they may be able to abide the rage of the floos, and the water. The worft and laft kinde, is fuch as are made in Lakes, franding Boles, or raine waters. Thele kinde of Bonds, though they be the weaft, by reason of their bucleane tinking and corrupt water, pet where there is no better, are to be made account of : for though they be not the wholefomett for keeping of filb, pet they peeld some commoditie, and are molt necellary about the boule, eyther for watering of Cattell , kee ping of Giele and Duckes, and walking, and other like bles: but'ff to be you can make them eyther by the Sead niere fome great Miner, fo as the water may be let in and out at your pleas fitre : and whenfoeuer you oven the Slufes, to let out the toas ter. Be fure that pon bane them well grated, that the fifth can by no meanes paffe through, and let the paffage, if the place will fuffer it, be mabe on enery fibe of the Bond : for the old water will belt boid, whenfoener the ftreame bends, if the currant lee a gainft it. Thefe Dlufes or Ballages, pou muft make at the bot tome of the Ponds, if the place will fo ferue, that laying your levell with the bottome of the Bond, you may bifcerne the Sea. or Winer, to lye feanen fore higher : for this Columella thinkes will be a fufficient levell for pour Bond, and water enough for pour fift. Bowbeit, there is no boubt , the tieper the water comes from the bea, the cooler it is, wherein the fiftes mott: belight. And if fo be the place where you meane to make pour Bond lee levell with the bain of the Bea, or the Miner, you must Digge it nine fote bope, and lay pour Currant within two fote of the toppe, and to order it as the water come in abundantly : for the old water lying under the levell of the bea, will not out againe, except a greater rage come in ; but for the Bond that is lubtect

since the

Subject to the floud and chbe, it is enough if it be but time forte nieve. In the bankes and fibes of thefe Bonds, you muft bane Bulbes and Crake-holes for the fill to bide them in from the heat of the Sounce : belides, all bollow tres, and rotes of tres are pleafant and belightfull barbours for fith. And if you can handlomely conney them, it is belt to bring from the Destittle Rockes, with the Wicos and all bpon them, and to place them in the middeft of your Bonds, and to make a young bea of them, that the fift map learlely know of their impallonment. About Turwan in France, and in other places, you fhall finde in Loughes and Kayne-water, even in the Wilbernelle and Beathes, great abundance of filb. In diners places of the low Countries, Inhere they have their Bonds fed with the Miner, which they may thut out at their pleasure, they so order them, as they be eyther ennironed, or beuided with deeper ditches, wherein the fifth both line in the Summer time: and the reft of the ground betwirt the bitches, the water being boided and kept out by Slufes and Bankes, is folwed with Summer Come, and after Barueft, the water let in againe, whereby the ground be. ing wonderoully enriched , both weld great Croppes of Barly and Summer come, and (as the Boet laith) for the land, le may be fait for the water, Not every ground for every feed, but regard muft be had, what for enery one is met. The Romanes heepe in their Bonds Lampzies, Dyffers, Luces, Bullets, Lamporns, Ouvitheodes, and all other filh belides, that are bled to be kept in freih waters. Bonds for Dykers , were firft benifed by Sergius Orata, at the Baynes, about the time of L. Craffus the De rator, before the Battaile of Marlie, not fo much for pelicalie, as for the commoditie and gaine. Cockles, and Bufles , were kept in Bonds by Fuluius Hirpenus. Pozeoner , biners filbes belight in biners places. The best Wikes and Luces were thought to be in the Miner of Tyber, betwirt the two buildes : the Eurhotes, at Rauenna : the Lampapes in Cycill : fo Miners, Lakes, Pooles, and Deas, in fome places bane better fth,then in others. But to returne to my filh-ponds from whence I came, neyther may all foots of Filhes be kept in enery one, for Come forts are granellers, belighting onely in Granelly, btotty, and Sandy waters, as Meanowes , Gubgins, Bulheabs, Muffes.

Muffes, Trouts, Perches, Lampions, Creniffes, Barbils, and Cheuins. Dthers belight againe in Bubble places, feiting enet to lie bio in the Bub , as the Tench , the Cele, the Bzeame, the Carpe, and fuch others. Some againe belight in both as the Bike, the Luce, the Carpe, the Breams, the 15leake, and the Roach. The Granelly fifbes, fperfally the Dennives, are in gendzed of Sheepes bung, laid in fmall Balkets in the bottome of a Granelly Kiner. The Luce, or Bike, groweth ( as like wife both the Carpe ) to be great in a floot time , as in thee as foure veres, and therefore in fuch Bonds as have neither the Sea, not Kiner comming to them, we ble enery fourth, or third Dutravia pere, to brain the old , and to ffore them with young. And in thele parts we chiefely toge them with Carpe, baning small Ponds and Stewes for the purpole to keepe them in , loas pon may come by them at your pleasure. Thus much I thought goo to occlare buto you touching my profession, let be now for tohat POH (MELLISSEVS) can lay for pour Bas, and pour Dany.

Bees.

an untire

MELLISSEVS. Becaule 3 will not have our difcourte of bulbander deprined and marmed of fuch a profitable member. whose ble map in all places , be they never so befert, or barren, be had, I thinke it good as a conclusion to the whole, to their you for my part, the manner of keping and orbering of Bes! for the good bulband by cherifbing of them, picketh out many times a good pecce of his lining, yea, the pore foule of the Countrey that bath no ground to occupie, may raile bereof, and that without charges a great commonitie. Merula reports, that Varro had verely for the Kent of his Bes, a thouland gallons of Bony : and that in a boule in Spaine, having not paffing one Acre of ground to it, bath perely bene made of the Bes , foure froze pounds worth of Ware and Bonp. This little pare creafure the Ba, both not onely with her labour peld buto be her belicate and most healthy Bony, but also with the god ep ample of their painefull biligence and tranaile, encourageth man to labour and take paines according to his calling: in fuch fort, as it femeth the Almightie and molt excellent Balette, bath of all other frecially created this little poore creature, for the benefit and commoditie of man : by lobour befibes the com-

Industrie of Bees.

mobitie

mobile of the Boney and Ware that they make, we might take both erample to fpend our life in bertuons and commendable er ercifes, and alfo to bonour and reverence the monderfull bountie and godneffe of the moft gracious Lozo thelved towards bs. in the creation of this (mail and profitable Morme, Depareton Bee finually buffed in labouring, they theto great cuming and works, manihip in their transiles : they have alwairs amongt them the lively Image of a perfect Common-wealth, they perio obedience Bees their to their Daince, not liking the government of funday beads, but Commonlaue to be ruled by one : each one of them laboureth and tranap, weales. leth in his charge, in fo much, as the wifeft Couernours ail Councellers in Common weales, baue taken the Bies for their Batterne in choling of Brinces, billributing of Dffices, cemare hing of bertucs , and punifying malefactors. Varro bib alinaics call them the Biros of the Spules : and Virgill with wonderfull The Birds colours both eloquently fet forth the Bes, their Common meale, of the Balaces, Buildings, Cities, Lawes, Banners, Warres, and Mufes. Tranailes, Suppoling them to be partakers of reason, at that they have fome infline from aboue, in that they fo nexe refemble the mindes of men, yea, many times excell them, touching their phebience to their Baince.

Virgill,

Not Ægypt in his prime, nor Lydia large and wide,
Ne yet the Parthian people great, nor all the Medes belide,
Doe so their King obay, who being safe and well,
Their mindes are all together one, he onely beares the bell.
On him they cast their eyes, and garde him day and night,
And oft they beare him on their backs, in his defence they sight:
But if he chance to dye, then all is dasht and done:
Their Combs asunder downe they teare, and all to ruine runne.

If the King be taken, the whole Swarme is had: if he begone, they disperse themselves abroad, so, they cannot line without a King, hating as well the headlesse government, as the indication to many heads. If the King, or (as we tearme him) the Paister Die die, the whole swarme droupeth, and mouraeth, they straight bases ceale from gathering of Durey, they sitre not abroad, but analy with a heavy and serrowfull humaning, they swarme and cluster.

clufter together about his babis. The nature Grely of this page

Virgil

They onely of their broade have a common care, And neighbour-like their boules nearely fland: And ruled are by Lawes that none do spare, Alone they know their home and native land, And mindfull of the stormy Winter neere, In Summer get to live by all the yeere.

Their Princes pallace is sumptuoutly built, in some severall part of their Princes, being mounted about the rest, which if you happen to brook, you destroy the brook. They like all as it were in a Camps, and duely keeps their watch and ward, working to gether, and oftentimes sending abroad their Colonies, they are warned at their Captaines appointment, as it were with the sound of a Crumpet, by which they know both their times of warres, and truce: they ward all the day time at their gates in warlike manner, and have great silence in the night, till one of them in the morning humming out the discharge of the watch: they get them abroad to their businesse, as the Bost hath elequently expressed.

Virgil,

Together all they quietly doelie.
Together all they toyle with equal might:
And in the morning forth together flic.
And home as fast they come againe at night.
Where as they lay their weary lims to rest,
And trim their wings, and set their legs in frame:
Till every one himselfe bath throughly drest,
Then singing at their doctes a while they game.
Till one gives warning for to go so bed,
Then downe they lay to test their sleepie head.

Far tohen the Chepie time of the night cames in they make lefts and lefts note, till one of them goeth about with the like found that he gave in the manning, letting as it were the hearth, with growing them warning to go to reft: at which time they all the

benly hold their peace. In the meaning (as I laid) at the offcharge of the watch, they reame fireight to the gates, but five not absent, except they to the weather will be faire: whereof by nature they have perfect onbertlanding.

Nor from the thines, if like it be to raine,
They farre doe stray, nor trust will they the skie.
If that the South-wind blow, but still remaine
At home, or busied be with waters nie.
Short flights they make, and when such stormes they see,
They beare about the smallest stones they finde:
And as the Boates in sloods that balast bee,
So with the same they counterpose the winde.

Bees forefhewing of flormes.

Being loved they flie with the witte : if any tempest subbenly artie, they counterpoile themfelnes with little Rones, flying in the winde as neare the ground as may be : their labour, both at home, and abroad is certainly appointed. They labour at the first within the compatte of the close paces about the Dine and when the flowers there have bears lufficiently wrought , they fend as broad their diffeuerers to finde out more food. And toben they fall all together to their bufinede, fome worke the flotiers with their fiste, others carry water with their monthes, and proppes in their little ficeles : the poung luftie fellowes labour abroan. the elber at home. Those that goe abroad, do with their forelegs labe all their Thighes, which nature for the nonce bath made rough : thus being loanes, Logs, Deab, Backe, and all, as much as they may beare, they returne home, where there waiteth come monly thee or foure at the boge to boload them. Within-all this while are fome laying in ozber , fome builbing , fome making cleane, and fome making readle their meate : for they fiebe fenerally, for feare of begulling one the other. They frame their hanfes archivife within the Dines, with two pallages, fo as they may enter one way, and goe out another. Their coanies that they make are to ought full of holes, which holes (as varro faith) metheir Celles oz lodgings, made enery one fire quare, accore a to the number of their feet: thele Celles they dos fill with ery, filling enery one in a Day a) the. Thefe coames are faffnenfassined to the opper part of the Hive, and hang little boon the stock, not cleaning to the Hive, being now concred, now round, according to the salition of the Hive; as both Plinic reporteth, and I shall becease their you, when I speake of the framing of the Combs. The Combs are kept up from falling, with small pillers and proppes below, so built as they may go round about to repaire them. The three first losts of their Celles beneath, are left emptic so; seare of the Hive; the uppermost are as full as may be, such as are loyterers and tole vagabonds amongst men, are noted, and punished with death.

Thepunishment of loiterers.

> Some range for food and plie the fields abroad, Some still at home doe labour buily: And round about with waxe the Hines doe loade. Which from the gummes they painefully doe trie. The first foundations for the Combes they make. And clammy cleaning Waxe they falten by : While others of their broode the charge doth take. And follers up the feede that shall supply. An other fore doth worke the Hony pure, And files the Celles with licour that you fee: And others are appropried to the doore, To looke abroad what weather is like to be. Or to voload fuch as have laboured well. Or els to drive the droulie Drone away : Their labour smokes, and all of time doth smell, The Hopy (weet that in their Combs they lay.

And a little after.

The great doe guide the Hiue, Make faft the Combes and Pallaces contriue,

CHENO. Of the worthineste, trauaile, workemanship, and god order of this little creature, you have sufficiently spoken, it now remaines that you beclare but o by their sundry hindes, their keeping, and their ordering.

1 /20.6. MELLISSEVS. Arifordemaketh many forts and bindes

of them, lobereof be countery the short speckled, and well hatt to The kinds the best: and nert to them, the long ones like Wafpes: the third, of Bees. the kinne that you call the Thete, with a bery large boois : the The fourth, the Djone, being bigger then all the reft, wanting both Theefe. his tring and courage to labour : and therefore they ble to make The at the entrie of their Dines fmall Grates, wherein the Bamay enter, but not the Dzone. And the fame Ariftotle,in the chapter before faith, that there are two kindes of Bings or Baiffer Bes, the one of a golben colour, which is counted the beft : the other blacke, and more partie colouted: they be tinife as bigge as the other Bes, the taples of them as long as one and a balfe of the other, they are called of fome, the Mother of Bers, as the chiefe Breeders. breepers, because the roung of the Drones are breede without a Bing, but the other Bes neuer. Virgill following berein Ariftotle, both most commend the little, long, fmothe, and faire Be, The best and making mention of two forts of Bings, he deferibes the wer, forts of fer, whereby be thall doe no barme.

Deftroy (faith he) and let the other live. Whole golden hew doth glifter in the eye: And decked with glittering scales, faire show doth give, Of farre more grace, and farre more Maiestie. With loathfome looke the other doth appeare, And dragling drawes his tayle with heavie cheare.

The shape of their King.

And as there is two forts of Bings, to is there of the other Bes.

Some Vglie feeme, and some againe doe shine, Bedasht with drop of golden colour fine.

Being milde and gentle : for the Be, the greater he is, the work he is, and if he be anorie, and fierce, and round, he is wort of all. And because (as 3 fatt befoze) the beft are onely to be medleb with fith the god and the bad are a like chargeable, and require the tendance, and speciall bede to be had that you mingle not the toth the god : for lefte will the encrease of your honey be, forms of your Swarms be ill matched. You may froze pour felfe Bas thie manner of water eyther by buying them, taking

# The fourth Booke,

What to be confidered in buying of Bees.

the wilde b warmes, or making them by Arte. Such as you buy. let them beof the kinde and fhape that I told you of, and be fore before you buy them, that the Swarmes be tobole and great. which you may tudge by loking into the Wive, or if you cannot be luffered fo to boe, you may queffe it by other tokens : as if fo be you for great numbers cluftring at the boge of the Diue and if you beare a great bussing and bunming within: og (if they be all at reft) putting your lippes to the mouth of the Dive, and blows tig therein, you thail eafily perceive by their answering found, Subether their number be great or no. In buying them, belide, you must loke whether they be found, or ficke: the fignes of their being in health (as thall be thetreo tohen 3 fpeake of their difea. fes) is, if their Swarmes be great, themfelnes faire, and well coloured, and worke luftily. Againe, a token of their not being well : as if they be haveie, loke loathfomely, and buffilie, except at fuch time as they labour : for then they ware leane and ruffe. with ertreame travell. Dou muft make your conicaure likewife by their age, fuch as are not about a yere oibe, loke faire and fmothe, and thine, as if they were Dpled : the old ones are both in light and feeling, ruffe and rugged, and by reason of age, wainche led: which nevertheleffe, for cunning in making their Combs. erperience, induftrie, and Chilfulnellein the weather, Doe farre page the others. In any wife lie that you buy them rather from pour nert neighbour, then from a ftrange Countrep, og farre off. for they many times perith by change of agre, or haking in the carriage. And if you be brinen to carry them farre, take hebe you nepther togge, nor tumble them : the beft wap to carry them is boon a mans foulders, and that in the night time, luffering them to reft in the day, and powing in to them fuch fluct things as they belight in, and keeping them tlofe. It is better remouing them in the Buzing, then in Minter : for they boe not fo well as gre with Winter. If you carriethem from a gob place, to a barraine, they will fraight-wayes bid you farewell, and forfake their Diucs. Waben pou baue brought them to the place where pon means they hall famb, if it be bay time, you muft neither or pen them, not place them till (the night, to the end they may als ter the quiet reft of the night, goe cherefully to their mozke the nert morning. We fure to marke them well befides for two of

Transpor-

ting of

Becs.

The taking of Book,

their bayes after, whether they goe all out or no : for if they bor, it is a thickobe frame they will away. Sometime, if the place be gob, you thall affay to ftoze pour felle with wilde Bes : faz al. though that Bies (as Plinic faith ) cannot be rightly tearmed of ther wilde, or tame, vet Varro calleth them wilde that bredein wilde places, and tame, fuch as we keeps at home : and affire meth the manner of keeping them to be biners. There is great Roze of the Wilbe fort in Sarmatia.

PVLLARIVS. They fap, that in Liuonia and Sarmatia, (from whence is brought bither great fore of Ware and Dony) the Countrey people boe gather it in great abundance in hollow

tres, and befart places.

MELLISSEVS. The greatest token of Bes and Boney nere, is where they be in great numbers about the waters: for if you fethe number but fmall, it is a figue it is no god place for Bas, and if fo be you fee they come in great numbers, you may fone learne where the frocks be : in this fast, as Columcila and others have taught: You hall carry with you in a Saucer, og luch To finde like thing, fome redde colour, or painting, and flanding neere to out the furings, or waters there abouts, as faft as they come, touch them buon the backes while they are a brinking, with fome little Braw bipped in the colour : and tarry you there till fuch time as pour fe them retarne. If the Bas that you marked doe quicklie returne, it is a token their boules be not farre off, ifit be longers they come, it thewes they owell farther off: inherefoze you may indge by the time. If they be nere, you fall cafily finde them. if they be farre off, you thall come to finde them in this fort; Take a vece of a Kebe, or a ther, with his knots and fornts, and making a fmall bole in the five, potoze into it evther Doney, as fome limete thing, and lay it by the water : and when you for the Bes bane found it, and entreb the bole for the lanour of the Bo nev. Hoppe you the bole with your thumbe, and let but one goe out at once, tobole course pon thall follow, as farre as pou can fee him, and this thall bring you part of the way ! when you can no longer fee him, let out another, and follow him, and fo another, one after another, till pou come to the place. Others ble to let fome little vellels with bony by the water: which when fome one Be or other bath hapned to tatte, the gineth fraight knowledge ta

## The fourth Booke, to her fellowes, whereby by their flying in number, they come to

finde out their dwellings. If you finde the Swarme to be in fome fuch hole, as you cannot come at them, you thall brine them out with fmoke, and when they be out, bring them bowne with the ringing of a lattin Balon, fo as they may fettle byon fome tree. from inhence you shall shake them into your Dine. If the Cwarme be in fome hole above in the branches, you may falue off the branch bandfomely, and conering it with a white cloth, place it amonaft your Dines. If they be in the body of the tree, then may you loftly fame off the tre aboue the Bes, and afterward, close Unberneath them; and being courred as before, carry them home. Stopping well the chinks and riftes, if there be any. We that fee keth the Bos, muft begin in the morning, that he may have the whole day before him to marke their labsuring. Thus farre of the kindes of Bas, and getting of them : now will 3 them you of the placing of them, ordering, and keeping of them. The place for pour Bes and your Dives muft be fo chofen, as they may frand quietly and fecret, francing (pecially in fact place, as they may have the Sunne in Winter, and in the Spring time al may at the riling, and fuch as is neyther to bot, not to cold : for the ercelle of cyther both burt them, but rather temperate, that both in Summer and Winter, they may have moderate warmth, and wholefome arze, being farre remoued from the company of ep. ther man, or beaff.

Standing for Becs.

> Where neither winde may come, whose blasts forbids Them bringing home their loade, nor sheepe, nor wanton Kids. To spring among the flowres, nor warding best, Shake off the dew, and trampling spoyle the reft,

mine an-Becs.

What Ver- For they most of all belight in quietnelle : bemare beffe, that there be no hurtfull creatures neere them; as the Tobe, that with noyeth the his breath both both porfon the 15 e, and allo oraweth them to him, the Waspecker, the Swallow, the Sparcow, the Stocke, Spidars, Boznets, Butter-fipes, Serpents, and Bothes.

> Drive from thy Hiver the hurtfull Lylart greene, Keepe Throftles Hennes, and other Birds vntrew :

And Progne, on whose breff as yet is seene The bloodie marke of hands that Itys flew. All thefe destroy thy Bees, and to their nests doe beare

Such as they take in flight, to make their young ones cheare. Of fuch things as burt your Bies, I will bereafter fpeake moze, The valley where I hall thew you of their difeates and barmes in the meane the Bee. time I will goe forward with the placing of them. The place thenthe where they Gould Cand, would rather be in the balley, then be hill. rie high : but fo as the rebound of no Ecco, boe burt them, which Cound is berie noyleme bute them : lo fall they fle with moze sale and (pede to the higher places, and come laben botons a gaine with leffe trauails. If the feate of the house will fo fuffer, it is good to have your Bes fand nere your boufe, and to be enclosed with a henge, or a wale : but on fuch fine as they be not annoved with the fent of finke, printe, or bunghill. The beft fans bing, is within the fight of the mafter, by whole prefence they are lafeft kept. For their better lafetie (if von feare them)bou map let them a pard or more from the ground, enclosing them with little grates left open against enery Dine, 02 fo lettifeb with ftone, as the Be may eafily come out and in, and escape both Birds and Water: or if you lift, you may make a little boufe by for the Beper , wherein you may lay your Bines for your Swarmes , and other necellaries mete for pour Bes, letting nere to the Dines fome Chavolving Trees for them to Cwarme bpon, according to the Doets abuile.

And plant the Date tree neere, or pleasant Olive tree, That with their floury branches sweet, thy hines may shadowed That when the Captaines young, lead out their luftie fwarmes, The pleasant shade may them allure, to shun the greater harmes. Not needing for their case, in places farre to roame,

When as they may more fafely fir, and better speed at home.

If it may be, let them have fome faire Spring nore them, or elle Faire wa-Come water conveyed in pipe: for without water they can neps ter necelther make Dony, Ware, noz bzed bp their poung : and there fary for fore faith the Boet.

Haue fountaines sweet at hand, or mossie waters greene, Or pleasant brooke that passing through, the meads is sweetly And ftraight-waies after. (feene.

#### ne fourth Booke,

If either standing poole be neither to them nie, Or running (treame with halfy courfe, their dwellings paffeth by

Cast boughes of Willow crosse, and mightic stones withall,

page 34.

Herebs that Becs delight in.

Buckwheat

Hearbs poylome to Bees.

Of the Hine.

That may preferue the fainting Bee, that in the floud doth fall, Lee Book I Round about the Be-pard, and nicre to the bines, let bearbes, plants, and flowers, both for their health , and profit : fpecially fuch as are of the fweetelf and belicatelf fanour : as Cirhyfus, x Time, Callia, Rolemary, Sauery, Smallage, Wiolets, Sage, La uender Byrhe fulle Barierum, wilde Eyme, Balme, Imate Barierum, Saffron, Beanes, Buffarbleed, Boppey, Bellilot, and Kofes. And if there lie Oround neere it for the purpole, fow it with Kape feebe, and Bachinheat : for they wonderfully belight in the flowics bereof. Plinic writeth, that Bies belight greatly to have Brome flowers neere them : of tres they moft belight in thefe. The Bine, the Willow, the Fiere tree, the Almond, the Deach, the Beare tree & the Apple, and fuch as the flowers there. of be not bitter. Di the wilde forte, the Terebinth, the Lentife, the Lind tree, the Cedar, and the Datholme. The bett bony (as Palladius faith ) is made of Time : the nert of wilbe Time : the third, of Malemary. You must remoue from your Bees, the Dew tro. Bor and the Cornel: Plinic would also have the Dline alvay. Banifbalfo all the kinos of Sporge: for with that as also with the Rowers of the Cornell, they fall into a Flire and Die. Belides pour muft fuffer no Wormelwod, nor wibe Cucumber to grow nere them, for they both celtroy the Bes and fpoyle the honie. And be caufe the flowe, or fruit of Climes both fpecially burt them, therefore infuch parts of Italy where plenty of Climes grow, the Bees do not long continue. Touching your bines, they are made of biuers fathions, according to the manner of the country. So me are mad: round, fome fquare, fome thee fot in freight, and one in bacaoth, made bery narrow toward the top, leaft the Bas Chould oucrlabor themselues in-filling of them. Some make their bines of Lanterne hozne, og Blatte, to the end ( as Plinic faith) that they may bick the manner of their working, Varro maketh mention of earthen bines well plaiffered within and without with god Dre-bung, fo as the roughnes and ruggebnes cannot displease them : but for all that , the carthen biucs bethe wast that may be , because in Summer they be to hot, and in minter:

Inicher. oz rintes of tres because they keepe out both cold and heat. the next are fuch as are made of Otraw and Bents matted tore ther tipo fort in breath and to much or more, according to the name ber of your Bes in beight. In fome places they make them of one peece of wood, cut and bollowed for the nonce, or of towned bootes, fine of fire fot in height, and thele neither are to bot in Sommer, not to colo in Winter. Of thele wooden hives, the bel are thole that are made of the figge tree, Dine, Afbe , and wrainut, of fuch length ( as 3 told you ) and a cubit in breadth. Belibes, they would be courred with either Lime, or Drebung: for fo (faith Florentine) you foat heepe them long without rotting. Dou must also boze them through flopewife, whereby the winde gently entring map baie bp all cobinebs, or fuch like novances. Don mult alivates have god ftore of hines lying by you, that may be remoned, and cally carried where you lift : for the fired, or fanding hines, be discommodious, as lobirbyou can neither fel noz remove: though Cellus ferme to comment the Stanbing bives, becanfe they are neither subject to frealing not burning being mane of 182(ch.oz Loame-Pour bines (as Columella out of Celfus both Howvon teach) must stand byon some table of stone, a pard from the must place and ground fo much in breadth, fo fmothed and plaiffered, as new your hues. ther Egab, Quette,02 Snake may creepe bp : and in fuch order. then must be placed as there may be betweet every one a little mall og partition, being open both before e behinde. If you batte no fuch partitions, then place them lo, as they be a prettie than hiffant one from the other, that in breffing and lobing to any one of them, you hake not, not burt the other : for a little tumbling Both foone marre all their houles , and many times fpople the Bees. It is enough to have thee rankes of them, orte about the other : for the hover thall have enough to bee . to enerloke the oppermoft. The part tobere the Bee both enter. muft fand a little lower then the hinder part, fo as the raine can not runne in, and the water ( if there be any) may eafily boide. And becaufe told both moze annop the Be, then beate, pour must arme your hines well behinder against the burt and bitter nelle of the Routh winde, and let the Sunne come bountifulle to them in the Front. And therefore it is beft for you to make

the boles where they come in and out, as finall as you may, that they luffice onely for the bignede of the 15 &, partly for anophing of cold and partiy to keepe the Quets, Betels, Butterflies, Bats, Bothes, and fuch other hurtfull bermine, that would otherwife pettrop the Combes : toherefoze it is god pou baue two or three fuch fmall boics together in enery hine , for the commoditie of the Bee, and reftraine the enemie.

PVLLARIVS. WEELL, I pray you let be know when the

Bee beginneth to labour, and when be ceafeth.

MELDISSEVS. Becante I have acclared bute von befoze their toile, their diligence, and other of their travaile, 3 will now like wife thew pour what time they begin to labour. In the Winter time from the fetting of the feaven Barres, till the beginning of When the the fuzing they keepe their boules, and come not abroad, by realon Beerefteth, of the cold: in the fuzing, they come fraight abroad, and from that time forward ( if the weather let them not ) they nevet reft bay. and order First of all, they frame their Combs, and War, that is, they make of his tra- their boules and chambers, whereof they make fo many, as they thinke themselves able to fill : then fall they to breeding, and lake of all, to making of hony. Their Ware, they make of the flowes, trees and plants: their bente, of the gummes and clamminelle of tres that are glewy, as Willow, Chmes, Mab, Juice, Cumme, and Hozen: Arthode faith, they make their Combes of flowers. their Ware, of Gummes, and their Bony, of the bew of the Apre, that falleth chiefely at the rifing of the farres, and that there is no bonie made before the riling of the feaven flavres, and their combes of flowers, and that the 15 es bo not of themfelues make the bonte, but onely gather the horsed bein that falleth, because the kepers finde the Celles to be filled in forme one, or two baies: and that the bonte being taken alway in the end of Summer, the hines are not found to be furnithed againe : though there be flowacs enough at that time. This, and much more beereof (faith Ariftople ) whom Plinic following , affirmeth bonte to be made of the Ayze mott of all, at the rifing of the farres. chiefelp the Dogge thining out earely in the morning : there fore you that finde in the morning betimes, the leanes of the trees bedetwed with honie, as you thall ithewife have the Are parrell, Bayze, and Bearon, of fuch as have beine carely abroad.

Thebeginning uaile.

Placades:

He the marning, our Common people cell of Manne , as Done Manne beto, cleaning to the leaves before the rilling of the Samme as it

nelle in it. The best Doney is of Time (as 3 bane fapt before) The beft and good likewife of Cithifus, of the figge Tre bery pleafant : Honey of Varro faith, they take not their fuftenance, and their Bonen Time.

they thould then be forced to line all boon the Boney, or to leave the Dines emptie. Dome give bnto them Water and Bonep, fot's Bees, their ben together inlittle bellels, putting into it Burple woll, through Winterthe which they fuckett, for feare of brinking to much, or prote, foode.

they will bid pour faretnell, and fiche a new Baiffet. For fuchis the nature of 18 ces, that with enery Brince, is bred a Common Going ainealth, which as fone as they are able to travaile, one as it were way of dif dame the gouernment and fellowthippe of the old Bie, which Bees, and the tokens molt banneth when the Swarmes be great and lufte, and that chereof. the old Stagers are bispoled to fend abroad their Colonies : and

therefore pon hall by two tokens specially know when the new

were Snow, or rather Canbleb-Sugar. ERbether it be the fluents as excrement of the Deavens, as a certaine futtle of the Starres, at a juyce that the ayra purgeth from himfelfe ! botofoener it be. I would to Conit mere furh as it firftrame from a bour and not corrupted with the bapours and bamps of the sarth. Belibes, being fucket by from the leaves by the Bes, and be geffen in their Dawes (for they caft it by at their mouthes) and also diffempered with the fent of the flowers, ill featured in the Dines, and lo often altred and transformed, loffing muit of his beamenilb bertue, bath pet a pleafant and (peciall seleftiall finet

both from one. A great part of their fode is water, which miff not be far from them, and muft be berp cleane, tobich is greatly to purpole in making of god Doney. And because every leafon inffe, reth them not to be abroad, they muft at fuch times be feb, leaf

ming themfelues : others, by figges, either fampen by them felmes, og mingled with water, og the broffe of Wapes, og Reafins mingled with florete Wilme, and toffs mave therewith, or with Boney : yea, 3 baue feine fome ble (but immy fancte with out reafon) to give them Bay balt. Porcouer, as the Beste antre great loking to continually, and their Dines bayly atten bance, fo most of all they crave biligent regard, luben they are a bout to Stuarme, whereunto if you have not a great god eve.

Dainces

or two before they chafter and bang (frecially in the eneming) a

bout the mouth of the bine, and feeme to the to be their comming out a great befire to be gone and to have a kingbome and Count trey by themselves : which, if you prepare them at bome, they content themfelues bery well with it. And if the Beper prouide not for them, taking themselves to be greatly infared, they bepart, and fate a new diveiling. To prevent this mifchiefe, Columella willes you to loke diligently to them in the Spring time about evabl of the clocke, or at pone; after which houres they commonly goe not away, and to marke well their going out and comming in. The other figne is, that when they are readie to five, or going, they make a great humming and nople, as Souls Diers readie to remone their Campe. At their firtt comming out, they five aloft, playing by and bowne, as it were tarrying for their fellowes till all their company come. Dea, many times the old inhabitants, being wearie of their diveilings, doeleans their bives, which is perceived when they come fo out, as none remaine behinde, and prefently mount into the avre, then muft pou fall to ringing of Dans and Bafons, to feare, or bring belong the run awayes, who being amaged with the great and fundains mople, bos epther prefently repaire to their olde bine, or elle huit themfelues in finarme boon the branch of fome tre nere to the place : then most the Borer out of band be readic with a new hine prepared for the purpole, and rubbed with fuch bearbs as the Be belights in, or freinchico with little props of honie (3 bane feene in fome places bled Creame) and fo haking them into the hine, and covering them with a thete, let bim leave them till the morning, and then fet them in their place. De muft (as 3 told you before) have divers new times in a readmelle to ferue the acre hines. turne withall. And if to be you hanc no trees not buthes grows ing ners the bines, you must thank into the ground certains boughes and branches for the purpole, whereupon they map buit and fettle themfelues, and rub ouer the boughes with Balme. 01 fuch pleafant hearbs, that when they ( as 3 fap) unit and fettle; putting binder the bine, and compassing them with some little Imote, you may canfe them to fall into a new Countrep: for they will rather goe into a new hine, then into an old : yea, if you offer

Bees delight in

offer them the bine that they came from they will forfake it for a new. Dome of them will fantenly leave the bine without any tacrying, which the Reper map perceive, if he westo lay his care Signer of in the night time to the hiues : for about the bapes before they fuddaine goe, they make a great noyle, like bouldiers ready to taile their and reme-

dies.

Campe : bubich Virgill noteth : Their mindes are easily knowner for fuch as ftray. The brafen found commaunds to come away.

When through them all a warning voice is fent.

That doth the warlike Trumpet represent.

And therefore when fuch novie is heard, they must be bery well watches, whether they come out to fight, on to fly, the keeper muft be at hand : their lights, whether it be among theinfelies, or one hine frith another, are easily frickled and men in Archange dure

A little duft caft vp on high,

Doth end the quarrell prefently.

De Bonted mater, finete Wine, Broath of Mealing, or any view fant liquour, wherein they belight, saft and Tpointitles amongth them both Araightinates part them. Ebelfelfe-fame comebies makes tino Brinces of them, being fallen out, to be ouickely god friends agains : for when there hapneth many times to be in one hine funday kings, by whole diffention the whole mumber Divers of the Bublens, in the Brinces quarrels, goe together by the Kings in cares, you mult by all meanes fecke to remediett, leaft by clueit billention, the page people be bestroped. And thereforest pay pers ceine them often to fight, pour belt is to kill the beaudeft of the diffention and to appeale the fury of the fighters, by tholemen that I told pon before. And inhen the Martial Stoarine isfetien buon forme branch of a tree link if they hang all together like a class Ber of Sapes, which is a figne, that there is either but one Bing. at if there be moe, they be acreed : and then you thall not trouble them, but take them into the hine : but if To be thep hang in tive at the clufters, like the Baps or Mobers of a beaft, it is a figne they ame bivers Mafter Besthat agree not together : for tubichi you thall fearth where you fethe Bies to clufter mott. Theres fore annointing your hands with the tupce of balme, or Balmost, that they may alive you, thoult in your fingers folity amongst. them, and thebeing the Bies, fearth mell till you have found the naturia

ofthe King.

To keepe

the King at home.

ring leaber of the biffention, tubom you must take aloay, Withat The flape the proportion and flape of the hing is, 3 hanc told you a little before that is, fomething longer then the other Bas, and leffer ininged, of a faire and gliftering colour, fmoth, and without ffing. Howbett fome of them be fbagheard, and ill coloured, which are naught, and to be tilled: Let the beft (as he faith) weare the Crowne: who mult himselfe also be deprined of his wings, if he be to buffe headed and will alwaies be carrying his veonle abroad: fo fall you, with the lotte of his favles, here him at home fright of his teeth, while he bare not for want of his wings benture out of the boxes, and fo thall be keepe his people at home. Dedimos inziteth, that the Bas will neuer goe awan, if pour rib the mouth of your Dine with the bong of a new calued Calfe. Eo the fame end feruethit, if you fampe the leaves of wine Dimes, and Barben Dlives together, and annount the Dives in the evening therewithall : oz if you wall the Bines and the walles with Doe ney lobben with mater. Withen an old frocke is come to a fmall number; and that there be not 15 ces enough to furnith the Dine. you muft (upply the want with a new Swarme, bell roving the king of the first fwarme in the Swing So Shall both the finarms binell together in amitie with the old Barents, as fhalbe flewed pon hereafter, where a meane to weake of repayzing the flocke. The Summer being palt, enfueth the time for taking of Doney to which harnest the travaile of the lobole tendeth. The time for or driving gathering thereof, Columella teacheth to be then, when the perthe Hives ceine the Dones to be briven out, and banifped by the Bes : for thence they Driverhedrouse Drone away. This Drone is an bue timiely birth, and an boverfest Boe, but bery like boto the 13ec.

Time for Combs.

bine. Varro appointeth thre featons for the taking out the bomp t taking the the first at the citing of the featen Starres atte fecono in Count mer : The third at the fetting af the Cauen Starres : this fiens is when the bines be beante; and that they be bouble furnithed.

four that he is bigger bodyed, lying alwaies fole in the hine; not labouring himfelfe, but feebing like a labber on the fineate of his fellowes, vet ferneth he for the breeding and bringing by of the pound : which when he bath none, they thauft him out of the

Fou may make your confedure by the Bers, when they make great maile foithin, and loben you fer them than bauncing, and

Ting

playing.

playing at their voges, as also, if loking into the Pine, year perseine the mouthes of the Combs to be coneces with a Boney filme, Dydimus thinketh it to be the beff time at the firft barnett, the rifing of the leanen Starres, or the beginning of May : the fecond, the beginning of Autumne : the third, the fetting of the feanen Starres, tobich is about Ditober : botobeit, thefe times be not alwates precifely to be obferued, but according to the fer waranelle of the leafon : for if to be you take the honey before the Combs be readle they take it ill and melently leane working. The time for gelbing, or brining pour Bes,is earlie in the more ning : for you must not at none trouble pour bines. For thiskinds of gelbing of your hines, you must have two inframents for the nonce, a forte and a halfe long and more : the one of them must be a long knife of a good bredth having at the ent a bending croke to [crape withall : the other muft be plaine, and bery tharpe, that with the one you may cut the Combs, and with the other frape them, and brato out whatfocuer bregges or filth pou finde in them. And if your bines be not open behinde, you fall make a fmoke with Galbanum, at bap bung, being put into an earthen van made for the purpole, fmall at the one end from whence the fmoke thall come, and broad at the other, from which you thall bioin by the fmoke from the are, in fuch fort, as Columella their eth pour This pot you mult luffer at the first, to frake into the bine, and afterward round about without, and fo thall you brine them. De that medleth in this cafe with the Bes, muft fpecially Bees hate: herve bimfelfe from letcherfe, and brunkennes, and wall bimfelfe theeues cleane : for they love to have fuch as come about them to be as and vnpure and cleane as may be. They belight incleanimelle fo much, cleane peras they themfelues boe remoue from them all filthyneffe, fuffe. ring no filth to remain among & their labours, caking by in heaps together the excrements of their ofone bodies, tobich in the rainy bates, when they worke not abroad, they remove and throw out of the hine. If pon let Barlick by them, they will ding all that come more them. Their anger is chiefely allivaged by the prefence of those that ble to tend them, at whose comming they ware milber, being well acquainted with those that are their kepers. If there betwo floarmes in one hine, and agreed together, they me tho facts and manner of Cambs, every Charme observing

of the Combes.

his atone other , but all the Combes to bang by therafes of the hines and fibes, as they touch not the ground lobere the Bas bie chiefely to malke, as I fait before of the building of their Valkioning Combes. The falbion of their Combes, is alwaies according to the fathion of their hines, fornetimes fquare, fornetimes round. fametimes long as the bines are, in which they are falbioned as in a moult. Plinie wateth, that there were Deney-Combes found in Germanie, of eight fote in length ; but bowloeuer thev be, you must not take them all out, but must ble bilcretion in ta king ofthem. Amongit our people in the firt Bie barneft (if 3 may to tearme it) they ble with their croked wife, to pare ainay no more but the emptis Celles, till they come to thole that be full. taking bobs that they burt them not: and this they bee in the buting. In the latter barueft, that is, at the ent of Sommer. they take the Combes full of Boney, in fuch fort, (as I tolo pou) burning the old Bes and alway keeping and preferuing the young Cwarmes. In the fird taking, luben the Debboines are full af flowers, they leave the fift part of the Combes bebinte : in the latter baruell, when winter approcheth, they leane a third of their Cambes for the fuftenance of the Be. But this quantitie cannat certainely be preferibed for all Countries, but muft be meafured according to the abundance, or want of flowres. Dydimus Thafeus, thinketh goo to leane them a tenth of their Combes in the Summer time, if the Bines be bery full, otherwife, according to the proportion: and if they be emptie not to meddle with them. Plinie would not have the Bonep of the Spring-time (tubich be calleth floinge Domie) to be medled withall, but to be fpares. De thers leave no Donie at all for them, because of the abundance of flowers that are then framging, which is the chiefe foundation of their Combes. Such as be fhilfulleft boe leans the Bies a tivelfth part of their labour : and this they bo about thirty baies after the Marme, which they make an and of commoniy in Map. The old and the corrupt Combes, are for the most part at this time taken away : and the found, and fuch as are filles with Dos nie, left. In taking of the Bonie at the later time of the pere, they bis to befrom the oldett tocks, to fave the charges of fine bing of them. This driving and geloing of Hives is not come monly bled in the Countrep, but they rather, accepting to their cufforme cultome, at the end of the piece burne them, alledging for their authoritie an old English Brouerbe of their olune:

Drive Bees, and loofe Bees: burne Bees, and have Bees,

And in forme places they bestone them. Withen you bave thus foot led pour Dines, you thall carry all your Combes into fome banne Come place, where you meane to make your Boney, and Roppe by all the boles and cremites of the malles and windowes, as clofe as you may : for the Bes will be bery bufic to recover the pray. Pour Dines being thus brinen, if there be any ill placed Combes at the entrie, you fall after them, and place them in god order, to as the toppes thand bolunemart, to when you nert gelb them, you thall eather take out the olde Combes, and leave . the new and the ware fall be the newer : tohich the older it is, the worfe it is. Withenfoener you take your Combes, loke that you traine out the Boney the fame day, while they are bot and new. The Bonte that you take at the full of the Done (as Plinie faith) pelocth molt, and the fapter the bay is, the thicker it is, The Combes being taken out, let them rather be warme, then heated, leaft by over-heating them, you ftraine out the Ware with the Bomie: afterward, put them into a goo frong barge. and with a Breffe, or other Inftrument mabe for the purpole. as with a Buicher Basket, preffe out the Bonie; but fee that before you preffe it, ven fener from it fuch Combes, as bane in them poung Bes, called with fome, Bubbes, or any red or ruftis broffe : for thefe with their cuill juves corrupt the Bonie. When the Honfe is thus Grained out, it is put into earthen beffells, and fufferen to frant bucoueren a few pates till it bane wanght and caff by aloft all his Dreas which you must often fcumme off with a little flicke : but in many places they are not so curious, but tamble all together, and fo fell it groffe as it is. The best Bonie is alwayes in the bottome, as the beft Dyle aloft, and the beff Willing in the mioft.

CHENOBOSCUS. Withat Countries pieles the best De

nte, and which count you the belt ?

MELLISSEVS. The best Danie was in the close time The best thought to be in Athens, and in Cycill: it is noto thought bery god Honie. that commetly from Moscouis, and the Douth-east Regions.

The.

#### and tours is

Three forts of Honny.

rupteth Heny.

The making of .Waxe.

The Dony at the beginning is thin as water, and after the firal ning, it worketh like new Minc, and purgeth: at the twentieth bay, it wareth thicke, and afterwards is courted with a thin rine, at filme, where the froth of the purging is gatheres together. The beft Wonp, and leaft infened, the Boxs boe gather from the leanes of the Die, the Lind tree, and the Koob. There is thee forts of Bony, the bell kinde is that which is called Authim, az flowie- Donie, made in the Spring time : the nert, is Summer hony, or halty-hony, made in thirtie bayes after the tenth of Tune. toben the Dogge begins to come in : the third is Death bonv. a wilbe kinde of hony, and not allowed, being gathered after the first thoines of Autumne, while the beath is flowed: and therfore like the Sandy bony. The beft bony (as Diophanes faith) is cleare, pellowith, fmoth in touching, & fine, roping, if it be brawen in length, and long Ricking together, clanmy, and bard to be got a furner: the Bony that is of the work making, is to be boylen. Bread cor- Bread, ff it be bipped in it, both Ernight corrupt it, and therefore take bed vou put it not ipbere bread hath beine. The fragments of the Coame that hath once bene preffed being taken out beaten and frained againe, boe make a fecond Dony, which you must put bu and heve by it felfe, for fpopling of the other. Raughtie, and counterfeit Bony is befreened by the burning, for ill hony burs neth not cleare, as the faid Diophanes witneffeth. The broffe that remaineth, after the prefling, after that you have ofligently ina theo it in finet water, muft be put in a braffe Calbron, and put ting a little water thereto, melted byon the fire which when you have bone, you must frame the Ware through a Sive. or fuch like thing made of Straw, or Kuthes: and after leth it againe, and polyzing it into fome beffell with water, from whence you may eafily take it, make it by in cakes, or what fashion you like. Plinic witteth, that the Coames muft firft be walhed well , and afters foard byed in the barke, for the fpace of the bayes, a the fourth bay let boon the fire in a new earthen beffell, fo as the Coames be conered with water, and then Brained through a Diue: laft of all, boyled agains in the fame beffell, and the fame water, and polized into beffels with colde water, having their fides nointed with Bonp. The Ware will be bern white after it hath frod in in the bunne, and beine thate folden : you fall make it blacks with

with the Athes of Paper, and being mingled with Mermillion it will be red, and to otherwife coloured as poulit.

CHENEBOS. Ifin the making of your Donp your Bes be almost confumed, what waves have you to repaire them ?

M E L. Withen as an olde focke is come to be fmall, and that Bees deyou are to farnify out the number, you must cettray (as 3 fago) cayed. the new king in the Spring time, when there is a new bood in the Dine, that the new people without bifcogo, may dwell with The repair thefe olde parents. And if to be the Coames have not yelbed a ring of new bamo, you must take the owellers of two or thee other bines, them. e put them into one,but fo (as you remember before) to fuminchle them with some sweet licour, and so that them by with foo conuenient for them, till they be fully acquainted, leaving but little breathing holes about the Dine, & keepe them thus enclosed three bayes. Dthers boe ble to kill the elber king, but that Columella alloweth not : but if the king be very olo, (the age of Bas thall Shortly be thewed buto you and the people allvaies given to febition, then thall you chofe a king from the Dines, that have mot number of kings. I told you before boly you hould make them as gra, when you put two fwarms together, left they Gonio beftrop one another, that is, to take alway the kings of the new floarmes, July 172.

CHENOBOS. Withat if the whole flocke be becaped by the king the Dony, or by fickenes, and bifeafes, will they bred againe ?

or map they be repayreb by art ?

MEL. 18 p both, though the bzeding, and ingenating of 15 es Breeding is bery boubtfull with Ariftorle neither bare he after his long bile of Bees. putations, affirme any certaintie thereof: fometime be reciteth the opinions of others, fome thinking that they are ingantee by copulation, the Done being the male,and the Be the female : other faying, that they bring forth young, but boe not ingender, but that they gather their pong ones, but from whence, they know not. Some lap, from the flowers of Marioram : fome, from the flowers of the Kabe : others from the Dine flowers, because whenformer there is great plenty of Dlives, there is allo great Marmes of Bes. There are againe that thinke the Diones to be fo gathered, and the Bies to be bed onely of the kings: and a little after, be faith, The going are the belt baces, when the bong is made, they labour with their legs the Ware, and with their mouth

## The fourth Booke,

mouth they caft out the Bonie into the Cels, and having lato their poung, they fit boon them as Biros boe. The little Worme, oz Brubbe being thus hatched while be is fmall , lyeth crumplen by in the Comme: afterward, fprawleth abroad by his owne force. and falleth to feeding, cleaving to to the Coame, as he feemeth to be tied. The bimo of the Be, and the Dione, is white, of which commeth tittle Wlozmes, that after grow to Bes, and Dzones: thus much, and moze, faith Arilforle. In other places he monto freme to gather, that the Bes are ingendeed of the kings, faping. that if this were not there were no reason for such things as are committed in their government, and that the kings by god read for, remaine fill in the Dive without any transile as only borne for breding. Wefibe, they be greater, as though their bedien inere parpofely framed for generation, they punish the Dones. It is not bery likely that the children thould punish the Warents. therefore the Bos are not ingenbreb of Drones. Belides, it is acrest argument, that Bes are ingenozed without copulation. that their bembe lieth very fmall at the first, wapped by in the hotes or Celles of their Coames , whereas all other flies and Mormes that are beed by copulation , boe long ingender, and anichly lay in greatnelle, according to the kinde of the Wanne. Plinic following berein Ariftorle, affirmeth, that Bes boe fit as Dennes boe boon their Egges : and that which is batched, is at the first a small white worme, lying croffe the bole, and cleaning in fuch fort, as it femeth to febe. The hing is at the firft, of a vellowith colout, as a cholen flowe, framet of the finett lubitance. neither is he been a togome , but with winges at the bery firth. The other common fort, when they begin to have fathion are cale len Atmphes, as the Dones, the Sircus, and the Cepheus, inhole beads , if any man chance to pull off, they ferne as a belicate for to the brebers. After a little time, they paloze into them fobc. and fit boon them (making a great notie, as it is thought to procure a heat necessary for their hatching) till breaking a funder the Almes that encloseth every one of them like an Egge, the whole bambe commeth forth. Plinic abouth, that this was liene and ob-Cernes at Rome, in a Diue made of Lanterne bornes: the lobole brobe is fmithed in fine and fourtie baies. As fone as they are brought out they are taught to transile Araightwaves with their Dammes,

amornes, the young people waiting prefently byon their young king. There are fundy kingsbredfor failing and when they come to age, by common confest, the fouleff are butowardeft of them are beftroved. That there is the forts, and tobat fathion they be of. 4 told von befoze.

CHENOBOS. Let he noto heare fome thing of their age. The are ME LLI s. Their age (they fay) may thus be knolven. Such of Bees. an are not about a peere olde, boe fine, and loke as they were newly opled : the old ones be rough, thaghaped, inchied, loathe fome : ill favozed to loke byon, howbeit, for making of Coames, thefe are the belt. Ariftorle in his boke befoge mentioned affir. meth , that Bes live fire or feauen percs , and that if a focke continue nine or tenne percesthe keper of them bath good lucke. Plinic wateth that one focke was never fene to continue about ten peeres , not though you supply the places of the bead cuery pere with new : for commonly in the tenth pere after the firth fining, the whole Bocke bieth. And therefore to anoide the mile chiefe of being btterly bestitute, it is god to encrease the number of your Dines with news warmes enery pere. And if to be your Bos, through lubben forme, tempelt, or colo, lie bead bpon the Bersthat ground, you muft gather them together into a platter, ora broad be dead. balon, and lay them in your boule toward the South frecially if the weather be goo , after, caft amongst them Aftes of Figge trie mon being fomething moze bot, then warme, thake them gently by and downe, fo as you touch them not with your bands; and fo fetting them into the Sunne, they will (as Varro fauth) quicken againe. To whom Columella subscribing appeth, that fuch Bies as you finde bead binder your bines,if you lay them by in a bap place all the Winter and baing them out into the Some in the Spring, when the weather isfaire, and fprinchle them with the forefaid Albes, they will recover within a felo bourcs. They that lift may prous it. I have not bitherto tried it. Marcus Varro holdeth opinion , that Bies are ingender fornetime of other Making Bees, and fome times of the body of a pong Bullocke putrified, of Bees. reciting this Opigramme of Archelaus.

Of Steere that ffrangled is are children ffrangely bred. Of Horse ingendred is the Waspe, and Bee, of Bullocke dead. The Horses breed the Waspes, the Bullockes breed the Bees.